Mr. COLLINS's

PEERAGE

OF

ENGLAND.

Mr. COLLINS'S

PEREGRINE

OR

ENGLAND.

THE PEERAGE OF ENGLAND;

CONTAINING

A Genealogical and Hiſtorical ACCOUNT

OF ALL THE

PEERS of that KINGDOM,

Now exiſting, either by Tenure, Summons, or Creation:

Their DESCENTS and COLLATERAL LINES:

Their BIRTHS, MARRIAGES, and ISSUE:

Famous ACTIONS both in WAR and PEACE:

Religious and Charitable DONATIONS:

DEATHS, PLACES of BURIAL, MONUMENTS, EPITAPHS:

And many valuable Memoirs never before printed.

ALSO

Their Paternal COATS of ARMS, CRESTS, SUPPORTERS and MOTTOES, Curiouſly engraved on 200 COPPER-PLATES.

Collected from Records, Old Wills, Authentic Manuſcripts, our moſt approved Hiſtorians, and other Authorities, which are cited.

By ARTHUR COLLINS, Eſq;

IN SEVEN VOLUMES.

The FOURTH EDITION, carefully Corrected, and continued to the preſent Time.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

Printed for H. WOODFALL, J. BEECROFT, W. STRAHAN, J. RIVINGTON, W. SANDBY, J. FULLER, R. BALDWIN, L. HAWES, W. CLARKE and R. COLLINS, R. HORSFIELD, W. JOHNSTON, T. CASLON, S. CROWDER, T. LONGMAN, C. RIVINGTON, W. GRIFFIN, M. and J. SHUCKBURGH, W. NICOLL, S. BLADON, M. FOLINGSBY, T. PAYNE, J. ROBSON, T. DAVIES, R. DAVIS, J. ALMON, and H. GARDNER.

MDCCLXVIII.

TO

HIS MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY

GEORGE III.

King of Great Britain, France, and Ireland,
Defender of the Faith;

Duke of Brunſwick, and Lunenburgh;

Arch-Treaſurer and Prince Elector of the Sacred
ROMAN EMPIRE;

SOVEREIGN of the moſt Noble Order of
the GARTER;

This FOURTH EDITION, of Mr. COLLINS's
PEERAGE of ENGLAND,

Is, with all Humility,

DEDICATED,

By His Majeſty's moſt Loyal,

and moſt Faithful Subjects,

The PROPRIETORS.

ADVERTISEMENT.

COLLINS's PEERAGE *of* ENGLAND, *as it was the firſt regular work of the kind, has ever maintained its reputation with the Public, from the fidelity with which it was compiled, and the authorities on which it was founded, and has in many deciſions on important queſtions, relative to the Peerage, been appealed to by the higheſt authority. It was the labor of a long life, entirely devoted to genealogical enquiries, with advantages no other perſon ever poſſeſſed, and the author left it at his death in as perfect a ſtate as ſuch a work could be ſuppoſed to admit. The Proprietors, willing to continue it to the preſent time, have been at great trouble and expence in preparing the preſent edition, by cauſing the whole to be carefully reviſed, redundancies to be retrenched, and ſuch corrections and additions made throughout, as ſhould ſtill increaſe the reputation of the book. For this purpoſe they gave early notice, as well by public advertiſements, as by private letters, to the Nobility, or their near relations, of what they propoſed; but, notwithſtanding their pains and expence, ſuch delays occurred, that ſome years have elapſed ſince it was put to preſs, for want of intelligence, particularly in the latter parts of the ſeveral families. Theſe delays cannot, with juſtice, be charged upon them; though perhaps the indolence of one of the Editors might have, in ſome meaſure, contributed to it; who yet, in other reſpects, was well qualified for the taſk he undertook. It is diſagreeable to them to complain; and affords them a very particular pleaſure, that, at the ſame time, they muſt profeſs them-*

themſelves infinitely obliged to many Noble Peers, who, with an amiable condeſcenſion and goodneſs, afforded them opportunities of placing their Pedigrees in the improved light they now appear, and which will reflect credit upon their families, and reward the Proprietors for their labours.

No performance of this kind can be publiſhed without a table of alterations and additions, that will and muſt ariſe during the time ſo voluminous a work is at preſs; but the Proprietors have the ſatisfaction to ſee; even under all the diſadvantages they have laboured, that the liſt of ſuch corrections contains much fewer in number than that of the laſt edition, though carried on under the Author's own inſpection.

Any communications or corrections, however, that they may hereafter receive, will, with gratitude, be inſerted in any future edition: a PEERAGE *being always as capable of improvements, as it is ſubject to alterations and additions.*

THE

AS a PEERAGE is liable to daily variations, the Reader cannot wonder that, in three years ſpace (which, from various unforeſeen delays, not in the leaſt chargeable upon the Proprietors, has elapſed ſince the work was put to preſs) a great number of additions are neceſſarily occaſioned by births, deaths, alterations of title, and new creations, which muſt of courſe be taken notice of: and though they are much fewer than thoſe in the laſt edition of the PEERAGE, yet the Editors thought it proper thus to apologize for them at the head of ſuch

ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

VOL. I.

Page.	Line.	
		DUKE of CORNWALL.
10	43	*Read*, conveyed.
23	29	*For* only ſurviving, *read*, younger.
45	35	*For* favourably, *read*, graciouſly.
46	28	*For* Droningen, *read*, Groningen.
Ibid.	38, 39	*For* performing egregious feats of valour, *read*, after behaving with the utmoſt bravery, notwithſtanding, &c.
		DUKE of NORFOLK.
49	2	*Read* Alice.
115	25	*Read* April 25, 1640.
121	37	Notwithſtanding what is ſaid from this place to the end of the paragraph, p. 122, it is clear from the concurrent teſtimony of hiſtorians, that his Lordſhip's guilt was irrefragrably proved.
129	36	*Read*, William late Lord Widdrington.
133	16	*After* 1743-4, *add*, who to the inexpreſſible grief of their Graces and the family, departed this life on Feb. 7, 1767. (Whereupon Charles Howard, of Greyſtock, became preſumptive heir to his Grace, being deſcended of Charles, fourth ſon of Henry-Frederick, third Earl of Arundel. In 1739, he married Catherine, daughter of John Brockholes, of Clayton, in Lancaſhire, Eſq; by whom he has iſſue, one ſon, Charles Howard, jun. Eſq; born Jan. 15, 1745, who on Auguſt 8, 1767, married Miſs —— Coppinger, a Lady of a large fortune; and one daughter, Mary, born in June, 1742, *vide* page 126.) Their father, &c.

Page.	Line.	
		DUKE of SOMERSET.
174	42	*Read*, ſo conſpicuous a gentleman. This whole paragraph is an unjuſt and partial relation of facts, and highly injurious to the characters of King William, Sir Edward, and to the Revolution. We wiſh we could expunge it.
175	8	*Read*, ſucceſſors to his Grace.
177	12	*To a robbery on the highway.* It is preſumed had theſe words been ſpoken in the Houſe, Sir Edward muſt have been committed. The whole account of Sir Edward teems with inconſiſtencies, and is dictated by a virulent ſpirit of party, which muſt be aſcribed to the editor employed in preparing the firſt part of this work, as Mr. Collins in his laſt edition, talks in a very different ſtrain.
179	11	*For* iniquitous, *read*, culpable.
182	23	*After* Windſor, *read*, Dean of Wells, and, &c.
Ibid.	21	*After* 1744, *add*, and on June 5, 1767, married Miſs Maltravers.
Ibid.	29	*After* Eſq; *add*, Her Grace, their mother, deceaſed, in January, 1768.
		DUKE of RICHMOND.
192	31	*After* Abergavenny, *add*, On May 23, 1766, was appointed his Majeſty's principal Secretary of State, in the room of the Duke of Graſton, and he continued in that office until he reſigned, Aug. 2, the ſame year, and was ſucceeded by the Earl of Shelburne.
191	33	*After* infantry, *add*, His Lordſhip on July 1, 1766, was appointed Miniſter Plenipotentiary to the Moſt Chriſtian King.
		DUKE of GRAFTON.
195	36	*For*, were ſoon brought over to acknowledge, &c. *read*, ſoon after acknowledged, &c.
196	33	*After* month, *read*, he acted as High Steward, and carried St. Edward's crown) conſtituted, &c.
199	8	*After* 1763, *add*, On July 10, 1765, his Grace was appointed one of his Majeſty's principal Secretaries of State, which he reſigned in May, 1766, and on Aug. 2, in that year, was conſtituted firſt Lord Commiſſioner of the Treaſury.
198	29	*After* 1764, *add*, and a daughter, born July 4, 1767.
Ibid.	18	*After* Eſq; *add*, and died on Dec. 14, 1767.

DUKE

Page. Line.

DUKE of BEAUFORT.

200 10 *Read*, all his natural children, *and dele* his third wife.

Ibid. 12 *After* Knt. *add*, who became afterwards his third wife.

201 39 *Read*, male iſſue, &c.

216 16 *After* ſtation, *add*, His Grace returned to England in 1766, and on Jan. 2, married Elizabeth, daughter of the late Admiral Boſcawen, and niece of the Viſcount Falmouth, by whom in Dec. 24, he had iſſue a ſon and heir.

DUKE of St. ALBANS.

218 4, 5, 6 *Read*, in 1710, his Grace had his place as Captain of the Band of Penſioners taken from him, and was ſucceeded therein by Henry Duke of Beaufort, Jan. 10, 1711-12; but, &c.

220 30 *After* Ireland, *add*, which Lady died on May 28, 1766.

DUKE of BOLTON.

224 11 *Read*, wife of —— York, Eſq;

225 28 *After* houſhold, *read*, Preſident of the Council, and Lord Keeper of the Great Seal)

231 3, 4, 5, 6 This fact is far from being authenticated; who is meant, by our hiſtorians?

236 22 *After* unmarried, *read*, His Grace deceaſing, on July 5, 1765, was ſucceeded by his brother, Lord Harry Powlett, now Duke of Bolton, who, on Dec. 3. 1766, was ſworn of his Majeſty's Privy-Council, and on the 23d appointed Governor, Captain, and Vice-Admiral of the Iſle of Wight, and Governor of Cariſbrook-caſtle, in the room of the Right Hon. Hans Stanley.

DUKE of LEEDS.

241 29 *For* Farmer, *read*, Fermor.

DUKE of BEDFORD.

275 32, 33 *Read* Lyttelton.

277 22 *Read* Great Britain.

276 16 *After* Albemarle, *add*, by whom his Lordſhip had iſſue a ſon and heir, born July 22, 1765; a ſecond ſon, on July 6, 1766, and a poſthumous ſon, born Aug. 20, 1767. This excellent young Nobleman, beloved and eſteemed by all the world, unfortunately fractured his ſkull, by a fall from his horſe, of which he died on March 22, 1767, to

Page.	Line.	
		the inexpreſſible grief of his noble parents and amiable conſort.
		DUKE of DEVONSHIRE.
332	21	*After* Comptroller, *add*, On June 17, 1766, his Lordſhip was appointed Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Derby.
333	*ult.*	*After* 1761, *add*, On March 1, 1766, his Grace was conſtituted Lord High Treaſurer of Ireland.
		DUKE of MARLBOROUGH.
357	25	*Read* Byebroke.
360	27	*Read*, his houſes at Althorp, &c.
396	32	*Read*, with all ſecrecy and ſpeed, &c.
405	27	*Read*, the diſcourſe *was*, &c.
421	10	*After* affairs, *dele* and, *and read thus*, till April 1721, when his Lordſhip was ſucceeded as firſt Commiſſioner of the Treaſury, by Robert Walpole, Eſq; who was alſo appointed Chancellor of the Exchequer; but he continued in favour with his Sovereign, &c.
423	11	*Read*, October 25.
426	8	*After* 1764, *add*, alſo a ſon and heir, George, Marquis of Blandford, born on March 3, 1766.

VOL. II.

		DUKE of RUTLAND.
18	15, 17	*For* Roſs, *read*, Roos.
21	5	*From the bottom*, *read*, earldom.
26	3	*For* an, *read*, and.
27	5	*From the bottom*, *after* Lieutenant-general, *add*, On July 29, 1765, he was appointed Colonel of the third regiment of Dragoons.
29	41	*After* Derbyſhire, *add*, and on Aug. 13, 1766, his Lordſhip was conſtituted Commander in Chief of his Majeſty's land-forces, in Great Britain.
30	22	*After* 1755, *add*, their mother died on May 23, 1767.
		DUKE of ANCASTER.
69	21	*After* 1754, *add*, who died on April 1, 1767, to the great grief of her illuſtrious parents.
Ibid.	43	*After* proceſſion, *add*, On Dec. 13, 1766, his Grace was appointed Maſter of the Horſe to his Majeſty.
		DUKE of NEWCASTLE.
125	34	*Read*, December 10.

Page 126

Page.	Line.	
126	36	*Read*, October 19.
129	33	*After* Kingſton, *add*, On July 15, 1765, his Grace was appointed Lord Privy-Seal, which he held till July 30, 1766, when he was ſucceeded by William Earl of Chatham. He was alſo reſtored to the offices of Lord-Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the town and county of Nottingham, and Steward, &c. of Sherwood Foreſt, and Folewood Park.
Ibid.	33, 34, 35	*Inſtead of*, ſo that his Grace's titles at preſent, excluſive of thoſe hereditary in his own perſon, are, *read*, His Grace is a Privy-Counſellor, &c.
123	42	*After* 1762, *read*, On July 29, 1765, he was ſworn a Member of the Privy-Council.
124	4	*After* 1760, *read*, and on Oct. 13, 1766, a third ſon.
130	16	*Read*, October 19.

DUKE of PORTLAND.

136	2	*Read*, Extraordinary.
Ibid.	25	*For* graſps, *read*, gaſps.
Ibid.	36	*For* 1719, *read*, 1709.
138	41	*After* 1755, *add*, *within the parentheſis*, and died Aug. 28, 1767.)
139	31	*Read*, His Grace is a Privy-Counſellor, LLD, &c. &c. — *After* Father, *line* 35, *add*, On Nov. 8, 1766, his Grace married, Lady Dorothy, daughter of the late, and ſiſter of the preſent Duke of Devonſhire.

DUKE of MANCHESTER.

149	2	*For* brining, *read*, bringing.
237	25	*After* parliament, *read*, but vacated his ſeat by accepting the government of South-Carolina, where he now reſides. His Lordſhip married, Miſs ——— Ballmer, by whom he had iſſue, a ſon born, on Dec. 24, 1766; and a daughter, born on Jan. 5, 1767.
Ibid.	42	*Read*, Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter of Sir James Daſhwood, &c.

DUKE of CHANDOS.

241	10	*Read*, courage.
249	28	Read, *the* town.
254	32	*Read*, upon.
258	44	*After* 1748, *add*, His Grace married to his third wife, on July 18, 1767, Miſs Major, daughter

Page. Line.

of Sir John Majory Bart. Member in the preſent parliament for Scarborough.

DUKE of DORSET.

192 18 *Read*, of Dorſet.

Ibid. 19 *For* ſtrick, *read*, ſtrict.

329 31, 32 *For* miries, *read*, miſeries.

331 16 *Read*, of Oxford.

346 38 *Read*, on May 10.

345 *ult.* *Add*, His Grace departed this life, on October 9, 1765, and was ſucceeded by his eldeſt ſon, Charles Earl of Middleſex, treated of in p. 346, His Grace on Feb. 10, 1766, was appointed Lord Lieutenant of the county of Kent, city of Canterbury, and county of the ſame, was called to the Privy-council; and ſoon after elected High-Steward of Stratford on Avon, in the county of Warwick.

347 5 His Lordſhip deceaſed in 1766, on his journey to Aix-la-Chapelle, where he was going for the recovery of his health.

348 43 *For* Lionel-Cranfield, *read*, Charles.

DUKE of BRIDGWATER.

367 42 *After* living, *add*, (but died himſelf, April 23, 1767.)

Note. After the Duke of Bridgwater, ſhould have been placed the Dukes of Northumberland and of Montagu, but this volume being long worked off at preſs before they were promoted to thoſe titles; the former will be found in Vol. V. p. 305, and the latter in Vol. III. p. 315.

MARQUIS of ROCKINGHAM.

394 21 *Read*, to Francis North, Lord North and Guildford, ſince Earl of Guildford, was ſucceeded by his only ſurviving brother, Thomas, &c.

Ibid. 25 *Read*, Lewis Monſon, ſecond ſon of John Lord Monſon, by Lady Margaret Watſon, youngeſt daughter of Lewis Watſon, the firſt Earl of Rockingham, upon condition, &c. *and dele, afterwards Lord Monſon, 2d ſon of Sir John Monſon, aforeſaid.*

396 23 *After* -cil, *add*, On Aug. 17, the ſame year, he was appointed Lord Lieutenant of the Weſt-Riding of Yorkſhire, and city and county of the city of York, and Cuſtos-Rotulorum of the North and Weſt Riding, and city and county of York, and Aynſtre of the ſame. On Aug. 2, 1766,

Page.	Line.	
		1766, he was ſucceeded as firſt Lord of the Treaſury, by the Duke of Grafton.
Ibid.	31	*After* Harrowden, *add*, Earl and Baron of Malton, in the kingdom of Ireland.
Ibid.	94	*After* Geo. II. *add*, Earl and Baron of Malton, in Ireland, Dec. 17, 1750, 23 Geo. II.

EARL of SHREWSBURY.

418	12	*Read*, ill-conduct.
431	19	*Read*, he reſigned in June, 1700.
Ibid.	39	*Inſtead of*, merely for foreign intereſt, *read*, to eſtabliſh the liberties of Europe.

EARL of DERBY.

483	35	*Read*, family.
485	13	*Read*, three ſons.

VOL. III.

EARL of PEMBROKE.

42	1	*For* that parliament, *read*, thoſe parliaments ſummoned to meet in May 1722, Aug. 1727, and June 13, 1734, &c.
Ibid.	13	*Read*, but died without iſſue.

EARL of LINCOLN.

85	40	*Read*, Sept. 7, 1728.

EARL of SUFFOLK and BERKS.

94	40	*After* Buckingham, *add* (which Lady deceaſed, Oct. 27, 1767.)
100	15	*Read*, married Maria-Conſtantia, elder daughter of Robert, now Lord Trevor. *After which add*, Her Ladyſhip on Jan 21, 1767, was delivered of a daughter; but died on Feb. 7, enſuing.

EARL of SALISBURY.

101	26	*Dele the word* ſole.

EARL of EXETER.

121	33	*For* Marſtown, *read*, Marſton.

EARL of NORTHAMPTON.

142	15	*Read*, Sir Edward Nicholas.
157	23	*After* Bart. *add*, and died in December, 1766.
158	7	*After* Townſhend, *add*, now Lord Viſcount Townſhend; *and dele*, eldeſt ſon and ſucceſſor to Charles Lord Viſcount Townſhend.

EARL of DENBIGH.

168	33	*Read*, John, the eldeſt ſon, of John Fielding, D.D. &c.

EARL of WESTMORELAND.

190	9	*After* marriage, *add*, her Ladyſhip deceaſing on Jan. 3, 1766, his Lordſhip married ſecondly, in

Page. Line.

July, 1767, the Lady Susan Gordon, ſiſter of Alexander, Duke of Gordon.

EARL of PETERBOROUGH.

197 3 *From the bottom, read,* the ſafety *of*, &c.

209 24, 25 *For* Henry Lord Sidney, *read,* Sidney Lord Godolphin.

214 33 *For* Henry, *read,* Charles.

EARL of STAMFORD.

223 2 *After* 1764, *add,* alſo a daughter born in 1767, which ſoon after died.

EARL of WINCHELSEA.

230 10 *Read,* 1553.

231 15 & 16 *For* Eſtwell, *read,* Eaſtwell.

236 16 *Dele* de-, *at the end of the line.*

240 25 *Read,* ſuſpicion.

252 15 *After* Bedford, *add,* His Lordſhip was ſucceeded in that poſt, July 30, 1766, by the Earl of Northington.

EARL of CHESTERFIELD.

262 26 *Read,* Scarborough.

267 34 *Read,* Philip.

273 7 *Read,* -withiel, till May 26, 1723, when he was appointed Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard.

Ibid. 10, 11 *Dele as follows:* On May 26, 1723, he was made Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard.

EARL of THANET.

283 8 *For* 1676, *read,* 1691.

286 15 *After* 1733, *dele,* and is unmarried, *and add,* On Aug. 30, 1767, his Lordſhip married ——— daughter of the late Lord John Sackville, 2d ſon of Lionel late Duke of Dorſet.

EARL of SANDWICH.

289 34 *For* George, *read,* Robert.

303 36 *After* Huntingdon, *add,* His Lordſhip, on March 1, 1766, married Lady Elizabeth, only ſurviving daughter of George, Earl of Halliſax; by whom his Lordſhip had iſſue a ſon and heir, born April 1, 1767.

EARL of CARDIGAN, now DUKE of MONTAGU.

This noble Lord, ſince this volume was worked off at preſs, has been, viz. on Oct. 28, 1766, created Marquis of Monthermer, and Duke of Montagu, and conſequently ſhould have place after the Duke of Northumberland. Therefore,

325 5 from the bottom, for *John Lord Brudenell*, read, *John Marquis of Monthermer*; and the neceſſary alterations

Page. Line.

alterations will be made by the reader, by changing every where, his Lordſhip, &c. into his Grace, &c. His TITLES now are—— George Montague, Duke of Montagu, Marquis of Monthermer, Earl of Cardigan, and Lord Brudenell.

At the end of the CREATIONS, *add*, Marquis of Monthermer, and Duke of Montagu, Oct. 28, 1766, 7 Geo. III.

EARL of ANGLESEY.

354 6 *After* himſelf, *add*, His Lordſhip ſoon after his return to England, on May 10, 1767, married Lucy, only daughter of George Lord Lyttelton.

EARL of DONCASTER.

389 3 *After* 1747, *add*, and died on March 24, 1767.

Ibid. 10 *After* eſtate, *add*, On Dec. 24, 1767, his Grace was inveſted with the enſigns of the antient order of the Thiſtle.

EARL of SHAFTESBURY.

425 1 *For* 1710, *read*, 1701.

Ibid. 29 *After* 1700, *add*, and in the year 1709, he married, &c.

426 17 *After* Weſtminſter, *add*, In 1766, he was elected Governor of the Turkey Company, in the room of the late John Earl Delawarr.

EARL of LITCHFIELD.

434 15, 16 *Read*, Robert Leake.

435 14 *After* Calvert, *read*, ſon of Lord Baltimore, of Ireland, who died before his father, in 1715.

EARL of BERKELEY.

445 11 *For* Edmund, *read*, Richard.

469 12 *After* 1711, *add*, in which he was ſucceeded by Henry Duke of Beaufort.

470 32 *After* 1750, *add*, who on May 10, 1767, was married to the Hon. Mr. Craven, brother of Lord Craven.

470 42 *After* 1745, *add*, His Lordſhip on July 2, 1766, was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Glouceſter, and of the cities of Briſtol and Glouceſter, Conſtable of the Caſtle of St. Briavell's, and Warden of the Foreſt of Dean; and on Auguſt 19, following, choſen High Steward of Glouceſter.

EARL of ABINGDON.

477 24 *After* gentleman, *add*, by whom on Oct. 13, 1766, her Ladyſhip had two ſons, named Joſeph-Spencer, and Francis-Cecil.

Page.	Line.	
477	27	*After* Eleonora, *add*, married on July 7, 1766, to Philip, Lord Viſcount Wenman, of the kingdom of Ireland.

VOL. IV.

EARL of HOLDERNESSE.

37	6	*After* Bute, *add*, In Oct. 1765, his Lordſhip was conſtituted Lord Warden of the Cinque-Ports, and Governor of Dover-caſtle for life.

EARL of PLYMOUTH.

95	24	*Read*, in the reigns of Charles II. and James II.
97	*ult.*	*Read*, 4th, Lady Elizabeth, 5th, Henry.
98	1	*Read*, 6th, Lady Anne, 7th, Lady Sarah.
Ibid.	2	*Read*, 8th, Andrews, *and dele* Lady.
Ibid.	3	*After* 1757, *add*, alſo a ſon born in 1765.
Ibid.	12	*After* ſhire, *read*, Comptroller of Flintſhire and Cheſhire, and is LLD.

EARL of SCARBOROUGH.

121	26	*Read*, this life, Jan. 29.
120	27	*After* Wales, *add*, He died in May, 1766.
123	2	*After* 1758, *add*, his Lordſhip is a Member of the Privy-Council.

EARL of ROCHFORD.

125	26	*Read*, meſſage.
128	43	*Dele*, now.
Ibid.	44	*For* reſides, *read*, reſided.
Ibid.	*ult.*	*After* Sovereign, *add*, until 1765, when he returned home; and on July 1, 1766, was appointed Ambaſſador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to the Moſt Chriſtian King.

EARL of ALBEMARLE.

137	19	*Dele*, and.
Ibid.	20	*After* Exeter, *add*, and ſoon after was appointed Dean of Windſor.
138	4	*Dele*, has.
Ibid.	5	*For* ever ſince, *read*, to his Royal Highneſs's death, one, &c.
Ibid.	24	*After* received, *add*, his Lordſhip is a Knight Companion of the moſt noble order of the Garter.
136	*antepenult.*	*After* bedchamber, *add*, on July 20, 1765, he was appointed a Lord of the Admiralty, and is Colonel of Marines.
137	16	*After* Portſmouth, *add*, on Aug. 17, 1765, he was appointed Colonel of the 14th regiment of foot.

EARL

Page.	Line.	
		EARL of COVENTRY.
141	13	*For* ſixteen years, *read*, about fourteen years and three months: *The former being a miſtake of Lord Clarendon.*
153	18	*After* London, *add*, Her Ladyſhip on July 20, 1765, was delivered of a ſon.
		EARL of JERSEY.
170	18	*For* 1760, *read*, 1650.
178	18	*After* Kent, *add*, he is a Lord of the Privy-Council.
Ibid.	30	*After* 1763, *add*, on July 12, 1765, his Lordſhip was ſworn of the Privy-Council, and is Vice-Chamberlain to his Majeſty.
		EARL of GODOLPHIN.
		This title became extinct ſince the volume went to preſs, by the deceaſe of Francis the late Earl on Jan. 17, 1766; but the title of Baron Godolphin of Helſtone, according to the limitation of the patent, devolved on the preſent Lord, of whom in his place.
208	4	*Read*, a Member of the Privy-Council.
		EARL of CHOLMONDELEY.
229	5	*After* Ireland, *add*, (which he reſigned in 1762.)
Ibid.	14	*After* 1731, *add*, His Lordſhip, by his preſent Majeſty, was continued at the council-board, and in his offices of Lord Lieutenant, Cuſtos Rotulorum, and Vice-Admiral of Cheſhire, Governor of Cheſter-Caſtle, and Steward of the royal manor of Shane in Surry, and ranks as a Lieutenant-General.
		EARL of OXFORD.
263	26, 27	*For*, the two parliaments called in 1710 and 1713, *read*, in 1734 and 1742.
271	13	*Read*, unanimouſly acquitted, of the firſt charge, by his Peers.
271 *and* 272	41 1	Lady Abigail was the eldeſt daughter, and Lady Elizabeth, the youngeſt.
274	9	*After* integrity, *add*, In 1768, he ſerved the high office of Lord Mayor of that city.
Ibid.	27	*After* Muſeum, *add*, Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the counties of Hereford and Radnor, and LLD.
		EARL of STRAFFORD.
289	—	This whole account of the proceedings againſt the Earl, bears ſtrong marks of party attachment; ſince he owed his proſecution to his guilt,

Page.	Line.	
		and his puniſhment to the inconteſtible evidence of his crimes: inſomuch that the King declared, he ſhould not think him fit to exerciſe for the future, even the office of a Conſtable.
288	42	*After* James Vernon, Eſq; *add* (now Lord Orwell, of the kingdom of Ireland.)
297	7	*Dele*, but as yet hath no iſſue, *and add*, by whom his Lordſhip had iſſue a ſon, born Sept. 27, 1766. His Lordſhip is a Fellow of the Royal Society.
		EARL of DARTMOUTH.
312	42	*After* Bart. *add* (who died Jan. 20, 1768.)
314	8	*After* Litchfield, *add*, was in Aug. 1765, appointed firſt Commiſſioner of Trade and Plantations, having on July 26, been ſworn of the Privy-Council. He married, &c.
Ibid.	14	*After* 1759, *add*, a fifth ſon, born Oct. 25, 1766, and a ſixth Dec. 18, 1767.
		EARL of TANKERVILLE.
339	22	*After* nuptials, *add*, His Lordſhip deceaſed on Oct. 27, 1767, and was ſucceeded in his honours and eſtates by his eldeſt and only ſurviving ſon, Charles Lord Oſſulſton, now 4th Earl of Tankerville.
		EARL of AYLESFORD.
341	18	*Dele* John, *and after* Eſq; *add*, Member for Maidſtone, in 1757.
Ibid.	*Ibid.*	*After* Mary, *add*, their Mother died, Nov. 5, 1767.
342	12	*After* 1754, *add*, alſo a ſon, born Sept. 27, 1766. His Lordſhip is LLD.
		EARL of BRISTOL.
358	3	*For* is, *read*, was.
Ibid.	5	*After* Privy-Seal, *add*, In July 1767, he was promoted to the biſhoprick of Cloyne, in Ireland, and in Jan. 1767, tranſlated to the ſee of Derry, on the deceaſe of Dr. Barnard.
Ibid.	10	*After*, Phipps, Eſq; *add*, now Lord Mulgrave of the kingdom of Ireland.
Ibid.	19	*For* 1753, *read*, 1743.
Ibid.	22	*For* on, *read*, in.
Ibid.	*ult.*	*After* 1762, *add*, On Sept. 2, 1766, his Lordſhip was declared Lord Lieutenant of Ireland (which he reſigned in 1767) and ſworn of the Privy-Council.
359	4	*After* Oct. 19, *add*, 1714.
		EARL GRANVILLE.
371	9	*For* attack, *read*, attacks.
404	27	*Read*, houſe.

Page.	Line.	
410	18	*Read*, Georgina.
Ibid.	21	*For* Lord Viſcount, *read*, Earl.
Ibid.	22	*Read*, Gower.

VOL. V.

EARL of HALIFAX.

1	5	*Read*, Halifax.
10	31	*For* then, *in the parentheſis*, *read*, before, in 1762.
Ibid.	32	*After* plantations, *add*, when conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.
Ibid.	47	*After* 1761, *add*, She was married, in 1765, to John, Viſcount Hinchinbroke, eldeſt ſon and heir of the Earl of Sandwich.
9	45	*After* Rolls, *read*, which Lady died in 1766, after her huſband. Her daughter married, in 1767, George Wrighte, Eſq;

EARL COWPER.

28	28	*For* Chancellor, *read*, Attorney-General.
29	17	*Dele*, Viſcount.
30	29	*For* he, *read*, ſhe.
Ibid.	29, 30	*For* Lord Viſcount, *read*, Earl.

EARL of HARBOROUGH.

41	8	*From the bottom, for* John Thoroton, *read* Robert Thoroton.
Ibid.	11, 12	*For*, who is now the only ſurvivor of the branch of Carr-Coulſton, *read*, who died in October 1767, and was the laſt male of that branch.

EARL STANHOPE.

46	7	*For* 1722, *read*, 1732.

EARL of POMFRET.

49	41	*Read*, family.
54	38	*Read*, camp.
56	25	*After* fortune, *read*, by whom he had iſſue a daughter, Lady Charlotte, born Nov. 26, 1766; and on Jan. 8, 1768, a ſon and heir —— Lord Lempſter.
Ibid.	17	*After* Amelia, *read*, married on Sept. 18, 1767, to William Clayton, of Harlingford, in Bucks, Eſq; member for Great-Marlow, in that county.

EARL WALDEGRAVE.

100	*ult.*	*Dele* always; *for the direction*, *read*, Walpole.
101	8	*Read*, Maria, ſecond natural daughter.
Ibid.	9	*Dele*, the 2d Edward.
Ibid.	40	*After* 1758, *add*, alſo Lady ——, born Feb. 21, 1765.

EARL

Page.	Line.	
		EARL of ASHBURNHAM.
112	42	*Read*, ſuddenly.
115	23	*After* 1762, *read*, On July 20, 1765, his Lordſhip was appointed Maſter of the Great Wardrobe, having been, on the 12th, ſworn of the Privy-Council. He is LLD.
Ibid.	33	*After* Frances, *add*, alſo Lady ——, born June 18, 1765.
		EARL of EFFINGHAM.
129	6	*After* train, *add*, his Lordſhip ranks as Captain of foot.
		COUNTESS of YARMOUTH.
130	17	*Dele*, now reſides, *and read*, where ſhe died, in the year 1765, and the title became extinct.
		EARL of ORFORD.
132	20	*Read*, Roger Bigot, Earl of Norfolk.
151	27	*After* was, *read*, elected for Caſtle-Riſing, in 1700 and 1701, and firſt choſen, &c.
Ibid.	28	*For* 1700, *read*, 1702.
153	17	*For* 1745-6, *read*, 1744-5.
156	4	*Read*, Bed-chamber.
		EARL of HARRINGTON.
161	36	*For* Catherine, *read*, Caroline, *and after* 1746-7, *add*, married Oct. 7, 1765, to Kenneth Mackenzie, ſince created Viſcount Fortroſe, was brought to bed of a daughter, July 6, 1766, and deceaſed March 24, 1767.
Ibid.	37	*After* 1740, *read*, and married on April 16, 1767, to Richard, Earl of Barrymore.
		EARL of PORTSMOUTH.
178	30	*For* 1552, *read*, 1582.
Ibid.	33	*Read*, Lords-Juſtices.
192	35	*Read*, Elizabeth.
193	7	*Dele*, of.
Ibid.	16	*Read*, 1657.
198	8	*After* incluſive, *read*, who on Dec. 18, 1767, was delivered of a ſon ——, Viſcount Lymington.
		EARL BROOKE and of WARWICK.
211	18	*Read*, archers.
Ibid.	41	*Dele*, year.
214	15	*Read*, adjoining.
Ibid.	37	*Read*, ſucceeded.
216	29	*Read*, Richard.
Ibid.	40	*Read*, Duke of.
217	13	*Read*, the throne.
Ibid.	18	*Read*, however.
221	14	*Read*, daughter.

Page.	Line.	
225	5	*From the bottom, read,* in the.
238	9	*Read,* Elizabeth.

EARL GOWER.

240	7	*Read,* Stittenham.
250	1	*For* Devonſhire, *read,* Marlborough.
250	11	*After* hoſpital, *add,* on December 23, 1767, his Lordſhip was declared Preſident of the Council.

EARL of BUCKS.

252	26	*Read,* Blenerhaſſet.
Ibid.	31	*Read,* Audrey.
355	28	*Dele,* of.
257	32	*After* bedchamber, *add,* which he reſigned, Nov. 6, 1767.
Ibid.	3	*From the bottom, after* daughter, *add,* a ſon, born in March, 1767.

EARL of NORTHUMBERLAND, now DUKE.

This noble Peer, as before obſerved, ſhould have been placed after the Duke of Bridgwater, but the ſheets were worked off at preſs, long before he was raiſed to the title of Duke, of which we have taken proper notice, however, at p. 499.

VOL. VI.

EARL of EGREMONT.

23	18	*After* 1756, *read,* their mother, on July 8, 1767, took to her ſecond huſband, Count Bruhl, a Saxon Nobleman.

EARL TEMPLE.

51	37	*After* guards, *read,* and Lieutenant-General of the Ordnance, and, &c.
52	14	*For* Nov. 12, 1747, *read,* Dec. 4, 1741.
Ibid.	20	*After* Privy-Council, *add, inſtead of,* but, in Jan. 1756, reſigned his place of Treaſurer of the Navy, *read,* he was removed from his poſt of Treaſurer of the Navy in Nov. 1755, was reſtored thereto in Dec. 1756, removed a ſecond time, April 6, 1757, and again appointed June 27, 1757.
Ibid.	33	*After* Bute, *read,* in which he was ſucceeded on July 15, 1765, by the Marquis of Rockingham.
53	18	*After* James, *add,* (who was elected, in 1766, member for Thirſk, in Yorkſhire, in the room of his uncle Henry, appointed a Commiſſioner of the Cuſtoms.)

Page.	Line.	
53	36	*After* Conſtantinople, *add*, In 1766, he was appointed one of the Commiſſioners of the Cuſtoms.
54	2	*After* Pitt, *add*, now Earl of Chatham.

EARL HARCOURT.

66	*Note* k,	*Read*, Ex Inform. J. Perſall Cli.
73	11, 12	*Dele*, and widow of Sir Samuel Aſtry, of Henbury in Gloceſterſhire, Knt.
74	*antepenult.*	*After* St. Albans, *add*, he married on October 8, 1765, Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter of George Lord Vernon of Sudbury, by his third marriage.

EARL of HERTFORD.

77	34, 35	*For* Francis Ligonier's, *read*, Edward Ligonier's.
78	6	*After* conduct, *add*, on July 10, 1765, he was ſworn a member of his Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-Council, and one of the principal Secretaries of State, which he reſigned in Jan. 1768, and on Feb. 1, was appointed Colonel of the 4th regiment of Dragoons, in the room of Field-Marſhal Sir Robert Rich, deceaſed.
Ibid.	9	*After* Anne, *add*, married, June 14, 1767, to the Hon. John Damer, eldeſt ſon and heir of Joſeph Lord Milton.
Ibid.	17	*After* houſhold, *add*, who died in Oct. 1767.
Ibid.	36	*After* bedchamber, *add*, on Auguſt 1, 1765, his Lordſhip was appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, in the room of the Viſcount Weymouth, and was ſucceeded therein Sept. 26, 1766, by the Earl of Briſtol, when his Lordſhip was conſtituted Maſter of the Horſe to his Majeſty. On Dec. 4, in the ſame year, he was ſucceeded in that poſt by the Duke of Ancaſter, and was appointed Lord Chamberlain of his Majeſty's Houſhold.
Ibid.	*ult.*	*After* 1761, *add*, on Feb. 1, 1768, his Lordſhip married Miſs Windſor, daughter of the late Lord Windſor. He is member for Leſtwithiel, in Cornwall, and Colonel of the Warwickſhire militia.
79	1	*After* 1744, *read*, married on March 15, 1766, to the Earl of Drogheda, of Ireland.
Ibid.	3	*After* 1747, *add*, married May 29, 1766, to Robert Stewart, Eſq.

EARL of GUILDFORD.

94	*ult.*	*For* tutor, *read*, governor.
95	7	*After* 1752, *add*, his Lordſhip is High Steward of Banbury.

Page.	Line.	
95	25	*After* Bart. *add*, her Ladyſhip died in Dec. 1766.
Ibid.	31	*After* Majeſty, *add*, On Aug. 19, 1766, his Lordſhip was appointed joint Receiver, and Paymaſter of the forces, with George Cook, Eſq; and on Dec. 3, was ſworn of the Privy-Council. On Dec. 1, 1767, he was appointed a Lord Commiſſioner of the Treaſury, and Chancellor and Under-treaſurer of the Exchequer.
Ibid.	36	*After* 1760, *add*, alſo a ſon, born Feb. 7, 1766.
		EARL CORNWALLIS.
112	28	*After* rank, *add*, On Aug. 6, 1765, his Lordſhip was appointed Aid-de-camp to the King, with the rank of Colonel of foot; on March 1, 1766, Colonel of the 33d regiment of foot, and on Dec. 20, the ſame year, Warden, and Chief Juſtice in Eyre of the foreſts, &c. ſouth of Trent.
Ibid.	40	*Read*, Argent, reguardant, attired, &c.
		EARL of HARDWICKE.
114	30	*After* Eſq; *add*, by whom he had a daughter, born July 29, 1765.
115	*ult.*	*Read*, of any of.
117	2	*After* Cambridgeſhire, *add*, High Steward of the Univerſity of Cambridge, Fellow, &c.
		EARL of DARLINGTON.
142	31	*For* 1736, *read*, 1763.
143	34	Alſo a ſon, born July 27, 1766, —— Viſcount Barnard.
		EARL FAUCONBERG.
160	3	*After* 1742, *add*, married on May 29, 1766, to ——, daughter of Sir Matthew Lamb, Bart. member for Peterborough in the late parliament; by whom he had iſſue a daughter, born Jan. 23, 1767; and another daughter, born Dec. 18, 1767.
Ibid.	9	*After* bury, *add*, his Lordſhip is a Privy-Counſellor.
		EARL of ILCHESTER.
166	18	*For* poſſeſſion, *read*, proceſſion.
		EARL DELAWARR.
192	12	*Read*, Fellow of the Royal Society. *And dele thoſe words, line* 19.
Ibid.	31	*After* Clavering, *read*, ſhe died in May, 1766.
Ibid.	41	*After* month, *read*, Upon the deceaſe of his Lordſhip's father, on March 16, 1766, he ſucceeded to his honours and eſtates, and was ſoon after appointed Colonel of the firſt troop of horſe guards, in his room, and is Maſter of the Horſe to the Queen.

Page.	Line.	
192	44	*After* ſons, *read*, John Viſcount Cantalupe, born, &c.

EARL TALBOT.

194	30	*Read*, Lyttelton, *in two places.*

EARL of NORTHINGTON.

204	21	*After* 1764, *add*, His Lordſhip having reſigned the ſeals, was on July 30, 1766, appointed Preſident of his Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-Council.

EARL of RADNOR.

The account of this noble family, ſhould have followed that of the Earl of Northington, but the ſheets were worked off before his Lordſhip was created an Earl. Therefore it will be found, page 413, with notice taken of the alteration, page 421.

EARL SPENCER.

The ſame apology muſt be made for Earl Spencer's family not being placed in its proper place. It will be ſeen, page 422, with notice of his creation to that honour, page 423.

VISCOUNT HEREFORD.

214	28, 29	*For* Devereux, *read*, Hereford.

VISCOUNT MONTAGUE.

226	34	*Dele*, is unmarried, *and read*, and married July 2, 1765, the dowager Lady Halkerton, by whom he has a daughter, born Feb. 5, 1767.
Ibid.	38	*After* Bart. *read*, ſhe died Sept. 21, 1767, and their father deceaſing April 23, 1767, was ſucceeded in his honours and eſtates by his ſaid ſon Anthony, the 7th and preſent Viſcount, who the ſame year conformed to the eſtabliſhed church.

VISCOUNT SAY and SELE.

238	21	*After* Eſq; *add*, his Lordſhip is LLD.

VISCOUNT TOWNSHEND.

248	23	*For*, declined going over to that kingdom, *read*, but was removed April 9, 1717.
Ibid.	42	*For* June 9, *read*, June 29.
249	38	*After* commencement, *add*, on July 12, 1765, he was appointed a Lord of the Treaſury.
Ibid.	41	*After* 1732-3, *add*, who on Dec. 1, 1767, was appointed joint Paymaſter of the Forces, in the room of Francis Lord North, and on the 3d was ſworn of the Privy-Council. He was member for Whitchurch, in Shropſhire, in the late parliament.
251	3	*After* 1762, *add*, and is now Admiral of the Blue.

Page.	Line.	
253	28	*After* 1762, *read*, on July 30, 1765, he was appointed a Lord of the Admiralty, and on Aug. 2, 1766, firſt Lord of the Treaſury, and Chancellor and Under-Treaſurer of the Exchequer, in which high ſtations he deceaſed, on Sept. 4, 1767, to the great regret of all lovers of their country.
Ibid.	32	*After* Ladyſhip, *add*, (of whom hereafter, as Baroneſs of Greenwich.)
255	26	On Aug. 12, 1767, his Lordſhip was appointed Lord Lieutenant, &c. of Ireland, where he now reſides, beloved and honoured by the whole nation.
Ibid.	34	*After* following, *read*, alſo a ſon, Frederick-Patrick, born at Dublin, Dec. 20, 1767.
		VISCOUNT WEYMOUTH.
269	5	*After* Harcourt, *add*, In May, 1765, his Lordſhip was declared Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, in the room of Hugh, Earl of Northumberland, but ſoon after was ſucceeded in that ſtation, by Francis, Earl of Hertford. On Jan. 19, 1768, he was ſworn one of his Majeſty's principal Secretaries of State, in the room of the Right Hon. Henry-Seymour Conway.
Ibid.	15	*After* 1764, *add*, two ſons, ſtill-born, June 25, 1766, and a daughter, born Aug. 20, 1767.
		VISCOUNT BOLINGBROKE and St. JOHN.
281	*antepenult.*	*After* 1760, *add*, is Lieutenant-Colonel of the 6th regiment of foot, and, &c.
282	11	*Dele*, and ſtill retains that honourable office.
		VISCOUNT FALMOUTH.
287	14	*Read*, Hugh and Theophilus-Matthew.
289	43	*After* following, *add*, He died on April 30, 1767.
302	9	*After* 1744, *add*, who was elected member for Truro, in the late parliament, in the room of his uncle, General John Boſcawen.
Ibid.	11	*After* 1747, *add*, and married on Jan. 2, 1766, to Henry, Duke of Beaufort.
		VISCOUNT LEINSTER.
411	19	*After* Offaley, *add*, on Nov. 15, 1766, his Lordſhip was further advanced to the dignity of Duke of Leinſter.
Ibid.	36	*For* Robert, now Earl of Offaley, *read*, now Marquis of Kildare, member in parliament for the city of Dublin.
411	44	*After* 1763, *add*, alſo Lord ———, born in Dec. 1767.
Ibid.	45	*After* Fitz-Gerald, *read*, Duke of Leinſter, Marquis, &c.

Page. Line.

412 9 *After* Geo. II. *add*, Duke of Leinſter, Nov. 15, 1766, 6 Geo. III.

VISCOUNT FOLKESTONE, now EARL of RADNOR.

418 *antepenult.* *After* Knt. *add*, by whom he has iſſue a ſon, born Nov. 3, 1767.

It has already been noticed that his Lordſhip's family is miſplaced, and the reader is deſired to make the proper alterations, as his Lordſhip's eldeſt ſon is now ſtiled Viſcount Folkeſtone, his daughters, Ladies, &c. &c.

VISCOUNT SPENCER, now EARL SPENCER.

What is ſaid above of the Earl of Radnor, will ſuffice in regard to Earl Spencer.

VISCOUNT WENTWORTH.

435 39 *Read*, three daughters, Judith, Elizabeth, and Sophia. His Lordſhip is LLD.

VISCOUNT COURTENAY.

477 43,44 *Inſtead of theſe two lines, read*, In 1762, his Lordſhip married Frances, daughter of Mr. Thomas Clack, of Wallingford, in Berks, by whom he has iſſue four daughters; Frances, born Jan 6, 1763; Charlotte, born Feb. 14, 1764; Iſabella, born June 20, 1765; Elizabeth, born Sept. 2, 1766,

LORD LE DESPENCER.

495 35 *For*, His Lordſhip is married, *read*, His Lordſhip married ——, daughter of Henry Gould, Eſq; deceaſed, and her Ladyſhip's mother, died Jan. 21, 1767.

BERKELEY, LORD BOTETOURT.

We deferred giving an account of this noble Peer, as may be ſeen, p. 537, for an evident reaſon; where his Lordſhip's title, creation, arms, creſt, ſupporters, motto, and chief ſeat will be found, with the plate of his arms.

In the account of the family of the Earl of Berkeley, Vol. III. p. 439, the origin of this noble Lord will be ſeen, and that Sir Maurice Berkeley, the common anceſtor of the Lord Berkeley of Stratton, and of the Lord Botetourt, was the ſecond ſon of Maurice, the ſeventh Lord Berkeley, of Berkeley caſtle, by Eve, his firſt wife, daughter of Eudo la Zouche, and ſiſter of William, Lord Zouche of Harringworth; which Maurice Lord Berkeley, died on May 31, 1326, 19 Edw. II.

This Sir Maurice Berkeley, had iſſue, by Margaret ——, his wife, Sir Thomas Berkeley, who married Catherine, daughter of Sir John de Bitton, Knt. and dying A. D. 1360, left iſſue,

one

one ſon, Maurice, who married Catherine, youngeſt daughter and coheir of John Lord Botetourt, of which barony it is neceſſary to premiſe an account.

Aufrid de Botetourt, according to Dugdale, in 2 Hen. II. paid 5l. 4s. into the King's Exchequer, for the farm of Wendover and Hoghton, in com. Bucks. In the reign of King John, lived William de Botetourt, of Mudham, who was the ſon of Sir Geoffrey de Botetourt, of Weley, in Worceſterſhire. This William was the father of John de Botetourt who, 19 Edward I. was made Governor of the Caſtle of St. Briavel, in com. Glouc. and Warden of the Foreſt of Dean. In 22 Edward I. he was Admiral of the King's fleet, fitted out for an expedition to Gaſcoigne. In 24 Edw. I. he was on another expedition into Gaſcoigne, and in 25, 26, and 28 of that reign, in thoſe expeditions made to Scotland. In 30 Edw. I. having married Maud, ſiſter and heir of Otto, the ſon and heir of Beatrice de Beauchamp, daughter of William de Beauchamp, and widow of William de Munchenſi of Edwardeſton, and doing his homage, he had livery of the lands of her inheritance. In 32 Edw. I. he procured the King's charter for free-warren in all the lands of his demeſne within the lordſhips of Dywike, Kaerdington, and Wouton, in com. Bedford. In 34 Edw. I. he again attended the King into Scotland, and in the firſt year of Edw. II. was again appointed Conſtable of St. Briavel's Caſtle. In 4 Edw. II. he ſerved in the wars of Scotland, and in 5 Edw. II. was Governor of Framlingham Caſtle, in com. Suff. He was near that time in confederacy with Guy de Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, on Barnabas eve, for the ſeizure of Piers de Gaveſton, the King's favourite, at Dodington, in com. Oxon. and by a writing, under his hand and ſeal, promiſed to live and die with the ſaid Earl in that quarrel. In 8 Edw. II. he was Admiral of the King's fleet deſigned againſt Scotland, and in the 12th of that Prince ſerved again in the Scotiſh war. He was ſummoned to parliament from 33 Edw. I. to 18 Edw. II. and deceaſing in that year, appeared to be ſeized, in right of his ſaid wife Maud, of the manor of Diliwyke, one moiety of the manor of Bonhall, the third part of the manor of Kerdynton, &c. Alſo of the manor of Mendleſham, in the county of Suffolk; and that John, his grandſon, ſon of Thomas, his eldeſt ſon and heir, who died in his father's life-time, A. D. 1322, was his heir, then of 7 years of age. He had two other ſons, viz. 1. Sir John, ſeated at Beauchamp-Otes, who died in 1319, leaving iſſue, by Margaret, his wife, a ſon John, who by Joan, daughter and heir of John Gernon, had iſſue a daughter and heir, Joan, the wife of Sir Robert Swinburn, Knt. 2. Otto, ſeated at Mendleſham, who, by Sybilla his wife, had a ſon John, who marrying Catherine, daughter of Sir William Weyland, Knt.

had,

had, by her, an only daughter and heir, Joan, wife of John, ſon and heir of Sir John Knivet, Knt. Alſo two daughters; Joan, who in 33 Edw. I. was contracted to Robert, ſon and heir of Robert Fitz-Walter, lord of Wodeham, in Eſſex; and Elizabeth, firſt the wife of William Lord Latimer, and 2dly, of Robert Ufford.

The ſaid Thomas, his eldeſt ſon, was with his father in the war of Scotland, in 11 Edw. II. and by his marriage with Joan, one of the ſiſters and coheirs of John de Someri, Baron of Dudley, gained a great inheritance to his family. Their ſon John, abovementioned, as heir to his grandfather, John de Botetourt, in 12 Edw. III. had livery of his mother's lands, through the King's ſpecial favour, upon performing his homage, though he had not made proof of his age.

This John, in 14 Edw. III. being then ſeated at Weley, gave the advowſons of the churches of Clint and Rouley, with the chapels thereunto belonging, unto the canons of Hales-Owen, to whom his mother had been a great benefactreſs. In 16 Edw. III. he attended the King in his expedition to France, being of the retinue with Thomas de Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, as he was in 21 Edw. III. with William de Clinton, Earl of Huntingdon. In 26 of that reign, upon apprehenſion of a French invaſion, he was commiſſioned, together with the Earl of Warwick, and others, for the array of all knights, eſquires, &c. in the counties of Warwick and Leiceſter, for the defence of the kingdom. In 29 and 33 Edw. III. he was in the wars of France, and in 40 and 42, in thoſe of Gaſcoigne.

He married Joyce, daughter of William Lord Zouche, of Harringworth, aunt and heir of Hugh le Zouche of Ricard's Caſtle, by whom he had iſſue, John de Botetourt, who married Maud, daughter of John, Lord Gray of Rotherfield, and died before his father, and alſo ſix daughters, viz. 1. Maud, abbeſs of Poleſworth; 2. Anneyne, a nun; 3. Elizabeth, married to Sir Baldwyn Freville, Knt. but died before cohabition; 4. Alice, wife of ——— Kyriel, whoſe only daughter and heir, Joan, was the wife of John Wykes, and had two daughters, Agnes, who died unmarried, and Joyce, the wife of Hugh Stanley. 5. Joyce, firſt married to Sir Baldwyn Freville, Knt. and afterwards to Sir Adam Peſhal, or Perſhal*, by whom no iſſue; but by her firſt huſband had a ſon, Sir Baldwyn Freville, Knt. who by Joan, daughter of Sir Tho-

* This ſeems evidently a miſtake, for Sir Adam Peſhal, or Perſal, Knt. Sheriff of Salop in 21 and 22 Rich. II. left by his wife, this Joyce or Jocoſa, two daughters; Margaret, wife of Richard, ſon of Reginald de Motoun, com. Salop, who by this marriage became poſſeſſed of Weſton under Lizard; and Joanna, wife of William de Birmingham, who had by her two ſons, William, a knight in 36 Hen. VI. and Thomas. See Stemm. Fam. Peſhal, Btti. and Eſch. No. 7. Hen. V.

mas Green, Knt. had iſſue another Sir Baldwyn, and three daughters; Elizabeth, wife of Sir Thomas Ferrers, 2d ſon of William Lord Ferrers of Groby, the heireſs of whoſe family is Charlotte, the preſent Baroneſs Ferrers; Margaret, wife, firſt, of Sir Hugh Willoughby, anceſtor of the Lord Middleton, and 2dly, of Sir Richard Bingham, Knt. and Joyce, wife of Sir Roger Aſton, Knt. from whom the late Lord Aſton of Forfar deſcended. 6. Catherine, wife of Maurice de Berkeley, as before recited, anceſtor of the preſent Lord Botetourt.

He was ſummoned to parliament from 16 Edw. III. until 9 Richard II. incluſive, and died in the laſt mentioned year. Whereupon Joyce, the wife of Sir Hugh Burnell, Knt. was found to be his couſin and next heir, being daughter of John, ſon of his ſon John, who died in his father's life-time, as above recited. The ſaid Sir Hugh Burnel, doing his homage the ſame year, had livery of his wife's inheritance; but ſhe dying without iſſue, Jan. 1, 7 Hen. IV. Maud and Anneyne, or Agnes Botetourt, Maurice de Berkeley, Agnes and Joyce Wykes, were found to be her couſins and heirs (of which Maud and Agnes were nuns,) viz. Maurice Berkeley, ſon of Catherine, ſiſter of John de Botetourt, father of the ſaid Joyce; Agnes and Joyce Wykes, being daughters of Joan, daughter of Alice the other ſiſter of the ſaid John Botetourt.

I now return to the abovementioned Maurice de Berkeley, who married the ſaid Catherine, daughter and coheir of John Lord Botetourt. He was ſeated at Stoke-Gifford, in the county of Glouceſter, and dying in 1361, left iſſue, Sir Maurice, who took to wife Joan, daughter of Sir John Dinham, Knt. ahd dying in 1400, left her with child of,

Maurice Berkeley, who by his wife Ellen, daughter of Sir William Montfort, Knt. had an only ſon, Sir William Berkely, who was made a Knight of the Bath, at the coronation of Richard III. He was attainted in 1485, but in 1496, was fully reſtored. He died in 1501, leaving iſſue, by his wife Anne, daughter of Sir Humphry Stafford, Knt. one ſon,

Sir Richard Berkeley, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Humphry Coningſby, Knt. and by her had iſſue two ſons and three daughters, viz. Sir John, of whom preſently; Sir Maurice, of Burton, in Somerſetſhire, anceſtor of the Lord Berkeley of Stratton; Mary; Frances; and Anne, wife of Thomas Speke, Eſq. He died in 1514, and was ſucceeded by his ſaid eldeſt ſon,

Sir John Berkeley, of Stoke-Gifford, who died in 1546, having married Iſabel, daughter of Sir William Dennis, Knt. by whom he had iſſue a ſon and heir,

Sir Richard Berkeley, who received the honour of knighthood, Aug. 1, 1574. He married two wives, viz. Elizabeth, daugh-

ter

ter of Sir William Read, of Glouceſter, Knt. and Eleanor, daughter of Robert Jermie of Norfolk, Eſq; and relict of Sir Robert Roe, Knt. and Alderman of London. By the former he had iſſue three daughters, Elizabeth, Mary, and Catherine, and two ſons, Henry and William; and dying in 1604, was ſucceeded by his eldeſt ſon,

Henry Berkeley, Eſq; who dying Feb. 7, 1608, left iſſue by his wife Maurice, daughter of Thomas Throgmorton, Eſq; an only ſon,

Richard Berkeley, Eſq; who had two wives, Mary, daughter of Robert Roe, Eſq; by whom he had an only ſon, Maurice; and Jane, daughter of Thomas Memott, Eſq; by whom he had no iſſue. He deceaſed May 12, 1661, and was ſucceeded by his grandſon, Richard, ſon of Sir Maurice Berkeley, his only ſon, who died in his life-time, in 1654. This Sir Maurice was twice married, firſt to Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Edward Coke, Knt. the famous Judge, by whom he had one daughter, Frances, who died in 1660, without iſſue; and, 2dly, to Mary, daughter of Sir George Tipping, of the county of Oxford, Knt. by whom he had iſſue the ſaid

Richard Berkeley, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Henry Syms, of Frampton-Cotterel, in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; by whom at his death in 1671, he had iſſue two ſons, viz. 1. George Berkeley, Eſq; who died in 1685, without iſſue, by his wife Jane, daughter of Maurice Berkeley, Viſcount Fitz-Harding. 2. John-Syms Berkeley, who married firſt Suſan, daughter of Sir Thomas Fowle, Knt. but by her (who died in 1696) had no iſſue. His ſecond wife was Elizabeth, daughter and coheir of Walter Norborne, of Colne, in Wiltſhire, Eſq; (by his wife, Frances, daughter and coheir of Sir Edmund Bacon, of Redgrave, in Suffolk, Bart. and relict of Edward, Viſcount Hereford) by whom he had iſſue a ſon, Norborne, and a daughter, Elizabeth, married to Charles Noel, Duke of Beaufort, mother of the preſent Duke. His ſon,

Norborne Berkeley, of Stoke-Gifford, Eſq; claiming the barony of Botetourt, after a ſolemn hearing in the Houſe of Peers, had his claim allowed, and was ſummoned to parliament as Baron Botetourt, by deſcent, in 1765, 5 Geo. III.

While his Lordſhip was a commoner, he ſerved in the 9th, 10th, 11th, and 12th parliaments of Great Britain, for the county of Glouceſter; and upon his preſent Majeſty's acceſſion to the throne was appointed Groom of his bedchamber, which he reſigned when he took his ſeat in the Houſe of Peers. In 1767, he was appointed a Lord of the Bedchamber; is Colonel of the ſouthern battalion of the Glouceſterſhire militia, and a Doctor of Laws.

BARONESS

Page.	Line.	
		BARONESS PERCY.
540	2	*For* Sidney, *read*, Seymour.
		LORD WILLOUGHBY de BROKE.
557	39	*After* iſſue, *read*, John Peyto; and, &c.
Ibid.	40	*After* heir, *add*, born May 28, 1762; George Peyto, born June, &c. *After* 1763, *add*, alſo a daughter, Louiſa, born June 25, 1765.
		LORD St. JOHN of BLETSHO.
581	37	*After* ſon, *read*, the Hon. Beauchamp St. John.
Ibid.	38	*After* 1765, *add*, His Lordſhip died at Nice, in June, 1767, and was ſucceeded in his honours and eſtates by his ſaid eldeſt ſon, Beauchamp, the 12th Lord St. John of Bletſho, and 9th Baronet of his family.
Ibid.	39	*For* John St. John, *read*, Beauchamp St. John.
		VOL. VII.
		BARONESS STRANGE.
11	14	*After* 1764, *add*, She married, ſecondly, Lord Adam Gordon, on Aug. 28, 1767.
Ibid.	32	*After* 1764, *add*, On Dec. 30, 1767, his Grace was inveſted with the order of the Thiſtle.
		LORD BYRON.
39	2	*From the bottom, after* ſtag-hounds, *add*, His Lordſhip has reſigned that poſt. In April, 1765, his Lordſhip (having unfortunately killed William Chaworth, Eſq; in a duel on Jan. 26, preceeding) was tried by his Peers, the Earl of Northington, Lord Chancellor, ſitting as High-Steward, and acquitted.
Ibid.	33	*After* Fellow, *add*, who on Jan. 14, 1768, married Miſs Farmer.
		LORD DELAMERE.
87	3	*Dele*, they.
		LORD CRAVEN.
103	5	He is High-Steward of Newbery, Berks.
		LORD CLIFFORD.
112	15	*After* Clifford, *add*, born Sept. 29, 1726.
Ibid.	16	*After* Edward, *add*, born Dec. 31, 1727.
Ibid.	24	*For* March 26, *read*, March 25.
Ibid.	25	*For* 14, *read*, 6.
Ibid.	27	*After* iſſue, *add*, three daughters, Frances, Anne, and Mary; Hugh, born July 2, 1756, and Charles, born Nov. 28, 1759.
		LORD BOYLE.
127	3	"Moreover, &c." This whole paragraph is ſuperfluous, and the reader is deſired to eraſe it, as it before occurred in p. 122.

Page.	Line.	
172	29	*After* St. Paul's, *add*, He is now Biſhop of Saliſbury.

LORD TREVOR.

184	1	*After* Suffolk, *add*, and died in child-bed, Feb. 7, 1767.

LORD MASHAM.

189	9	*After* bedchamber, *read*, He is a Fellow of the Royal Society.

LORD FOLEY.

190	—	This title became extinct, by the death of Thomas Lord Foley, without iſſue, in 1766.

LORD BATHURST.

195	38	*After* Benjamin, *add*, one of his daughters was married in 1642, to John, ſon of Humphry Perſhal, of Horſley and Halne, Salop*, by whom ſhe had no iſſue, and died the year following.
198	12	*After* fortune, *add*, Capt. Poole, was married, in Dec. 1766, to Miſs Heſkett, and, &c.
Ibid.	21	*After* Royal Society, *add*, He died Nov. 5, 1767.
199	32	*After* Glouceſter, *add*, He died Aug. 17, 1767.

LORD ONSLOW.

215	32	*Read*, and by her (who died June 5, 1766.)
Ibid.	34	*After* 1751, *add*, This worthy man and illuſtrious patriot deceaſed on Feb. 15, 1768.
216	3	*After* mentioned, *add*, He was on Aug. 2, 1766, conſtituted a Lord of the Treaſury, and on Dec. 3, 1767, ſworn of the Privy-Council.

LORD KING.

235	3	*From the bottom, for* now Lord King, *read*, late Lord King.
236	2	*After* daughters, *add*, His brother, William Lord King, deceaſing, April 15, 1767, he ſucceeded him in honours and eſtate, and is the fifth Lord King.
Ibid.	3	*Read*, Thomas King, Lord King, &c.

LORD MONSON.

239	20	*After* 1762, *add*, and died March 24, 1767.
240	—	*After Lord Monſon's family, add,*

GODOLPHIN, LORD GODOLPHIN.

As the account of this noble family will be found in Vol. IV. p. 190—209, which was printed off before the title of Earl became extinct by the death of Francis, the late Earl, Jan. 17, 1766, we muſt refer thereto, for his Lordſhip's deſcent, p. 198, where it is recited, that his Lordſhip was the youngeſt ſon of Henry Godolphin, D. D. Dean of St. Paul's, and Provoſt of Eaton-Col-

* *Stemm. & Reg. Fam.*

lege,

Page. Line.

lege, fourth ſon of Sir Francis Godolphin, father of Sidney, firſt Earl of Godolphin.

On the deceaſe of the ſaid Francis Earl of Godolphin, his Lordſhip ſucceeded him as Baron Godolphin of Helſtone, according to the limitation of the patent; and in June, 1766, was appointed Governor of the Scilly Iſlands. His Lordſhip is married, and has iſſue.

TITLES.] Francis Godolphin, Lord Godolphin, Baron of Helſtone, in Cornwall.

CREATION.] Baron, as above, Jan. 23, 1734-5, 8 Geo. II.

ARMS, CREST, SUPPORTERS, MOTTO.] See Vol. IV. p. 209.

CHIEF SEAT.] Bayles, near Windſor.

LORD EDGCUMBE.

291 4 *After* Blue, *add*, On July 26, 1765, his Lordſhip was ſworn of the Privy-Council, having been the ſame year appointed Treaſurer of the Houſehold, in which on Nov. 27, 1766, he was ſucceeded by John Shelley, Eſq.

LORD SANDYS.

324 23 *For* is, *read*, was, and, &c.

Ibid. 24 *Read*, late Duke of Cumberland.

LORD BRUCE.

347 22 *After* 1765, *add*, alſo a ſon born on March 22, 1767.

Ibid. 25 *After* militia, *add*, His Majeſty was pleaſed, Dec. 29, 1767, to grant a licence to his Lordſhip, and his lawful iſſue, to take, uſe, and bear, the name, arms, and ſupporters of Bruce.

LORD FORTESCUE.

354 7 *After* 1755, *add*, alſo a daughter born July 29, 1765.

LORD ARCHER.

377 14 *After* Eſq; *add*, and died Dec. 24, 1765. Another of theſe Ladies died the ſame year.

LORD PONSONBY.

385 8 *From the bottom, after* Redmond-Harvey, *add*, the preſent Viſcount.

386 25 *After* 1765, *add*, and ſworn of the Privy-Council. In 1767, his Lordſhip reſigned his poſt of Joint-Poſtmaſter.

LORD WALPOLE.

395 29 *After* Eſq; *add*, and died June 1, 1766.

Ibid. *ult.* *After* Norfolk, *add*, he is now Secretary to the Ambaſſy in Spain.

LORD MANSFIELD.

407 35 *After* Exchequer, *add*, as he was a ſecond time, on Sept. 12, 1767.

LORD

Page. Line.

LORD HARWICH.

418 3 *After* Dartmouth, *add*, On Aug. 16, 1766, his Lordſhip was appointed again to a ſeat at that honourable board, and on Dec. 30, 1766, Joint-Poſtmaſter-General, with the Lord Le Deſpencer. On Jan. 20, 1768, he was ſworn into the office of one of his Majeſty's principal Secretaries of State.

LORD LYTTELTON.

420 22 *Read*, had *other* lands.
Ibid. 26 *Dele*, a man of conſiderable note at Wolverley, *and read*, of Frankley, &c.
427 41 *Dele the laſt word*, all.
Ibid. 42 *For* chaldrons, *read*, caldrons.
429 4 *For* gloſet, *read*, gloſed.
431 *penult.* *After* with, *add*, his arms ſupported by, &c.
Ibid. Note [n], *After* original, *add*, marriage contract.
433 30 *Dele*, great.
446 44, 45, 46, 47. *Inſtead of*, Sir Charles Lyttelton remained ſole Governor, and built the town of Port Royal, which was almoſt intirely deſtroyed by the great earthquake in 1692, *read*, the adminiſtration of the government devolved on Sir Charles, who built fortifications at Port Royal, that were afterwards entirely deſtroyed by the great earthquake in 1692.
448 31 *After* London, *add*, His Lordſhip is Preſident of the Society of Antiquaries, and F. R. S.

LORD GRANTHAM.

500 29 *After* Eſq; *add*, and died in Jan. 1767.

LORD GROSVENOR.

524 34 *After* 1766, *add*, alſo a ſon, born March, 22, 1767.

BARONESS MOUNT-STEWART.

526 *ult.* *After* Ireland, *add*, by whom he had iſſue a ſon and heir, born Aug. 27, 1767.
527 9 *After* Jane, *add*, married on Feb. 1, 1768, to Sir George Maccartney, late Ambaſſador to the Czarina.

LORD SCARSDALE.

535 20 *After* Groſvenor, *add*, by whom he had a daughter, born Sept. 3, 1767.

LORD LOVEL and HOLLAND.

536 1 *Read*, diſtinguiſhed.

BARONESS CHATHAM.

606 — This noble Lady ſhould have been placed before the Lord Lovel and Holland.

N. B. Theſe corrections and additions are continued to March 12, 1768; and it only remains to deſire the Reader, wherever the words *preſent parliament* occur, to underſtand them of the *late*, or twelfth parliament of Great Britain.

DIRECTIONS to the BOOKBINDER, for placing the Plates of Arms, and the additional and cancelled Leaves.

VOL. I.

Plate	Arms of,	to front Page
1	Prince of Wales	31
2.	Duke of York	35
3.	Glouceſter	37
(4.)	Cumberland	37
4.	Late Duke of Cumberland	38

DUKES.

5.	Norfolk	135
6.	Somerſet	182
7.	Cleveland	186
8.	Richmond	193
9.	Grafton	199
10.	Beaufort	216
11.	St. Albans	221
12.	Bolton	236
13.	Leeds	243
14.	Bedford	278
15.	Devonſhire	334
16.	Marlborough	426

VOL. II.

DUKES.

17.	Rutland	30
18.	Dover	42
19.	Brandon	50
20.	Ancaſter	70
21.	Kingſton	84
22.	Newcaſtle	130
23.	Portland	140
24.	Manchester	238
25.	Chandos	259
26.	Dorſet	349
27.	Bridgewater	369
	Northumberland and Montague (ſee plates 98 and 48.)	

MARCHIONESS.

28.	Grey	390

MARQUIS.

29.	Rockingham	396

EARLS.

30.	Shrewſbury	438
31.	Derby	487

VOL. III.

EARLS.

32.	Huntingdon	20
33.	Pembroke	44
34.	Lincoln	87
35.	Suffolk and Berks	100
36.	Saliſbury	106
37.	Exeter	124
38.	Northampton	159
39.	Denbigh	172
40.	Weſtmoreland	190
41.	Peterborough and Monmouth	215
42.	Stamford	223
43.	Winchelſea and Nottingham	252
44.	Cheſterfield	275
45.	Thanet	286
46.	Sandwich	304
47.	Eſſex	314
48.	Cardigan (now duke of Montague	326
49.	Angleſey	354
50.	Carliſle	361
51.	Doncaſter	389
52.	Shafteſbury	427
53.	Litchfield	438
54.	Berkeley	471
55.	Abingdon	478
56.	Gainſborough	493

LORDS.

CAN-

CANCELLED LEAVES.

In Vol. I. cancel pages 23, 24, 25, 26, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 47, 48, and inſert thoſe provided in their room.

Vol. III. L l a quarter of a ſheet, is printed on a half ſheet with L l Vol. V. and is to be cut off.

In Vol. IV. cancel pages 283, 284, and inſert as above.

In Vol. V. cancel pages 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, and inſert as above.

In Vol. VI. pages 205 and 206 are to be cancelled, and the additional Sheet * O, containing p. 205 to 219, and 206 muſt be inſerted in their place.

In the ſame Volume, cancel pages 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, and 413, 414, 415, 416, and ſupply them as above

In Vol. VII. cancel pages 449, 450, 451, 452, and replace them with thoſe printed in their room.

Dedication and Advertiſement after Title to Vol. I.

The Additions and Alterations to be placed after the Dedication and Advertiſement to Vol. I.

Theſe Directions to the Binder after the Additions, &c.

The Binder is deſired to be careful in regarding the above Directions as they are very material to the Purchaſers of the Work.

THE PEERAGE OF ENGLAND.

DUKE of CORNWALL.

THE eldeſt ſons of our Kings are Dukes of Cornwall by inheritance, and have precedence of all Dukes, not only by ſeveral Charters, but by act of parliament: the King's ſons, the King's brothers, the King's uncles, the King's nephews, or the King's brothers or ſiſters ſons, having precedency before all other Dukes, and are Princes of the royal blood of England.

The Earldom of Cheſter, by Henry III. was annexed to the crown for ever, by letters patent, bearing date in the 31ſt year of his reign, 1247, together with the caſtles of Gannock and Diſſard: and Prince Edward, his eldeſt ſon, was then made Earl thereof; whoſe ſucceſſors have been the eldeſt ſons of our Kings. And the ſaid Earldom of Cheſter, with the Principality, was united to the Principality of Wales, by act of parliament, in 21 Richard II.

The Principality of Wales being brought under ſubjection to Edward I. that Monarch, by a ſtatute made at Ruthlan in the 12th year of his reign, united it to England. In which ſtatute there are many laws concerning the diviſion of Wales into counties, and concerning divers offices and officers, trials, the diviſions of actions, and the form of many writs, and the proceedings therein; much like to the laws of England. Yet he could never win the good will of the common people of the country to be obedient unto ſuch officers as he ſhould appoint to govern them, unleſs he would remain himſelf among them. Neither could he bring them to yield their obedience to any other Prince, except he were of their own nation: for the Welſhmen, having ex-

perience of the government of the Engliſh officers, would pay no obedience to any Engliſhmen; and oftentimes (upon the King's motion) anſwered, *That they were content to take for their Prince, any man whom he would name, ſo that he were a Welſhman*, and no other anſwer could he ever get of them. Whereupon the King ſent for Queen Eleanor, when great with child, to the caſtle of Caernarvon; and being near her time of lying in, he went to Ruthlan and ſummoned all the Barons and men of note in Wales, to conſult concering the weal-public of their country. At their meeting he deferred the conſultation, until he was certified that the Queen was delivered of a ſon; then (ſending certain Lords to the chriſtening of his child, and informing them how he would have it named) he called the Welſhmen together, declaring unto them, *That whereas they were oftentimes ſuitors unto him to appoint them a Prince, he now having occaſion to depart out of the country, would name a Prince, if they would allow and obey him, whom he ſhould name.* To which they anſwered (as before) that they would do ſo, if he would appoint one of their own nation to be their Prince: Whereunto the King replied, *That he would name one that was born in Wales, and could ſpeak never a word of Engliſh, whoſe life and converſation no man was able to ſtain.* And when they all had conſented that ſuch a one they would obey, he named his own ſon Edward, born in Caernarvon-caſtle a few days before, viz. on April 25, 1284. Yet notwithſtanding this Prince Edward obtained the title of Prince of Wales, as our ſummons to Parliament ſhews, yet Edward his ſon (King of England, by the name of Edward III.) never had the title of Prince of Wales, otherwiſe than in courteſy, as our two famous antiquaries, Camden and Selden, have obſerved.

Edward the Black Prince (ſo ſurnamed by the French from his dreaded deeds in war) eldeſt ſon of Edward III. was the firſt inveſted in the Principality of Wales, 12 Maii, 17 Ed. III. with theſe enſigns of Honour, viz. a chaplet of gold in manner of a garland, a gold ring, and a verge, or ſcepter of ſilver, to hold to himſelf and his heirs Kings of England. From which time the heirs apparent of our Kings have had the title of *Princes of Wales*, ſome having been created in like form, others called ſo [a]. He was born at Woodſtock [b] near Oxford, June 15, 1330. And the title and dignity of Duke of Cornwall was conferred on him, before he was ſeven years of age, in the parliament held at Weſtminſter, in 11 Edward III. as alſo, by charter bearing date the 13th of March the ſame year [c], and inveſted by the ſword only; which is the firſt precedent for the creation of the title of *Duke*, in England, *To hold to himſelf and his heirs*,

[a] Cart. 17 Edw. III. m. 24. n. 27. [b] Knighton, p. 2558. [c] Cart. 11 Edw. III. n. 55.

Kings

Kings of England, and to their firſt-born ſons. This Prince Edward died in the life-time of his father, on June 8, 1376.

Richard his ſon and heir, in the 50th year of his grandfather Edward the IIId's reign, was created Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Earl of Cheſter, with all the revenues thereunto belonging, as his father held them, being then about 12 years old. This Prince, by his grandfather's death, was King of England by the name of Richard II. and being depoſed and murthered, without leaving iſſue, Henry Duke of Lancaſter obtained the crown by the name of Henry IV.

Which King created his ſon Henry Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Earl of Cheſter, as evident by record in Hilary term, 9 Hen. IV. Rot. 61. And the King having ſevered the dutchy of Lancaſter from the crown, he, by act of parliament, conferred on this Prince his ſon the title of Duke of Lancaſter, giving to him, by the ſaid act, the revenues, liberties, and franchiſes, belonging to the ſaid dutchy[d]. And he carried before the King his father, at his coronation, the ſword called *Curtana*, in right of his dutchy of Lancaſter. And ſucceeding to the crown by the name of Henry V. was in France when his ſon Henry VI. was born, and died there Auguſt 31, 1422, leaving his ſaid ſon not then a year old.

The ſaid Henry VI. in the 31ſt year of his reign[e], did, by charter and authority of parliament, create Edward his ſon Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter, when he was not a year old. And by other charters granted to him the revenues and profits thereunto belonging, as fully as any other Prince before held the ſame. Alſo confirmed thoſe charters in [f] the 33d and 38th years of his reign, by acts of parliament, and thereby likewiſe made livery to him of the dutchy of Cornwall in poſſeſſion. This Henry VI. neither died King, nor left the crown to the Prince of Wales his ſon, who, taking arms to relieve him, was ſlain in his life-time by the Duke of Glouceſter. Richard Duke of York, in the 33d year of Henry VI. procured an act of parliament to be protector and defender of the realm, who, taking up arms to ſet himſelf on the throne, was ſlain in battle at Wakefield in Yorkſhire; but his ſon Edward Duke of York, depoſing Henry VI. in the 39th year of his reign, became King by the name of Edward IV. And in the 11th year of his reign created his ſon Edward Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter; giving him, by two other charters, the revenues thereunto belonging as amply as any Prince beforetime had. Alſo gave him livery of the dutchy of Cornwall, with the poſſeſſions of the ſame, being then not a year old[g]; which was confirmed by parliament

[d] Hollinſhed's Chronicle. [e] Cotton's Records, p. 665. [f] Cotton, ib. p. 659. 663. [g] Ib. p. 689.

in 12 Ed. IV. On May 15, in the 15th year[h] of his reign, when he was but four years of age, his royal father, with the unanimous conſent of all the Knights of the Garter, placed the Prince in the ſtall, ſome time before preſerved for him.

This hopeful young Prince had a council eſpecially aſſigned unto him, to manage his revenues till he attained the age of 14 years. On the deceaſe of his royal father, April 9, 1483, he was king by the name of Edward V. but by the procurement of his uncle Richard Duke of Glouceſter, protector of the King and the realm, was ſmothered to death in the Tower when he was only 13 years of age. And his ſaid uncle attaining the crown by the name of Richard III.[i] created his ſon Edward Prince of Wales, in the firſt year of his reign, he being then about 10 years of age; but he died in the life-time of his father, who was afterwards ſlain in the battle of Boſworth, Auguſt 22, 1485, by Henry Earl of Richmond, of the houſe of Lancaſter.

Which Henry thereupon attaining the crown by the name of Henry VII. and having married Elizabeth eldeſt daughter of Ed. IV. had iſſue by her Arthur his ſon and heir[k], born at Wincheſter, Sept. 20, 1486, in the ſecond year of his reign, and ſo named in honour of the Britiſh race, of which he was deſcended. The King[l], having an intention to create him Prince of Wales when his age did not exceed three years and three months, previouſly conferred on him the Knighthood of the Bath, in the 5th year of his reign; the Earl of[m] Northumberland and 18 others receiving the ſaid order at the ſame time. Afterwards by charter, in the ſaid 5th year of his reign, he created him Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter; and by two other charters, bearing date the ſame year, granted to him the revenues thereunto belonging. Alſo by another charter, the ſame year, made livery unto him of the dutchy of Cornwall, with all the profits, &c. The King likewiſe granted to him, in the 8th year of his reign, divers liberties, privileges, and franchiſes, within the counties of Salop, Hereford, Glouceſter, and the marches of Wales, adjoining to the ſaid ſhires. And the King[n], at Dover, October 2, 1492, 8 Hen. VII. reciting, that the titular King of France beholds him and his confederates with diſdain, and diſturbs his ſubjects with threats and injuries, he was determined to recover, by the ſword, the crown of France, &c. which, by right of inheritance, belongs to him, and to enter France. Therefore confiding in his moſt beloved ſon Arthur Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Earl of Cheſter, conſtitutes him, during his abſence, guar-

[h] Anſtis's Reg. of Garter, vol. i. p. 94. [i] Sandford's Gen. Hiſt. of the Kings of England. [k] Bacon's Life of Henry VII. in Hiſt. England, vol. i. p. 582. [l] Anſtis on Knighthood of the Bath, p. 56. [m] MS. in Bib. Cotton, B. 12. p. 59. [n] Rymer's Fœdera, vol. xii. p. 487, 488.

dian

dian of England, and his lieutenant in the ſaid kingdom, with large powers. This Prince, Arthur, was inſtalled a Knight [o] of the Garter on May 8, the year following; and being turned of the age of 15, was married at St. Paul's, London [p], by the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, on November 14, 1501, to Catherine daughter of Ferdinand King of Spain, then about the age of 18 years. This marriage was almoſt ſeven years in treaty, cauſed, in part, by the tender years of the marriage couple, particularly of the Prince. Immediately after their eſpouſals, he was ſent to the marches of Wales, the better to govern that principality by his preſence, where he departed this life at the caſtle of Ludlow, in Shropſhire, April 2, 1502, having been married juſt four months and 19 days. Francis Bacon, Lord Viſcount of St. Alban's, ſays of him [q], "Of this "Prince, in reſpect he died ſo young, and by reaſon of his fa- "ther's manner of education, that did caſt no great luſtre upon "his children, there is little particular memory. Only thus "much remaineth, that he was very ſtudious and learned, be- "yond his years, and beyond the cuſtom of great princes."

Over the ſeats on the north ſide of the chancel of Ludlow church in Shropſhire (where it is ſaid the bowels of Prince Arthur were interred) under the Prince's arms, the *feathers*, with a roſe on each ſide, is the following memorial.

Be it known that the right noble and virtuous Prince Arthur, Prince of Wales, and firſt begotten ſonne of our Soueraigne Lord King Henry the Seventh, departed out of this tranſitory and uncertain life, wythin the caſtle of Ludlow, the 2d dey of April, between 6 and 7 of the clock in the afternoon, being Saterday, and the Eaſter weeke, the Dominical lettre B, and in the yeer of our Lord God 1502, in the 17th yeer of his moſt Royall Father's Raygn; himſelf being at the age of 15 yeers full and 27 weeks; whoſe body is buried at Worceſter, within the Cathedral Church of our Lady, at the ſouth end of the high Altar there.

He lies buried in a neat chapel of white ſtone, on the ſouth ſide the quire in Worceſter cathedral, where in various niches, are ſmalll figures, repreſenting Virgins, Biſhops, Confeſſors, Kings, and Angels, which incloſe his monument, that contains the following inſcription round the verge.

Here lyeth buryed Prince Arthure, the firſt begotten Son of the right renowned King Henry the Seventhe; wiche noble Prince departed out of this tranſitori lyfe in the Caſtle of Ludlowe, in the Sevententh yere of his Fathers Raygne, and in the yere of our Lorde God on Thouſand five hundred and two.

[o] Anſtis's Reg. of Garter, vol. i. p. 234. [p] Stow's Annals, p. 404.
[q] Life of Hen. II. in Hiſt. of Engl. vol. i. p. 628.

This admirable chapel, in the higheſt place, hath angels bearing eſcutcheons, under an angel holding an eſcroll and ſtanding upon a pomegranate, between two fleurs-de-lis, which is a device; and the apple of Granada is uſed in remembrance of driving the Moors out of Granada by the Spaniards under King Ferdinand and Queen Iſabella, parents of the Princeſs Catherine, conſort of Prince Arthur. Next to it are the arms of Henry VII. ſupported with a dragon on the right, and a greyhound on the left: This was ſince borne by Henry VIII. and was painted over his picture in the privy gallery at Whitehall, and cut in ſtone over the weſt end of Cheſter cathedral; and the Gatehouſe leading from Whitehall to Weſtminſter; after which King Henry VIII. placed a lion on the right, and the dragon on the left. On the right hand of the ſaid pomegranate is a roſe incloſed in a garter, under two oſtrich feathers with eſcrolls. Next this a roſe with rays like a ſun, then a roſe between an oſtrich feather and a fleur-de-lis; then a roſe over a portuculis, then a bundle of arrows, then a fetter-lock.

On the arching of the chapel, over the tomb, are the arms of France and England quarterly, with a label of three points, ſupported by two antelopes, enſigned with a prince's coronet of croſſes and fleurs-de-lis; over which is placed a feather and ſcroll, and, underneath, three oſtrich feathers, the proper cognizance of the Princes of Wales.

Henry VII. uncertain if the widow of this Prince his eldeſt ſon were pregnant or not, did not inveſt [r] Henry Duke of York, then his only ſon, with the principality of Wales, and Earldom of Cheſter, till February 18, after the deceaſe of his brother Prince Arthur, when he was created with all ſolemnity, at his palace of Weſtminſter. This Henry Prince of Wales was born [s] June 28, 1491, as certified in the proceſs of divorce between him and Queen Catherine. He was of ſuch ſtrength in his childhood, and of ſuch ſprightly diſpoſition, that, at the time of the Lord Mayor of the city of London entering on his office, Oct. 28, 1594, 10 Hen. VII.[t] he paſſed with him through the ſtreets of London and Weſtminſter, ſitting on a graceful ſteed, attended by many of the Nobility and Gentry. And three days after, the King his father created him Duke of York by patent [u], and he received a ſolemn inveſtiture on All-Saints day in parliament at the time of his creation; and the King, for the greater grandeur thereof, kept royally and ſolemnly that feaſt, creating him Knight of the Order of the Bath, together with 22 others, Lords and Perſons of rank. He was inſtalled one of the Knights of the Garter [x] on May 12 follow-

[r] Hall's Chron. in Life of Hen. VII. p. 56. [s] Anſtis's Regiſt. Gart. vol. ii. p. 372. [t] Ibid. vol. i. p. 236, 237. [u] Anſtis's Introduction to Knights of the Garter, vol. i. p. 236, 237. [x] Ibid. vol. ii. p. 41.

ing;

ſing; alſo May 22, 1495, 10 Hen. VII. the King reciting, that, conſidering the tender years of Henry Duke of York his ſecond ſon [y], whom he had appointed warden and general of the marches between England and Scotland, he conſtitutes Richard Fox Biſhop of Durham, Sir William Tyler Governor of Berwick, and three others, to order all affairs thereto relating.

On the deceaſe of his brother Prince Arthur in 17 Hen. VII. the Dukedom of Cornwall devolved on him by ſtatute; but it was more than half a year before he was created Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter, viz. February 18, 1502-3, 18 Hen. VII. as before recited, which, as Lord St. Alban's writes [z], "*Was* "*conſtrued to be, for to expect a full time whereby it might ap-*"*pear, whether the Lady Catherine was with child by Prince* "*Arthur, or no.* And that on his creation, the King his "father being faſt handed, and loth to part with her dowry, "but chiefly to continue the alliance with Spain, prevailed "with the Prince (though not without ſome reluctance, ſuch "as could be in thoſe years, being not 12 years of age) to be "contracted with the Princeſs Catherine. The ſecret Provi-"dence of God ordaining that marriage to be the occaſion of "great events and changes."

Elizabeth Queen of Caſtile, wife of Ferdinand King of Aragon, dying without iſſue male, and Jane her eldeſt daughter by him (and ſiſter to the Princeſs Catherine) having been married to Philip Archduke of Auſtria, Burgundy, and Earl of Flanders, he obtained that kingdom of Caſtile in right of his wife [a], and in January, 21 Henry VII. ſailing with her from Flanders towards Spain, was ſurpriſed with a violent tempeſt, that ſcattered his navy, and the ſhip the King and Queen were in being forced into Weymouth in Dorſetſhire, it brought on an interview between them and King Henry at Windſor. On that occaſion [b] the King ſent the Prince of Wales, accompanied with five Earls, and divers Lords and Knights, to the number of 500, gorgeouſly apparelled, and richly mounted, to conduct them to Windſor. They were feaſted with great magnificence [c], and before their departure, the King of Caſtile was received into the fraternity of the Garter, and the Prince of Wales admitted into the order of the Golden Fleece by the King of Caſtile.

Henry VII. deceaſing in the 24th year of his reign, at his palace of Richmond, April 22, 1509, the Prince became King by the name of Henry VIII. and his life and actions being fully ſet forth by the Lord Herbert, I ſhall only obſerve, that in the 27th year of his reign, having no male-iſſue, it was enacted that the Principality of Wales, and Earldom of Cheſter, ſhould be an-

[y] Rymer's Fœdera, vol. xii. p. 569. [z] Life of Hen. VII. in Hiſt of England, vol. i. p. 620. [a] Hall's Chron. fol. 57. [b] Ibid. fol. 58. [c] Bacon's Life of Henry VII. ut antea, p. 633.

nexed unto the crown, and the government thereof according to the laws of England. And by the ſaid act the nomination of Biſhops within the dioceſes of Exeter and Cheſter, with their temporalities, appointing officers to adminiſter juſtice, and ſeveral other powers, as abſolute as a King's, which before belonged to the created Princes of Wales, were by the ſaid ſtatute taken away: Whereby thoſe Princes have only the power of naming the ſheriff of Cornwall, and of Cheſter, more than that which ſeveral claim to belong unto them, as of the honours, caſtles, royalties, &c. which they enjoy.

This Henry VIII. had ſix wives, but had iſſue only by the three firſt of them. By the relict of Arthur Prince of Wales his elder brother, he had Henry Tudor his eldeſt ſon, born at Richmond in Surry, in the firſt year of his reign, 1509, but died under the age of two months; alſo another ſon not named, living but a few moments after it was born; and the King, in the caſe of his divorce, cited the deaths of theſe two Princes, as a puniſhment from heaven, by being begot on his brothers wife; and had alſo iſſue by her a daughter Mary, born at Greenwich in 1515-16, the 7th year of his reign, who, after the deceaſe of King Edward VI. was Queen of England, &c. by the name of Mary.

His ſecond wife was Anne Bullen (whom he had created Marchioneſs of Pembroke) daughter of Thomas Bullen Earl of Wiltſhire, whom he wedded on St. Erkenwald's day, in the 24th year of his reign, and as Hall relates [d] (who lived in that reign) the marriage was kept ſo ſecret, as very few knew it, till ſhe was great with child at Eaſter after. Lord Herbert [e] recites her marriage to be on November 14, 1532, Rowland Lee, after Biſhop of Coventry and Litchfield, celebrating it in the preſence of Archbiſhop Cranmer, the Duke of Norfolk, the Earl her father, her mother, brothers, &c. which yet was not publiſhed till the Eaſter following. Stow [f] and Hollinſhed mention her marriage to be on the 25th of January, St. Paul's day; and on Eaſter-Eve, April 12, [g] ſhe was publickly owned as Queen. Alſo on June 1 following [h] was crowned with great ſolemnity. On Sunday, Sept. 7, 1533, the Queen [i] was brought to-bed of the Princeſs Elizabeth, who was chriſtened with great ſolemnity three days after, and became Queen of England.

The King thirdly married, May 20 [k], 1536, in the 28th year of his reign, Jane daughter of Sir John Seymour, Knt. of a very antient family, famed for her beauty, and diſcreet diſpoſition, who, on October 12 in the year following, was delivered of a ſon at Hampton-Court, chriſtened there the third day after, by the name of Edward, from his being born on the eve of Edward

[d] Chronicle, fol. 209. b. [e] Life of Hen. VIII. in Hiſt. of Engl. vol. ii. p. 161. [f] Annals, p. 561. [g] Ibid. p. 562. [h] Hall, fol. 215. and Herbert, ut ante, p. 169. [i] Hall, p. 217. [k] Stow's Annals, p. 572.

the

the Confeſſor, or from his grandfather King Edward IV. An heir male being given to the realm after many years expectation, the chriſtening was performed with the greateſt ſolemnity, and being omitted by all our hiſtorians, the Rev. Mr. Strype, in his Hiſtorical Memorials, vol. II. pag. 1, & ſeq. has given a full account of it from a manuſcript[1] in the office of arms, I. 14. from which I ſhall only mention, that all Noblemen, Knights, and Gentlemen, belonging to the Court, had the King's letters to make their repair to do the ſervice that to them ſhould be appointed, which was performed with the higheſt grandeur and magnificence. And when the Prince was chriſtened, Garter, principal King of Arms, proclaimed it as follows. *God, of his infinite grace and goodneſs, give and grant good life and long to the right high, excellent and noble Prince, Prince Edward, Duke of Cornwall, and Earl of Cheſter, moſt dear and moſt entirely beloved Son, to our moſt dread and gracious Lord King Henry VIII. Large. Large.*

But all the joy and ſplendor of his chriſtening received a moſt melancholy check, by the deceaſe of the Queen his mother, about 12 o'clock on Wedneſday night the 24th of October following, 12 days after the Prince's birth, as expreſly ſet down in a manuſcript of one of the heralds now remaining in the office of arms, I. 11. (and confirmed by a journal of ſecretary Cecil's) whereon each day, from her death to her funeral, and interment at Windſor, are ſhewn the ceremonies done to the Queen's corpſe. Hall was the firſt who wrote the life of Henry VIII. imprinted at London by Richard Grafton, printer to the King's Majeſty, 1550, which was in the 4th year of King Edward VI. and that Author (after giving an account of the birth of the Prince) page 232, gives the following relation. "But, Lorde, what "lamentation ſhortly after was made for the death of his gracious "mother Queen Jane, whiche departed out of this life the "fourtene of Octobre next following! And of none in the "realme was it more heavelier taken then of the Kynges Maje-"ſtie himſelf, whoſe death cauſed the Kyng immediately to re-"move unto Weſtminſter, wher he mourned and kept himſelf "cloſe and ſecret a great while; and the eight day of Novembre "the corps of the Queene was carried to Windſor with greate "ſolemnitie, and there was buried in the middes of the queer in "the caſtel churche." I have cited this *literatim* as our hiſtorians, Fox (in his Book of Martyrs) Hollinſhed, Stow, and Speed, in their Chronicles, Lord Herbert (in his Life of King Henry VIII.) and others, write, that ſhe died October 14, two days after her delivery. It is therefore very probable, that Hall having miſtaken the day, they copied from him in a matter ſo eaſily to be ſlipt over. But the aforeſaid manuſcript may with more

[1] Strype's Notes in Life of Ed. VI. in Hiſt. of Eng. vol. ii. p. 273.

cer-

certainty be depended on for truth, in dating the Queen's death ten days later, as it may be conſidered, that if ſhe had died the 14th day, it is not likely there ſhould have been ſuch a great and ſplendid court, ſuch feaſting and triumph, ſuch trumpets and muſick ſounding at the chriſtening of her ſon, the very next day after ſhe was dead, in the ſame houſe; nor is it likely, that, after the ceremonies performed in the chapel, the Prince, with all the Nobles, &c. ſhould be brought in the Queen's chamber, as he is ſaid to be in the account of his chriſtening, which recites all who were preſent, and could be no fiction. Alſo in a manuſcript in the Cotton libray, Nero, c. 10, exemplified in Dr. Fuller's Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory, page 224, is a letter from the King's doctors to the council, dated on Wedneſday at eight in the morning (on which day at night the ſaid manuſcript aſſigns her death) concerning the Queen's declining condition, and that her confeſſor had been with her, and was preparing to adminiſter to her the holy unction. Likewiſe the exceſſive grief that the King was in, and the real ſadneſs that ſeized on all at her death, could not conſiſt with the magnificence of the chriſtening, unleſs ſhe were at that time alive, and there were hopes of her living. "Whoſe departure (as the manuſcript relates) was as "heavy to the King as had been ſeen or heard tell of many "years; yea and likewiſe to all the ſtates of this realm, and ci-"tizens, with the commons, great and ſmall, as ever was ſeen "for any Queen." I have been thus particular, as it is a full anſwer againſt the ſlanders of Saunders [m], and ſome other papiſts who have beſpattered the memory of Henry VIII. as cruelly appointing this his ſon to be cut out of his mother's womb; for living 12 days after her delivery, ſufficiently confutes that ſpightful tale broached by Saunders, though not credited by any of our hiſtorians. And as a farther corroboration that ſhe lived till October 24, the ſaid manuſcript recites, in way of diary, as there ſtated, That immediately the King retired, not to be ſpoken with, leaving ſome of his counſellors to order her funeral. That on Thurſday, October 25, ſhe was embowelled, and waxchandlers, and others, did their work about her. The next day, was provided in the chamber of preſence ſomething in manner of an herſe, with 24 tapers garniſhed with pencils and other decencies. Alſo in the ſame chamber an altar was provided for maſs to be ſaid, richly apparelled with black, garniſhed with the croſs, images, cenſers, and other ornaments. And daily maſſes were ſaid by her chaplains, and others. This done, the corpſe was reverently coveyed from the place where ſhe died, under a herſe, covered with a rich pall of cloth of gold, and a croſs ſet thereupon; lights were burning night and day, with ſix torches and lights upon the altar, all divine ſervice time. All Ladies

[m] De Schiſmat. Anglican.

and

and Gentlewomen were in mourning habits with white kerchiefs hanging over their heads and ſhoulders, kneeling about the herſe all ſervice time in lamentable-wiſe at maſs aforenoon, and at *dirige* after. There was alſo a watch, nightly, during the time the corpſe lay in the ſame chamber; and ſo continued till the laſt of October; on which day, being Wedneſday, and the vigil of All-Saints, the corpſe was removed, between three and four in the afternoon, from the chamber to the chapel, with very great ſtate and ſolemnity; where the Biſhop of Carliſle, her almoner, *in pontificalibus*, aſſiſted by the Biſhop of Chicheſter, Dean of the King's chapel, and the Sub-dean, entering into the chamber where the corpſe lay, performed all the ceremonies thereto appertaining, as cenſing, holy water, with *de profundis*. This ſolemnity in the chapel laſted day by day till Monday, November the 12th, the day of removing the corpſe toward Windſor; which was performed with all imaginable pomp and majeſty that could be. What I have aſſerted, is a full proof, that the Queen did not deceaſe on October 14, recited as before-mentioned; and all our hiſtorians taking it from Hall as aforeſaid, have erred in the time of her burial at Windſor, made by them to be on the 8th of November, when, as ſhewn before, it was on the 12th.

Prince Edward, as Lord Herbert aſſerts in his Life of Henry VIII.[a] was at ſix days old created Prince of Wales; which is alſo recited by Stow in his Annals, page 574, by Hollinſhed and Speed in their Chronicles, and others: yet Dr. Powel, in his hiſtory of Wales, is of opinion he was never created; but recites, that Mary daughter of Henry VIII. was Princeſs of Wales, and for a proof thereof mentions that the King, in the 17th year of his reign, ſent the Biſhop of Exeter to be Lord Preſident of the council under the ſaid Princeſs in the marches of Wales; wherein he continued till the 25th year of the King's reign; but I don't find any authority for it on record.

The ſaid Prince Edward ſucceeded to the crown January 28, 1547, on the deceaſe of his father, when he was not ten years of age; and he departed this life at Greenwich, July 6, 1553, in the 16th year of his age. His ſiſters Mary and Elizabeth, Queens of England, dying without children, King James VI. of Scotland was by deſcent heir to the crown of England.

This King by the name of James I. on June 4, 1610, in the 8th year of his reign, created his eldeſt ſon Frederick-Henry, Henry-Frederick, Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter, to hold to him and his heirs, Kings of England, according to the antient cuſtom and uſe. And by charter, dated September following, made unto him livery of the dutchy of Cornwall, with the pre-emption of tin, coinage, cuſtom, and other profits, then amounting to the yearly value of 11587l. 16s. 5¼d.

[a] Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 212.

Alſo

Alſo in the ſame charter of livery granted to him ſeveral royalties and liberties, as fines impoſed on any of the inhabitants of the county of Cornwall, in any of his Majeſty's courts at Weſtminſter; the making Sheriffs of the county, cuſtoms of wines, profits of the ports, Knights fees, with wardſhips and marriages; notwithſtanding the King's prerogative, and that they hold other lands of him *in capite*; alſo advowſons of churches belonging to any lordſhips or manors thereunto belonging. Which grants were by authority of parliament*; and by two other charters, dated September 1 and October 5 following in the ſaid year, were granted to him (in augmentation of the dutchy of Cornwall) and his heirs Kings of England, for their places of reſort and habitation, the houſe and honour of Woodſtock, with the parks; the houſe and manor of St. James (except the park and the King's ſtables at the Mews) the houſe and park at Richmond, with the revenue thereunto belonging; the caſtle and honour of Sherborne, and the members thereof; the honour of Grafton (except the woods in leaſe and the parks); the foreſt of Roche; the honour of Knareſbrough, with the parks and members; and other lands and manors; with the Knights fees, wardſhips, and marriages, to the ſame belonging; as amounted to the yearly value of 7295l. 1s. 0¼d. His Majeſty further granted by another charter, dated the 8th of October, in his ſaid 8th year, to him and his heirs, Kings of England, the revenues of the principality of Wales, together with other lordſhips and lands lying there, which were no part of the principality; and the Knights fees, wardſhips, and marriages of the ſame revenue, as amounted to the yearly value of 4056l. 1s. 7d.

Alſo by charter, dated October 4, the ſame year, the King granted to him and his heirs, Kings of England, the revenues of Cheſter, with all royalties, privileges, and juriſdictions, Knights fees, wardſhips, and marriages thereunto belonging, valued at 230l. 9s. 10d. *per annum.* And, by charter, dated October 24 following, granted to him and his heirs, Kings of England, ample and large liberties, greater than any Prince of Wales had, as well concerning all the aforeſaid revenues, as the occupiers thereof, &c. viz. goods, chattels, and debts of traitors, murderers, pirates, felons, fugitives, felons of themſelves, out-laws, goods, chattels, and debts, adjudged to be forfeited in the King's Bench, Chancery, Common-Pleas, and Exchequer, before juſtices in Eyre, juſtices of oyer and terminer, of gaol-delivery, and juſtices of aſſize. And his tenants to have exemption and impunity from the juriſdiction of the ſteward, marſhal, and coroner of the King's houſe; and from the juriſdiction of the King's admiral; alſo the power to appoint coroners and admirals in his own poſſeſſions; with all

* Connack's Addreſs to Prince Henry.

antient

antient liberties granted or belonging to former Princes of Wales, Dukes of Cornwall, and Earls of Cheſter, ſaving the King's Majeſty may appoint the juſtices in Cheſter and Wales, and other juriſdictions, as annexed to the crown by act of parliament.

The ſaid Frederick-Henry, Henry-Frederick, Prince of Wales, was born in the caſtle of Stirling, Feb. 19, 1593-4, about three o'clock in the morning, to the great joy of his royal Father and all his People; and the Nobles and Commonalty, for the due ſolemnization of his royal baptiſm [p], granted a voluntary gift of a hundred thouſand pounds money of Scotland. And the King thought it neceſſary to ſend ſpecial ambaſſadors into England, France, Denmark, the Low-Countries, to the Duke of Brunſwick his brother-in-law, and to the Duke of Magdeburgh his Queen's grandfather; who were diſpatched with all expedition, and had ſuch ſucceſs in their legation, that ambaſſadors came from ſeveral ſovereign Princes to be preſent at his chriſtening. Two famous men came to Leith, July 16, ambaſſadors from the King of Denmark; and the day after them ambaſſadors from the Duke of Brunſwick and the Duke of Magdeburgh, grandfather to the Queen of Scotland. On Auguſt 3, arrived the ambaſſadors from the States of Holland and Zealand. The Earl of Cumberland was alſo directed to come from Queen Elizabeth; but when he had prepared himſelf, richly and honourably, for his voyage to Scotland, with divers Noblemen and Gentlemen to attend him, he fell ſick, and the Earl of Suſſex was choſen to ſupply his place. His Lordſhip made ſuch diligence in his voyage, and magnificence for his own perſon and honourable convoy, as was thought very extraordinary; but, on account of the ſickneſs of one, and the preparations of the other, the baptiſm was delayed until the 30th day of Auguſt, when it was performed with the higheſt grandeur and magnificence. The Duke of Lennox received the Prince from the Counteſs of Mar, and delivered him into the hands of the Earl of Suſſex, ambaſſador of England. After which he was named Frederick-Henry, Henry-Frederick, and ſo baptized. This being done, the Biſhop aſcended the pulpit of the royal chapel, where he delivered himſelf in praiſe of the Prince, and of every one preſent in particular, beginning with the ambaſſador of England, and ſo continuing with the reſt. Wherein he mentioned the chronology of the ſeveral Princes, and the proximity of blood they had with Scotland; concluding his oration with exhortation and thankſgiving to God for that occaſion and proſperous aſſembly. Then Lion, king of arms, proclaimed with a loud voice, *God ſave Frederick-Henry, and Henry-Frederick, by the grace of God, Prince of Scot-*

[p] A true report of the moſt triumphant baptiſm of Henry-Frederick Prince of Scotland, page 1 & 2, & ſeq.

land.

land. Then the King, with all preſent, proceeded from the chapel to the King's hall; and there the Duke of Lennox received the Prince from the ambaſſador of England, and preſented him to the king, who dubbed him a Knight, the Earl of Mar touching him with the ſpur; and afterwards the King put a ducal coronet on his head, and then was proclaimed by Lion king of arms, *The right excellent, high and magnanime, Frederick-Henry, Henry-Frederick, by the Grace of God, Knt. and Baron of Renfrew, Lord of the Iſles, Earl of Carrick, Duke of Rotheſay, Prince and great Steward of Scotland.* Then the Prince was carried, by the ambaſſador of England, to his own preſence chamber, where the moſt rich and rare preſents were made to him; and there the King conferred the honour of Knighthood on 16 Barons and Perſons of rank. Which being accompliſhed, the King and Queen, with the Ambaſſadors, addreſſed themſelves to the banquet in the great hall, trumpets and other muſick ſounding melodiouſly before them. The King and Queen were placed in the midſt of the table, and on the King's right hand, the Engliſh ambaſſador, the Earl of Suſſex, and Sir Robert Bowes; next them ſat the ambaſſador from the Duke of Brunſwick, and the ambaſſador from the Duke of Magdeburg. On the King's left hand, next to the Queen, ſat the ambaſſador of Denmark, and ambaſſadors from the States of Holland and Zealand. On the eaſt and weſt ſide of the hall were placed two long tables for the Noblemen, Ladies of Honour, and Counſellors of Scotland; and with them thoſe of England, Denmark, &c. And between every Nobleman and Gentleman-ſtranger a Lady of Honour or Gentlewoman were placed. The ſumptuous and artificial devices, that, for their entertainment, were for ſome days after diſplayed, are not needful to inſert, as I purpoſe only to give a general account of this hopeful Prince.

He was, as ſaid before, created Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter, in the 8th year of his father's reign, when he was ſixteen years of age; and his memorable actions are ſet forth in print with this title, *The Life and Death of our late moſt incomparable and heroique Prince, Henry Prince of Wales: A Prince (for Valour and Virtue) fit to be imitated in ſucceding times, written by Sir Charles Cornwallis, Knt. Treaſurer of his Highneſs's houſehold.*

I ſhall therefore refer my readers to the Author's obſervations on his conduct and renown, ſo juſtly admired, and his ſickneſs, which is therein fully ſet forth. He died unmarried on Friday, November 6, 1612, in the 19th year of his age, and on December 7 following was buried with great ſolemnity in Weſtminſter-Abbey. He was (as Sir Charles Cornwallis repreſents him) of middle ſtature, about five feet eight inches high, ſtrong and well made, of an amiable, majeſtic countenance, his hair of an auburn colour, long faced, a broad forehead,

a piercing grave eye, and a gracious ſmile; courteous, loving, and affable; naturally ſhame-faced and modeſt; patient, ſlow to anger: He was merciful, after he had a little puniſhed offenders, but did not judge raſhly. Diſſimulation he eſteemed moſt baſe, chiefly in a Prince, being not willing, or by nature able, to flatter, or uſe thoſe kindly who deſerved not his love. He was quick to conceive any thing, mature in deliberation, yet moſt conſtant, having reſolved: True to his promiſe, yet, from his youth, moſt ſecret; being of a cloſe diſpoſition, not eaſy to be known or pried into: Of a fearleſs, noble, heroic, and undaunted courage, thinking nothing impoſſible to be performed that had ever before been atchieved. A few fair words prevailed more with him than all the threats in the world. He was very pitiful and tender-hearted unto any in miſery, whom, upon petition, he ever ſome way relieved. His love to religion was moſt ardent, and all the good cauſes thereof; his heart was bent by ſome means or other (if he had lived) to have ſhewed and compounded the unkind jars then ſubſiſting. He well ſhewed his love to good men, and hatred of the evil, in diſcerning a good from a vain-glorious preacher, in whom above all things he abhorred flattery, loving and countenancing the good, and never ſpeaking but with diſdain of the idle and loitering; in which he ſhewed he had an heart flexible to good and all kinds of goodneſs. He was conſtant in his devotions, praying duly before dinner and ſupper, which he never omitted, whatſoever haſte he had, or were it never ſo late. He made great conſcience of an oath, and was never heard to take God's name in vain; witneſs the teſtimony of the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, who in his funeral ſermon, ſays, that his Highneſs being aſked one day, why he did not ſwear in play as well as others; to his eternal praiſe made this reply, *That he knew no game worthy of an oath.* To live long he never deſired, ſaying it was to ſmall purpoſe for a brave man to live paſt the prime of his days, till he were full of aches and maladies; uttering contemptible ſpeeches of death, and uſed to ſay, that when he ſhould be ſick, three or four days together, *Then God have mercy on me.* Popery he hated, and yet would now and then uſe particular papiſts very kindly, ſhewing that he did not diſlike their perſons but their opinions. He loved learning, and all the learned who any ways excelled, and particularly the two Univerſities, but chiefly Oxford, which had enjoyed his preſence; and when he was waited upon at Woodſtock by their Vice-chancellor, Doctors, Graduates, and Students, he was very beneficent, and cateful to give them contentment, with which they were fully ſatisfied, and with his mild and grave carriage towards them, and his loving ſpeeches in their abſence. How they lamented his loſs, appeared by the mournful verſes printed in *Juſta Oxen. & Epicedium Cantabrig.* with many ora-

tions

tions to the ſame purpoſe. He was careful to obey the King his father, and to obſerve and honour the Queen his mother. His care and wiſdom in the government of his houſe and revenues were wonderful; giving orders, and ſeeing every thing done almoſt himſelf, ſo that ſcarce were there any of his houſhold ſervants whom he did not know by name; and amongſt them there was not a known or ſuppoſed papiſt; his care being ſo great, that all communicants names ſhould be written up, that he might know if there were any that were not ſo; ſo that it may moſt truly be affirmed, no houſe ever exceeded his in all things. His revenues he left encreaſed by thouſands a year: he was ſparing, yet liberal, where either honeſty, deſert, or poverty, moved him; neither was he ever known to give away any thing, or promiſe any thing, but on mature deliberation. As for thoſe penſions which he gave a little before his death, they were given to ſuch as either very well deſerved of him, or who had ſpent their means in his ſervice. He was loving and kind to ſtrangers, whoſe hearts he eaſily gained in matters of ſtate, and in petitions not pertaining unto him, he was ever ſparing, and not willing to meddle. In his own affairs, whatever abuſes were, he ever redreſſed upon petition of the parties aggrieved. Friday, which was the day on which he died, he had for a long time accounted ominous; on which he would not willingly uſe any exerciſe, ride any journey, nor ſometimes even play at cards; alledging, that he continually found ſome indiſpoſition upon that day, and never had good luck upon it. He ſtrove to excel in every thing excellent, delighting in all warlike engines, both by ſea and land; in the bravery and number of great horſes; in ſhooting and levelling great ordnance, in ordering and marſhalling armies, building, gardening, and in all ſorts of muſic, but chiefly the trumpet and drum; in limning, painting, and carving, alſo in rare pictures, which were brought to him from all countries. As he was a man, he was not without ſome imperfections, yet whatſoever they were, ſuch a number of noble virtues covered and weighed them down, as they could not eaſily be perceived.

Charles Duke of York, brother to the ſaid Prince Henry, became, on his deceaſe, Duke of Cornwall, and had the regalities thereof; being alſo created Prince of Wales. He was born at Dunfermling in Scotland, November 19, 1600, and ſo weak at his birth, that, on apprehenſion of his ſhort life, it haſtened his baptiſm, without thoſe ceremonies uſually attending it[a]. In the ſecond year of his age, he was created Duke of Albany, Marquis of Ormond, Earl of Roſs, and Lord Ardmanoch. In 1604 (having been left in Scotland) being ſo ill, it was not adviſeable to bring him into England till September that year, fearing the

[a] Sandford's Geneal. Hiſtory.

change

change of air might have a bad effect on him; but then by eaſy ſtages he was brought to his royal father at Windſor, who, on January 5 following [r], made him a Knight of the Bath; and for the greater ſolemnity, eleven others with him, all ſons of noblemen. The next day following [s] (being Twelfth-day and Sunday) he was created Duke of York, to naturalize him with an Engliſh honour. In 1606, he was committed to the tuition of Mr. Thomas Murray, a Scotſman; and ſome imperfections of his body diſpoſing him to the better improvement of his mind, he was diligent and ſtudious; for being yet weakly, with his legs growing crooked, made him leſs inclined to ſports and exerciſes of activity, whereby he took more delight in his book and his pen. Dr. Perinchief, a writer of his life, recites his proficiency in learning to be ſo eminent, that his brother Prince Henry, taking notice of it, "put the cap of Archbiſhop Abbot (who was "then, with other of the Nobility, waiting in the privy-chamber "for the King's coming out) on his brother's head, ſaying, *If he* "*continued a good boy, and followed his book, he would make him one* "*day Archbiſhop of Canterbury.* Which the child took in ſuch "diſdain, that he threw the cap on the ground, and trampled it "under his feet with ſuch eagerneſs as hardly to be reſtrained."

In 1611, he was elected a Knight of the Garter; and, on the death of Henry Prince of Wales his brother, who died on Novemb. 6, 1612, the dukedom of Cornwall devolved on him, and he attended at his funeral as chief mourner, December 7. On February 14 following, he was brideman to the Princeſs Elizabeth his ſiſter, who on that day was married to Frederick V. Prince Elector Palatine of the Rhine, and King of Bohemia, who had iſſue by her eight ſons and five daughters; whereof the youngeſt, Princeſs Sophia, was married in 1658 to Erneſt-Auguſtus, who became Duke of Hanover in 1680, as heir to his brother John-Frederick, and in 1692 was created 9th Elector of the Empire.

I now return to Prince Charles, who, as ſaid before, was Duke of Cornwall on his brother's deceaſe, as it was determined for him, grounded on ſeveral charters, authorities, and precedents [t]; the King's ſons having been by law accounted Dukes of Cornwall in the firſt inſtant of their birth, and not only the eldeſt, but alſo the ſecond, or other ſon, after the death of the firſt, or former, who enjoyed the ſaid title. But he was not created Prince of Wales, Earl of Cheſter and Flint, till November 4, 1616, when, being of a manly age, and had worn off a ſedentary life, with the firſt infirmities of conſtitution, it was thought convenient to aſſign him the revenues thereof, to maintain a court as heir apparent to the crown. For the greater ſo-

[r] Anſtis on Knighthood of the Bath, p. 60. [s] Ibid. p. 61. [t] Vide the Caſe of the Dutchy of Cornwall, with the Arguments of Council, &c.

lemnity of his creating [x], 26, all ſons of noblemen, were the day before made Knights of the Bath, and the next day attended the Prince in their robes of purple ſattin, in the great hall of Whitehall, where he was created. My deſign being only to recite who have been Princes of Wales, it is needleſs to make further mention of him, the Earl of Clarendon and other hiſtorians having fully ſet forth the means and deſigns that brought him to his fatal and untimely end, January 30, 1648-9.

His eldeſt ſon Charles, Prince of Great-Britain, was born in the palace of St. James's, May 29, 1630, and the next day, being Sunday, the King went to St. Paul's church to give thanks to God for the birth of his ſon, at which time a ſtar appeared in a clear ſky. There is an account [MS. 61. B. 30. in Bibl. Harl.] of the ceremonies uſed at his chriſtening, June 27, 1630, the Duke of Lennox and Marquis of Hamilton being godfathers. He was committed in his infancy to the care of the Counteſs of Dorſet, wife to Edward Earl of Dorſet, and when he was too maſculine for feminine conduct, he was put under the tuition of William Cavendiſh, Earl of Newcaſtle. At eight years of age, May 21, 14 Car. I. he was elected a Knight of the moſt noble order of the Garter, and the ſame day, after his election, and the enſigns of the order placed upon him, he was conducted by the two ſenior Knights (as obſerved by Aſhmole [y]) into the preſence-chamber in Windſor-caſtle, where, before the chair of ſtate, he received the order of Knighthood from his royal father; and for the further honour and memory thereof, four of the chief nobles then preſent were alſo knighted. Soon after, by the King's declaration [z], not creation, he had the title of Prince of Wales, with the whole profits of the Principality, and lands annexed to the Earldom of Cheſter, granted to him; and held his courts ſeparate from the King's. And the unhappy diviſions growing to a height in the beginning of the year 1642, his royal father, with the Prince his ſon, were forced to retire from Whitehall, and reſide in the city of York. There, on April 18, 19, and 20, the King held the feaſt of St. George (the laſt he held) with but four Knights Companions of the Garter, viz. the Prince, the Prince Elector Palatine, the Earl of Lindſey, and the Duke of Richmond. On the laſt of which days, James, Duke of York, the King's ſecond ſon, and Rupert Count Palatine of the Rhine, were choſe companions of the moſt noble order of the Garter. And to make good their elections, as there were not a ſufficient number of Knights with the Sovereign to hold a chapter according to

[x] Anſtis's Eſſay on Knighth. of the Bath, p. 75, 76. [y] Order of the Garter, p. 275. [z] Sandford, Genealogical Hiſtory. [a] Sir Edward Walker's Hiſtorical Account of the Elections, &c. of Knights of the Garter, MS. Offic. Armor.

the

the ſtatutes, the King granted a commiſſion of diſpenſation for the Knights abſent; and that the four Knights preſent ſhould have power to hold chapters, and to do any acts needful, as if the whole number had been full. At 12 years of age he was with the King his father at the memorable battle of Edge-hill, Oct. 23, 1642; and at about 17 he was at the head of an army in the Weſt: Whence, when the rebels had poſſeſſed themſelves of the whole kingdom, he retired firſt to the iſlands of Scilly, thence to Jerſey, and after to the Queen his mother at Paris. In 1648 ſome of the fleet having revolted from the parliament, he made an attempt to reſcue his father, then priſoner in the Iſle of Wight. On July 26, 1648, he came before [b] Yarmouth with 19 ſhips of war and 2000 men, and landed ſome men; but the town was ſo divided in their affections, and Major Jermy having forces there, he could not make himſelf maſter thereof. Yet the parliament horſe having taken ſeven of his men priſoners, a party of the townſmen reſcued them, and diſperſed his declaration. He uſed the following titles in the commiſſions he gave out, *Charles Prince of Great-Britain, Duke of Cornwall and Albany, higheſt Captain-General under his Majeſty of all his forces both by ſea and land, within the kingdom of England, dominion of Wales, and town of Berwick, &c.* On Auguſt 8 following, a letter was delivered from him [c] to the Speaker of the houſe of Peers, in which, after taking notice of a perſonal treaty with his royal father, he deſires, "That the treaty be in ſuch a place and "manner, as may conſiſt with the honour, freedom, and ſafety, "of his Majeſty, his father, ſo that the agreement may not be "blemiſhed with any face of reſtraint: that during the treaty "there be a general ceſſation of arms, that the affection of the "people of this and the other kingdom may not be leſſened by "acts of hoſtility: that moderate ſubſiſtence, during the treaty, "may be agreed upon for all forces on foot, and which in no "ſort muſt go unmentioned, for the Scots army now in England, "and ſo as may be with the leaſt preſſure to the northern parts: "and if the two houſes will agree to theſe things, he will en-"deavour to his utmoſt power with his father for a good agree-"ment. He concludes with a deſire, that a courſe may be taken "to content him, and his ſhips now in the Downs, with money "and proviſion, that ſo he nor they may not hinder the city trade, "and he will diſcharge the ſhips he hath now in hold." The Lord Willoughby, on board the fleet (as Whitelock affirms) was very earneſt with the Prince (when the Earl of Warwick with his navy came up to them) to have fought the parliament fleet under his command, having aſſurances, that ſeveral of his ſhips would have revolted. *But others diſſuaded the Prince from fighting, pretending danger to his perſon; whereas in probability, and as the ſeamens*

[b] Whitelock's Memorials, p. 319, 320. [c] Ibid. p. 322.

affections then ſtood if they had fought, the parliament's fleet had been endangered. One of thoſe ſhips taken by the Prince had in her near 20,000l. in gold, which ſhe brought from Guiney; and he took ſeveral other merchant-ſhips to the value of 200,000l. whilſt his fleet remained in the Downs; and on Aug. 15 attacked the town of Deal, and the forces under Col. Rich intrenched there for its defence. Whitelock recites, p. 324, that the Prince's forces marched with great reſolution, and, to prevent the parliament's horſe from annoying them, had marſh ground before them; which put the horſe in ſome confuſion: but retreating, the Prince's men advanced to firmer ground, in confidence of victory, which gave the horſe advantage of flanking his men, and 300 muſqueteers charging them at the ſame time, they were put into diſorder, and entirely routed, 200 being ſlain and taken in the purſuit, and 100 taken priſoners, &c. And the Earl of Warwick coming up with his fleet, it was not thought adviſeable to engage with him; and thereupon made the beſt of their way to Holland. On his arrival there [d], the States-General debated, Whether, *the Prince of Wales being returned thither, they ſhould entertain him in a public way, or give him an allowance per diem*; and they agreed to allow him a thouſand gilders a day. He reſided there with the Princeſs of Orange, who accommodated him in the beſt manner ſhe could till the day of the impious martyrdom of his royal father, when the rebellious part of the parliament paſſed an act for excluding from the crown Charles II. What is further memorable of him, our hiſtorians relate at large; and leaving no legitimate iſſue, I ſhall now proceed to treat of thoſe who have been ſince created Princes of Wales.

James II. having to his ſecond wife Mary D'Eſte, daughter to Alphonſo D'Eſte, third of that name, Duke of Modena, had by her James-Francis-Edward, born on June 10, 1688, who had the title of Prince of Wales in his father's life-time; and ſince, commonly ſtiled the Pretender, and Chevalier de St. George; who in 1719 wedded the Princeſs Clementina, daughter of Prince James, ſon of John Sobieſky, King of Poland; and by her (who died at Rome on Jan. 18, 1734-5, in the 33d year of her age) had two ſons, viz. Charles-Edward, born on Dec. 31, 1720, and Henry-Benedict (a cardinal) born on March 6, 1725, N. S.

On the acceſſion of George I. to the imperial crown of theſe realms by the demiſe of Queen Anne, Auguſt 1, 1714, our late Sovereign George II. Prince Electoral of Brunſwick, born October 30, 1683, became Prince of Great-Britain, Duke of Cornwall; and, as Prince of Scotland, was hereditary High Steward of Scotland, and Duke of Rotheſay, Earl of Carrick, and Baron of Renfrew; titles [e] ſettled in 1399 by Robert III.

[d] Whitelock, p. 330.

[e] Crawford's Peerage of Scotland, folio, p. 431.

King of that realm, on the Prince his eldeſt ſon, perpetually appropriating thoſe titles to the future Princes of Scotland as ſoon as born.

On September 2, 1705, his Majeſty married the Princeſs Willielmina-Carolina, daughter of John-Frederick Marquis of Brandenburgh-Anſpach, by Eleanor-Erdmuth-Louiſa, his ſecond wife, daughter to John-George Duke of Saxe-Eyſenach. On Thurſday, April 4, 1706, in a Chapter of the Garter held at Kenſington, the Queen and ten Knights of the Order preſent, he was elected a Knight Companion, and on May 29, O. S. following, inveſted with the enſigns of the Order, at Hanover, by Lord Halliſax, who alſo carried the act for naturalizing the Princeſs Sophia and the iſſue of her body.

On October 5, 1706, her Majeſty was pleaſed to [f] ſign a warrant for creating him a Peer of England, by the ſtile and title of Baron of Tewkſbury, in the county of Glouceſter, Viſcount Northallerton, in the county of York, Earl of Milford-Haven, in the county of Pembroke, Marquis and Duke of Cambridge, &c. with precedence of all the reſt of the Peers of Great-Britain.

There having been no inſtallation at Windſor after his inveſtiture with the moſt noble order of the Garter, till the elections of William Duke of Devonſhire, and John Duke of Argyle, in 1710 [g], his moſt ſerene Highneſs was inſtalled (by his proxy Charles Lord Hallifax) with them at Windſor, on December 22, that year.

On his royal father's ſucceeding to the crowns of theſe realms, he became (as ſaid before) Duke of Cornwall and Rotheſay, &c. He ſet out with his ſaid father from Hanover, September 11, N. S. and, after their arrival at the Hague, embarked the 16th, O. S. on board the Peregrine yacht, and came to Greenwich on the 18th about ſix in the evening, being there met by the greateſt aſſembly of Nobility, &c. ever known, and that night took up their abode in the palace there.

On September 22, the firſt day of his Majeſty's coming to council, his Royal Highneſs, by his command [h], was introduced into the privy-council, and took his place at the upper end of the board on his right hand; and five days after [i] was created Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter, and of Flint. And his majeſty diſſolving his privy-council, and appointing another to meet on October 1, his [k] Royal Highneſs was the firſt named. On October 13, the Princeſs of Wales, with the two eldeſt Princeſſes her daughters, landed at Margate, lay that night at Rocheſter [l], and the next day reached St. James's.

[f] Annals of Queen Anne, year 5. p. 330, 331, 332. [g] Annals, year 9. p. 283. [h] Pointer's Chronological Hiſt. p. 777. [i] Bill ſignat. 1 Geo. I. [k] Pointer, p. 778, 779. [l] Ibid. p. 785.

On February 18, 1714-15, the South-ſea company elected him their govenor. On May 5, 1715, the artillery company of London requeſted his Royal Highneſs to accept of being their Captain General. On April 10, 1716, being attended by the deputies ſent by Trinity-College, Dublin, he accepted of the Chancellorſhip of that Univerſity.

In 1716, his Majeſty viſiting his dominions in Germany, his Royal Highneſs was left guardian of the realm, and lieutenant within the ſame. Succeeding to the crown, on June 11, 1727, his eldeſt ſon, Frederick-Lewis, was the next that had the titles of Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, alſo Steward of Scotland, Duke of Rotheſay, Baron of Renfrew, Earl of Carrick, and Lord of the Iſles.

His Royal Highneſs, born at Hanover, January 20, 1706-7, was, on February 4, chriſtened by the name of Frederick-Lewis, the King of Pruſſia, and the Elector of Hanover, his grandfather, being godfathers, and the Dutcheſs Dowager godmother.

In 1716, his Majeſty, viſiting his dominions in Germany, found his Royal Highneſs much improved in all parts of literature, and was ſo highly ſatisfied with his demeanor, that he was elected, December 24, 1716, with the Duke of York, his uncle, whilſt he was at Hanover, a Knight Companion of the moſt noble order of the Garter; and inſtalled at Windſor by his proxy (Sir Samuel Lennard, Knt. and Bart.) on [m] April 30, 1718.

And his Majeſty taking into conſideration his great merits, was pleaſed, on July 26, in the 12th year of his reign, to create him [n] Baron of Snaudon, in the county of Caernarvon, Viſcount of Launceſton in the county of Cornwall, Earl of Eltham in the county of Kent, Marquis of the Iſle of Ely in the county of Cambridge, and Duke of the city of Edinburgh in Scotland.

His Royal Highneſs, on November 28, 1727, was conſtituted firſt commiſſioner and governor for building and better management of the royal hoſpital at Greenwich. On Tueſday, December 3, 1728, his Royal Highneſs landed at Harwich, being the firſt time of his coming to England; and the day after arriving at St. James's, was, by his Majeſty's command, introduced into the privy-council on December 18, and took his place at the upper end of the board, on his Majeſty's right hand. On January 8, 1728-9 [o], bearing then the titles of Prince of Great-Britain, &c. he was created Prince of Wales and Earl of Cheſter, to hold to him and his heirs, Kings of Great-Britain, for ever, and the next day received his ſummons to parliament.

[m] Pote's Hiſtory and Antiquities of Windſor, p. 275. [n] Bill ſignat. 12 Geo. I.
[o] Bill ſignat. 2 Geo. II.

His

His Royal Highneſs took his ſeat in the houſe of Peers on the right hand of the ſtate, as ſettled by that noble houſe, *Die Mercurii 30 die Maij*, 1660, as follows:

"The Earl of Northumberland reported, That the Lords "Committee have waited on his Majeſty, concerning the ſeats "where the Duke of York and the Duke of Glouceſter are to "ſit in parliament, and his Majeſty ſaid, he conceived that the "ſeat on the right hand of the ſtate, where the King of Scots "anciently was wont to ſit, will be of no more uſe now, ſeeing "that title is involved in his Majeſty. And his Majeſty ſaid, "he himſelf ſat in that ſeat as Prince of Wales; therefore de-"ſired that place may be reſerved for the Prince of Wales, and "that the ſeats on the left hand the ſtate may be fitted ſpeedily "for his brothers the Duke of York, and Duke of Glouceſter, "And accordingly the houſe gave directions to have it done."

Having been elected Chancellor of the univerſity of Dublin, he was, on June 18, 1729, ſworn into his office in preſence of the heads of that learned ſeminary, who came over for that purpoſe. An act having paſſed, in 1750, for the encouragement of the Britiſh White-Herring fiſhery, and a charter of corporation having been granted, in conſequence thereof, on Oct. 11, that year, in which his Royal Highneſs was nominated governor, he went, in ſtate, to Fiſhmongers Hall, in Thames-ſtreet, to receive the charter of that company; on which occaſion he not only expreſſed his regard for that undertaking in particular, but likewiſe for the welfare of the kingdom in general.

On April 27, 1736, his Royal Highneſs was married, at St. James's chapel, to her Highneſs Auguſta, younger daughter of Frederick II. Duke of Saxe-Gotha, who died on March 12, 1732. On June 21, 1737, his Majeſty was pleaſed to give the royal aſſent to,

An act for enabling his Majeſty to ſettle a revenue for ſupporting the dignity of her Royal Highneſs the Princeſs, in caſe ſhe ſhall ſurvive his Royal Highneſs the Prince of Wales, and for exempting ſuch yearly ſum or ſums of money as his Majeſty hath granted, or ſhall grant, to his ſaid Royal Highneſs, from the payment of fees, taxes, and other charges whatſoever; and for enabling his ſaid Royal Highneſs to make leaſes of lands, parcel of the dutchy of Cornwall, or annexed to the ſame.

Her Royal Highneſs was delivered of a Princeſs, born at St. James's palace, a little after eleven o'clock, on Sunday, July 31, 1737, and baptized Auguſt 29, following, by Dr. John Potter, Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and named Auguſta. Our late Sovereign was her godfather, repreſented by his Grace the Duke of Grafton, Lord-Chamberlain of the houſhold; and the Counteſs of Burlington, one of the Ladies of her Majeſty's

bedchamber in waiting, was proxy for her late Majesty Queen Caroline, and the Viscountess Torrington, one of the Ladies of her Royal Highnesses bedchamber, for the Dutchess Dowager of Saxe-Gotha, the godmother. She was married at St. James's, on Tuesday, Jan. 17, 1764, to Charles-William-Ferdinand, Hereditary Prince of Brunswick-Wolfenbuttle, who was born October 9, 1735.

On Dec. 3, 1764, her Royal Highness was delivered at Brunswick, of a Princess, baptized by the name of

On Feb. 8, 1766, she was delivered at St. James's, of a Prince, who was baptized on March 9, by the name of Charles-George-Augustus.

On Wednesday, May 24, 1738, at half an hour past seven in the morning, her Royal Highness was delivered of a son, (the present King) immediately christened by the name of George, occasioned by some dangerous symptoms which appeared at first, but were soon happily over; and on June the 21st the office was completed at Norfolk-house, St. James's square, where his Royal Highness then resided, by Dr. Thomas Secker, Lord Bishop of Oxford, Rector of St. James's, Westminster, now Archbishop of Canterbury, when he had the name of George-William-Frederick. His godfathers were the King of Sweden, represented by Charles, Lord Baltimore, and the Duke of Saxe-Gotha, represented by Henry, Marquis of Caernarvon, now Duke of Chandos. The godmother was the Queen of Prussia, represented by the Lady Charlot Edwin.

His Royal Highness had a second son, born March 14, 1738-9 about four o'clock in the afternoon, and christened by the name of Edward-Augustus, April 11, 1739; of whom see more fully in his place as Duke of York.

On December 30, 1740, at seven o'clock in the morning, her Royal Highness was delivered of a Princess at Norfolk-house, St. James's square, who was baptized January 24 following, by the name of Elizabeth-Carolina, the Margrave of Anspach being godfather, represented by Charles, Lord Baltimore, and the Queen of Denmark, and the Duchess of Saxe-Gotha, godmothers, represented by the Viscountess Irwin, and the Lady of Lord Archibald Hamilton, Ladies of her Royal Highness's bed-chamber. She died on Sept. 4, 1759, and was buried in Westminster-abbey.

Her Royal Highness had a third son, of whom more fully afterwards, as Duke of Gloucester.

On Sunday morning October 26, 1745, her Royal Highness was happily delivered of another Prince, at Leicester-house, who was baptized there by the name of Henry-Frederick, (See more in his place as Duke of Cumberland) on November 26. The sponsors were the King of Denmark, the

Prince of Orange, and the Princeſs of Heſſe, by their proxies the Dukes of Queenſbury and Chandos, and the Lady Viſcounteſs Torrington.

On March 8, 1748-9, her Royal Highneſs was delivered of a daughter at Leiceſter-Houſe, who was baptized on April 1, by the name of Louiſa-Anne; the Prince of Heſſe, her Royal Highneſs the Princeſs of Orange, and the Queen of Denmark, being ſponſors by their proxies.

His Royal Highneſs had a fifth ſon, born at Leiceſter-houſe, on May 13, 1750, and baptized there, June 17 following, by the name of Frederick-William. The ſponſors were his Royal Highneſs Prince George, the Princeſs Auguſta, and Prince William of Saxe-Gotha, brother to her Royal Highneſs the Princeſs of Wales, repreſented by the Lord North and Guildford (now Earl of Guilford) then one of the Lords of the bed-chamber to his Royal Highneſs.

This hopeful Prince deceaſed at Leiceſter-houſe, on Sunday December 29, 1765, after a lingering illneſs; and on Jan. 4, 1766, his remains were interred in the royal vault, in Henry the VIIth's chapel, Weſtminſter-abbey.

Her Royal Highneſs (after the much lamented death of the Prince of Wales) was delivered of another Princeſs at Leiceſter-houſe, on July 11, 1751, and, by Dr. Thomas Hayter, ſucceſſively Biſhop of Norwich and London, baptized there, July 22 following, by the name of Caroline-Matilda. The ſponſors were his Royal Highneſs the Prince of Wales, her Royal Highneſs the Princeſs Caroline, repreſented by the Lady Viſcounteſs Irwin, and her Royal Highneſs Lady Auguſta.

On Oct. 1, 1766, her Royal Highneſs was married, by proxy, to Chriſtian VII. King of Denmark, and the next morning ſet out for Harwich, where on the 3d, ſhe embarked with her retinue, and landed ſafely at Rotterdam, on the 9th. On Nov. 8. ſhe made her public entry into Copenhagen, the capital of Denmark, and on the evening of the ſame day, the royal nuptials were ſolemnized in the chapel of Chriſtianſburgh. On Jan. 28, 1768, ſhe was delivered of a Prince, who, on the 30th was baptized by the name of Frederick.

His Royal Highneſs departed this life at Leiceſter-houſe, on March 20, 1750-1, about ten o'clock at night, to the great grief of his Majeſty, and all the royal family. He had been early inſtructed in the leſſons of virtue and government, whereby he acquainted himſelf with the conſtitution of theſe kingdoms, and the genius of the people, which induced him to accept of the freedom of ſome corporations and companies offered him, to encourage their induſtry; alſo patronizing every ſocial art, and every thing conducive to the public good, ſhewing himſelf an accompliſhed Prince in his whole behaviour, and in every action

tion of his life. He was an obedient ſon, an affectionate huſband, tender parent, and a liberal and kind maſter; ſo that his death was univerſally lamented by the whole nation; but particularly by thoſe who knew his ardent deſire of retrieving the moral and political character of the kingdom.

His funeral was ſolemnized on Saturday, April 13. The proceſſion began half an hour after eight at night from the Prince's chamber at Weſtminſter, and paſſed through the Old Palace-yard to the ſouth-eaſt door of Weſtminſter-abbey, directly to the ſteps leading to Henry VIIth's chapel. The ceremonial was thus deſcribed in the Gazette, N° 9048.

Knight Marſhal's men, with black ſtaves, two and two.

Gentlemen ſervants to his Royal Highneſs, two and two, viz.

Pages of the preſence.

Gentlemen uſhers, quarter waiters, two and two.

Pages of honour.

Gentlemen uſhers, daily waiters.

Phyſicians, Dr. Wilmot, and Dr. Lee.

Houſhold chaplains.

Clerk of the cloſet, Rev. Dr. Ayſcough.

Equerries, two and two.

Clerks of the houſhold or greencloth, James Douglas, Eſq; and Sir John Cuſt, Bart.

Maſter of the houſhold, Lord Viſcount Gage.

Solicitor-general, Auditor, and Attorney-general.

Paul Joddrell, Eſq; Charles Mountague, Eſq; Hon. Henry Bathurſt, Eſq;

Secretary, Henry Drax, Eſq;

Comptroller and Treaſurer to his Royal Highneſs.

Robert Nugent, Eſq; and the Earl of Scarborough, with their white ſtaves.

Steward and Chamberlain to his Royal Highneſs, with white ſtaves.

Chancellor to his Royal Highneſs, Sir Thomas Bootle.

An officer of arms.

The maſter of the horſe to his Royal Highneſs, Earl of Middleſex.

A Gentleman Uſher { Clarencieux king at arms, Steph. Martin Leake, Eſq; bearing the coronet upon a black velvet cuſhion } A Gentleman Uſher

four

Four Supporters of the Canopy.

Supporters of the Pall,
Earl of PORTMORE,
Earl FITZWILLIAM,
Earl of BRISTOL.

The Body,
Covered with a Black Velvet Pall, adorned with Eight Escutcheons, and under a Canopy of Black Velvet, borne by Eight of his Royal Highness's Gentlemen.

Supporters of the Pall,
Earl of MACCLESFIELD,
Earl STANHOPE,
Earl of JERSEY.

Four Supporters of the Canopy.

A Gentleman Usher.

Garter King of Arms, John Anstis, Esq;

A Gentleman Usher.

Supporter to the chief mourner, Duke of Rutland.

The chief mourner, Duke of Somerset.

Supporter to the chief mourner, Duke of Devonshire.

His train borne by a Baronet, Sir Thomas Robinson.

Assistants to the chief mourner { Marquis of Tweedale, Marquis of Lothian, Earls of Berkeley, Peterborough, Northampton, Cardigan, Winchelsea, Carlisle, Murray and Morton.

The gentleman usher of his Royal Highness's privy-chamber, Edmund Bramston, Esq;

The groom of the stole to his Royal Highness, Duke of Chandos.

The Lords of the bedchamber to his Royal Highness, { Lord North and Guilford, Duke of Queensberry, Earl of Inchiquin, Earl of Egmont, Lord Robert Sutton, Earl of Bute, two and two.

The master of the robes to his Royal Highness, John Schutz, Esq;

The grooms of the bedchamber to his Royal Highness { John Evelyn, Esq; Samuel Masham, Esq; Thomas Bludworth, Esq; Sir Edmund Thomas, Bart. Daniel Boon, Esq; William Bretton, Esq; Martin Madden, Esq; William Trevanion, Esq; Col. Powlet; two and two.

Yeomen of the guard closed the procession.

The

The corpſe of his Royal Highneſs was met at the church-door by the dean and prebendaries, attended by the gentlemen of the choir and King's ſcholars, who fell into the proceſſion immediately before the officer of Arms, with wax tapers in their hands and properly habited, and began the common burial ſervice (no anthem being compoſed on this occaſion) two drums beating a dead march during the ſervice. Upon entering the chapel, the royal body was placed on treſſels, the crown and cuſhion at the head, and the canopy held over; the ſupporters of the pall ſtanding by; the chief mourner and his two ſupporters ſeated in chairs at the head of the corpſe; the Lords aſſiſtants, Maſter of the horſe, Groom of the ſtole, and Lords of the bedchamber, on both ſides; the four white ſtaff officers at the feet; the others ſeating themſelves in the ſtalls on each ſide the chapel: The Biſhop of Rocheſter, Dean of Weſtminſter, then read the firſt part of the burial ſervice, after which the corpſe was carried to the vault, proceeded by the white ſtaff officers, the Maſter of the horſe, the chief mourner, his ſupporters and aſſiſtants, Garter king at arms going before them. When they had placed themſelves near the vault, the corpſe laid upon a machine even with the pavement of the chapel, was, by degrees, let down into the vault, when the Biſhop of Rocheſter went on with the ſervice; which being ended, Garter proclaimed his late Royal Highneſs's titles—

That it hath pleaſed Almighty God to take out of this tranſitory life to his divine mercy, the moſt illuſtrious Frederick Lewis, Prince of Wales, &c. &c.

The nobility and attendants returned in the ſame order they proceeded, at half an hour after nine; ſo that the whole ceremony laſted an hour.

The utmoſt decorum was obſerved; and though the populace were extremely noiſy before the proceſſion began, there was, during the whole ſervice, a ſilence, that, if poſſible, added to the ſolemnity of the funeral. The guards, who each of them held two lighted flambeaux during the whole time, behaved ſo well, that not any accident happened among the ſpectators.

As ſoon as the proceſſion began to move, two rockets were fired off in Old Palace-yard as a ſignal for the guns in the Park to fire, which were followed by thoſe of the Tower; during which time the great bells of Weſtminſter, and St. Paul's cathedral, tolled, as did the bells of moſt of the churches in London.

The following Inſcription was engraved on a ſilver plate, and affixed to the coffin of his Royal Highneſs.

DEPOSITUM

Illuſtriſſimi Principis Frederici Ludovici Principis Walliæ, Principis Electoralis & Hereditarii Brunſvici & Lunenbergi, Ducis Cor-

Cornubiæ, Rothesay, and Edinburghi, Marchionis Insulæ de Ely, Comitis Cestriæ, Carrick & Eltham, Vice-Comitis Launceston, Baronis Renfrew, & Snaudon, Domini Insularum, Seneschalli Scotiæ, Nobilissimi Ordinis Perisceliдis Equitis, & a Sanctioribus Conciliis Majestati Regiæ, Academiæ Dublinienſis Cancellarii; Filii primogeniti Celsissimi, Potentissimi, & Excellentissimi Monarchæ, Georgii Secundi, Dei Gratia, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ & Hiberniæ Regis, Fidei Defensoris, Obiit Vicesimo die Martii anno MDCCL. Ætatis suæ XLV.

By the decease of his Royal Highness, the dutchy of Cornwall was merged in the Crown. The statute of 11 Edward III. granting to his son Prince Edward the dutchy of Cornwall, particularly reciting these words: *To have and to hold, &c. to the sayd Duke, and to the first begotten sonne of him, and of his heires, Kings of England, and Dukes of the said place, that hereditarily succeede in the kingdom of England.* And that it returned to the Crown, was apparent in the case of Richard II. eldest son of Prince Edward [y], who died in the life-time of Ed. III. his father; by means whereof the said Richard became lineal heir male to the King and Crown: Yet, because he was not the eldest son of a King, but of a King's son, he was not Duke of Cornwall by the right of that grant and limitation; and was created Duke of Cornwall by Edward III. by his letters patent, and not by parliament: and the limitation of the dutchy to him was of the more common form, *To him, and to his heires Kings of England.*

I have already mentioned the birth of his Royal Highness's eldest son, George-William-Frederick, who succeeded him in the titles of Prince of Great Britain, Electoral Prince of Brunswick-Lunenburgh, Duke of Edinburgh, Marquis of the Isle of Ely, Earl of Carrick and Eltham, Viscount of Launceston, Baron of Renfrew and Snaudon, Lord of the Isles, Steward of Scotland, as recited when his Majesty, in council at St. James's, April 20, 1751, ordered letters patent for creating his said Royal Highness Prince of Wales, &c. He was elected, in the life-time of his father, a knight of the most noble order of the Garter, at a chapter held at Kensington, June 22, 1749, when the Sovereign, and his Royal Highness the Duke of Cumberland, were present, with seven other Knights of the order; at which time were also elected the Margrave of Anspach, the Dukes of Leeds and Bedford, the Earls of Albemarle and Granville; and they were installed at Windsor, July 12, 1750. At a general court of the proprietors of the British fishery, December 3,

[y] Declaration touching the dutchy of Cornwall, on the case of Charles Prince of Wales; imprinted at London in 1613.

1753,

1753, for the election of a governor, president and vice-president, his Royal Highness was unanimously elected Governor.

On the demise of his grandfather, October 25, 1760, he succeeded him on the throne of Great-Britain, and in his dominions and titles in Germany. On September 8, 1761, he married, at St. James's, her Serene Highness the Princess Charlotte, youngest of the two sisters of Adolphus-Frederick IV. Duke of Mecklenburg-Strelitz, and was crowned with her at Westminster on the 22d of that same month, by the before-mentioned Dr. Thomas Secker, Archbishop of Canterbury, who also married them. By his said royal consort (who was born May 16, 1744) his Majesty has issue, George-Augustus Frederick, of whom more at large, immediately as Prince of Wales; Prince Frederick, who was born on Tuesday, August 16, 1763, about ten o'clock in the morning, at Buckingham-house (now called the Queen's palace) and christened on September 19, at St. James, in the great council-chamber there, by the said Archbishop of Canterbury; the godfathers being his Royal Highness the Duke of York, represented by Francis, Earl of Huntingdon, groom of the stole, and his Serene-Highness Frederick, Duke of Saxe-gotha, by his proxy Granville Earl Gower, lord chamberlain; and her Royal Highness the Princess Amelia godmother, in person. This young Prince was elected Bishop of Osnaburgh, Feb 27, 1764. And on December 30, 1767, he was invested, at a chapter of the most honourable order of the Bath, with the ensigns of that order. On August 21, 1765, her Majesty was delivered of a Prince, who was baptized at St. James's by the Archbishop of Canterbury, by the name of William-Henry; the sponsors being, their Royal Highnesses Prince Frederick-Henry, and Prince Frederick-William, and the Princess Louisa-Anne. On Sept. 29, 1766, her Majesty was happily delivered of the Princess-Royal, who, on October 27, was baptized at St. James's, and named Charlotte-Augusta-Matilda. On Nov. 2. 1767, her Majesty was delivered of a fourth Prince, who was baptized on the 30th of the same month, at St. James's, by the Bishop of London, and named Edward; the sponsors being, his Serene Highness the Hereditary Prince of Brunswick, represented by the Earl of Hertford, Lord Chamberlain of his Majesty's household, his Serene Highness Prince Charles of Mecklenburgh-Strelitz, represented by the Earl of Huntingdon, Groom of the Stole; and her Royal Highness the Landgravine of Hesse-Cassel, represented by the Dutchess of Hamilton, one of the Ladies of her Majesty's bed-chamber.

His Royal Highness George-Augustus-Frederick, Prince of Wales, was born on Thursday, August 12, 1762, in the morn-

1753, for the election of a governor, president and vice-president, his Royal Highness was unanimously elected Governor.

On the demise of his grandfather, October 25, 1760, he succeeded him on the throne of Great-Britain, and in his dominions and titles in Germany. On September 8, 1761, he married, at St. James's, her Serene Highness the Princess Charlotte, youngest of the two sisters of Adolphus-Frederick IV. Duke of Mecklenburg-Strelitz, and was crowned with her at Westminster on the 22d of that same month, by the before-mentioned Dr. Thomas Secker, Archbishop of Canterbury, who also married them. By his said royal consort (who was born May 16, 1744) his Majesty has issue, George-Augustus Frederick, of whom more at large, immediately as Prince of Wales; Prince Frederick, who was born on Tuesday, August 16, 1763, about ten o'clock in the morning, at Buckingham-house (now called the Queen's palace) and christened on September 10, at St. James's, in the great council-chamber there, by the said Archbishop of Canterbury; the godfathers being his Royal Highness the Duke of York, represented by Francis, Earl of Huntingdon, groom of the stole, and his Serene Highness Frederick, Duke of Saxe-Gotha, by his proxy Granville Earl Gower, lord chamberlain; and her Royal Highness the Princess Amelia godmother, in person. This young Prince was elected Bishop of Osnaburgh, Feb. 27, 1764. And on December 30, 1767, he was invested, at Carlton-house, of the most honourable order of the Bath, with the ensigns of that order. On August 21, 1762, her Majesty was delivered of a Prince, who was baptized at St. James's by the Archbishop of Canterbury, by the name of William-Henry; the sponsors being, their Royal Highnesses Prince Frederick-Henry, and Prince Frederick-William, and the Princess Louisa-Anne. On Sept. 29, 1763, her Majesty was happily delivered of the Princess Royal, who, on October 27, was baptized at St. James's, and named Charlotte-Augusta-Matilda. On Nov. 1, 1765, her Majesty was delivered of a fourth Prince, who was baptized on the 30th of the same month, at St. James's, by the Bishop of London, and named Edward; the sponsors being, his Serene Highness the Hereditary Prince of Brunswick, represented by the Earl of Hertford, Lord Chamberlain of his Majesty's household, his Serene Highness Prince Charles of Mecklenburgh-Strelitz, represented by the Earl of Huntingdon, Groom of the Stole, and her Royal Highness the Landgravine of Hesse-Cassel, represented by the Duchess of Hamilton, one of the Ladies of her Majesty's bed-chamber.

His Royal Highness George-Augustus-Frederick, Prince of Wales, was born on Thursday, August 12, 1762, in the morn-

His Royal Highness George Prince of Wales.

morning, at St. James's, and baptized in the council-chamber there, by the before-mentioned Archbiſhop of Canterbury, on Wedneſday, September 8 following. The ſponſors were the late Duke of Cumberland in perſon, the Duke of Mecklenburgh-Strelitz (repreſented by the Duke of Devonſhire, chamberlain of the houſhold) and her Royal Highneſs Auguſta, Princeſs Dowager of Wales, in perſon.

His Royal Highneſs by birth had the titles of Duke of Cornwall, and Rotheſay, &c. and on Auguſt 17, 1762, his royal father ordered letters patent for creating him Prince of Wales, and Earl of Cheſter, with the uſual limitation.

His Royal Highneſs is Captain-general of the Artillery Company, and High Steward of Plymouth. In 1765, his Royal Highneſs was elected a Knight Companion of the moſt noble order of the Garter.

His Royal Highneſs's titles are, the moſt high, puiſſant, and moſt illuſtrious Prince, George-Auguſtus-Frederick, Prince of Great-Britain, Prince of Wales, electoral Prince of Brunſwick-Lunenburgh, Duke of Cornwall and Rotheſay, Earl of Cheſter and Carrick, Baron of Renfrew, Lord of the Iſles, and Great Steward of Scotland.

ARMS.] Quarterly, 1ſt, Thoſe of Great-Britain, viz. Gules, three Lions paſſant, guardant, Or, impaling, Or, a Lion rampant, within a double treſſure flory and counterflory, Gules: 2d, France, Azure, three fleurs-de-lis, Or: 3d, Ireland, Azure, a harp, Or, ſtringed, Argent: 4th, his Majeſty's paternal coat, Gules, two Lions paſſant, guardant, Or, for Brunſwick, impaling Lunenburgh, viz. Or, a Lion rampant, Azure, and ſemée of hearts, proper; having, in baſe, ancient Saxony, viz. Gules, a Horſe full-current, Argent, and in the center, an Eſcutcheon, Argent: the whole differenced by a label of three points, Argent, in chief.

CREST.] Above a helmet, full-faced, on a coronet compoſed of croſſes pattée, fleurs-de-lis, and ſtrawberry leaves, with one arch ſurmounted with a globe and croſs pattée; a Lion of England, crowned with the like coronet, as above deſcribed; with this difference, that the underpart is only a circlet inſtead of a circle enriched with jewels, and charged on the breaſt with a label, as in the arms. The mantling is crimſon, lined with ermine, ſpotted diamond-ways.

SUPPORTERS.] Dexter, a Lion guardant, crowned, as the creſt, Or. Sinifter, an Unicorn, Argent, armed, creſted and gorged with a collar of croſſes pattée, fleur-de-lis, and ſtrawberry leaves, Or, a chain affixed thereto, and reflexed, of the laſt. The ſupporters are charged with a label of three points, as the creſt.

MOTTO.] ICH DIEN.

DUKE

DUKE of YORK.

HIS Royal Highneſs Edward-Auguſtus, Duke of York, ſecond ſon of Frederick Prince of Wales, was born on March $\frac{14}{25}$, 1738-9, about four o'clock in the afternoon, and chriſtened on April 11 following. The ſponſors, on that occaſion, were the King of Pruſſia, the Duke of Brunſwick-Wolfenbuttel, and the Ducheſs of Saxe-Weiſſenfels, repreſented, reſpectively, by Charles Duke of Queenſberry and Dover, Henry Marquis of Caernarvon (now Duke of Chandos,) and Lady Charlotte Edwin. At the different ſtages of his youth, he was put under preceptors qualified to inſtruct him in the various branches of literature, and exerciſes, proper for a Prince of his birth; and as he was deſigned to preſide at the naval-board, the knowledge of maritime affairs was a peculiar branch of the plan allotted for his ſtudies. On March 18, 1752, he was elected a Knight companion of the moſt noble order of the Garter, and inſtalled on June 4 following.

His Royal Highneſs, on July 25, 1758, embarked at Portſmouth, on board the Eſſex, commanded by Richard now Lord Viſcount Howe, and proceeding with the fleet, was preſent at the reduction of Cherbourgh, in Normandy, by General Bligh. Having likewiſe ſailed in September enſuing with the ſame nobleman, when his Lordſhip eſcorted the tranſports with the troops ſent out againſt St. Malo, he witneſſed the unfortunate affair at St. Cas, on the 28th of that month, and ſhewed great reſolution and firmneſs of mind. His Highneſs, after he had gone through the ſubordinate offices of midſhipman and lieutenant, was, on June 19, 1759, promoted to the command of his Majeſty's ſhip Phœnix, of forty-four guns. On the 28th of next month, he ſailed from Plymouth, on board the Hero, man of war, with the preſent Lord Edgecumbe, and upon his joining the fleet off Breſt, was complimented by Admiral Hawke, and all the other flag-officers and captains of that ſquadron. He returned, with Sir Edward and Admiral Hardy, to Plymouth-ſound, on October 13, and ſoon after his landing ſet out for London.

On April 1, 1760, his late Majeſty was pleaſed to grant unto his Royal Highneſs, and the heirs male of his body, the dignities of Duke of the kingdom of Great-Britain, and of Earl of the kingdom of Ireland, by the names, ſtiles, and titles, of Duke of York and Albany, in the ſaid kingdom of Great-Britain, and of Earl of Ulſter, in the ſaid kingdom of

Ireland. He took the oaths, and his ſeat, in the Britiſh ſenate, on May 9 following: and on October 27, that year, two days after his brother's acceſſion to the throne, was ſworn of the privy-council. On March 31, 1761, his Royal Highneſs was appointed Rear-Admiral of the Blue, and ſworn in at the Admiralty on the 8th of next month.

The common-council of London, on June 5, 1761, voted that the freedom of their city ſhould be preſented to his Royal Highneſs, in a gold box of 150 guineas value, in teſtimony of their dutiful affection for their Sovereign, and as a pledge of their grateful reſpect to his Royal Highneſs, for his early entrance into the naval ſervice of his King and country, the nobleſt and moſt effectual bulwark of the wealth, reputation, and independance of this commercial nation; and that his Royal Highneſs be humbly requeſted to honour the city by his acceptance of the ſaid freedom. His Royal Highneſs having ſignified his conſent to accept this token of the citizens eſteem, Sir Matthew Blakiſton, Lord Mayor, accompanied by twelve other Aldermen, together with the Maſter of the Grocers company, attended by a committee of his brethren, waited on his Highneſs, on the 12th of the next month, when the Maſter of the Grocers company preſented him with the freedom of that ſociety, and the Comptroller of the Chamber of London delivered him that of the city; it being a fundamental part of the conſtitution of London, that no perſon be admitted a freeman of the city, till he be firſt ſo in ſome of the companies, and likewiſe cuſtomary, when an honorary freedom is to be granted, for the company whereof the Lord-Mayor is a member, previouſly to admit the intended citizen into their fraternity.

At his brother's nuptials, September 8, 1761, his Royal Highneſs, as chief ſupporter to the royal bride, walked on her right hand; and at the proceſſion of the enſuing coronation, on the 22d of that month, appeared in his robes, as firſt Prince of the blood.

On June 23, 1762, he hoiſted his flag, at Spithead, on board the Princeſs Amelia (whereof Lord Howe was captain) and falling down to St. Helen's, ſailed, with the fleet under Sir Edward Hawke, on a cruize, on the coaſts of France, Spain, and Portugal, from which he returned in Auguſt following. His Royal Highneſs, on the 28th of next month, ſet ſail with a ſmall ſquadron, from St. Helen's to the Bay of Biſcay, and returning thence to Plymouth, on October 30, was elected High Steward of that corporation, and about the ſame time preferred to be Vice-Admiral of the Blue. In that quality, he ſailed from Plymouth, on November 14 following, with the fleet under Sir Charles Hardy, on a cruize, to the weſtward, and on the return of that ſquadron, arrived, on December 13, at London, where he chiefly reſided till June 30, when he ſet

out on a tour to different parts of England, as he had done the three preceding ſummers, and was every where received with the reſpect due to his rank.

At the baptiſm of his nephew, Prince Frederick, September 19, 1763, his Royal Highneſs ſtood godfather, by his proxy the Earl of Huntingdon, being then on his way to Plymouth to embark for foreign parts. He ſet ſail from that port on September 22, on board the Centurion, commanded by Commodore Harriſon; and as he choſe to travel incog. he took the title of Earl of Ulſter, in which character he was received at the court of Liſbon, where he arrived on Oct. 3. From thence he departed in the ſame ſhip, on October 28, for Gibraltar, where he ſtaid but two days, and then ſailed to Portmahon, where he remained till November 17, and then ſteered for Genoa, which he reached on the 28th. After reſiding there about ten weeks, he viſited Turin, Florence, Leghorn, Rome, Parma, Venice, Padua, Milan, and other noted cities in Italy; and was entertained, with great magnificence, in every place: but did not proceed to Naples, as there was a malignant diſtemper raging in the Neapolitan dominions. On Friday, Auguſt 17, 1764, his Royal Highneſs, re-imbarking at Genoa on board the Centurion, landed on the 20th at Nice, in the King of Sardinia's territories, from whence he forwarded to Antibes, the firſt town from Italy in the French dominions; and from thence through Aix, Avignon, Valence, Vienne, Lions, Villefranche, Maçon, Tournées, Chalon, Dijon, Langres, Chaumont, St. Dizier, Chalons au Champagne, Reims, Laon, St. Quintin, Peronne, Aras, and St. Omer, to Calais; without touching at Paris, where magnificent preparations were made for his reception. From Calais he arrived at Dover, on Friday, Auguſt 31, and next day reached London, from whence, after viſiting his mother, he ſet out for Kew to wait upon their Majeſties.

His Royal Highneſs, on July 7, 1767, ſet out for Aix-la-Chapelle, viſited the King of Pruſſia, and ſeveral courts in Germany; and on the 27th was at the court of France, where he was magnificently entertained. From thence proceeding to Monaco, capital of the principality of that name, in the territories of Genoa, in Upper-Italy, he was there ſeized with a malignant fever, of which he died on the 7th of September, about 7 o'clock in the morning, after a ſevere illneſs of fourteen days, to the great grief of their Majeſties, the Royal Family, and the whole nation. The Prince of Monaco diſplayed every honour to his remains, which after being embalmed were put on board his Majeſty's ſhip Montreal, Capt. Coſby, to be conveyed to England. The Montreal with the royal corpſe, arrived at the Nore on Oct. 30, when being put on board the

Mary

Mary yacht it was brought to Greenwich, on Nov. 2, thence conveyed to the Prince's chamber, at Whitehall, and interred, on the evening of the 3d, in the royal vault in Henry's the VIIth's chapel, with the accustomed solemnity. The pall was supported by the Lords De la Despencer, Botetourt, Bruce, and Bolton; the Duke of Grafton being chief mourner, (supported by the Dukes of Northumberland and Montagu) and the canopy supported by the Admirals, Sir Edward Hawke, Frankland, Duke of Bolton, Sir Charles Hardy, Sir Charles Saunders, Sir Samuel Cornish, Cleary, and Sir George Brydges Rodney.

His Royal Highness was Fellow of the Royal Society, and on December 5, 1765, was elected President of the London hospital in Whitechapel-road.

[Arms.] Edward-Augustus, Duke of York and Albany, in Great-Britain, and Earl of Ulster, in Ireland; to created on April 1, 1760, 33 Geo. II. and Duke of Brunswick-Lunenburg by birth, all the sons of German Dukes being compliments with their Electoral titles.

Arms.] The same as those of the Prince of Wales, with this difference, that the Label has five points, the middle one charged with a Cross, Gules, and the other four with a Canton, Gules; and that the Escutcheon is the 4th quarter is omitted.

Crest.] Above a helmet full-faced, on a coronet like the Prince of Wales's, only not arched, a Lion of England crowned with the like coronet, as the crest of the Prince of Wales; but not arched, and charged on the breast with a label, as in the Arms.

Supporters.] The same as those of the Prince of Wales, with this difference, that the Coronet on the Lion is not arched, and both the Lion and the Unicorn are charged on the breast with a Label of five points, as the Arms.

His Royal Highness Edwd. Augustus Duke of York.

Mary yacht it was brought to Greenwich, on Nov. 2, thence conveyed to the Prince's chamber, at Weſtminſter, and interred, on the evening of the 3d, in the royal vault in Henry's the VIIth's chapel, with the accuſtomed ſolemnity. The pall was ſupported by the Lords Le Deſpencer, Botetourt, Bruce, and Boſton; the Duke of Grafton being chief mourner, (ſupported by the Dukes of Northumberland and Montagu) and the canopy ſupported by the Admirals, Sir Edward Hawke, Frankland, Duke of Bolton, Sir Charles Hardy, Sir Charles Saunders, Sir Samuel Corniſh, Geary, and Sir George-Brydges Rodney.

His Royal Highneſs was Fellow of the Royal Society, and on December 5, 1764, was elected Preſident of the London-hoſpital in Whitechapel-road.

TITLES.] Edward-Auguſtus, Duke of York and Albany, in Great-Britain, and Earl of Ulſter, in Ireland; ſo created on April 1, 1760, 33 Geo. II. and Duke of Brunſwick-Lunenburg by birth, all the ſons of German Dukes being complimented with their fathers titles.

ARMS.] The ſame as thoſe of the Prince of Wales, with this difference, that the Label has five points, the middle one charged with a Croſs, Gules, and the other four with a Canton, Gules; and that the Eſcutcheon in the 4th quarter is omitted.

CREST.] Above a helmet full-faced, on a coronet like the Prince of Wales's, only not arched, a Lion of England, crowned with the like coronet, as the creſt of the Prince of Wales; but not arched, and charged on the breaſt with a label, as in the Arms.

SUPPORTERS.] The ſame as thoſe of the Prince of Wales, with this difference, that the Coronet on the Lion is not arched, and both the Lion and the Unicorn are charged on the breaſt, each with a Label of five points, as in the Arms.

CHIEF SEAT.] In Pall-Mall, Weſtminſter.

DUKE of GLOUCESTER.

THIS Prince is third ſon of the late Frederick Prince of Wales, and was born, at Leiceſter-houſe, on November $\frac{14}{25}$, 1743. He was baptized, eleven days afterwards, by the name of William-Henry; the ſponſors being the Prince of Orange, by proxy, and the Duke of Cumberland, and the Princeſs Amelia, in perſon. As he advanced in years, he had an education ſuitable to a Prince of his rank.

At the marriage of their Majeſties, September 8, 1761, his Royal Highneſs walked on the Queen's left-hand to and from the chapel; and as he had no right then, as a peer, to form a part in the public proceſſion at the coronation on the 22d of that month, he handed his mother, the Princeſs Dowager of Wales, who with her younger children, &c. made a leſſer proceſſion to and from Weſtminſter-abbey.

On May 27. 1762, his Royal Highneſs was, at a chapter of the Garter held at St. James's, elected a Knight of that moſt noble Order; and together with the Earl of Bute, who had been elected with him, was inſtalled at Windſor, on September 25 following, when the King and Queen honoured the ſolemnity with their preſence: ſoon after which he was appointed Ranger of Hampton-court park, in Middleſex.

A few days before his Royal Highneſs was of full age, viz. on November 17, 1764, his Majeſty was pleaſed to grant to him, and to the heirs male of his Royal Highneſs, the dignities of a Duke of the kingdom of Great-Britain, and of Earl of the kingdom of Ireland, by the names, ſtiles, and titles, of Duke of Glouceſter and Edinburgh, in the ſaid kingdom of Great-Britain, and of Earl of Connaught, in the ſaid kingdom of Ireland.

On Wedneſday, December 19, 1764, his Royal Highneſs was, by his Majeſty's command, introduced into the privy-council by his Grace John Duke of Bedford, Lord Preſident; and took his place at the council-board. His Royal Highneſs, on Thurſday, January 10, 1765, being the firſt day of the fourth ſeſſion of the twelfth parliament of Great-Britain, took the oath and ſeat in the Houſe of Peers.

His Royal Highneſs, on June 28, 1766, was appointed Colonel of the 13th regiment of foot, on the reſignation of General Pulteney; and on the deceaſe of his royal brother, Edward Duke of York, had a grant from his Majeſty of the Cuſtody of the Lodge and Walks in Cranburne-chaſe, in the Foreſt of Windſor, &c. &c. On Jan. 6, 1768, he was conſtituted a Major-General of his Majeſty's forces, and Colonel of the third regiment of foot guards, in the room of the late Earl of Rothes.

His Royal Highness Will.m Henry Duke of Gloucester.

3

(4) *His Royal Highness Hen.ry Fred. Duke of Cumberland.*

TITLES.] William-Henry, Duke of Glouceſter and of Edinburgh, in Great-Britain, and Earl of Connaught, in Ireland, being ſo created on November 17, 1764, 5 Geo. III. and Duke of Brunſwick-Lunenburg by birth, according to the cuſtom of Germany.

ARMS.] The ſame as thoſe of the Duke of York, with this difference, that the middle point of the Label is charged with a Fleur-de-lis, Azure, and the other four with a Croſs, Gules.

CREST.] The ſame as the Duke of York's, with the label differenced, as in the arms.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter, a Lion, Or, crowned as the Duke of York's; and on the ſiniſter, a Unicorn, Argent, armed, creſted, gorged with a Collar of Croſſes pattté, Fleurs-de-lis, and Strawberry leaves, with a Chain affixed and reflexed, Or. Both the Lion and Uunicorn are charged with a Label, as in the Arms.

CHIEF SEAT.] Leiceſter-houſe, Weſtminſter.

DUKE of CUMBERLAND.

THIS illuſtrious Prince is the fourth ſon of the late Frederick Prince of Wales, and was born at Leiceſter-houſe, Oct. 26, 1745, and baptized there, by the Name of Henry-Frederick, on Nov. 26.

On July 8, 1766, his Royal Highneſs received a grant from his Majeſty of the office of Ranger or Keeper, of Windſor Great Park, &c. &c. &c. in the room of his uncle William Duke of Cumberland, deceaſed. On the 18th of October, in the ſame year, his Majeſty was pleaſed to grant to his Royal Highneſs, and to the heirs male of his body, lawfully begotten, the dignities of a Duke of the kingdom of Great Britain, and of Earl of the kingdom of Ireland, by the names, ſtiles, and titles, of Duke of Cumberland, and of Strathern, in the ſaid kingdom of Great Britain, and of Earl of Dublin in the ſaid kingdom of Ireland. On Dec. 3, 1766, his Royal Highneſs was ſworn a Member of his Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-Council, and took his place, at the board, accordingly. On Dec. 21, 1767, he was inveſted with the enſigns of the Garter, at a chapter of that moſt noble order, at St. James's.

TITLES.] Henry-Frederick, Duke of Cumberland and Strathern, in Great Britain, Earl of Dublin, in Ireland, and by birth Duke of Brunſwick-Lunenburgh.

CREATION.] As above.

ARMS. CREST. SUPPORTERS.] The ſame as the Duke of Glouceſter, with the uſual difference, as expreſſed in the plate.

CHIEF SEAT.] Windſor Lodge, near Windſor.

(Late)

(Late) DUKE of CUMBERLAND.

HIS Royal Highneſs William-Auguſtus, ſecond ſon of our late Sovereign King George II. was born on Saturday, April 15, 1721, a little after ſeven o'clock in the evening, at Leiceſter-houſe, Weſtminſter.

He was chriſtened on May 2, the ceremony being privately performed at Leiceſter-houſe, by the Rev. Dean Harris, chaplain to his Royal Highneſs (our late Sovereign) the King of Pruſſia, repreſented by the Earl of Grantham, Lord Chamberlain to their Royal Highneſſes; and his Royal Highneſs the Duke of York, repreſented by the Lord Viſcount Lumley, Maſter of the Horſe to their Royal Highneſſes, being godfathers; and the Queen of Pruſſia, repreſented by the Dutcheſs of Dorſet, the Lady of the Princeſs's bedchamber in waiting, being godmother.

On the revival of the moſt honourable order of the Bath by George I. May 27, 1725, his Royal Highneſs was elected the firſt Knight, and on June 17 following inſtalled in Henry VIIth's chapel, Weſtminſter-abbey. And by letters patent, bearing date July 27, 1726, 12 Geo. I. created [a] Baron of the Iſle of Alderney, Viſcount of Trematon in the county of Cornwall, Earl of Kennington in the county of Surry, Marquis of Berkhamſtead in the county of Hertford, and Duke of the county of Cumberland. Alſo in the 10th year of his age, he was elected a Knight of the moſt noble order of the Garter, May 18, 1730, and inſtalled at Windſor [b], on June 18 following, with great ſolemnity, his royal father being preſent. After his Royal Highneſs's inſtallation, his Majeſty dined in ſtate with the Knights of the ſaid moſt noble Order. The Sovereign ſat, placed in the middle of the table, with his late Royal Highneſs the Prince of Wales on his right-hand, and his Royal Highneſs the Duke of Cumberland on the left.

His Highneſs had an education ſuitable to his high birth, and applied himſelf to be initiated in the military ſervice, by attending the ſeveral reviews of the forces with the King; who, on June 14, 1739, gave the royal aſſent to *An act to enable his Majeſty to ſettle an annuity of fifteen thouſand pounds on his Royal Highneſs the Duke of Cumberland, and the heirs of his body.* On April 25, 1740, he was appointed Colonel of the ſecond regiment of foot-guards, in the room of Richard Earl of Scarborough deceaſed. At the ceremony of the eſpouſals between her Royal Highneſs the Princeſs Mary and the moſt ſerene Prince Frederick of Heſſe-Caſſel, in the royal chapel of St.

a Bill ſignat. 12 Geo. I. b Pote's Hiſt. and Antiquities of Windſor, p. 275.

James's

His Royal Highness William Duke of Cumberland.

James's palace, the 8th of May following, his Royal Highneſs, being conſtituted procurator for Prince Frederick, led the Princeſs in a virgin habit, and, in the name of Prince Frederick, ſolemnly performed the ceremony of the marriage, in preſence of his Majeſty, the Princeſſes, the Nobility, and perſons of quality and diſtinction.

There being at that time open war with Spain, and a fleet being ordered to cruiſe on the Spaniſh coaſt, his Royal Highneſs laid hold of that opportunity of endeavouring to ſignalize himſelf, by going volunteer on board the fleet, on the 5th of July, 1740, commanded by Sir John Norris. They ſailed from St. Helen's on the 23d of that month, but not being able to get out of the Channel, they came to an anchor on the 26th in Torbay, where they were ſome time detained by contrary winds. However, at length they weighed; but on the 25th of Auguſt, at night, when they were a-breaſt of the Lizard, the wind coming out at S. S. W. and blowing very hard the next morning, with thick dirty weather, they were obliged to bear away again for Torbay, where they again came to an anchor; and contrary winds continuing, which retarded the expedition, his Royal Highneſs returned to St. James's.

On the 26th of February, 1742-3, he was conſtituted Major-general of the forces, and embarking with his father in May following, accompanied him to Hanover, and afterwards, at the battle of Dettingen, fought on the 27th of June, 1743, N. S. between the Confederates, and the French under M. Noailles, when his Highneſs was wounded in the leg by a muſket-ſhot, but ſoon recovered; and on the 27th of July, N. S. following, was advanced to the rank of Lieutenant-general.

As the particulars of the before-mentioned action, and the further military operations of his Highneſs, are recited at large in the hiſtory of thoſe times, a ſuccinct narrative of them will be ſufficient in a work of this nature.

His Royal Highneſs, having been, on the 12th of March, 1744-5, conſtituted Captain general and Commander of the forces, in the room of Field-marſhal George Wade, embarked, the next month, to take upon himſelf the command of the Allied army in Flanders: and Marſhal Saxe having laid ſiege to Tournay, the Duke of Cumberland marched to the relief of that important city, and at Fontenoy, on the 11th of May, 1745, N. S. commanding the army to attack the French troops ſtrongly poſted there, an engagement enſued, the ſucceſs of which was not equal to the ardour and reſolution of the Britiſh

forces, who ſtood the brunt of the action, unſupported by the Dutch. After that battle, the Allies remained inactive the remainder of the campaign, and their number was conſiderably leſſened by an affair which happened in Great-Britain.

On the 25th of July, O. S. that year, while the late King was at Hanover, the young Chevalier de St. George, attended by a few perſons, landed in the Weſt of Scotland from France; and being joined by ſome deſperate Highlanders, and other partizans of the Stuarts, it was judged expedient to call home part of the forces from Flanders, to oppoſe his progreſs, he having on the 17th of September, made himſelf maſter of Edinburgh, and on the 21ſt routed the army under Lieutenant-general Sir John Cope at Preſton-pans.

At that critical juncture, the Duke's preſence being thought neceſſary, he was ſent for, and arrived at St. James's on the 18th of October.

In the mean time, the rebels, notwithſtanding their late ſucceſs, were obliged to remain about Edinburgh, for freſh levies from the North, and military ſtores from France: but at laſt, having received ſuch ſupplies as the ſituation of affairs would admit, they evacuated Edinburgh, their number then being near 5000 effective men, and entering England on the 8th of November, got poſſeſſion of the city and caſtle of Carliſle, on the 15th, almoſt without reſiſtance.

After the ſurrender of that fortreſs, they halted there, and in the neighbourhood, in hopes of Marſhal Wade's advancing from Newcaſtle to give them battle: but the young Pretender, being informed that his Excellency had retreated to his former quarters, after having come as far as Hexham, ſet out on the 20th from Carliſle (in which he left a garriſon of 200 men) and arrived, on the 4th of December at Derby. However, all his chief followers and officers, except ſeven, oppoſed his proceeding farther Southward, as there ſeemed no hopes of the people's joining him, as they had been expected to do, and if they were defeated, it would be almoſt impoſſible to retreat; for which reaſons they propoſed returning to Scotland, where a conſiderable body of men had taken up arms in his behalf, ſince he entered England, and where ſome troops had landed from France. He accordingly began his retreat to the North, on Friday the 6th of December.

Mean time, the Duke of Cumberland, who had ſet out from St. James's on the 26th of November, for Litchfield,

Litchfield, to take the command of the army which was cantoned from Tamworth to Newcaſtle-under-Line, conſiſting of about 11,000 cavalry and infantry, well provided with artillery and other military implements, made ſeveral marches and countermarches, as in his judgment appeared ſuitable to the motions of the rebels, and having intelligence of their route northwards, about two hours after they abandoned Derby, moved from Meriden, on the 8th of December in purſuit of them.

On Wedneſday, the 18th of December, being at the head of three regiments of dragoons, and ſome infantry, he came up at Clifton with their rear, conſiſting of the Macphersons, and Macdonalds of Glengary, when an action enſued, wherein both ſides claimed the advantage. The rebels continued their march to the main body at Penrith, committing many diſorders in their way, and pillaging the defenceleſs country people, whence they all proceeded that evening to Carliſle, which they left, on the 20th, reinforced with two hundred additional men.

The Duke of Cumberland, the night after the encounter at Clifton, took up his quarters in that village, while his troops reſted there under arms, and advanced next day to Penrith. On the 21ſt he reached Carliſle, which he immediately inveſted, and reduced on the 30th. His Royal Highneſs having ſecured the priſoners, puniſhed the deſerters found there, and properly diſpoſed the troops, departed for London, where he arrived on the 5th of January, 1745-6. However, the young Pretender having, on the 17th, forced Lieutenant-general Henry Hawley to retreat at Falkirk, his Highneſs ſet out again, on the 25th, to take the command of the army, and arriving at Edinburgh on the 30th, marched next day with the forces to relieve Stirling caſtle, then beſieged by the rebels: but many of their private men having gone home with the booty they got at Falkirk, the remaining number was not thought ſufficient to ſtand a freſh engagement; and therefore they croſſed the Forth, at the ford of Frew (after having inhumanly blown up the church of St. Ninian's, with many of the innocent ſpectators) on the 1ſt of February, part taking the Highland road, and the reſt the way to Aberdeen, &c. The Duke of Cumberland, ſurprized at this *ſtrange* flight, as he called it, in his letter to the Lord Preſident, moved with the army from Stirling, on the 4th of February, to Crief, and thence to Perth, from which

two

two places he detached parties to the contiguous lands of the diſaffected. He marched from Perth on the 20th, and arrived at Aberdeen about the beginning of March. During his ſtay there, 500 recovered men joined the army from Edinburgh and England, and every poſſible method was taken to ſupport or revive the ſpirits of the ſoldiers. Parties were alſo ſent out from thence to the habitations of thoſe in the rebellion On the 8th of April, he marched with the main body of the forces, and paſſing through Oldmeldrum, Turreff, Banff, and Cullen, where the Earl of Albemarle joined him with the reſt of the troops, paſſed the river Spey on the 12th with the whole army, conſiſting of one regiment of light-horſe, two of dragoons, and ſixteen of foot, beſides the Argyleſhire Highlanders, and a numerous train of artillery. That day his Royal Highneſs pitched his tents about a mile weſtward from the banks of that river, and on the next, continuing his rout by Elgin, encamped at Alves, and on the 14th at Nairn. The young Pretender, after his retreat from before Stirling, marched with the main body of the clans to Inverneſs, which he made his head-quarters, and was there joined by his men who had gone the way of Aberdeen: but the country not being ſufficient to ſupport his troops in a collective body, he was obliged to ſend the greateſt part of them out on different ſervices, and had not got them re-aſſembled, when the Duke, on the 14th of April, arrived in his neighbourhood. However, as there was no alternative, but either to fight, or retire to the mountains, where the rebels muſt have diſperſed for want of ſubſiſtence, it was reſolved to ſurprize the camp at Nairn; and with that view, he marched his army, then amounting to about 5000 men, on the evening of the 15th, in two columns: but the guide of the ſecond column miſtaking the road, and day-light being too far advanced before the two columns could unite, to attack with probability of ſucceſs, they were obliged to retreat, after being within hearing of the duke's advanced poſts. His Royal Highneſs, determined to give them battle, came up with them about one o'clock, on Drummoſſie-moor, near Culloden-houſe, and after an engagement of about half an hour, obtained a compleat victory.

"On April 30, the Duke having received a letter from his Majeſty, wrote with his own hand, to acquaint the officers and ſoldiers of the army, that their courage and behaviour in the laſt battle, have given him thorough ſatisfaction, and that they may depend npon the continuance of his royal favour, countenance, and protection, upon all occaſions; his Royal Highneſs ordered

ordered the commanding officers to ſignify this his Majeſty's pleaſure to all the officers and men of their reſpective corps *."

The ſame day both houſes voted their thanks to his Royal Highneſs, for his great and eminent ſervices performed to his Majeſty and his kingdoms againſt the rebels, which, being tranſmitted to him, he returned the following anſwer to the Lords:

My Lord Chancellor,

I could not poſſibly have received a more welcome and affecting proof of that diſtinguiſhed zeal and loyalty which the houſe of Lords have conſtantly ſhewn to his Majeſty's perſon and government, than by their favourable acceptance of my endeavours for the public ſervice; and I deſire you will lay before the houſe my acknowledgments for the regard they have ſhewn me on this occaſion.

The reſolution and firmneſs expreſſed by each of the officers and ſoldiers in his Majeſty's army under my command, deſerve the higheſt commendations; but the guilt and terror of that unhappy infatuated multitude, who vainly hoped, by unprovoked, tumultuous arms, and a contemptible foreign aſſiſtance, to ſhake an eſtabliſhment founded in the hearts of his Majeſty's ſubjects, afforded us ſo eaſy a victory, that I can only expreſs my gratitude for the favourable impreſſions with which the news of it was received by the houſe of Lords. Whoſe good opinion and thanks I ſhall ever eſteem, as one of the moſt honourable teſtimonies and rewards that any action of mine could receive.

I have only to add my thanks to yourſelf, for the obliging manner in which you have executed the commands of the houſe of Lords, and for all the good wiſhes with which you have accompanied them; of the reality of which I am firmly perſuaded.

My Lord Chancellor,

Your affectionate Friend, &c.

To that of the Commons he returned this anſwer:

Mr. Speaker, *Inverneſs, May* 7, 1746.

I deſire you would acquaint the houſe of Commons, with the juſt ſenſe I have of the regard they have been pleaſed to ſhew me upon this occaſion; and to aſſure them, that nothing can be more agreeable to me, than their congratulation upon the ſucceſs of his Majeſty's arms, which is ſo authentic a teſtimony of their ſteady zeal and loyalty for his Majeſty's perſon and government.

Their eſteem and approbation of my endeavours in the public ſervice fill my wiſhes, and it will always be my ſtudy to deſerve the continuance of their good opinion.

* Hiſt. of the Rebellion, MS. by Lieut. John Collins, ſon of Arthur Collins, Eſq;

I can-

I cannot enough extol my own good fortune, in being placed by his Majeſty at the head of an army, which all along expreſſed the beſt affections, and the greateſt ardor; and crowned all, by the reſolution ſhewn by every officer and ſoldier in the day of action; to which, under God, our ſucceſs is owing.

I return you my thanks for the cordiality and affection, with which you have executed the commands of the houſe of Commons.

Mr. Speaker,

Your moſt affectionate Friend, &c.

On June 14, 1746, his Majeſty gave his royal aſſent to *An act for ſettling an additional revenue of twenty-five thouſand pounds upon his Royal Highneſs William Duke of Cumberland, and the heirs male of his body, for the ſignal ſervices done by his Royal Highneſs to his country.*

"Whilſt his Royal Highneſs was at Inverneſs, [d] he ſent out ſeveral parties for ſeizing all rebels and their arms, which had ſo good effect, that many ſubmitted; and, to put a final end to all hopes of the diſaffected appearing in any numbers, he ſet out from Inverneſs to Fort-Auguſtus, May 23, 1746, leaving Major-general Blakeney to command the forces left at Inverneſs. The next day he arrived at Fort-Auguſtus with 11 battalions, and the Duke of Kingſton's regiment of horſe. So great a force had never appeared there before, which being the very center of the Highlands, we could ſend detachments to all parts, and bring the whole country to ſubmiſſion. And the better to inforce it, the day after his arrival at the camp, his Royal Highneſs being determined not to leave the country, till the rebels were reduced, ſent out detachments, which annoyed and ferretted the rebels in places which they before had thought inacceſſible; yet we met with hardſhips from the inclemency of the weather, and badneſs of the place. The fort being blown up by the rebels, there was no proper place to lodge his Royal Highneſs in, ſo that a boarded hut was built for him, conſiſting of a bedchamber and dining-room, in which he lay during his ſtay there. The Camerons and Macdonalds, who had aſſembled to the number of 300 in Lochiel, immediately diſperſed, on hearing of his arrival at Fort-Auguſtus; and the Camerons ſent to the Duke, deſiring they might be admitted to bring in their arms, and ſubmit themſelves to the King's mercy; as did the rebels in ſeveral other places.

"The orders given out, from time to time, by his Royal Highneſs, for the better government and diſcipline of the forces while he remained at Fort-Auguſtus, were ſo excel-

[d] Hiſtory of the Rebellion, MS. præd.

lently

lently calculated, as well for the commodity of the officers, as the health and welfare of the ſoldiers, and the eaſe of his Majeſty's loyal ſubjects, that they are an evident proof, not only of his military ſkill and judgment, but of his remarkable goodneſs and humanity. On the 21ſt of June, the Lord Mayor of London, having acquainted his Royal Highneſs's ſecretary, Sir Everard Faulkener, by letter, that the city had appropriated the ſum of 4000 l. ſterling to be given to the non-commiſſioned officers and ſoldiers preſent at the battle of Culloden, and alſo to the train and Argyleſhire men, his Royal Highneſs ordered an exact computation to be made, that the above-named ſum be diſtributed according to their daily pay. To the train, every ſerjeant 1 l. 18 s. 3 d. bombadier 1 l. 11 s. 11 d. gunner 1 l. 5 s. 7 d. matroſs and drummer 19 s. 1½ d. to the regiments and Argyleſhire men, every ſerjeant 19 s. 1½ d. corporal 12 s. 9½ d. private man or drummer 9 s. 6¾ d."

His Royal Higneſs continued at Fort-Auguſtus till he had confirmed accounts from ſeveral parts, that the rebels were totally diſperſed; and then, leaving the command of the forces to the Earl of Albemarle, he ſet out on his return to England. He arrived, on July 25, at the palace of Kenſington, about one o'clock in the afternoon, and immediately waited on his Majeſty. Before his arrival, it was inſerted in our Gazette, N° 8552: Whitehall, July 12, the King has been pleaſed to grant unto his Royal Hignneſs the Duke of Cumberland, his heirs and aſſigns, the office of Ranger and Keeper of Windſor Great Park, in the room of John Spencer, Eſq; deceaſed, for and during his own life, and the lives of their Royal Highneſſes the Princeſs Amelia and the Princeſs Caroline, and the life of the longeſt liver of them.

On September 6, the Lord Mayor, with a committee of Aldermen and Commoners, attended by the Sheriffs, Recorder, and Chamberlain of London, waited on his Royal Highneſs, and preſented him with the freedom of the city in a gold box of curious workmanſhip, who received them very favourably. In the ſame month, the Duke of Kingſton's regiment of horſe, which he had raiſed in the rebellion, and had done memorable ſervice in Scotland, being broke, his Royal Highneſs (being then alſo Colonel of the firſt regiment of foot-guards) formed a regiment of dragoons out of them, and was appointed their Colonel. The campaign in the Netherlands was unſucceſsful, and too far ſpent for his Royal Highneſs to reſume his command there: but in order for opening the next early in the ſpring, he went in the depth of the winter to concert meaſures with the States-General for a vigorous proſecution of the war againſt France. He ſet out from St. James's on December 1, O. S. at four in the morning, and arrived at Harwich about

four

four in the afternoon, when he embarked on board the Fubbs yacht, and, ſailing with a fair wind, landed at Helvoetſluys the next day about noon, and the ſame night came to the Hague, where he was received with great rejoicings: And having fully ſucceeded in his negociations, the States-General conſenting to his propoſed augmentation of the army, and to his being again Generaliſſimo of all the Allied forces, he re-embarked in the Fubbs yacht, which brought him to Graveſend, early in the morning on January 1, and about ten came to St. James's; having, as it was ſaid, narrowly eſcaped being drowned, or run aſhore on the French coaſt near Gravelines, by the ignorance or deſign of the Dutch pilot. About four in the morning, on February 3 following, his Royal Highneſs ſet out again to embark at Harwich on board the Fubbs yacht for Holland; and the convoy not coming up, he went the next day in the yacht's pinnace to view Landguard-fort, where he ſtaid about an hour and a half, and then went on board the Fubb's, which weighed anchor about noon, and ran into a place called Rowling-ground, two miles and a half from Harwich, and half a mile from the fort, where they anchored and lay all night. The day after, being Tueſday, the yacht continued at anchor till ten o'clock, when two 20 gun ſhips joined the Taviſtock ſloop of war, and, ſailing about three in the afternoon, arrived at Helvoetſluys the next day, about three in the afternoon, and immediately proceeded to the Hague, where he was received with great joy. He began ſoon after to put the army in motion, by giving orders to the Dutch troops in the provinces of Friezland and Droningen to draw together; and then went to Williamſtadt to ſee the diſembarkation of the troops arrived there from England and Scotland, from whence, paſſing through Rotterdam, he returned to the Hague, March 27, N. S.

Having, about the beginning of May, aſſembled the Allied forces, his Royal Highneſs, after various marches and countermarches, in order to ſecure Maeſtricht, came, on July 2, 1747, N. S. to an engagement, at Val, with the French under Marſhal Saxe; but the Allied army, under the command of his Royal Highneſs, after performing egregious feats of valour, notwithſtanding their ſtraitened ſituation, were forced to retire. After that nothing material having happened, relative to his Highneſs, during the remainder of the campaign, except an unſucceſsful attempt of the enemy to diſlodge his troops poſted at Liechtberg, he returned to St. James's, on November 13, O. S. His Highneſs ſet out again from London, for Flanders, on February 24, 1747-8; but the campaign produced nothing remarkable on the part of the Allied army; and the conferences at Aix-la-Chapelle having put an

end

and to the war, he ſet out for England, where he landed, on December 27, at Margate, whence he proceeded, next day, to St. James's.

After the deceaſe of Frederic, Prince of Wales, he was choſen Chancellor of the Univerſity of Dublin; having before been elected Chancellor of the Univerſity of St. Andrews in North-Britain. On October 29, 1751, his Majeſty was pleaſed to grant to him the lodge and walks in Cranburn-chace, in Windſor-foreſt, in the room of Charles, Duke of St. Alban's deceaſed.

His late Majeſty having raiſed an army of obſervation, compoſed of Hanoverians, Heſſians, and other troops of his German neighbours, for the defence of his Electoral territories, and having given the command thereof to the Duke of Cumberland, his Royal Highneſs ſet out from St. James's, on Saturday, April 9, 1757, and embarking the ſame day at Harwich for Stade, reached Hanover on the 19th. After various motions, the French forces, under the Marſhal Duke d'Eſtreés, came up with him, on July 26, at Haſtenbeck, and, after an obſtinate reſiſtance, forced the army of obſervation to give way. His Royal Highneſs, after that action, which laid the Electoral dominions open to the enemy, continued retreating, till he reached Stade; and, on September 8, under the mediation and guaranty of the King of Denmark, who acted by his miniſter the Count of Lynar, concluded, at Cloſter-Seven, a convention, for his father's German territories, with the Marſhal Duke de Richelieu, at that time General of the French troops. His Highneſs then left the army, which was in fact diſarmed by that treaty; and reſigned all his military employments, ſoon after his arrival at London, on Tueſday, October 11, 1757: From the time that his Royal Higneſs reſigned his military poſts, he lived a private life, in which he diſplayed the benevolence of his heart, by employing numbers of the poor in carrying on his works and improvements at Windſor, and in national concerns proved himſelf a true patriot and a lover of his country. A few months before his death, he was called upon by his Royal nephew, the preſent King, to aſſiſt him in forming a new adminiſtration, which having effected; in the heighth of popularity and eſteem, and when the fate of his country ſeemed to depend upon his life, his Royal Highneſs, after having been that morning with his Majeſty at St. James's, ſuddenly deceaſed, at his houſe in Upper Groſvenor-ſtreet, of a diſeaſe called ſomnolency, lamented by the whole nation, on October 31, 1765, and on November 9, his remains were interred in the Royal vault in Henry VII's Chapel, Weſtminſter-abbey, with all military pomp and ceremony.

HOWARD.

HOWARD, Duke of Norfolk.

SEVERAL of our genealogiſts have endeavoured to ſet forth the antiquity of this great and noble family; ſome ſuppoſing that Howard, their common anceſtor, in the Saxon time, had appellation from an eminent office or command, in the 15th year of the reign of King Edgar, ſole Monarch of England, and 96 years before the Norman conqueſt; whoſe ſon Leofric was father of the famous Hereward, who, with great magnanimity, oppoſed William the Conqueror and his army, and was one of the braveſt heroes of his age and country. But Ingulph,[d] Abbot of Crowland, (his cotemporary) affirming, that he left no other iſſue than an heir female, named Turfrida, wife to Hugh de Evermue, Lord of Deping in com. Linc. In the deſcent[e], as ſettled by Mr. Harvey, who was Clarencieux King of arms in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and with whom[f] Glover, Somerſet, Philipot, &c. agree, the firſt mentioned is Aubur, Earl of Paſſy, in Normandy, who, by Adelina, daughter of Hubert, earl of Evreux, had iſſue three ſons, William Bretivile, Earl of Paſſy, who died without iſſue, and was ſucceeded by his brother Euſtace, Earl of Paſſy, whoſe ſon William came into England, A. D. 1066, with the Conqueror, who made[g] him Earl of Glouceſter, and was ſlain at Cardiff, leaving no iſſue. Valerine, called Beauſon, was third ſon of Auber, Earl of Paſſy, and was Lord of Vernon, in Normandy. He was alſo one of the adventurers with William the Conqueror, and after the deceaſe of his nephew Euſtace, Earl of Paſſy, had, of his gift, divers caſtles and lands which belonged to him. He was ſucceeded by his ſon[h], called Roger Fitz-Valerine, who took up arms to revenge on the Welch his kinſman's death; and poſſeſſing the caſtle of Howard, in Flintſhire, he oftentimes ſaved himſelf therein, which was therefore called his *Denne*, and to this day is called the caſtle of Howarden.

His ſon William, born in that caſtle, had the name of William de Howard[i], and was, by King Henry I. (whoſe reign began Auguſt 1, 1100) made one of his council; and by him preferred in marriage to Maud, widow of Roger Bigod (ſteward of the houſhold to the ſaid King Henry, and father of Hugh, created Earl of Norfolk, A. D. 1135) with whom he had large poſſeſſions in Norfolk and Suffolk. Sir John Howard, Knt. was his ſon and heir[k], who, by Helen

d F. 511. b. n. 10. e MS. b. 21. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis. Arm. Gart. Reg. Armor. f Baronage, MS. No. 1280, in Offic. Armor. g Seager's Baronage, MS. ſub. Tit. Glouc. h Harvey, Philipot, and Seager. i Ibid. k Philipot, &c.

his

his wife, had iſſue two ſons, John, who died in his life-time, and, by Allice his wife, left iſſue Maud his daughter and heir, the wife of Sir John Fitz-Urſe, Knt. Sir Robert Howard, the ſecond ſon, married Joan, daughter of Sir Thomas St. Mere, Knt. and had iſſue Sir John Howard [l], who married Anne, relict of the Lord Bardolph, and by her was father of Sir John Howard, Knt. who married Catherine, daughter and coheir of Sir John Bruſs, Knt. by whom he had iſſue [m] Sir Henry Howard, who, by a daughter of Sir Henry Truſbut, Knt. had iſſue Sir William Howard, the famous Judge.

Such are former accounts: But as the BARONAGIUM GENEALOGICUM, compiled by the ingenious Joſeph Edmondſon, Eſq; Mowbray Herald, at great expence and trouble, and with no leſs accuracy, from Sir William Segar's valuable manuſcripts, and other authentic evidences, is the completeſt and moſt correct performance, now extant, concerning the Engliſh Peerage, I ſhall give the origin of this noble family, as publiſhed in Mr. Edmondſon's Tables, and approved by his Grace the preſent Duke of Norfolk. According to theſe elegant as well as accurate Tables, the Patriarch of the illuſtrious Houſe of Howard was Fulco, father of Galfridus, who had two ſons, Alan, and Humphry. Alan, the eldeſt ſon, was father of William of Wiggenhall, who had three ſons, viz. John Howard, Aſkitillus, and Walfridus. John Howard, the eldeſt, ſucceeded to the eſtate of Wiggenhall, and by his wife Lucia, daughter to Germonde, was father of Sir William Howard, the celebrated Judge above-mentioned.

This Sir William Howard, who was Chief Juſtice of the Common Pleas from 1297, 25 Edward I. to 1308, 1 Edward II. had large poſſeſſions in the north-weſt parts of Norfolk; and in 22 Ed. I. was [n] one of the Commiſſioners of Sewers for the repair of the banks and drains in Middleton, Rungeton, and Sechithe, in thoſe parts of Norfolk: but the year before, viz. in 21 Ed. I. 1293, he [o] was, with John de Butford, appointed Judges to go that year the northern circuit. In 23 Ed. I. he had ſummons to attend [p] with the reſt of the Judges of the courts at Weſtminſter, and the King's learned council, to the parliament then held there; likewiſe to thoſe parliaments [q] of 25, 28, and 32 Ed. I. as alſo in 1 Ed. II. On April 6, 1305, 33 Ed. I. he was [r] appointed to go the circuit in the counties of Glouceſter, Northampton, Oxford, Berks, Bedfordſhire, Buckinghamſhire, Eſſex, Hertfordſhire, Rutland, Cambridgeſhire, and Huntingdonſhire. He is portrayed in glaſs, in a Judge's robes,

[l] Philpot, &c. [m] Ibid. [n] Pat. 22 Ed. I. m. 24. in dorſo. [o] Dugdale's Chron. Series, p. 31. [p] Clauſ. 23 Ed. I. in dorſo, m. 9. [q] Clauſ. de iiſd. Ann. in dorſo. [r] Rymer's Fœdera, vol. ii. p. 959.

in a window of the church of Long-Melford, in Suffolk [s], with two other Judges; and under them this inſcription in old characters:

Pray for the good ſtate of William Haward, Chef Juſtis of Yngland, and for Richard Pycot, and John Haugh, Juſtis of the Lawe.

Sir William married two wives, 1. Allice, daughter of Sir Edward Fitton, Knt. and at length his heir, by whom he had iſſue two ſons [t], Sir John Howard of Wiggenhall, and William; and, 2. Allice, daughter of Sir Robert Ufford, Knt. but without iſſue.

Sir John Howard, his eldeſt ſon and heir, in 34 Ed. I. being one of the Gentlemen of the King's bedchamber [u], obtained the wardſhip of the lands and heir of John de Crokedale, a perſon of note in Norfolk: and, on the acceſſion of King Ed. II. to the crown [x], July 7, 1307, had orders to attend his coronation at Weſtminſter, the Sunday next after the feaſt of St. Valentine. In 4 Ed. II. he [y] was in the wars againſt the Scots; and in 11 Ed. II. was [z] Governor of the caſtle of Norwich; alſo Sheriff of the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk, from the 3d to the 16th year of the King's reign, incluſive, which was then an office of great power and truſt. In 15 Ed. II. he was joined in [a] commiſſion with John de Vaus, to raiſe 2000 foot-ſoldiers in the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk, and to conduct them to Newcaſtle-upon-Tyne, thence to march againſt the Scots. Alſo on Nov. 30, the ſame year [b], was further commiſſioned, with Thomas Bardolf and John de Thorp, to raiſe forces, both horſe and foot, in the ſaid counties, and to march with them againſt the Scots.

In 17 Ed. II. he [c] was in that expedition into Gaſcoign; and in 19 Ed. II. [d] one of the Commiſſioners for arraying men in the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk, purſuant to the ſtatute at Wincheſter. Alſo, in 20 Ed. II. one of the Commiſſioners of array in the county of Norfolk [e], and had command to arm 500 men (foot-ſoldiers and archers) with hactoons, bacinets, and gauntlets of iron, and to conduct them to the port of Orwell in Suffolk, thence to go over ſeas againſt the French.

In 1328, 2 Ed. III. he was commiſſioned, with Thomas Bigod, Earl of Norfolk, and others [f], to puniſh certain riots in Norfolk and Suffolk; and died in 1331, 5 Ed. III. [g] poſſeſſed

[s] Dugdale's Origines Juridiciales, p. 100. [t] Philpot's Baronage, Vincent's Baronage, MS. N° 20. in Offic. Armor. [u] Pat. 34 Ed. I. m. 31. [x] Rymer, vol. iii. p. 53. [y] Rot. Scot. 4 Ed. II. m. 13. [z] Rot. Fin. 11 Ed. II. m. 12. [a] Rymer, tom. iii. p. 906. [b] Pat. 17 Ed. II. p. 2. m. 1. [c] Pat. 19 Ed. II. p. 1. m. 4. [d] Pat. 20 Ed. II. p. 2. m. 18. [e] MS. b. 21. p. 83. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis, Reg. Gart. Armor. [f] Eſch. 5 Ed. III. n. 80. [g] Fin. 2 Ed. II. m. 5. Norf.

of the manors of East-Winch, East-Walton, Walton juxta Kirbroke, Wiggenhale, Wirmegey, Tyrinton, West-Walcot, South-Wotton, North-Wotton, Great Walsingham, and the Honour of Clare. He had to wife Joan, sister of Richard de Cornwal, who, by fine in 2 Ed. II.[h] settled on the said John Howard and Joan his wife, and their heirs, a messuage and two carucates of land, with the appurtenances, in Paunteney, Nereford, Ashwelthorp, &c. and three parts of the manor of Terrington, with the appurtenances: by which Joan he left issue Sir John his son and heir.

Which Sir John Howard, in 9 Ed. III.[i] was constituted Admiral and Captain of the King's navy in the North, and in 10 Ed. III. he had an assignation of 153l. 7s. 6d. for [k]the wages of himself with his men at arms, &c. in that service. And the same year, having affairs to transact beyond the seas, the King granted him his protection[l], dated April 24, 1337, to be in force till August 1, the feast of St. Peter ad Vincula following. He was Sheriff of Norfolk and Suffolk in 1345, 19 Ed. III.

In 21 Ed. III. he obtained[m] a grant for a market every week upon the Friday, and one fair yearly, on the eve and day of St. Mary Magdalen, at his manor of Wiggenhall, in com. Norf. Also, in that year, he was again constituted Admiral of the whole fleet to the northward: and, being a Banneret[n], assisted at the siege of Calais, having in his retinue [o]one Banneret, six Knights, 36 men at arms, and 35 archers on horseback. He married Allice, daughter[p] of Sir Robert de Boys, or de Bosco (and sister and heir of Sir Robert de Boys, of Fersfield in Norfolk) and of Christian his wife, daughter of Sir William Latimer, Knt. by whom he had issue Sir Robert Howard, and John Howard; and died after 1388, the said Allice his wife being dead before him.

Sir Robert was aged 38 years[q], at the death of his mother in 1374, 48 Ed. III. whereby he came possessed of the said manor of Fersfield. In 2 Rich. II. he was committed prisoner[r] to the Tower, for detaining Margery de Narford, from Allice Lady Nevil, her grandmother, with whom, on her petition to the King and council, she had been appointed to remain, till the cause of divorce betwixt her and John de Brewer should be determined in the court of Rome. This Sir Robert died in the life-time of his father[s], at East-Winch in Norfolk, on July 18, 1388, 12 Rich. II. leaving issue, by Margery his wife, daughter to Robert Lord Scales of Neucells (and at length one of the heirs of that family) one son, Sir John Howard.

[h] Rot. Scoc. 9 Ed. III. m. 80. [i] Clauſ. 10 Ed. III. m. 31. [k] Rymer, vol. iv. p. 748. [l] Cart. 21 Ed. III. n. 14. [m] Pat. 21 Ed. III. p. 1 m. 31. [n] MS. de Famil. Howard, p. 49. [o] MS. in Bibl. Harley. [p] MS. Famil. de Howard, p. 125 in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis, Arm. Gart. [q] Eſch. 48 Ed. III. [r] Clauſ. 2 Rich. II. in dorſo, m. 22. [s] Eſch. 22 Rich. II. n. 26.

This Sir Robert lies buried with Margery his ſaid wife, in a chapel appropriated to his name [t], on the ſouth-ſide of the chancel of Eaſt-Winch church, in com. Norf. where an arched monument was erected to their memory, with divers eſcutcheons of the arms of Howard, impaling the arms of their wives; but, in 1631, the following inſcription was only remaining thereon, ... *Animabus Domini Roberti Howard militis, et Margerie uxoris ſue.* . . . .

The ſaid Sir John Howard, the only ſon, on March 10, 1388-9, 12 Rich. II. [u] was retained to ſerve the King during his life (his ſon being then turned of ſix years of age) and [x] being to go into Ireland with his Majeſty, he had his protection for a year, dated April 28, 1399, 22 Rich. II. And on July 2, 1405, 6 Hen. IV. he [y] received order from the King (in conjunction with Sir Gerrard Braybrook, Knt.) to array all men in the county of Eſſex able to bear arms, and to muſter them, and march in defence of the ſea-coaſt againſt the French. Afterwards he took a voyage to Jeruſalem, and [z] there died, on November 17, 1437, 16 Hen. VI. but had ſepulture at Stoke-Neyland in Suffolk. He was Sheriff of the counties of Eſſex and Hertford, 2 Hen. IV. as alſo 3 and 7 Hen. V. and of Cambridge and Huntingdon, 4 Hen. IV. in the 9th of whoſe reign, he was one of the Knights of the ſhire for the county of Cambridge.

He took to wife, 1ſt Margaret [a], daughter and heir of Sir John Plaiz, of Toſte in Norfolk, and by her, who died in 1381, 5 Rich. II. had iſſue [b] Sir John Howard, his ſon and heir, who died 1409, in his life-time [c], on a journey to the Holy Land, and had to wife Joan, daughter of Sir Richard Walton, Knt. and ſiſter and heir to John Walton of Wyvenhoe in Eſſex, Eſq; with whom he had, by the gift of her father, in 9 Hen. IV. the manor of Ocle, and left iſſue [d] Elizabeth, their only daughter, who was heir both to her father and mother, at whoſe death, 1424, the ſaid Elizabeth was fourteen years old, and afterwards married to John Vere, Earl of Oxford, whereby the title of Lord Scales centered in the Veres, Earls of Oxford. The ſaid Joan had, for her ſecond huſband, Sir Thomas Erpingham, of Erpingham, in Norfolk.

But the ſaid Sir John Howard, father of the laſt Sir John, after the death of the ſaid Margery his firſt ſpouſe (by whom he had alſo a daughter, named Margaret, wedded 1ſt to Sir Conſtantine Clifton, of Buckenham-caſtle, in Norfolk, Knt.

[t] Ex ſtemmate Fam. de Howard, MS. p. 49. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis, Arm. Gart. [u] Weever's Accouns of Funeral Monuments, p. 842. [x] Pat. 12 Rich. II. p. 2. m. 31. [y] Rymer, vol. viii. p. 78. [z] Ibid. p. 403. Eſch. 16 Hen. VI. n. 56. Norf. & MS. Famil. Howard. [a] Præd. & Rot. Fin. 13 Rich. II. m. 24. [b] Clauſ. 10 Henry IV. in dorſo, m. 16. [c] Ex ſtemmate. [d] Clauſ. 13 Hen. VI. m. 13.

and

and 2dly to Sir Gilbert Talbot, Knt.) was married [e] 2dly to Allice, daughter and heir of Sir William Tendring, of Tendring, near Stoke-Neyland, aforeſaid, Knt. and by her had iſſue two ſons, Sir Robert Howard, his heir, and Henry Howard, who had, by gift of his father, the manors of Teringhampton, Eaſt-Walton, Bokenham, Wigenhall, and Garbleſham, with other lands in the county of Norfolk, to him and the heirs of his body, as appeareth by Sir John's will, dated at Stoke-Neyland, April 1, 1435, 14 Hen. VI. and left iſſue by Mary his wife, daughter of Sir Henry Huſſey, of the county of Suſſex, Knt. Elizabeth his daughter and heir, married to Henry Wentworth, of Codham, in Eſſex.

The ſaid Allice, wife of Sir John Howard, by her laſt will and teſtament [f], dated October 13, 1426 (4 Henry VI.) and proved on the 20th, orders her body to be buried in the ſouth part of the church of Stoke-Neyland, near her father; to which church ſhe bequeaths 40 s. and her white gown, ſtriped with gold. She alſo bequeathed the like ſums, to the friers convent of Clare, to the monks of the convent of Bedingfield, the friers convent of Sudbury, the friers convent of Colcheſter, the friers Predicants of Ipſwich, the friers Minors there, and the friers Carmelites there, and the friers Auguſtine of Thetford. She conſtitutes three chaplains her executors, who were to diſpoſe of her goods for the health of her ſoul, as they ſaw expedient. She died on October 18, 1426; and was accordingly buried at Stoke-Neyland, as was afterwards, in 1436, her huſband, Sir John Howard: and both lie under a graveſtone before the high-altar in the ſaid church; and thereon the figures in braſs of a Knight with his ſword by his ſide, and his Lady by him, with the arms of Howard and Tendring at the corners, [g] circumſcribed in black letters as follows. *Orate pro Animabus Johannis Howard, Militis, qui obiit Ann.* 14 . . . *et Allicie uxoris ejus, que obiit in feſto Sancti Luce Evangeliſte, Ann.* 1426, *quorum Animabus propitietur Deus.*

There are alſo, in the eaſt window of the ſouth part of the church, the portraitures of the ſaid Sir John Howard, and Dame Allice his wife, both kneeling, with their hands erected, praying, between an eſcutcheon of the arms of Howard and Tendring. Over his head, *Paſſio* XTI *conforta nos*; over her head, *Jeſu, miſerere nobis*; and underneath, *Orate pro animabus Domini Johannis Howard, & Domine Allicie uxoris ejus.*

Sir Robert Howard, their eldeſt ſon [h], was married to Margaret, eldeſt daughter of Thomas de Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, by Elizabeth his wife, daughter and coheir of Richard Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel; and couſin and coheir to John

[e] Ex ſtemmate. [f] Ex Regiſt. Luffeenham, in Cur. Prerog. Cant. p. 48.
[g] Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 772, 773. [h] Ex ſtemmate.

Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk. By this marriage, the inheritance of thoſe great families became, at length, veſted in this of the Howards, and by Iſabel, the other coheir, in that of Berkeley. The ſaid Thomas Duke of Norfolk was ſon and heir to John Lord Mowbray, by Elizabeth his wife, daughter and heir to John Lord Segrave, and of Margaret his wife, daughter and heir of Thomas de Brotherton, Earl of Norfolk, and Marſhal of England, the eldeſt ſon of King Edward I. by his ſecond wife Margaret, daughter to Philip the Hardy, King of France; and on February 12, 1385-6, 9 Rich. II. was inveſted with the office of Earl-Marſhal, being the firſt who bore that title, his predeceſſors in office being ſimply ſtiled Marſhals. By the ſaid Lady, Sir Robert had a ſon, Sir John Howard, and two daughters, Margaret, married to Sir William Daniel, Baron of Rathwire in Ireland; and Catherine, the ſecond wife of Edward Nevil, Lord Abergavenny, who had iſſue by her, Margaret, wedded to John Brook, Lord Cobham, and other children.

His only ſon, Sir John Howard, began in his youth to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the wars againſt France. In 31 Henry VI. (being then a Knight) after the regaining of Bourdeaux [i], he accompanied John Talbot, Viſcount Liſle (eldeſt ſon of the Earl of Shrewſbury) to Blay; and ſoon after marched with the Earl of Shrewſbury to the relief of Chaſtillon, then beſieged by the French [k], whom he encountered, and entered their camp; but at length that Earl being ſhot through the thigh, and his horſe ſlain under him, he there loſt his life; on which the reſidue of the Engliſh, after a valiant behaviour, retired to Bourdeaux. After this battle of Chaſtillon, fought on July 20, 1453 [l], the whole dutchy of Aquitaine was ſoon after loſt, which had continued in the poſſeſſion of the Engliſh, ſince Henry II. in the right of his wife Eleanor, daughter and heir to William Duke of Aquitaine, becoming poſſeſſed of it in 1151. It is related by Stow, in his Annals, p. 397, and Hall in his Chronicle, folio 166, that the Lord Molins was taken priſoner, with 60 more of diſtinction, and that they killed of the enemy more than their own force conſiſted of. It is therefore probable, that Sir John Howard was alſo taken priſoner, and remained there with the Lord Molins, who was not ſet at liberty till after ſeven years and four months durance, as our records teſtify. It is certain he was in great favour with Edward IV. who, in 1461, the firſt year of his reign [m], conſtituted him Conſtable of the caſtle of Norwich; and, for the better ſecuring his intereſt, made him [n] Sheriff of the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk: and, in conſideration of his great ſervices, granted him, in ſpecial tail, the [o] ma-

[i] Stow's Annals, p. 396. [k] Ibid. p. 367. [l] Ibid. [m] Pat. 1 Ed. IV. p. 1, m. 16. [n] Rot. Fin. 1 Ed. IV. m. 32. [o] Pat. 1 Ed. IV. p. 4. m. 19.

nors

nors of Leyham, and Wherſtede in com. Suff. Smetheton-Hall in com. Eſſex, Dontiſhe and Donelyth in com. Dorſet, Moyton-Hall in com. Norf. which were then in the Crown by the attainder of James Butler, Earl of Wiltſhire in England, and Ormond in Ireland.

In 2 Ed. IV. being appointed to keep the ſeas [p] (together with the Lords Falconbridge, and Clinton) having to the number of 10,000 men in the fleet, he landed with them in Britany, where they took the town of Conquet, and afterwards made themſelves maſters of the Iſle of Rhée, on the coaſt of Poictou. In 1468, 8 Ed. IV. being then Treaſurer of the King's houſhold [q], he obtained a grant of the whole benefit that ſhould accrue to the King, by coinage of money in the City and Tower of London, or elſewhere in the realm of England, ſo long as he ſhould continue in that office of Treaſurer of the houſhold; which had been conferred on him for his prudent management in an embaſſy, that year, to Lewis XI. of France, in behalf of Francis II. Duke of Britany. Alſo, the ſame year [r], he attended the Lady Margaret, the King's ſiſter, into Flanders, where ſhe was ſolemnly married to the Duke of Burgundy.

The year after, he was preſent, with other great men of the realm [s], on October 27, when Henry Percy, ſon and heir of Henry Earl of Northumberland, in the palace of Weſtminſter, took the oath of allegiance to the King. Alſo, on March 6 following [t], was preſent with the King when Robert de Stillington, Biſhop of Bath and Wells, delivered up the great ſeal to him. And the ſame year, 1470 (10 Ed. IV.) bearing [u] the title of Lord Howard, he was made Captain-General of all the King's forces at ſea, for reſiſting the attempts of the Lancaſtrians, then making head again under Richard Nevil, Earl of Warwick, the Duke of Clarence, and others; King Edward being then in Flanders, ſoliciting ſuccours from his brother-in-law, the Duke of Burgundy.

In 11 Ed. IV. he was conſtituted [x] Deputy-governor of Calais and the marches adjacent. And the ſame year (July 3, 1471, 11 Ed. IV.) he [y], with the other Lords ſpiritual and temporal, ſwore allegiance to King Edward, and recognized Edward his ſon, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Earl of Cheſter, as the very undoubted heir to the crowns and realms of England, France, and lordſhip of Ireland. In 12 Ed. IV. he had ſummons to the parliament at Weſtminſter [z], among the Barons of the realm, as alſo the year following, and during the whole reign of King Edward IV. And the ſame year, June 18, 1472,

[p] Stow's Annals, p. 417. [q] Pat. 8 Ed. IV. m. 5. [r] Stow's Annals, p. 421. [s] Rymer, vol. ii. p. 649. [t] Ibid. p. 651. [u] Pat. 10 Ed. IV. m. 13. [x] Rot. Franc. 11 Ed. IV. m. 18. [y] Rymer, vol. ii. p. 715. [z] Cotton's Abridgment of Records of Parliament, p. 687, 693, & ſeq.

12 Ed. IV. [a] bearing the title of Sir John Howard, of Howard, Knt. he was, with Sir William Haſtings, Knt. appointed to treat with thoſe deputed by Charles Duke of Burgundy, about the pale of Picardy, and to ſettle the boundaries of the ſame; and the ſame year was elected into the ſociety of the moſt noble [b] order of the Garter, April 22, 1472. On May 20, 1473, 13 Ed. IV. he was again [c] joined in commiſſion with the ſame Lord Haſtings and others, to treat with the Duke of Burgundy, or his agents, at Bruges in Flanders, for compoſing certain differences between the ſubjects of England and that Duke, for the mutual advantage of both [d]; and likewiſe to renew the alliance concluded with Portugal in the reign of Richard II. During the conferences, which were opened at Bruges, and afterwards transferred to Utrecht, all diſputes were amicably terminated; and the league renewed with his Portugueſe Majeſty, who waved his demand of ſatisfaction for ſome veſſels taken from his ſubjects by the Engliſh, as it appeared, on enquiry, they had been ſeized by Thomas Nevil, the baſtard of Falconbridge, an outlawed pirate. In 14 Ed. IV. he was returned, by indenture [e], to ſerve the King in his dutchy of Normandy and realm of France, for a whole year, with 20 men at arms, and 200 archers. In 1475, by the perſuaſion of the Duke of Burgundy, King Edward declared war againſt France, and, landing at Calais, July 4, the Lord Howard [f] attended upon him, being greatly in his favour. In the hiſtory of Philip de Commines are ſeveral particulars of this Lord Howard, very memorable. It is recited, that, at the very inſtant the Duke of Burgundy was taking his leave of King Edward to return to his army, the Engliſh took priſoner a ſervant of the King of France's houſe, whom they led to King Edward and the Duke, who, after examining him, ordered his diſmiſſion, as he was the firſt priſoner taken [g]: and, at his departure, the Lord Howard and the Lord Stanley ſaid, *Do our commendations to the King your maſter, if you can come to his preſence.* For they found the Duke of Burgundy had not that regard to the covenants ſtipulated between him and King Edward, as was expected; and the French King taking the hint, by ſending a herald to King Edward, he had [h] commandment to addreſs himſelf to the Lord Howard, and the Lord Stanley, who introduced him. His meſſage was, to let King Edward know the great deſire his maſter had of long time to be in perfect amity with the King of England, and would ſend ambaſſadors, if he would aſſign a place for treaty. Which being agreed on to be

[a] Rymer, vol. ii. p. 739. [b] Aſhmole's order of the Garter, p. 266. and Anſtis's Introd. vol. ii. p. 51. [c] Rot. Franc. 13 Ed. IV. m. 24. [d] Rymer, vol. ii. p. 778. [e] Ex Autog. penes Cler. Pell. [f] Stow's Annals, p. 427. [g] Philip de Commines, p. 118. [h] Ibid. p. 119.

at

at a village near Amiens, between the two armies, the commiſſioners of both Princes met there[j]. For the King of England, the Lord Howard, Sir Thomas Sentleger, Dr. Morton, after Chancellor of England, and William Dudley, Dean of his Majeſty's chapel[k], were nominated plenipotentiaries by letters patent, dated Auguſt 13, 1475, in the King's camp in the town of Seynbre, near Perronne, to negotiate with Lewis Count of Rouſſillon, Admiral of France, and natural ſon of Charles I. Duke of Bourbon, the Lord of St. Pierre, and Biſhop of Evreux, the French ambaſſadors. On the 28th of that month, a treaty between the two monarchs was concluded on theſe terms, That Lewis ſhould pay Edward 75,000 crowns for the expence of the war; on the receipt of which the Engliſh forces ſhould retire: that Lewis, moreover, ſhould grant him an annuity of 50,000 crowns, payable equally at Michaelmas and Eaſter, during their joint lives: that the Dauphin (afterwards Charles VIII.) of France ſhould marry Elizabeth, Edward's eldeſt daughter (who was after the wife of Henry VII.) and allow her a jointure of 60,000 livres a year: and that neither party ſhould encourage inteſtine commotions in the other's dominions; but ſhould aſſiſt each other in ſuppreſſing their rebellious ſubjects. It was further concluded, that the two Kings ſhould meet together, and, after ſeeing one another, and ſwearing to the treaty, the Lord Howard, and Sir John Cheyney, Maſter of the Horſe, ſhould be left as hoſtages, till the King of England (after receiving 75,000 crowns) had paſſed the ſeas with his army. A penſion of 16,000 crowns, yearly, was alſo divided among the King of England's principal ſervants; of which ſum, the Lord Haſtings had 2000, and the Lord Howard, Sir John Cheyney, Maſter of the Horſe, Sentleger, Montgomery, and others of King Edward's ſervants, had the remainder. The Duke of Burgundy, on hearing of the truce, came to King Edward, who told him, that both he and the Duke of Britany, with the Conſtable de St. Pol, might be comprehended in the treaty. But the Duke inveighed vehemently againſt it, and proteſted he would not agree to the truce, till King Edward had been three months in his realm. The [l]Lord Howard, and Sentleger, were named by King Edward to meet the Lord of Bouchage, and Sir Philip de Commines, from the French King, to aſſign the place for the interview between them. And after they had rode and viewed ſeveral places, agreed on Picquigny, on the river Somme, a pleaſant, ſafe, and commodious town. Their meeting was on Auguſt 29, very magnificent (as related by Commines) and too long to be deſcribed here. He ſays of the [m] Lord Howard, that, on the

[j] Philip de Commines, p. 120, 121, 122. [k] Pat. 16 Ed. IV. p. 1. [l] De Commines, p. 125. [m] Ibid. p 128.

French

French King's returning to Amiens, he came thither the next day, with ſome who had furthered the peace, and arrived as the French King was going to ſupper: "And the Lord Howard "began to talk with the King in his ear, ſaying, if it pleaſed "him, he would find means to bring his maſter to Amiens, and "peradventure to Paris, to make merry with him: which "offer, though the King liked never a whit, yet made a "ſhew of good liking thereof; but told me (Commines) ſoftly "in mine ear, *That the thing he moſt feared had happened*, mean-"ing this offer. After ſupper, the Lord Howard fell again in "communication about it." But the King of France put it off, ſaying, he muſt go with all ſpeed againſt the Duke of Burgundy; for, ſays Commines, the French King was fearful he might take a liking to his country, and induce him to return thither again.

When King Edward had received the 75,000 crowns, he embarked his forces with all expedition [n], the Lord Howard and Sir John Cheyney being left hoſtages till his arrival in England, and, for the ſhort time they ſtaid, were entertained very nobly by the French King. Commines has obſerved [o], that the King of France gave great preſents to all ambaſſadors that came to him, being a timorous Prince, and afraid of a rupture with the King of England; and that he beſtowed penſions on the King's principal ſervants; but that this Lord Howard, over and above his penſion, received of him, in leſs than two years ſpace, in money and plate, 24,000 crowns: which was not unknown to King Edward, who had ſuch confidence in his fidelity and prudence, that, in conſideration thereof, in 15 Ed. IV. [p] he granted him, in ſpecial tail, the manors of Preſton, Cokefield, Aldham, and Mendham, in com. Suff. alſo the manors of Dolyngham, and Michell-Hall, otherwiſe called Earls-Swaffam, in com. Cantab. then in the Crown, by the attainder of John Vere, Earl of Oxford. And the year after, as Knight of the moſt noble order of the Garter, he was at Windſor with the [q] King, who kept the feaſt of St. George three days there in a moſt royal manner, the Queen being preſent, and the Knights of the Garter dining in the great chamber at a ſide-table by the King and Queen, and great Ladies.

In 17 Ed. IV. he was [r] joined in commiſſion with William Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel, to treat with the French for prolongation of the truce between both realms; and the year after [s] the King conferred on him the office of Conſtable of the Tower of London, during life, in reverſion, after the death of John Lord Dudley, who died in 22 Ed. IV. whereby he was

[n] Stow's Annals, p. 428. [o] Lib. vi. chap. 2. p. 188, 189. [p] Pat. 15 Ed. IV. p. 2. m. 15. [q] Stow, p. 429. [r] Rot. Franc. 17 Ed. IV. m. 2. [s] Pat. 18 Ed. IV. p. 1, 2.

poſſeſſed

poſſeſſed of that office. In 19 Ed. IV. he was, by indenture [t], again retained to ſerve the King as Captain-General of his fleet againſt the Scots, with 3000 men at arms. And was afterwards ſent ambaſſador to the King of France for reminding him of the treaty, whereby his ſon, the Dauphin, was to marry with Elizabeth, daughter to King Edward. On his return from France, he certified the King of his own knowledge (as our hiſtorians write [u]) that he ſaw Margaret of Auſtria, daughter to Duke Maximilian, ſon to the Emperor Frederick III. received into France with great pomp and royalty, and at Amboiſe eſpouſed. King Edward thereupon was highly diſpleaſed [x] with the double dealing of the French King, and, calling his Nobles together, opened his griefs to them, who promiſed to be ready with all their powers to revenge the affront: but whilſt the King was preparing for war, he deceaſed, April 9, 1483; and Lord Howard carried the royal banner at his funeral.

Having been faithful to the houſe of York, during the whole reign of King Edward IV. he continued ſtedfaſt to King Richard III. after he had got the crown, June 22, 1483; but our hiſtorians make no mention of his being concerned in any of thoſe evil contrivances, or barbarous actions, which ſullied his reign. That Prince gave very diſtinguiſhing proofs of his favour and eſteem for the Lord Howard: for notwithſtanding his nephew, Richard Duke of York, upon the extinction of the male line of the Mowbray family, in the perſon of John Duke of Norfolk, Earl-Marſhal, &c. 1475, had been inveſted with his dignities and titles, and afterwards, on January 15, 1677-8, though then only in the fourth year of his age, ſolemnly wedded to Lady Anne, that Nobleman's only child and heir, he on June 28, the firſt of his reign, when his ſaid nephew was certainly alive (although Mr. Jekyl, in his *Barones Extincti*, MS. ſays the contrary) conferred [y] on his Lordſhip the office of Marſhal of England [z], and alſo the name, title, and honour of Earl-Marſhal of England, together with all offices and profits thereunto belonging (the which John late Duke of Norfolk, deceaſed, held to himſelf, and the iſſue male of his body, and, for want of iſſue male, remainder to the King): To have and to hold to him, the ſaid John Lord Howard, in tail male; with power to grant to any perſon, or perſons, the office of Marſhal of the King's Bench, of Marſhal of the Exchequer, and office of Marſhal's Crier before the Steward, and Marſhal of the King's houſhold. He was further impowered (in the King's preſence or abſence) to bear a golden ſtaff, tipped at each end with black, the upper part thereof to be adorned with the royal arms, and the lower end thereof with thoſe of his own family: and for

[t] Ex Autogr. penes Cler. Pell. [u] Stow, p. 434. Speed, p. 702. [x] Ibid.
[y] Pat. 1 Rich. III. p. 1. m. 18. [z] Rymer's Fœdera, vol. xii. p. 190.

the

the better ſupport of the dignity of the ſaid office, got a grant to himſelf and his heirs (aforeſaid) for ever, of 20 l. annually, payable half yearly, out of the fee-farm rent of the town of Ipſwich, in Suffolk. Alſo, on the ſame day [a], was advanced to the dignity of Duke of Norfolk; and Thomas, his ſon and heir, [b] created Earl of Surry. He was, on the 30th of that month [c], conſtituted High Steward of England for the ceremony of Richard's coronation; and attended [d] there on July 6 following, with his ſon Thomas, Earl of Surry, who bore the ſword of ſtate; the Duke himſelf carrying the King's crown, and walking next before him.

On July 25 enſuing [e], he was conſtituted Lord Admiral of England, Ireland, and Aquitaine, for life. Upon which day he likewiſe obtained a [f] grant, in ſpecial tail, of the manors and lordſhips of Lavenham, in com. Suff. Canfield, Stanſted-Montfichet, Crepping, Langdon, Cruſtwich, Eſton-Hall-Vauce, Fynyreton, Dodinghurſt, Bumſted-Helion, Beamond, and Bentley, in Eſſex; Baddleſmere, in Kent; Hinkeſton, in Cambridgeſhire; Roſteneythe, Helſton, Devy, Predannock, Poledewe, Etherton, Dawneth, Rutleton, Treſaveron, Hilleton, Heyvenis, Newland, Harnathy, Park, Trevigo, Wycoteham, Penhall, Nauſergh, with the hundreds of Trelyghen, and Shrobhender, in the county of Cornwall; Bretford, Wellelewe, Ruſtiſhall, Chepenham, Teffount, Bremilſhawe, Upton-Skydmore, Weſton-Park, Wermyſter, and Winterborne-Stoke, in com. Wilts; Hungerford, in Berkſhire; and the caſtle, lordſhip, and manor of Farlegh, in Somerſ. and Wilts.

Alſo, the year after [g], obtained another grant, in ſpecial tail, of the manors and lordſhips of Middleton, Hillington, Tilney, Iſtellington, Clenchwarton, Raynham, Shaſtleſkewe, Skales, Hekelyng, Wilton, Hokkewood, Berton-Bendiſh, Wigenhale, with the fiſhing there, and toll in Biſhops-Lenne, with the hundred of Freebridge, in com. Norf. the manors and lordſhips of Lavenham, and Warde-Huton, in com. Suff. Woodham-Ferrers, in com. Eſſex: Berkeway, Rokeley, and Newſelles, in com. Herf. Haſelingfield, in Cambridegſhire; Langham, and Ber-Lortye, in com. Dorſ. Keres, and Retire, in com. Cornub. Exton, South-Brent, Chillington, Stratton, Yevelton, and Spekington, in Somerſetſhire; Petersfielde, and Up-Clatford, in com. Southamp. Knoke, Bedwyn, and Orcheſton, in com. Wilts: to hold by the ſame ſervices as they had been held before they came to the Crown.

But he did not long enjoy theſe great poſſeſſions; for the next enſuing year, being [h] in the front of Richard's army at Boſworth-

[a] Cart. 1 Rich. III. m. 1. [b] Stow's Annals, p. 459. [c] Pat. 1 Rich. III. p. 1. m. 12. [d] Speed's Chron. p. 726. [e] Pat. 1 Rich. III. p. 1. m. 8. [f] Pat. ibid. p. 1. [g] Pat. 2 Rich. III. p. 2. [h] Polyd. Virg. p. 562. and Stow's Annals, &c.

field,

field, he was, with that King, ſlain there, Auguſt 22, 1485, 3 Rich. III. from whence [i] his corpſe was conveyed to Thetford, and buried in the abbey-church. After which he was attainted in the parliament begun [k] at Weſtminſter, November 7, 1 Hen. VII. though Henry was neither King *de facto*, nor *de jure*, when Norfolk bore arms againſt him.

He was warned, by ſome of his friends, to refrain from going with King Richard; and, on the night before he was to ſet forward, this was ſet on his gate [l]:

"Jack of Norfolk, be not too bold,
"For Dickon, thy maſter, is bought and ſold."

Yet he would not abſent himſelf from him; but as he faithfully lived under him, ſo he manfully died with him, and, for his great worth, was lamented by his enemies. Our hiſtorians recite his fame; and, among the poets, Sir John Beaumont, Bart. makes honourable mention of him in his poem of Boſworth-field.

This great Duke maried two wives, firſt Catherine, daughter to Thomas Lord Molines [m], and of Eleanor his wife, daughter of Henry Lord Beaumont, by whom he had iſſue Thomas his ſon and heir, and four daughters, Anne, married to Sir Edmund Gorges of Wraxhall, Somerſetſhire, Knight of the Bath, at the creation of Arthur Prince of Wales, ſon of King Henry VII. and who had iſſue by her [n] five ſons, and three daughters; whereof Sir Edward, his eldeſt ſon, ſeated at Wraxhall, was anceſtor to Sir Edward Gorges, who was created a Peer of the Kingdom of Ireland, July 13, 18 Jac. I. Iſabel, the Duke's ſecond daughter, was married to Sir Robert Mortimer, of the county of Eſſex, Knt. [o]; Jane, third daughter, to Sir John Timperley, of Hintleſham in Suffolk, Knt. and Margaret, wife of Sir John Windham, of Crounthorp, and Felbrig, in com. Norf. anceſtor by her to the preſent Earl of Egremont.

His Grace's firſt wife [p], Catherine, Dutcheſs of Norfolk, lies buried in the ſouth part of the church of Stoke, between the high-altar and the quire, where a monument was erected for her; exhibiting the figure of a Lady, habited in a hood and gown, on one ſide whereof are the arms of Brotherton, three Lions paſſant guardant, Or; the arms of Howard, Gules, a Bend between ſix croſs croſlets, Argent; and a Lion rampant, ducally crowned. Alſo, on the four corners, are eſcutcheons of arms; on the right next her head, four coats within a Garter, circum-

[i] Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 830. [k] Rot. Parl. 2 Hen. VII. [l] Hollinſhed's Chronicle, p. 759. [m] Chaos, N° V. p. 55. in Coll. Arm. [n] Ex ſtemmate de Gorges. [o] Vincent on Brook, p. 3. [p] Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 774.

ſcribed,

ſcribed, *Honi ſoit qui mal y penſe*, 1. the arms of Brotherton; 2. Howard; 3. Warren, Chequey, Or and Azure; 4. Mowbray, a Lion rampant, Argent. On the ſiniſter ſide, ſix coats, impaling wavy of ſix (the arms of Molins) 1. Brotherton; 2. Howard; 3. Warren; 4. Brews of Gower, Azure, a Lion rampant, ſemi of croſs croſlets, Or; 5. a Lion rampant, ducally crowned . . . . . 6. Mowbray. At her feet, an eſcutcheon of the arms of Molines on the right; and on the ſiniſter ſix coats, Brotherton, &c. as before.

Beneath her feet is this inſcription:

Under this ſtone is buried the body of the right honorable Woman and Ladie, ſome time wife unto the right high and mighty Prince, Lord John Howard, Duke of Norfolke, and Mother unto the right noble and puiſſant Prince, Lord Thomas Howard, Duke alſo of Norfolke. Which Lady departed this preſent Life, Ann. Dom. 1452.

His Grace's ſecond wife [q] was Margaret, daughter of Sir John Chedworth, Knt. by whom he had iſſue Catherine, who was married to John Bourchier, Lord Berners, and by him had Joan their daughter and heir, who by marriage carried Aſhwel-Thorpe, in Norfolk, to the family of Knyvet. Which Margaret ſurviving the Duke, by her laſt [r] will and teſtament, dated May 13, 1490 (5 Hen. VII.) ordered her body to be buried in the quire of the church of our Lady in Stoke-Neyland, before her image on the ſide of the high-altar. And appointed, that, immediately after her deceaſe, her executors find three prieſts to ſay 300 maſſes and diriges for her ſoul, within ſeven or ten days after her deceaſe. Likewiſe, that they find, as haſtily as may be, two virtuous prieſts to ſing in the church of Stoke, for the ſpace of three years, for her ſoul, the ſouls of her huſband, John Norreis, Eſq; Nicholas Wyfold, and all others to whom ſhe was beholden.

She bequeathed to the reparations of the church of Stoke five marks, and to the gild of St. John in Stoke 20s. to keep her obiit, and pray for her; and 26s. 8d. to the houſe of St. John of Colcheſter; the like ſums to the nuns of Broſyard, and friers of Clare; 20s. to the houſe of St. Buttolph's, and the like ſum to the Grey-friers, and friers of Sudbury, who were every of them to keep her obiit, and pray for her. She bequeathed to her daughter, the Lady Berners, and to her ſon her huſband, all her houſhold goods, except plate, as alſo what belongs to her chapel, with the chalice; but that they ſhould have of her plate two great pots of ſilver, two flaggons, and ſix great bowls with

[q] Pat. 6 Ed. IV. p. 1. m. 2.

[r] Ex Regiſt. Vox. 16. N° 10. in Cur. Prerog. Cantuar.

covers

covers; to her daughter Marney, a chain of water-flowers. She conſtitutes Edmund Daniel, Eſq; and Thomas Swayne, vicar of the church of Stoke-Neyland, her executors, and ſupervifor, her Lord and ſon (in law) the Earl of Surry. The probate bears date December 3, 1494.

Of Thomas, 2d Duke of Norfolk, we have the following account depenſilled on a table, fixed to his monument at Thetford in Norfolk [s]. "Fyrſt you ſhall know the ſeid Duke was "in his yong age, after he had been a ſufficient ſeaſon at the "Gramer Schole, Hencheman [page] to King Edward the iv^th^, "and was then called Thomas Howard, Son and Heir to Sir "John Howard, Knight (after Lord Howard, and after that "Duke of Norfolk) of right inheritance. And the ſeid Tho"mas, whan he was at mannes age, was, wyth dyvers other "Gentlemen of England, ſent to Charles Duke of Burgon, in "the begynning of the Wars betwyxt Kyng Lewes of Fraunce "and the ſeid Duke Charles; and ther contynued unto the end "of the ſeid warres, to hys great prayſe and thankys, as well "of Kyng Edware hys own Soverayn Lord, as of the ſeid Duke "Charles. And after the warres doon betwixt the ſeid Kyng "Lewes, and the ſeid Duke Charles; than the ſeid Thomas "Howard returned into England unto Kyng Edward hys So"verayn Lord: And he made hym immedyately Eſquyer for hys "body. And he was about hym at hys makynge redy bothe "evenyng and mornyng. And afterwards he made hym "Knyghte at the maryage of the Duke of York (Kynge Ed"ward hys ſecond ſon) and ſo he with the ſeid Kynge Edward "in all hys buſynes, aſwel at Lyncolneſhire-feld, and at the "tyme of Banbury-feld, as at all other hys buſynes: and alſo "at ſuche tyme as the ſame Kyng was takyn by the Erle of "Warwyke, at Warwyke, befor hys eſcape, and departynge "into Flaunders.

"And after the Kyngys departynge into Flaunders [9 Edward "IV.] for that the cooſtes of England were ſo ſett, for de"pertynge of any other his ſervantis and frendis, the ſeid Tho"mas Howard was dryvin of force, to take ſayntwary of Seynt "Joannes in Colcheſter, for the true ſervice he bore unto Kynge "Edward. And at the ſeid Kynges retorne out of Flaunders, "the ſeid Sir Thomas Howard reſortyd unto hym, and went "wyth hym, to Barnet feld [10 Ed. IV.] and there was ſore "hurte.

"And after whan Kynge Edward wint into Fraunce wyth "hys Army Royall, he ſent thether before dyvers Gentylmen; "and, for that the ſeid Sir Thomas Howard had good expery"ence, aſwell in hys beyng wyth Charles Duke of Burgon, as

[s] Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 833, 834, & ſeq.

"in

" in dyvers Feldes, and buſyneſſes with the ſeid Kynge Ed-
" ward, he had therfor commandement to go over wyth them,
" for hys advyce and counſell, till the ſeid Kynge came over.
" And whan Kynge Edward, and Kynge Lewes, mette at the
" Barriars upon the Ryver of Som, the ſeid Sir Thomas Howard
" was wyth Kynge Edward at the Barriars, by the Kyngis
" commaundement; and no mor men, ſave only the Chauncel-
" ler of Englond, the Chaunceller of Fraunce, and Sir John
" Cheney. And after the Kyngis comyng home into Englonde,
" the ſeyde Sir Thomas Howard obteyned lycens of the Kynge,
" to lye in Norfolke, at an howſe whych he had in the ryght
" of my Lady his wyffe, called Aſhewolthorpe; and ther he
" laye, and kepte an honourable howſe, in the favour of the
" whole Shire, duryng the lyffe of the ſeyd Kyng Edward,
" and at that tyme, and long after hys Father was alyve."

In 15 Edward IV.[t] he was retained to ſerve in his wars, with ſix men at arms, and 60 archers, and, on that account received, for the firſt quarters wages for them, 177 l. 9 s. In 16 Ed. IV. he was [u] conſtituted Sheriff of the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk; and was created Earl of Surry [x], when John, his father, was created Duke of Norfolk by Richard III. viz. June 28, 1 Rich. III. and by the title of Earl of Surry, Knight of the Garter, was in the firſt year of that King, at [y] a chapter of the Garter, within the palace of Weſtminſter, when a ſcrutiny was taken for an election; and was elected in the room of [z] the Lord Haſtings. In the battle of Boſworth he had the leading of the archers, which King Richard ſo placed as a bulwark to defend the reſt. The martial proweſs of this Earl in that battle, and his reſolute undaunted carriage, when taken priſoner, are finely delineated by Sir John Beaumont (beforementioned) in his poem on Boſworth-Field.

He was committed to the Tower by Henry VII. [a] where he continued about three years and a half; and was attainted with his father. " In which time of his being in the Tower (as on the inſcription before mentioned) " the ſame King Henry had a
" field with the Earl of Lincoln in Nottinghamſhire, beſides
" Newark; and the Lieutenant of the Tower came to the ſaid
" Earl, and profferred to him the Keys to go out at his plea-
" ſure." And he anſwered him again, " That he would not de-
" part thence until ſuch time as he that commanded him thither
" ſhould command him out again, which was King Henry VII.
" but charged the Lieutenant, upon his allegiance, if the King
" was on live to bring him ther as the King was, to the intent

[t] Rymer, vol. ii. p. 844. [u] Rot. Fin. 16 Ed. IV. m. 9. [x] Stow's Annals, p. 459. [y] Anſtis's Regiſt. Gart. vol. ii. p. 217, 218. [z] Ibid. p. 220. [a] Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 835.

" he

[a] he might do his Grace ſervice." And that King having fully experienced his fidelity by his demeanor, whilſt he continued his priſoner, received him into his ſpecial favour, and made choice of him for one of his privy-council; *being a perſon of great prudence,* [b] *gravity, and conſtancy.*

In 4 Hen. VII. he was reſtored to his title of Earl of Surry [c]; and to all thoſe lands which were of his wife's inheritance: And the ſame year, on that inſurrection in the North, occaſioned by the aſſeſſing of a ſubſidy (wherein the Earl of Northumberland was murdered) he was [d] ſent with a ſtrong power, for ſuppreſſing of the rebels. John Anſtis, Eſq; late Garter King of Arms, who made a diligent ſearch after all that had been elected Knights of the Garter, ſays [e], *The preciſe time hath not hitherto appeared to the Editor, when he was re-elected, or re-inſtated into the order* [f]. The regiſter is deficient in that reign, but it is certain he was reſtored, and preſent in chapter at Windſor, on May 7, 1503, 18 Hen. VII. among the Knights of the Garter. On May 9, 1492, 7 Hen VII. he was, by indenture [g], retained to ſerve the King in his wars beyond the ſeas, as ſhould be appointed him, during one whole year next enſuing the day of his firſt muſters, and ſo long after as it ſhould pleaſe the King, with ten men at arms, twelve demi-lances, twenty archers on horſeback, and fifteen archers on foot; but did not go abroad, being ſoon after again [h] employed into the North, to reſtrain the incurſions of the Scots. Alſo, in 10 Hen. VII. being [i] Sub-warden and Vice-guardian (under Henry Duke of York, the King's ſecond ſon) of the Weſt and Middle Marches towards Scotland, the King informed him of the intentions of the Scots to invade his kingdom, in favour of the youth called Perkin Warbeck, and commiſſioned him to muſter all men able to bear arms, inhabiting between the Trent and Tweed, as ſhall ſeem neceſſary; and, on any emergency, to lead them againſt the enemy. And, in 12 Hen. VII. he was [k], with Richard Fox, Biſhop of Durham, Keeper of the Privy-Seal, commiſſioned to treat with James IV. King of Scotland, about a marriage between the ſaid King and Margaret, daughter of the King of England. In 13 Hen. VII. on the ſiege of Norham-caſtle by the Scots (being then in Yorkſhire) he marched towards them [l]; but, before he could reach to Norham, they retired to their own country. Whereupon he followed them with his army, and, in retaliation, took the caſtle of Ayton, and made great ſpoil within their borders. The Earl of Surry's proceedings, on that occaſion, exaſperated James IV. ſo much, that, ſacrificing his

[a] Polyd. Virg. p. 567. [c] Rot. Parl. 4 Hen. VII. m. 1. [d] Stow's Annals, p. 475. [e] Regiſt. Gart. vol. ii. p. 234. [f] Ibid. p. 241. [g] Rymer, vol. xii. p. 477 to 479. [h] Polyd. Virg. p. 600. [i] Rymer, vol. xii. p. 568. [k] Ibid. p. 695. [l] Polyd. Virg. p. 603.

dignity to his reſentment, he ſent Lyon King of Arms with a formal challenge to his Lordſhip, offering to fight him hand to hand for the town of Berwick, and other poſſeſſions thereabouts held by the Engliſh. The Earl received the meſſage with great politeneſs; and very prudently anſwered Lyon, That while he commanded his Sovereign's army, his life was devoted to his ſervice, and therefore was not at liberty to lay any ſuch ſtake; but that when his command was out, he ſhould be ready to accept the honour the Scottiſh Monarch offered him, either on horſeback or on foot, as his Majeſty pleaſed. In 1498, 14 Hen. VII. he was among the temporal Lords [m], called together by the King, October 27, who ratified the peace made with France, at Eſtaples, 1492.

In 15 Hen. VII. he made partition with Maurice, ſurviving brother of William Marquis of Berkeley [n] (who died iſſuleſs) of the lands, that came to them by inheritance, by right of their deſcent, from the coheirs of Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk. And the ſame [o] year, the plague raging in England, he conducted the King and Queen to Calais, landing them there on May 8, to commune with Philip Duke of Burgundy. He was [p] alſo one of the witneſſes to the King's ratification of the marriage of his ſon, Arthur Prince of Wales, to Catherine, daughter of Ferdinand King of Spain. On June 25, 1501, 16 Henry VII. he [q] had the great office of Lord Treaſurer of England conferred upon him. While he maintained that ſtation, the trade of England was extended, by encouraging new diſcoveries in America, and a ſtop put to abuſes in the coin.

In 17 Hen. VII. he was again commiſſioned [r], with Henry Dean, Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and Richard Fox, Biſhop of Wincheſter, Lord Privy-Seal, to treat with James IV. King of Scots, about a marriage between him and Margaret, eldeſt daughter of King Henry VII. And having concluded a treaty of friendſhip with the Scottiſh envoys [s], and ſettled the marriage articles, on January 24, 1501-2, at the palace of Richmond, in Surry, the wedding was ſolemnized by proxy: but the Princeſs being little more than twelve years of age, the conſummation was poſtponed till the year enſuing; when her father, having accompanied her to his ſeat of Colli-Weſton in Northamptonſhire, committed her to the care of the Lord Treaſurer, and Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland, who, with a retinue far tranſcending in pomp and grandeur any modern inſtance of magnificence, conducted her to King James, who met her, a few miles north of Berwick, at Lamberton, where the nuptial ceremony was performed, and afterwards celebrated

[m] Rymer, ut antea, p. 710. [n] Commun. de T. Paſch. 15 Hen. VII. Rot. 1.
[o] Stow's Annals, p. 482. [p] Rymer, vol. xii. p. 751. [q] Pat. 16 Hen. VII.
[r] Rymer, ut antea, p. 791. [s] Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 30, 31, 32.

at

at Edinburgh with great rejoicings and ſplendor. The ſame year, 18 Hen. VII. the King conſtitutes [t] Thomas Earl of Surry (Lord High-Treaſurer of England) Lord High-Steward of England, for the trial of Sir Edward Sutton, Lord Dudley, for felony committed in the county of Stafford; and, in 22 Hen. VII. he obtained a [u] ſpecial livery of all the manors and lands, whereof the Duke of Norfolk, his father, died ſeized.

On December 8, 1507, 23 Hen. VII. he was [x] commiſſioned with Richard, Biſhop of Wincheſter, Lord Privy-Seal, to treat with the Emperor, Maximilian I. about a marriage between the Lady Mary, the King of England's ſecond daughter, and Charles Prince of Spain; and for performance of articles of the ſaid treaty of marriage, the King bound himſelf in 25,000 crowns, and promiſed that Henry, Prince of Wales, ſhould do the ſame; and that the Earl of Surry, and others of his Nobles there ſpecified, ſhould be bound in 50,000 crowns each. Alſo, by commiſſion of the ſame date, he [y] was impowered to treat with the Emperor on the behalf of the Prince of Spain, and to conclude an alliance and treaty of friendſhip. And, on December 7, 1509 [z], 24 Hen. VII. in the palace of Richmond, the King preſent, John de Berghis, Chamberlain of the Emperor Maximilian, as proxy to Charles Prince of Spain, was married to the Lady Mary, in the preſence of the Earl of Surry, and moſt of the Nobility: but the marriage was never conſummated.

He was in ſuch favour, truſt, and confidence, with King Henry VII. that, when he made his will, dated March 31, 1509, in the 24th year of his reign, he conſtituted [a] Margaret, Counteſs of Richmond, his mother (firſt named) 2. our right truſty and well-beloved couſins, the Earl of Arundel; 3. Thomas Earl of Surry, our Treaſurer-general; and ſixteen others; with the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Superviſors. "And appoints them, or any ſeven of them, to meet yearly in the four "terms, for twelve days in each term, in London, to commune "about the performance of his will; and to make declaration "of the accounts yearly, and to have 6l. 13s. 4d. for every day "they ſit; whereof the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, if preſent, "20s. and the remainder to be diſtributed to ſo many of the "executors, as ſhall be preſent, and keep the ſaid aſſembly "without departing thence, till, by their common aſſent, they "depart together." And, in the ſaid will, it is further recited, "That, by act of parliament in the 7th of his reign, he had "ſettled all his honours, manors, lands, &c. of the dutchy of "Lancaſter in all the ſhires of England, on his feoffees, John,

[t] Rymer, p. 87. [u] Pat. 22 Hen. VII. p. 3. [x] Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 175 to 189. [y] Ibid. p. 198. [z] Ibid. p. 236, 237. [a] Abſtract of the Will of King Henry VII. by Greg. King, Lanc. Heral. MS.

" Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and many others, Lords, &c. " and by a ſubſequent act, January 25, 19th of his reign, on " ſeveral others (among which was the Earl of Surry) to ſupply " the rooms of thoſe feoffees that were dead. He wills, that " his executors receive the profits of all the ſaid manors, to the " performance of his will, without the interruption of the " Prince, or thoſe feoffees. He bequeaths to his Superviſor, " and twelve principal executors, 100l. each, by half-yearly " payments; and at the end of the execution of his will, to each " of them 200l. and to every of the remaining executors 100l. " The reſidue of his goods, chattles, debts, &c. not bequeath- " ed, he leaves to his executors to beſtow in alms-deeds, &c."

It is obſerved by Hall [b], in his Life of Henry VIII. that the executors, in the firſt year of his reign, made reſtitution of great ſums of money to many perſons, taken againſt good conſcience, for the ſaid King's uſe, by Empſon and Dudley. They were two [c] of the nineteen executors, appointed by Henry VII. but ſo many complaints were made againſt them, by thoſe they had wronged [d], that they were ſent to the Tower, April 23, the next day after Henry VIII's acceſſion to the Crown.

By the advice of Margaret, Counteſs of Richmond, the King's grandmother, a ſelect council to the King was appointed, of [e] which this Thomas Earl of Surry, Treaſurer of England, was one of the eleven, whereof it conſiſted.

His patent for Lord Treaſurer of England [f] was renewed July 28, 1 Henry VIII. and the ſame year, Auguſt 29, 1509, the King confirmed the peace, and ſwore to obſerve it, made January 24, 1501, between Henry VII. his father, and James IV. of Scotland, in the preſence [g] of Thomas Earl of Surry, Treaſurer of England, Richard Fox, Biſhop of Wincheſter, and James Earl of Arran, &c. deputed by the King of Scotland: Alſo, on March 23 following, he, and the Biſhop of Wincheſter, Lord Privy-Seal, were [h] appointed by the King to conclude, and ſign, ſeveral alliances made with foreign Princes; and were on that day ſigned by them and the French Ambaſſadors at London.

In 2 Henry VIII. he was [i] conſtituted Earl-Marſhal of England during his life; and that year [k] had the honour to be godfather, with William Warham, Archbiſhop of Canterbury, to Henry, the firſt born ſon of the King; Catherine, Counteſs of Devonſhire, daughter to King Edward IV. being godmother. The year after, November 10, 1511, 3 Henry VIII. the King confiding in the loyalty, induſtry, foreſight, and care of Tho-

[b] Chronicle, folio 7. [c] MS. by King, as before mentioned. [d] Stow's Annals, p. 87. and Hall, folio 1. [e] Ibid. [f] Pat. 1 Henry VIII. p. 1. m. 18. [g] Rymer, vol. xiii, p. 262. [h] Ibid. p. 270, & ſeq. [i] Pat. 2 Henry VIII. p. 1. m. 21. [k] Hall's Chronicle, folio 9.

mas

mas Earl of Surry, Treaſurer and Marſhal of England, and George Earl of Shrewſbury, commiſſions [l] them to treat with Ferdinand King of Aragon, and Joan Queen of Caſtile, in order to the aiding of Pope Julius II. againſt Lewis XII. King of France.

On July 5, 1512, 4 Henry VIII. the King recites, that, whereas by his letters patent, ſealed with his ſeal of the dutchy of Lancaſter, dated at London in the ſecond year of his reign, he gave and granted to Richard Biſhop of Wincheſter, Lord Privy-Seal, Thomas Earl of Arundel, Thomas Earl of Surry, Treaſurer of England [m], and others therein mentioned, executors of the laſt will of King Henry VII. the ſcite of the manor of the Savoy, late parcel of the dutchy aforeſaid, lying in the pariſhes of St. Clement's Danes, and St. Mary-le-Strand, in com. Middleſex. To have and to hold to them, their heirs, and aſſigns, for ever: to the intent that the ſaid executors ſhould erect, and found, an hoſpital on the ſaid place by royal licence: the King now confirms the ſaid grant, and gives them licence to found an hoſpital, to conſiſt of one maſter, and four chaplains ſecular, in the ſaid place; dedicated to the honour of Jeſus Chriſt, St. Mary the Virgin, and St. John Baptiſt; to pray for the good eſtate of the King, and Catherine his wife, while living, and for their ſouls after their departure: and more eſpecially for the ſouls of the late King Henry VII. Elizabeth his conſort, and Prince Arthur, his ſon: ſubject to ſuch ſtatutes as ſhall be made by the ſaid founders and executors: and that the ſaid hoſpital, be called The hoſpital of Henry VII. late King of England, of the Savoy; and that the maſter, and chaplains, be ſtiled The maſter, and chaplains of the hoſpital, &c. That they be a body corporate; have power by law to purchaſe land; to receive grants and gifts, and to aſſign the ſame; that they have a common ſeal for diſpatch of their buſineſs; and to have power to purchaſe lands, &c. to the value of 500 l. *per annum:* to have and to hold, to them and their ſucceſſor, for ever, notwithſtanding the ſtatute of Mortmain.

On the 6th of Auguſt following, 4 Henry VIII. [n] the King confiding in the loyalty, wiſdom, valour, induſtry, experience, and integrity, of Thomas Earl of Surry, Treaſurer and Marſhal of England, commiſſions him to raiſe and muſter all perſons able to bear arms, in the counties of York, Northumberland, Cumberland, Weſtmoreland, and Lancaſter; to arm them, review them, and to march them, where he ſaw neceſſary, to ſuppreſs the attempts of the Scots.

In 5 Henry VIII. on that expedition the King made into France, at which time Terrouen and Tournay were taken, this valiant Earl of Surry was left in England, to defend the

[l] Rymer, ut antea, p. 316. [m] Rymer, p. 334, & ſeq. [n] Ibid. p. 339.

North, and prevent the incurſions of the Scots during the King's abſence. The Lord Herbert, in his Life of King Henry VIII. has well digeſted, from the beſt accounts, a narrative [o] of the battle, which thereupon enſued, between James IV. and Thomas Earl of Surry. I ſhall therefore recite what he has principally obſerved, of the prudent and valiant behaviour of the Earl, and his ſons. "The King of Scotland (ſays the noble Author) "retaining ſome rancour in his mind againſt the King, thought "he could not, in any time more ſeaſonably, revenge himſelf, "than by invading his realm in his abſence. And thereupon, "with an army of 60,000 (ſome ſay 100,000) enters England, Auguſt 27, and, after a few days ſiege, takes Norham-"caſtle. Thomas Earl of Surry hereupon haſtens his army, "which conſiſted of 26,000, appointing his ſon, the Lord "Admiral, to come by ſea, and meet him, at or near Aln-"wick, in Northumberland. This brave Lord failed not his "time (September 4) bringing with him alſo about 1000 men; "of whom, when the Earl had taken view, and given order "in what place every one ſhould fight, he marches towards "the King; who had removed his army to an hill, called "Flodden, on the edge of the mountain Cheviot, where he "ſtrongly intrenched himſelf. The Scotch writers relate, that "many of their countrymen, for want of victuals, ſecretly fled "home, leaving the King's troops but thin. Our writers, on "the other ſide, make the Scotchmen much ſuperior in num-"ber. However, the Earl of Surry deſired nothing more "than to fight, as finding the whole country about him ſo "foraged and ſpoiled, that he could not long ſubſiſt. There-"fore, on Sunday, September 4, he ſent Rouge-Croix, He-"rald, with a trumpet, and inſtructions to King James, to "tell him, *That, in regard he had violated his faith and league, "and haſtily entered the Engliſh ground; that on Friday next he "would bid him battle, if the ſaid King would ſtay ſo long in Eng-"land, and accept it.* The Lord Thomas, his ſon, alſo re-"quired Rouge-Croix, to certify the King of his journey by "ſea, and that, *becauſe he could meet no Scotch ſhips there, he "thought fit to land, that he might juſtify Andrew Barton's death; "and as he looked for no mercy from his enemies, ſo he would ſpare "none but the King only, if he came to his hands. And, to make "all this good, that he would be in the van-guard of the battle.* "This meſſage was delivered to James IV. the 6th of September, "who received it very gladly; and as he was a Prince of great "courage, aſſures the Earl, *That he did ſo much deſire to encounter "him, that though he had been at Edinburgh, he would have left "all buſineſs for that purpoſe: and therefore wiſhed the Earl to "reſt aſſured, he would not fail to abide battle the day named,*

[o] Compleat Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 17, 18.

"*which*

" *which was Friday.* Hereupon the Earl advancing, came within " three miles of Flodden; but, perceiving that the King ſtill " kept upon the hill, which was unapproachable, he ſent Rouge-" Croix again, with a letter ſubſcribed by himſelf, his ſon the " Lord Admiral, and divers other Noblemen and Knights, " where, in reſpectful terms, they provoked him to deſcend " from his fortifications, and fight in a large plain called *Milfield* " (which lay between them) upon Friday following; alledging, " for this purpoſe, the promiſe they received from his Grace here-" tofore. But no ſatisfactory anſwer being given, the Earl re-" moved his army, that he might cut off their victuals, and " conſequently draw them down. King James thereupon firing " his huts, diſlodges covertly by the benefit of the ſmoak, and, " keeping ſtill on the higher ground, at laſt commands a ſtay. " On which the Earl traverſed ſome bogs and marſhes, till he " found the aſcent not very ſteep, and then encouraged his men " to fight. This done, he marcheth up, committing the van-" guard to his two ſons, the Lord Thomas Howard, and Sir " Edmund Howard; the main body he led himſelf; and Sir " Edward Stanley had the rear. The Lord Dacres, with his " horſe, was appointed as a reſerve on all occaſions. The " King of Scots obſerving this well, and judging that it was not " without much diſadvantage that the Engliſh came to fight, " exhorts his men to behave themſelves like brave ſoldiers, and " thereupon joins battle. Sir Edmund Howard, at firſt, was " in ſome diſtreſs, by the ſingular valour of the Earls of " Lennox and Argyle; but the Lord Dacres, and one Heron, " coming to his ſuccour, the fight was renewed: the Lord " Thomas Howard purſued his point better; yet found a brave " oppoſition from the Earls of Crawford and Montroſe. The " King's battle, and the Earl's, likewiſe maintained together " a long and ſharp fight, till Sir Edward Stanley, by force of " archers, conſtrained the Scots to deſcend the hill, who, for " avoiding the ſtorm of arrows, opened their ranks, and there-" in gave the firſt overtures of victory. The King, perceiving " the diſorder, redoubled his courage, inſomuch, that our " writers confeſs, he had almoſt overthrown the Earl's ſtandards. " But the Lord Thomas Howard, and Sir Edward Stanley, " who had diſcomfited their oppoſites, coming to their ſuccours, " and the Lord Dacres alſo flying in with his horſe, the Scots " were ſo hardly put to it, that, for their laſt defence, they " caſt themſelves into a ring, doing all that valiant men could " do to defend themſelves. And the King preſſing on ſtill, was " at laſt killed on the place. The Scotch writers ſay, it was " one Elphinſtone, who, wearing the ſame arms the King did, " was taken for him, affirming further, that the King fled over " the river Tweed, and was there ſlaughtered. The fight

" continuing three hours, made the event doubtful, and the " execution great. One Archbiſhop, two Biſhops, and four " Abbots, on the Scots ſide, were ſlain there, and about 10,000 " others. On our ſide (ſays Polydore) there died about 5000; " others ſay fewer. The next morning the body, ſuppoſed " for the King's (and ſo acknowledged by divers of both na- " tions) was found amongſt the dead, having received a mortal " wound with an arrow, and another with a bill. The Earl " took all their ordnance, and particularly ſeven fair culverins, " called the *Seven Siſters.*"

When the King took leave of his Queen, he [p] commanded the Earl of Surry to draw towards the North, fearing the Scots would invade it in his abſence, and conſtituted him Lieutenant of all the north parts, impowering him to raiſe all men able to bear arms in the counties of Cheſter, Lancaſter, Durham, Northumberland, Weſtmoreland, and Cumberland [q]. And when the King took ſhip at Dover, he took the Earl by the hand, ſaying, *My Lord, I truſt not the Scots, therefore I pray you be not negligent.* To which the Earl replied, *I ſhall ſo do my duty, that your Grace ſhall find me diligent, and to fulfil your will ſhall be my gladneſs.* Hall, who went over with the King, ſays, the Earl could ſcarcely ſpeak, when he took his leave, he was ſo concerned at being left behind; and ſaid to ſome that were about him: *Sorry ſhould he be, if he did not ſee the King of Scots, that was the cauſe of his abiding behind, and if ever they met, he ſhould do that in him lieth to make him as ſorry, or die.* From Dover (ſays my Author) the Earl came to London, and attended on the Queen, comfort- ing her the beſt he could; and ſhortly ſent for his gentlemen and tenants, 500 able men, which he muſtered before Sir Thomas Lovel, July 21; and the next day rode through London north- ward, and came to Doncaſter; and, perceiving the Scots in- tended war, he came to Pomfret the 1ſt of Auguſt, where he had ſummoned the noblemen and gentlemen of the counties he had in charge, to meet him, and certify him what number of able men, horſed and armed, they could raiſe at an hour's warning to attend him, and laid poſts every way to advertiſe them. He ſent to the Captain of Norham, certifying him, that, if he thought the caſtle to be in any danger, he would be ready to relieve him. Who thereupon [r] wrote to the Earl, *thanking him, and praying God, that the King of Scots would come with his puiſſance, for he would keep him in play, till the King of England came out of France.* But the King of Scots coming be- fore it, Auguſt 22, raſed the walls with his great ordnance, and made aſſaults for three days together, and the Captain valiantly defended it; but vainly ſpent ſo much of his ammunition, that at laſt he was in want, and on the 6th day was compelled to yield it

[p] Hall's Chronicle, folio 25. [q] Ibid. folio 27. [r] Ibid. folio 37. b.

to

to the mercy of the Scots King. The Earl of Surry, on the firſt tidings of the attack[s], ſummoned all in the counties, he had in charge, to meet him at Newcaſtle, September 1. The further particulars I have already related; and I ſhall now only recite[t], that the battle was fought on September 9, 1513, and that, beſide the Archbiſhop of St. Andrew's, and the clergy before mentioned, twelve Earls were ſlain, fourteen Lords, beſides Knights and Gentlemen. And when the body of the King of Scots was found, and brought to Berwick, the Earl ſhewed it to Sir William Scot, his Majeſty's Chancellor, and Sir John Forman, his Serjeant-Porter, who, at firſt ſight, knew him, and made great lamentation, having divers wounds, and in eſpecial, one with an arrow, and another with a bill[u]. The Earl, after ſecuring the quiet of the North, returned to the Queen at Richmond, bringing the dead body of the King with him, which was buried at Sheen in Surry. Hall, who was preſent with the King before Tournay, recites, that, September 25, the King received the gauntlet, with letters of the Earl of Surry, and highly praiſed the Earl, and the Lord Admiral his ſon, and all that were in that valiant enterprize. But that the King had a ſecret letter of the Cheſhiremens flying from Sir Edmund Howard, the Earl's ſon, which cauſed heart-burning, but the King would have no man be diſpraiſed. The next day, great fires were made in token of victory and triumph; and John Fiſher, Biſhop of Rocheſter, made a ſermon in a tent of cloth of gold that was ſet up, ſhewing the death of the King of Scots, &c.

When the King returned to his palace at Richmond, October 24, he was not unmindful of the ſervices of the Earl[x], and thoſe who ſerved under him in that memorable battle; and wrote to them letters, with ſuch favourable expreſſions, that every man thought himſelf well rewarded. And the Earl had a ſpecial grant, from the King[y], to himſelf, and the heirs male of his body, of an honourable augmentation of his arms, to bear on the bend thereof, the upper part of a Red Lion (depicted as the arms of Scotland are) pierced through the mouth with an arrow. And the King had ſuch a ſenſe of his great ſervices, that, on Februrary 1 next enſuing, he[z] advanced him to the honour and dignity of Duke of Norfolk; which title (as expreſſed in the patent) John his father, deriving his deſcent (through the heirs female of Mowbray and Segrave) from Thomas of Brotherton, ſon to King Edward I. did enjoy. The ceremony of his creation[a] was performed at Lambeth the day following. And, by other letters patent[b], bearing the ſame date (February 1) had a

[s] Hall's Chronicle, folio 38. [t] Ibid. folio 43. b. 44. [u] Ibid. folio 44. [x] Ibid. folio 46. [y] Pat. 5 Henry VIII. p. 2. [z] Pat. 5 Henry VIII. m. 18. [a] Hall, folio 46. [b] Pat. ut ſupra.

grant,

grant, in ſpecial tail, of the manors of Acton-Burnel, Holgat, Abeton, Millenchop, Langdon, Chatwall, Smithcote, Wolſtanton, Uppington, and Ruſhbury, in com. Salop; Solihull, in com. Warw. Wolverhampton, in com. Staff. Birehurſt, and Upton-Lovel, in com. Wilts; Erdeſcote, in com. Berks; Honneſdon, Eſtwike, Barley, and Hide, in com. Hertf. Kentcote, and Kerdwike, in com. Oxon. Eſt-Wickham, in com. Kanc. the caſtles of Bolſover and Horeſton, and manor of Horſley, in com. Derb. the manors of Clipſton, Limby, Mansfield-Woodhouſe, and Sutton-in-Aſhfield, in com. Notting. To be held by the ſervice of one Knight's fee.

On March 2 following, he had [c] a new patent (by the title of Duke of Norfolk) for the office of Lord Treaſurer of England. And, on July 30, 6 Henry VIII. the Princeſs Mary, the King's ſiſter, having, in the preſence of this Thomas Duke of Norfolk, and others, publickly [d] declared, "That, although "articles of marriage had been agreed on between herſelf and "Charles Prince of Caſtile; nevertheleſs, underſtanding that "the Prince had not obſerved, on his part, ſeveral of the arti"cles, and, among others, had not, within forty days, after "he had arrived at fourteen years of age, ſent his proxy to "eſpouſe her, &c. Wherefore ſhe declared, ſhe never bent "her affections towards him, conſidering his tender years, and "was willing to go back from the ſaid contract. And with"out any deceit, impulſe, or fear, renounces the ſame; and, "in word and mind, declares herſelf at liberty. Therefore "deſires the ſaid Nobles to ſignify the ſame to her brother, the "King of England, with her deſire that he would conſent "thereto."

On Auguſt 2 following, 1514, 6 Henry VIII. the King appointed his Grace [e] to treat with Lewis XII. of France, or thoſe deputed by him, about peace, free trade; and more eſpecially, about renewing the peace lately concluded between Charles VIII. late King of France, and Henry late King of England; as alſo touching the treaty of peace concluded at London, and about the ratification of the ſame. And a peace and alliance was concluded between both Kings [f], wherein it is recited, "That King Lewis, for the more effectually keeping "the ſame, had deſired the King's ſiſter, Mary, in marriage. "Therefore he commiſſions the ſaid Duke of Norfolk, Thomas "Wolſey, Biſhop of Lincoln, and Richard Fox, Biſhop of "Wincheſter, to treat about the ſaid marriage with the French "King, or thoſe deputed by him;" which commiſſion alſo bears date Auguſt 2, 1514. And on the concluſion of the peace, Lewis of Orleans, Duke of Longueville [g], who had

[c] Pat. 5 Henry VIII. [d] Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 409, & ſeq. [e] Rymer, ibid. p. 422. [f] Ibid. p. 426. [g] Hall, folio 47. b.

been

been taken at the battle of Spurs, 1513, was ſet at liberty, paying his ranſom; and at Greenwich, Auguſt 13, 1514, 6 Hen. VIII. as proxy to Lewis King of France, married the Princeſs Mary, in the preſence of the Duke of Norfolk, and others of the Engliſh Nobility, and the deputies of the French King.

When the King, her brother, had prepared all things for her conveyance to France, he, with his Queen, accompanied her, about the middle of September, to Dover; and there ſtaid ſome time, the wind being very high; ſo that a ſhip of the King's, called the Lubeck, driven a-ſhore before Sandgate, was there ſhipwrecked; and of 600 men, 300, with great difficulty, eſcaped, and the moſt of them hurt with the wreck. On the weather clearing up, the King brought her to the ſea-ſide; and, committing her to the care of the Duke of Norfolk [h], who was accompanied by his ſon, the Earl of Surry, the Marquis of Dorſet, and other Nobles, embarked October 2, about four in the morning. But when they had ſailed about a quarter of the ſea over, the wind roſe again ſo high, that it ſevered the ſhips; and the veſſel in which the Queen was, with the Duke of Norfolk, with great difficulty got into Boulogne; when Sir Chriſtopher Garneys jumping into the water, took her in his arms, and carried her to land. On the feaſt of St. Dennis, King Lewis married her in the great church of Abbeville. Next day, October 10, all the Engliſh, who had been her ſervants, except a few that were to wait on her, were diſcharged, and the Engliſh Lords, having had rewards from the French King, took their leave of the Queen, and returned. The Duke of Norfolk [i] had in his retinue 100 horſemen well accoutred, and was allowed by the King 5l. a day towards defraying his expences; and the Earl of Surry, his ſon, had in his retinue 56 horſe, and was allowed 3l. 6s. 8d. for his expences.

In 7 Hen. VIII. [k] obſerving that the King's coffers were much exhauſted, by his wars and triumphs; and not finding it eaſy to ſupply thoſe vaſt expences, which (in pageants, and other devices) increaſed daily, he wiſely withdrew himſelf. But upon an inſurrection of the London tradeſmen and apprentices, on May 1, 1517 (commonly called *Evil May-Day*) his preſence was judged neceſſary to quell that riot, excited by foreigners trading in the city at an under-rate; and was aſſiſted by his ſon, the Earl of Surry, and George Talbot, Earl of Shrewſbury. In 1521, 13 Henry VIII. 13 Maii, he performed the office [l] of Lord High-Steward on the trial of Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham; and gave ſentence of Death on him, whereat he was ſo much concerned, as to ſhed tears. He made earneſt

[h] Hall, folio 48. [i] MS. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis, Arm. Gart. Reg. Armor. Not. G. XI, p. 197. [k] Herbert's Hiſtory of Henry VIII. p. 58. [l] Herbert, p. 111.

ſuit

ſuit to King Henry VIII. at Richmond, that he [m] might, in reſpect of his great age, reſign his office of Lord Treaſurer of England. The King was unwilling to part with ſo able a miniſter, but his importunity at length prevailing, he inſtantly, on receiving the ſtaff from the father, told him he would deliver it, where he ſhould think it beſt beſtowed; and then calling his ſon, the Earl of Surry, at that time at bowls on the Green, gave it him, December 4, 1522. The ſame year, 14 Hen. VIII. he obtained a grant, [n] in ſpecial tail, and to his ſon, Thomas Earl of Surry, of the manors of Wells, Shyringham-Stafford, Bannyngham, Warham, and Weveton, in com. Suff. with the advowſons of the churches; part of the poſſeſſions of the before ſpecified Edward Duke of Buckingham, attainted.

By his laſt will, bearing date May 31, 1520, 12 Hen. VIII. he [o] bequeathed his body to be buried in the church of the Priory of Thetford, in com. Norf. before the high-altar there; appointing, that his executors ſhould cauſe a tomb to be made, and ſet up directly, with the images of himſelf and Agnes his wife thereon, allowing for the charge thereof 133l. 6s. 8d. He alſo bequeathed to his ſon, and heir apparent, who ſhould be living at his deceaſe, his great hanged bed, paled with cloth of gold, white damaſk, and black velvet, broidered with theſe two letters, T and A; as alſo one ſuit of hangings of the ſtory of Hercules, made for the great chamber at Framlingham, in Suffolk. And departing this life [p] about 11 o'clock, on May 21, 1524 (16 Henry VIII.) at his ſaid caſtle of Framlingham, had burial, with great ſolemnity, in the Priory of Thetford, whence his bones were removed, at the diſſolution, to Framlingham. The deſcription on his monument at Thetford is defaced, but preſerved in Blomfield's Norfolk.

He married two wives [q]; firſt, Elizabeth, daughter and ſole heir to Sir Frederick Tilney, of Aſhwell-Thorpe in Norfolk, Knt. widow of Humphrey Bourchier, Knight of the Bath, and father of John Lord Berners, who married Catherine, daughter of John Howard, firſt Duke of Norfolk, and by her had Joan their ſole heir, who carried Aſhwell-Thorpe in marriage to the family of Knyvet, as before mentioned, in p. 62. Which Elizabeth, by her [r] laſt will, bearing date November 6, anno 1506 (22 Henry VII.) bequeathed her body to be interred in the Nuns choir of the Minoreſſes without Aldgate, in London, nigh unto the place where Anne Montgomerie lay buried: appointing that no more than 20 torches ſhould be uſed at her bu-

[m] MS. de Famil. Howard, D. 12. p. 192. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis, Arm ex Relat. Hen. nup. com. Northampton.
[n] Pat. 14 Henry VIII. p. 2. [o] Ex Regiſt. Bodfield, qu. 23. in Cur. Prærog. Cant. [p] Vincent's Add. to his Diſcovery of Brook's Errors, MS. p. 215. in Offic. Armor. [q] Vincent, ibid. [r] A. Deane, qu. 25.

rial,

rial, and month's minde. Alſo, that no dole, or money, ſhould be given at either of thoſe ſolemnities; but, inſtead thereof, 100 marks to be diſtributed to poor folks, viz. to every poor man and woman in the pariſhes of Whitechapel and Hackney 7d.

By the ſaid Elizabeth, he had iſſue [s] eight ſons; 1. Thomas, created Earl of Surry in his life-time; 2. Lord Edward Howard, Knight of the Garter; 3. Lord Edmund; 4. Lord John, a Knight, who died without iſſue, as did the other four, viz. Henry, who died in 1501, Charles in 1512, Henry, ſeventh ſon, in 1513, and Richard, who died on March 27, 1517, and was buried at Lambeth: alſo two daughters; 1. Elizabeth, married to Thomas Viſcount Rochford (after Earl of Wiltſhire and Ormond) and mother to Queen Anne Boleyn; and 2. Muriel, wedded, firſt, to John Grey, Viſcount Liſle; afterwards to Sir Thomas Knevet, of Bokenham-caſtle, in com. Norf. Knt. of the Bath.

To his ſecond he wedded [t] Agnes, daughter of Hugh Tilney [u], and ſiſter and heir to Sir Philip Tilney, of Boſton, in com. Linc. Knt. by whom he had iſſue Lord William, anceſtor of the extinct Earls of Nottingham, and of the preſent Earl of Effingham, of whom I ſhall hereafter treat. 2. Sir Thomas, who, aiming at a match with the Lady Margaret Douglas (daughter to Margaret Queen of Scots, by her huſband, Archibald Earl of Angus) niece to King Henry VIII. was attainted of treaſon [x], on ſuſpicion of his aſpiring to the Crown, A. D. 1536; and departing this life [y] in the Tower of London, November 1 that year, was buried [z] at Thetford. And four daughters [a], Anne, married to John Vere, Earl of Oxford; Dorothy, to Edward Stanley, Earl of Derby; Elizabeth, to Henry Ratcliff, Earl of Suſſex; and Catherine, firſt to Sir Rheſe ap-Thomas, Knight of the Garter, and, ſecondly, to Sir Henry Daubeney, Earl of Bridgewater, who died April 8, 1548, without iſſue.

Lord Edward, the ſecond ſon of the Duke, by his firſt wife, ſignalized himſelf in ſeveral expeditions. In 7 Henry VII. he ſerved in Flanders [b] on the behalf of Maximilian, the Emperor, againſt the French; and, in 1497, 13 Henry VII. being with his father in that expedition into Scotland [c], he then had the honour of knighthood conferred on him. In 1509, 1 Hen. VIII. 20 Maii, having before manifeſted his valour, he was made the King's Standard-bearer [d] within the realm of England, and elſewhere, for life, with the fee of 20l. *per annum*, to commence from the firſt day of the King's reign.

[s] Ex ſtemmate. [t] Ibid. [u] Ibid. in MS. Famil. Howard, D. 12, in Bibl. J. Anſtis. [x] Journal of Parliament, 28 Henry VIII. [y] Goodw. p. 159. [z] Stow's Annals. [a] Cat. of Nob. ut ſupra. [b] Polyd. Virg. p. 584. [c] Jekil's Catalogue of Knights, MS. p. 170, penes meipſ. [d] Rymer, tom. xiii. p. 251.

And

And Sir Andrew Barton, a Scottiſh man, and pirate, infeſting the ſeas, "the King ordered the two ſons of Thomas Earl "of Surry (as recited [e] by Lord Herbert, in his Life of Henry "VIII.) to go in queſt of them. Edward, the younger, in "one ſhip; and Thomas, the elder, in another; who, coming "up with the pirate's ſhips, gave them ſeveral broad-ſides, "but were warmly received: the obſtinate pirate (though ſo "grievouſly wounded that he died on the ſpot) encouraging his "men with his whiſtle, even to his laſt breath. At length the "Engliſh prevailed, took their ſhips, and brought them (toge-"ther with the men that remained) and preſented them to the "King, who, upon their ſubmiſſion, graciouſly pardoned them, "ſo that they would depart out of his kingdom in twenty days."

On April 7, 1512, 3 Henry VIII. the King, in conſideration (as the patent expreſſeth it) of his loyalty, wiſdom, valour, induſtry, experience, and integrity, [f] conſtituted him Admiral, Captain, Commander in chief, and Leader of all his ſhips, Captains, and others, to be employed in the ſervice of the Pope, for the defence of the Chriſtian religion, with power to reward the meritorious with Knighthood. And the next day, by indenture, he was to ſerve the King as Admiral and Commander of the ſhips, with 3000 forces, to be employed in the Pope's ſervice, beſides 700 mariners and gunners, in the ſhip called the Regent. The ſaid Admiral to be allowed 10s. a day, each Captain 1s. 6d. a day, and every ſoldier, mariner, and gunner, 5s. a month for wages; and as much for victuals, accounting 28 days to the month. He was alſo to have 18 ſhips under his command of ſeveral burdens, viz. from 1000 to 120 tons. The year after, 4 Henry VIII. 19 Martii, he was [g] conſtituted Admiral of England, Wales, Ireland, Normandy, Gaſcoine, and Aquitaine; at which time he convoyed the Marquis of Dorſet into Spain [h], in aid of the Emperor Ferdinand againſt the French: and having cleared the ſeas from the ſhips of the enemy, landed in Britany, marched ſeven miles into the country, burnt ſome towns, and brought away rich ſpoils. After which, he put his men on ſhore at Conquet, and other places, where the French, being ſtill worſted, deſired a parley; wherein they begged him to leave this cruel warring on them, tending only to burning of villages, and ranſacking them [i]. To which he replied, he was not to take his directions from them; and that it was the part of brave Gentlemen to defend their country, and not ſhamefully to ſue for mercy. After which, entertaining them with a banquet in his ſhip, he diſmiſſed them, and returned home.

[e] Kennet's Complete Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 7. [f] Rymer, tom. xiii. p. 326. [g] Pat. 4 Henry VIII. p. 2. [h] Herbert's Life of Henry VIII. p. 25. [i] Ibid.

The French, alarmed by his proceedings, equipped a powerful navy, under Porſncoguire, called Pierce Morgan by ſome Engliſh Authors; and Admiral Howard, having received a ſtrong reinforcement, the two fleets met in the Channel, where a furious engagement enſued; in which the Regent, commanded by Sir Thomas Knevet, and the Cordeliere, Porſncoguire's ſhip, grappled, and the magazine of the latter taking fire, the crews of both veſſels were blown up, to the amount of ſixteen hundred brave men. This affecting ſcene put a ſtop to the battle; and the two navies retired to their reſpective ports.

In the beginning of the year 1513 (4 Hen. VIII.) the King, intending a further war with France, ſent his fleet, conſiſting of 42 ſail (beſides barques) to clear the ſeas of his enemies. Whereupon the French got one Pregent, a Knight of Rhodes, with four galleys, to paſs the Streights, and come into Britany, to join divers large ſhips within the haven of Breſt. On which the Admiral, reſolving to attempt them, at length entered the haven where the French fleet lay, under the defence of platforms raiſed on the land, beſides fireſhips. But before he engaged them, the Lord Admiral advertiſed the King thereof; adviſing him to come in perſon to have the glory of the action; which was not well taken by the King, who wrote ſharply to him, with command to do his duty. Whereof he grew ſo apprehenſive, that he hazarded his own perſon too raſhly; firſt ſending out his boats, to make a ſhew of landing; and the French flocking to the ſhore, to the number of 10,000; whereas the Engliſh in thoſe boats were not above 1500; and, landing over-againſt Breſt, burnt the country in ſight of the caſtle, thinking not to do more till victuals came. But ſoon after ſix galleys of the enemies, and two foiſts, under Pregent, putting in near Conquet, (a little below Breſt) this our Admiral, on notice thereof, attended with five choice Captains (Lord Ferrers, Sir Thomas Cheney, Sir John Wallop, Sir Henry Shireburn, and Sir William Sidney) reſolved to board them; and entering into one of thoſe two galleys the Engliſh had only there, did board that galley, in which Pregent was, with his ſword and target, one Carroz, a Spaniſh Cavalier, and ſeventeen Engliſh attending him; and commanding his own galley to be grappled to the enemy's, reſolved to die, or to conquer. But, whether the French hewed in ſunder the cable, or the mariners let it ſlip for fear of the ordnance, the Engliſh galley fell off; ſo that this noble perſon was left in the hands of his enemies: of whom there could no other account be given, by his own men, than that, when he was paſt all hopes of recovering his galley, he took his whiſtle from his neck (the badge of his office of Admiral*) and threw it into the ſea: and the French Admiral, being ſent to, anſwered,

* Anſtis's Regiſter of the Garter, vol. ii. folio 121.

they

they had none but one mariner, who told him, that a perſon, whom they bore over-board with their pikes, was their Admiral. He was thus unhappily loſt, April 25, 1513, 5 Hen. VIII. before he could have notice (as obſerved by [l] Mr. Anſtis) that he had been elected into the ſociety of the moſt noble order of the Garter, with George Nevil, Lord Abergavenny, and Sir Charles Brandon. The King of Scots, in a letter to King Henry VIII. bearing date May 24, 1513, bemoans his death in theſe words [m]: "And ſurely, dereſt brother, we think more loſſe is to you of "the late Admiral, who deſſed to his great honour than the ad-"vantage might have bin of winning all the French galleys—— "Which valiant Knight, and others that periſhed, had bin bet-"ter imployed on the enemies of Chriſten religion." By his will, made in 1512 [n], he bequeathed to Sir Charles Brandon (after Duke of Suffolk) the roope of bowed Nobles, that he wore his great whiſtle by; and to the King's Grace his great whiſtle. He married Allice, daughter of William, and ſiſter and heir to Henry Lovel, Lord Morley, and widow of Sir William Parker, Knt. father of Sir Henry, Lord Morley, in her right; but died without iſſue.

Lord Edmund, third ſon of the Duke, was Marſhal of the horſe in the battle of Flodden-field, in 5 Henry VIII. And in 1520, 12 Henry VIII. on the famous interview which King Henry VIII. had with Francis I. of France, where all feats of arms were performed between Ardres and Guiſnes for 30 days [o]; was one of the challengers on the part of England. His Lordſhip alſo diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the expedition which his elder brother made againſt the Scots, A. D. 1523. He firſt married Joyce [p], daughter and coheir to Sir Richard Culpeper, of Oxenheath and Hollingburn in Kent, Knt. by whom he had [q] iſſue three ſons; Henry, who died young; Sir George Howard, knighted in Scotland, 1 Edw. VI. by Edward Duke of Somerſet; and Sir Charles, ſlain in France, who both died without iſſue. And five daughters; Margaret, married to Sir Thomas Arundel, of Wardour-caſtle, Wilts, Knt. grandfather to Thomas, the firſt Lord Arundel, of Wardour; Catherine, Queen of England, fifth wife to King Henry VIII. Mary, married to Edmund Trafford, of Trafford, in com. Lanc. Eſq; Joyce, to John Stanney, of the county of Huntingdon, Eſq; and Iſabel, to —— Baynton, Eſq; To his ſecond wife, he married Dorothy, daughter of Thomas Troyes, of Hampſhire, Eſq; but had no iſſue by her. Lord Edmund died March 19, 30 Henry VIII. being then Comptroller for Calais and its marches.

[l] Anſtis's Regiſter of the Garter, vol. i. p. 275. [m] Ibid. [n] Et Regiſt. Fettiplace, qu. 13. in Cur. Prerog. [o] Stow's Annals, p. 509.
[p] Vincent on Brook, p. 355. [q] Ibid.

I ſhall

I ſhall now proceed to treat of Thomas, the eldeſt ſon, and third of Norfolk. In 2 Henry VIII. at a chapter held at Greenwich, he was [t], with Emanuel King of Portugal, Thomas Lord Delawarr, and Sir Henry Marney, elected Knight of the moſt noble order of the Garter; and inſtalled on April 27 that year. In 3 Hen. VIII. he commanded [u] one of thoſe ſhips, which fought with and took that famous pirate, Sir Andrew Barton, Knt. And accompanied [x] Thomas, Marquis of Dorſet, into Spain, in order to join with the King of that realm againſt the French, and to invade Guyen; and, when there, the Marquis falling ſick, had [y] the command of the Engliſh army. In 5 Hen. VIII. on the death of the Lord Edward, his brother, in that attempt at Breſt [z], he was conſtituted Lord Admiral in his ſtead. Whereupon, bringing the fleet out of harbour, he ſo ſcoured the ſeas [a], as not a fiſher-boat of the French durſt adventure forth. At length landing in Witſand-bay, he ranſacked all the country thereabouts, and, without reſiſtance, returned ſafe to his ſhips. On that invaſion [b] of King James IV. of Scotland, 1513, he landed a veteran troop of 5000 men, of tried valour, and haughty ſpirits, in regard of their former naval victories obtained under his command; and, as already mentioned, ſignalized himſelf by his conduct at the battle of Flodden [c]. The King therefore, in conſideration of his valour and ſervice, on Feb. 1, 1513-14, (the day of his father's advancement to the title of the Duke of Norfolk) [d] created him Earl of Surry. And in the year enſuing, 6 Henry VIII. on ſome diſpute in parliament concerning his place there, it was declared, that he ſhould ſit according to his creation, and not as a Duke's eldeſt ſon; ſaving to him, out of parliament, his precedence, according to his dignity and honour: alſo, if, on ſearch of records, it ſhould after be found, that an higher place in parliament did, of right, belong to him, it ſhould be allowed.

In 12 Henry VIII. he was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, that Cardinal Wolſey might the more eaſily accompliſh the ruin of the Duke of Buckingham, his Lordſhip's father-in-law: and landed there [e] the Wedneſday before Whitſuntide, with divers Gentlemen, who had been of the garriſon of Tournay, and 100 yeomen of the King's guard, with 1000 others, horſe and foot. On Whitſunday he was alarmed, that O Neal had invaded Meath with 4000 horſe, and 12,000 foot: whereupon he prepared himſelf to encounter the rebel, not doubting but that his victory would be a happy omen of his future go-

[t] Anſtis's Regiſter of the Garter, vol. i. p. 273, 274. [u] Herbert, præd. p. 7. [x] Ibid. p. 9. [y] Ibid. p. 10. [z] Pat. 5 Henry VIII. p. 1. [a] Godwin's Annals, p. 12, 13. [b] Ibid. p. 19, 20. [c] Herbert, ut ſupra, p. 18. [d] Pat. 5 Henry VIII. p. 2. m. 11. [e] Cox's Hiſtory of Ireland, p. 208, & ſeq. and Stow's Annals, p. 509.

vernment; and therefore adding, to his ſmall army, ſuch militia as he could get on ſo ſhort warning, he marched to Slane. On which O Neal, frightened with the name of the Earl of Surry, retired ſo faſt, that the Lord Lieutenant could neither find him, or his army. But, ſoon after, O Neal ſent to him, to implore pardon, which was granted him, on promiſe of future obedience.

In October, the King wrote to the Lord Lieutenant, that he never expected a thorough reformation in Ireland, till all the Iriſh were ameſnable to law, and have the benefit of it: and the King ſent him a commiſſion of martial law, with power of conferring knighthood, and to knight O Neal, and other Iriſh Potentates. Alſo ordered him to prevail with them (if poſſible) to viſit the King and Court of England, in hopes to inure them to civility, and a regularity in their living. He was alſo ordered to propoſe a match between the Earl of Ormond's ſon, and Sir Thomas Bullen's daughter.

Being reſolved to make the army ſerviceable, he diſbanded Sir John Bulmer's troop for their cowardice [d]; and, in October 1521, drove the Birns, who had roſe in rebellion from place to place, into their faſtneſſes and lurking holes, which gave quiet to the reſt of the Engliſh pale. And calling a parliament, it met at Dublin, June 4, 1521, and enacted many good laws [e]. He took all precautions for ſubduing the Iriſh, but it was harder to find the enemy, than conquer them. O More's army, that was formidable to the pale, were forced, by him, to divide in ſmall parties, ſculking in thick woods, and deep bogs [f]. And whilſt the Lord Lieutenant marched through theſe wilderneſſes, a rebel, that lay in ambuſh on the ſide of a wood, ſhot at him, and ſtruck the vizor off his helmet without further hurt to him. With difficulty they found him out, and he was hewn to pieces, for he would not yield. Whatever the rebels reſolved, or bragged on beforehand, when it came to the trial, their hearts failed them; the name of Surry being ſo terrible, that the victories he obtained over them, were almoſt without blows; and he made great ſlaughter in the purſuit of them [g]. At length the Lord Lieutenant, being indiſpoſed in health, and weary of the government, he obtained the King's leave to return to England in Jan. 1521-2, and left there a good character of his conduct and valour, having governed ſo acceptably, that he gained the love of all the civil people of that country. On May 26, he landed the Emperor, Charles V. at Dover, and was conſtituted Admiral of all his dominions. Having fitted [h] the fleets of England and Flanders, he debarked near Morleix in Britany, forced the town, and burnt it; and having waſted the country thereabouts, went

[d] Cox's Hiſtory, p. 210. [e] Ibid. [f] Ibid. p. 211. [g] Ibid. p. 212, 213.
[h] Godwin, p. 56.

into

into Picardy, to join with the Imperialiſts, after he had conveyed the Emperor to Spain. He then laid ſiege [i] to Heſding; but the winter approaching, he quitted [k] it again. And, having burnt Marquiſe, and ſome other places, near the Engliſh pale, returned. In this 14th year of King Henry VIII. December 4, he was conſtituted [l] Lord Treaſurer, as before related; and, on February 6 enſuing, was made [m] General of the King's whole army, to march againſt the Scots. Whilſt he was in that ſervice, he received letters, which contain memorable particulars not hitherto known; and being extracted by the late John Anſtis, Eſq; and communicated to me, I think it not improper to inſert them [n].

In 1523, 15 Hen. VIII. a commiſſion was granted to Thomas Earl of Surry, Treaſurer and Admiral of England, and alſo the King's Lieutenant in the North, for levying of men, if the Duke of Albany ſhould invade England; and about September 23, 1523, he entered Scotland, burnt the corn, ſpoiled the country, and overthrew the town and fortreſs of Jedworth; which ſervice the Cardinal (Wolſey) informs him was acceptable to the King, dated at the More, October 1, 1523. Alſo the King, and Cardinal, by their letters to the Earl, dated at Hampton-Court, October 7, commends the Earl's ſervice at Jedworth, and much applauds his policy, in cutting the fords, thereby to impede the Scots from ſudden incurſions; and the King promiſed to give him leave to return home. October 3 he had another letter from the Cardinal, dated at Hampton-Court, adviſing him, that the Earl of Angus was come to the borders, and directeth the Earl to ſtay him there, and not permit him to enter Scotland, until the Queen his wife, and the Earl of Arran, conſent; the which the Earl of Surry muſt labour by all means to bring to paſs. Alſo the next day, by letter dated at Whitehall, the Cardinal highly commends the Earl of Surry for his good ſervice, and earneſtly encourageth him to proceed in his enterprize. And, by the ſame letter, it ſeemed, that he expected the Duke of Albany's preſent invaſion of England, and the Earl ready to join battle with him, being aſſiſted [o] with the Marquis of Dorſet, the Earl of Northumberland, and Lord Edmund Howard his brother, ſent unto him by the King; adverting further, that the French King was the only cauſe of all the diſturbances in Chriſtendom. And, on October 19, from Whitehall, informs him of a report (but not believed) that the French King would ſend Richard de la Pole into Scotland with 4000 Almains, with intention to invade England, adviſing

[i] Stow's Annals, p. 517. [k] Herbert, ut ſupra, p. 132. [l] Pat. 14 Henry VIII. p. 1. [m] Pat. ibid. p. 1. [n] Notes concerning Thomas Duke of Norfolk, in MS. Famil. de Howard, D. 12. p. 210, 211. [o] Herbert's Life of Henry VIII. in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 56.

him to divide his army. Alſo, the 23d following, adviſes him, that the Duke of Albany ſeeketh peace upon policy, and directs the Earl of Surry to refuſe the ſame, except on ſpecial conditions; the Duke pretending to be next heir to the Crown of Scotland. And the King commendeth his ſervices, in the damages he had done to Scotland.

From Whitehall, November 5, the Cardinal informs him of the great diſlike the King had of the Scottiſh Queen's government; the governing by croſs courſes, only in regard to the Earl of Angus, her huſband, whom ſhe deadly hated. And on November 12, the Cardinal takes notice of the Earl of Surry's forwardneſs to give the Duke of Albany battle, he lying at the ſiege of Warke-caſtle, from whence, with a great power of French and Scots, the Earl cauſed him to fly ſhamefully, without one ſtroke. And the Earl had leave to come to London, leaving the Lord Dacres General-Warden for the time.

Brian Tuke, Secretary to Cardinal Wolſey, writeth to the Earl of Surry, that the Cardinal is jealous of the Earl's writing to the King without his knowledge. The Earl at that inſtant ready to fight a battle. Hampton-Court, October 1, 1523. On the Earl's victory againſt the Scots, and the Duke of Albany, the Cardinal rejoiceth for his good ſpeed. London, November 8, 1523.

The Queen of Scots to the Earl of Surry, That none of the Lords of Scotland are ſure to their King but the Earl of Arran, and Lord Maxwell. She refuſeth to ſee the Biſhop of St. Andrew's among the Ambaſſadors; and deſireth them to keep her huſband, the Earl of Angus, out of Scotland. And, in another letter to him (then Duke of Norfolk) ſhe deſireth him to meet the Earl of Arran about a truce. But in no ſort will conſent with the coming of the Earl of Angus, her huſband. In one, October 6, ſhe profeſſeth great diſlike to the Earl of Angus, her huſband, and refuſeth to admit him into her company, with proteſtation to leave the King of England to his courſes, if he favoured her huſband. And the like in divers other letters. The Earl of Surry, whilſt in Scotland, alſo wrote ſeveral letters. In one to Cardinal Wolſey, he informs him of the Earl of Angus being deſirous to paſs into Scotland, but that he ſtayed him, and, at his own requeſt, is permitted to go to London.

In another to the King, that the Earl of Angus challenges the King's word, and the Cardinal's oath, that he ſhould paſs into Scotland. On which he very reſpectfully counſels the King in diſcharge of his duty. Item, To the King of Scots, that the King, his maſter, had ſent him to the borders with men and money, only for his ſafety; and that this courſe was taken to draw Scotland and the Duke of Albany from France. Item, To the Queen of Scots, giving her good counſel, and perſuading a recon-

a reconciliation to her huſband, the Earl of Angus, whereto ſhe was not inclined. Berwick, Auguſt 12.

Item, To her, earneſtly ſoliciting her to ſend an embaſſy into England to obtain a peace, thereby to fruſtrate the Duke of Albany's expectation. Item, To her, ſharply reproving her, that ſhe did not deal ſincerely for the King of England, and that ſhe giveth credit to ungracious, light, fooliſh perſons; the Biſhop of Dunkeld having reported, that the King of England had divers falſe traitors about him. Item,

To her, that the King of England's pleaſure is, the Earl of Angus ſhould paſs into Scotland, on aſſurance given not to come in her privy-chamber, or meddle with her lands, or body, but at her pleaſure. His diſpoſition and perſonage much commended. The Biſhop of St. Andrew's doth practiſe the arrival of the Duke of Albany in Scotland. Item,

To Cardinal Wolſey on his meeting the Earl of Arran at Norham about a peace, and doubts he combines with the Biſhop of St. Andrew's. The Queen of Scots flexible, and declined from the King her brother's courſes. That ſhe is diſpoſed to licentiouſneſs, and wilful in her courſes; and not content with her huſband, entertains one Henry Stewart, the King's Carver, a goodly young man, brother to the Lord Evendale; then, and for that cauſe, wiſhes he was in the ſea without a boat. Item,

To the Cardinal, that Henry Stewart had, in his cuſtody, the great-ſeal, the privy-ſeal, the quarter-ſeal, and the ſignet of Scotland, and, at that time, exerciſed the office of Treaſurer; alſo ruled as he would, whereat the people grieved, and at the Queen of Scotland's ungodly life. The Duke deſireth to return home. Newcaſtle, September 19. Item,

To him, that the diſlike between the Queen of Scots and the Earl of Angus, her huſband, is the only cauſe of withholding Scotland to leave France, and adhere to England. He wiſhes them, or either of them, in Paradiſe; and complains much of the Queen's ſenſual humours.

Item, Declaring his meeting with certain Scottiſh Commanders for a truce for three months, and the ſeven articles by them propounded for a final peace to be concluded by their Ambaſſadors to come for that purpoſe into England. That they much complain of the Queen's bad government, and ill bringing up of the young King. Too much following the counſel of Henry Stewart, who ruled the whole realm by rounding in the Queen's lugs [i. e. *whiſpering in her ears.*] Item,

The Queen of Scots refuſeth her huſband, the Earl of Angus, coming into Scotland. She is only ruled by three counſellors, the light, unwiſe Earl of Arran; Thomas Hamilton, a light, learned man in the law; and Henry Stewart, moſt entirely in her favour.

Item, To the Cardinal, adviſing, that the Earl of Angus be permitted to paſs into Scotland. The Queen of Scots ungodly affection to Henry Stewart, is the cauſe of her not accepting of her huſband. That Thomas Hamilton being ſlain in running of a horſe, and laying dead before her, ſhe ſaid; There lieth the wiſdom, the truth, the good counſel, and experience of the Hamiltons. The Earl of Arran declined from her.

Item, The Queen of Scots fallen from the Engliſh faction in Scotland chiefly out of malice to her huſband, the Earl of Angus, whoſe power in Scotland is great; the Biſhop ſet at liberty. Item,

The Queen of Scots unconſtant, drawn from England by Henry Stewart, and the Earl of Arran, turned to the French faction. He adviſes the drawing off the Biſhop of St. Andrew's, Chancellor of Scotland, to a treaty, there to intercept him, and ſend him priſoner into England.

Theſe ſervices, before recited, were in his father's life-time. In 1524, 16 Henry VIII. his father being deceaſed, he had a ſpecial livery[p] of his lands, 16 Julii; and the 20th of the ſame month was again made General[q] of the army at that time raiſed to advance into Scotland[r] for ſetting of the young King of that realm free, whom the Duke of Albany (regent in his minority) had kept at Sterling; but his Majeſty was brought to Edinburgh, without the Duke's going to Scotland, and took upon himſelf the government. In 17 Henry VIII. he obtained a grant[s] in reverſion of the caſtle, honour, and manor of Folkingham in Lincolnſhire; as alſo of ſeveral other manors: and on Aug. 17, 1525, was conſtituted[t] one of the Commiſſioners for treating of peace at More in Hertfordſhire, with the French agents, their King, Francis I. being then priſoner at Madrid, having been taken at the battle of Pavia, on February 24, that year. Several commotions happening, about that time, by Cardinal Wolſey's iſſuing proclamations, in the King's name, for raiſing money without conſent of parliament, his Grnce was ſent, with the Duke of Suffolk, to try the Inſurgents of Suffolk, and acted with great moderation and lenity. He was alſo commiſſioned, on October 16, 1529, with that Nobleman to demand the great-ſeal from Wolſey, which the Prelate refuſed to deliver, alledging, that he held it by patent for life: but their Graces bringing a mandate, next day, ſigned by the King, the Cardinal ſubmitted, as alſo to another they brought under his Majeſty's hand, commanding him to retire to Eſher in Surry, one of his country ſeats. Next year, 21 Henry VIII. on[u] the fall of Wolſey, it being thought fit, by moſt of the great Lords, that

[p] Pat. 16 Henry VIII. p. 1. [q] Autog. in Bibl. Cotton. [r] Herbert, ut ſurpra, p. 1. [s] Pat. 17 Henry VIII. p. 2. [t] Rymer, tom. xiv. p. 119. [u] Stow's Annals, p. 552.

he

he ſhould be removed to ſome diſtance from the King; this Duke bade [x] Cromwell tell him, that it was fit he ſhould go to his charge at York (being Archbiſhop of that province:) and, after he ſaw that he made no haſte thither, he commanded Cromwell to tell him further, that, if he got not away, he would tear him with his teeth. On December 1, the ſame year, he was one of the Lords who ſubſcribed [y] the articles againſt that great Cardinal. And on the diſſolution [z] of the monaſtery of Felixton (alias Filcheſton) in com. Suff. in 22 Hen. VIII. by the authority of Pope Clement VII's bull, in order to the foundation of thoſe famous colleges in Oxford and Ipſwich, which Cardinal Wolſey firſt purpoſed; and that deſign failing by the Cardinal's fall, this Duke obtained a grant in fee of that religious houſe at Filcheſton, with all belonging thereto, as by the patent, bearing date April 7, 22 Henry VIII. appeareth.

About that time alſo he was one of the Peers, who ſubſcribed [a] the declaration, then ſent to the Pope, whereby they gave him a modeſt intimation, that the allowance of his Supremacy here would be endangered, if he did not comply with King Henry in the cauſe of his divorce from Queen Catherine. In October 1532, 24 Henry VIII. he attended [b] King Henry (among other of the Nobility) to Calais, and thence to Bologne, where Henry was moſt magnificently received by Francis I. King of France; and his Grace was then with the King elected Knights of the order of St. Michael. In January following, his Grace was one of the witneſſes to the King's marriage with Anne Boleyn.

In 24 Henry VIII. he obtained a grant [c], in fee, of the manors of Acton-Burnell, Holgat, Abbiton, Millenchop, Langdon, Chatwall, Smythcote, Woolſtanton, Uppyngton, and Ruſhbury, in com. Salop. with the advowſons of the churches thereunto belonging. And in 1533, 25 Henry VIII. (28 Maii) upon the ſurrender of Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, was conſtituted [d] Earl-Marſhal of England. And he was employed [e] (together with the Lord Rochford) to Francis I. of France, to attend him to Marſeilles, where the Pope and that King were to have an interview; but when he came into France, being informed of ſome ſteps taken at Rome very diſagreeable to his maſter's views, he was recalled; and ſoon afterwards preſided at the trial of Lord Dacres, for a ſuppoſed illicit correſpondence with the Scots.

In 27 Henry VIII. he was again ſent [f] into France, with the Biſhop of Ely, to treat with the Commiſſioners of King Francis, touching a revocation of that cenſure, which the Pope had given againſt King Henry for being divorced from Queen Catherine.

[x] Stow's Annals, p. 552. [y] Herbert, ut ſupra. [z] Pat. 22 Henry VIII. p. 1. [a] Ibid. [b] Stow's Annals, p. 560. [c] Pat. 24 Henry VIII. p. 2. [d] Pat. 25 Henry VIII. p. 2. [e] Herbert, ut ſupra. [f] Ibid.

In 28 Henry VIII. being then President of the North, he marched [g], with considerable forces, into Yorkshire, to the assistance of the Earl of Shrewsbury, for suppressing of the insurrection there, called *The Pilgrimage of Grace*, raised by the dissolution of the lesser monasteries the preceding year. In 31 Henry VIII. having purchased [h] from the Abbot and Convent of Sibton, in com. Suff. the scite of that religious house, and all the lands thereto belonging; he procured a special act in the parliament then held, that the same purchase should not be prejudicial to him. Which shews, that the King then resolved to unite the rest of the abbey-lands to the Crown.

In 32 Henry VIII. (January 29) he was constituted [i] Lieutenant-general of all the King's forces beyond Trent: and shortly after sent [k] Ambassador into France, to offer the assistance of King Henry for the recovery of Milan. In 1542, 34 Hen. VIII. September 1, being made [l] Captain-general of all the King's forces in the North, he entered [m], on October 21 following, Scotland with an army of 20,000 men, and wasted the Marches; there staying, without any offer of battle by the Scots, till the midst of November. In 36 Henry VIII. being made [n] Captain-general of the rear of the King's army, then designed for France; as also General of the whole, until the King's coming over; he was sent to [o] besiege Montrueil. Also, on the King's advance to Boulogne, he led [p] the vanguard of his army, which was clad in blue coats, guarded with red; having caps and hose party-coloured, and suitable.

But [q], after all these great and signal services, divers of the Nobility, who bore no good will to him, by reason he had used some expressions tending to their dishonour as new-raised men, took advantage of the King's weakness, and put jealousies into his head of some danger by his greatness (his own Lady's discontent towards him, not a little furthering it; she having been separated from him for more than four years before) he was suddenly apprehended, on Dec. 12, 1546, 38 Hen. VIII. and committed to the Tower; the King being so far incensed against him, through sinister suggestions, that he did not only give order [r] to seize his goods, but to advertise [s] his Ambassadors in foreign parts, that he and his son had conspired to take on them the government during his life; and, after his death, to get the Prince into their hands.

They were both attainted [t] by special bills in the parliament then held; and the warrant sent to the Lieutenant of the Tower for beheading the Duke, on January 28, 1546-7: [u] but the King

[g] Herbert. [h] Ibid. p. 445. [i] Pat. 32 Hen. VIII. p. 5. [k] Herb. ut supra. [l] Pat. 34 Henry VIII. p. 1. [m] Herb. ut supra, p. 483, &c. [n] Pat. 36 Hen. VIII. p. 8. [o] Godwin's Annals, p. 190. [p] Stow's Annals, p. 587. [q] Herbert, in History of England, vol. ii. p. 263. [r] Ibid. [s] Ibid. [t] Journals of Parliament. [u] Stow's Annals, p. 593.

dying

dying that day, the Executors of his Will did not chuſe, at that critical juncture, to put the order in execution.

Yet, notwithſtanding, ſo powerful were his enemies, in the beginning of King Edward the Sixth's reign, that, when pardon [x] was given by proclamation, to all perſons, for all crimes whatſoever, ſix only excepted, he [y] was the chief thereof, and remained priſoner in the Tower till Auguſt 3, 1553, the day Queen Mary made her triumphant entry into London: when, without any pardon or reſtitution, he was allowed to be Duke of Norfolk, and had his lands reſtored. He [z] was, on the 18th of that month, Lord High-Steward on the trial of John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland. As to the particulars laid to the charge of this Duke of Norfolk, though the act of attainder itſelf be not on record, the act of repeal, in the firſt year of Queen Mary, reciteth [a], *That there was no ſpecial matter in the act of attainder, but only general words of treaſon and conſpiracy: and that out of their care for the preſervation of the King and the Prince they paſſed it.* And this act of repeal further ſets forth, *That the only thing with which he ſtood charged, was for bearing of arms, which he and his anceſtors had borne within and without the kingdom, in the King's preſence, and ſight of his progenitors; which they might lawfully bear and give, as by good and ſubſtantial matter of record it did appear.* It alſo addeth, *That the King died after the date of the commiſſion: likewiſe, that he only empowered them to give his conſent, but did not give it himſelf; and that it did not appear by any record that they gave it.* Moreover, *That the King did not ſign the commiſſion with his own hand, his ſtamp being only ſet to it [by William Clark] and that not to the upper part, but to the nether part of it, contrary to the King's cuſtom.*

On the inſurrection of Sir Thomas Wyat [b], 1554, his Grace raiſed 200 horſe, and 600 foot, which he marched from London againſt him; and, in his way to Rocheſter, defeated Knevit, who was marching to join Wyat; but afterwards his forces being [c] wrought upon by Harper, a pretended deſerter, telling them, that Wyat's riſing was only for the preſervation of the nation, they abandoned him, and went over to Wyat.

On the ſuppreſſion of that rebellion, being more than eighty years of age, he retired to his ſeat at Kenning-hall in Norfolk; and by his laſt will and teſtament [d], dated July 18, 1554, ſecond of Queen Mary, and proved on November 8, orders his body to be buried in ſuch place and order, as ſhall be thought moſt convenient to his Executors, who were Stephen Gardiner, Biſhop of Wincheſter, Lord Chancellor, Nicholas Heath, Biſhop of

[x] Godwin, p. 112. [y] Life of Edward VI. by Sir John Hayward, p. 6.
[z] Burnet's Hiſtory of the Reformation, p. 243. [a] Dugdale's Additions to his Baronage, MS. penes meipſ. [b] Burnet's Hiſtory of the Reformation, p. 285.
[c] Ibid. [d] Ex Regiſt. vocat. Moors, qu. 14. in Cur. Prærog. Cant.

Worceſter,

Worceſter, the Lord Riche, Sir Robert Rocheſter, Comptroller of the Queen's houſhold, Sir Richard Morgan, Chief Juſtice of the Common-Pleas, Sir Richard Southwell, Knt. Sir Nicholas Hare, Knt. and Sir John Baker, Knt. He thus concludes, "And I moſt humbly beſeech the Queen's Highneſs, "my moſt gracious Sovereigne Ladye, by whoſe godlye cle-"mencye, and mercye, I was ſet at liberty, and delyvered from "my longe ymprisonment, to be ſuperviſour of this my will. "And I do geve to her Highneſs 100l." He died at Kenninghall, com. Norf. on Auguſt 25 next enſuing the date of his will, having ſeen the reigns of eight Engliſh Sovereigns. By inquiſition [e] taken after his death, March 31, 1 and 2 Philip and Mary, it appears, that he was poſſeſſed of the following manors, &c. viz. in the county of Norfolk, of Haneworth-Parva, Framlingham, Syſlond, Dykeſborough, Hopham, and the hundred of Laundiſh; the manors of Weſt-Walton, Walpole-Hitcham, Weſt-Rudham, Caſtleacre, Weſt-Barſham, Syſterne, Kempſton, Normanborough, Hellgaye, Bagthorpe, Heringſale, Great-Maſſingham, Lodden, and the advowſon of the church of Welles; the manors of Heringham, Stafford, Barmingham, Warham, Byſton, Eſt-Rudham, Weſt-Rudham, Barncet, Tatterford, Tatterſet, Titeſſale, Thorp-Market, Rolle, Wroxham, and Rectory; the rectories of Hallvergate, Salown, and Kenning-hall; the manors of Farsfield, Garboldiſham, and the ſcite of the monaſtery of Thetford; the rectories of Great-Framlingham, Porringlond, St. Mary's Hill, Watton, Hokham, and Wiſted; the rectory and advowſons of the Bleſſed Virgin Mary and St. Nicholas in Thetford, and the advowſons of the vicarages of the ſaid churches; the manors of St. Mary's Hill, Tottington, Gateſthorp, and 40s. 4d. rent out of the manor of Bodney, and the advowſon of the vicarages thereof; the manors of Halwyke, Norwyke-Sainton, Lynford, Langford, Croxton, Watton, alias Monks-Wyke in Watton, Kylverſton, Aſlacton, and their ſeveral rectories, and the advowſons of the vicarages of the ſeveral churches; the manors of Kenning-hall, Erſham, Fornſet, Southfeld, Shelfanger, Fryers, Sherwoods, Viſedelewes, ſcite of the monaſtery of Boylands, ſcite of the college of Ruſhworth, with the manor and rectory of Ruſhworth; the manors of Shadwele, Wynfarthinge, Haywoods, and lands called Howard's lands in Tilney; the hundred of Gylleroſſe, and half the hundred of Erſham; the rectories of Rowton, Caſtleacre, Walpole, Southweke, Wygen-hall, Methwold, Slewſham, Eſt-Barſham, Hitcham, Newton, and Toftres. The above liſt verifies the Duke's words, in calling his lands *good and ſtately geer* [f], when in a petition to Henry VIII.

[e] Cole's Eſch. lib. 2. p. 15, 16, 18. in Bibl. Harl.

[f] Burnet's Hiſtory of the Reformation, vol. ii. p. 6, 7.

after

after his attainder, he desired they might be settled upon the Prince of Wales; fearing that if they were bestowed among some of the King's favourites, as then intended, they would be totally alienated from his family. To all the said estates, Thomas his grandson, viz. son of Henry Earl of Surry, was found to be his heir, and of the age of eighteen years the 12th of March last [g]; that he was married to the Lady Mary, daughter and coheir of Henry Fitz-Allan, Earl of Arundel, Lord Steward of the Queen's household.

The beforementioned Thomas Duke of Norfolk [h] had two wives; first, Anne, one of the daughters to King Edward IV. by whom he had issue two sons; the eldest whereof died soon after he was born; and Thomas, dying young, August 3, 1508, 23 Henry VII. was buried at Lambeth. His second was Elizabeth, daughter to Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, by whom he had issue two sons; Henry Earl of Surry, beheaded in his life-time, as hereafter mentioned; and Thomas. Also one daughter, Mary, married to Henry Fitz-Roy, Duke of Richmond and Somerset (natural son to King Henry VIII.) who died, aged seventeen, July 24, 1536, without issue.

Thomas the second son, having married [i] Elizabeth, his first wife, youngest of the two daughters, and coheirs of John Lord Marney, and Christian his wife, daughter and heir of Sir Roger Newburgh, of East Lulworth in Dorsetshire, Knt. had, in 22 Henry VIII. livery of the lands of her inheritance; and being in 1 Mariæ restored [k] in blood, was by letters patent, bearing date January 13, 1558-9, 1 Elizabeth, advanced [l] to the title of Viscount Howard, of Bindon, in com. Dors. By his first wife, he was father of (besides two other sons who died without issue) Henry, his successor in the title of Viscount, who wedded Francis, daughter of Sir Peter Mewtas, Knt. and by her had a daughter, his heir, the wife of Sir Arthur Gorges, Knt. whose only child, Ambrosia, died issueless, A. D. 1606: of Thomas, third Viscount, Knight of the Garter, by whose death, without issue, the Viscounty became extinct, in 1610; and the greatest part of his estate was conveyed to the Earl of Suffolk: and of Grace, espoused to Sir John Horsey, of Clifton in Dorsetshire, Knt. Gertrude, his second wife, daughter to Sir William Lyte, of Cary in Somersetshire, Knt. bore to him a son, Charles Lyte Howard, who had no issue, and a daughter, Anne, married to Sir William Thornyhurst, of the county of Kent, Knt. By Mabel, his third spouse, daughter of Nicholas Burton, of Carshalton in Surry, Esq; he had a daughter, Frances, who was successively wedded to Henry Pranel of London, Edward Seymour, Earl of Hertford, and Lodowick

[g] Cole, præd. [h] Ex stemmate. [i] Pat. 22 Henry VIII. p. 2.
[k] Rot. Parl. 1 Mary, 1. n. 9. [l] Pat. 1 Elizabeth, p. 3.

Stuart,

Stuart, Duke of Lennox and Richmond, and died on Octob. 8, 1639.

Henry, the eldeſt ſon of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, bearing the title of Earl of Surry, in his father's life-time, on May 1, 1540, 32 Hen. VIII. was [m] one of the chief of thoſe, that juſted at Weſtminſter, as defendants againſt Sir John Dudley, Sir Thomas Seymour, and others, challengers. In 33 Hen. VIII. on St. George's Day, he [n] was elected one of the Knights of the moſt noble order of the Garter. And, in 1542, 34 Hen. VIII. marched [o] in the army (whereof his father had the command) as Lieutenant-general, which, in October that year, entered [p] Scotland, and burnt divers villages. In 36 Henry VIII. on that expedition to Boulogne in France, he was [q] Field-Marſhal of the Engliſh army: and, after the winning thereof, September 3, 37 Henry VIII. was conſtituted [r] the King's Lieutenant and Captain-general of all his army within the town and county of Boulogne.

This Earl (ſaith [s] Biſhop Godwin) was of a ripe wit, and endued with great learning; being alſo a perſon very gracious with the people, expert in the military, and eſteemed fit for public government. But his Lordſhip's great virtues were conſidered as too great faults; for the King, being jealous of him, reſolved to cut him off: treaſon therefore was objected againſt him; and, upon that ſurmiſe, he was ſent to the Tower with his father.

That which he had chiefly laid to his charge, was [t] from the affirmation of Sir Richard Southwell, Knt. that he knew certain things of him, which touched his fidelity to the King. Unto which accuſation, in the preſence of the Lord Chancellor Audley, and others, he affirmed [u] himſelf a true man; deſiring [x] to be tried by juſtice; or that he might fight in his ſhirt with Southwell. But the principal whereof he was accuſed, was [y] bearing the arms of King Edward the Confeſſor, with his own; and that [z] a ſervant of his had been in Italy with Cardinal Pole, and was by him received at his return. For which he was arraigned [a] at Guildhall, on January 13, 38 Henry VIII. before the Lord Chancellor, the Lord-Mayor, and other Commiſſioners, and pleaded not guilty. Being [b] a perſon of great underſtanding, ſharp wit, and deep courage, he defended himſelf ſundry ways; denying the accuſations as falſe, and weakening the credit of his adverſaries, amongſt whom appeared his ſiſter, the Dutcheſs of Richmond; and interpreting the words, wherewith he was

[m] Stow's Annals, p. 379, 380. [n] Anſtis's Regiſt. Gart. vol. i. p. 423. [o] Herb. Henry VIII. [p] Ibid. [q] Stow's Annals, p. 587. [r] Pat. 37 Henry VIII. p. 13. [s] Annals, p. 203. [t] Herb. Henry VIII. p. 263. [u] Ibid. p. 264. [x] Ibid. [y] Godwin, p. 204. [z] Herb. ut ſupra, p. 264. [a] Ibid. [b] Ibid.

charged,

charged, in a far different ſenſe than they were repreſented. As to the bearing his arms, he vouched [c] the opinion of the heralds therein. And, upon [d] the producing a witneſs againſt him, who pretended, that, on diſcourſe with him, he uſed ſuch high words, as that a braving anſwer was returned; he made no other defence to the jury, than that he left it to them to judge, whether it were probable, that this man ſhould uſe ſuch expreſſions to the Earl of Surry, and he not ſtrike him again.

In concluſion, the jury, being a common inqueſt (and not of Peers) condemned him. Whereupon, having judgment of death paſſed on him, he was beheaded [e] on Tower-Hill, January 19, anno 1546-7 (38 Henry VIII.); and buried [f] in the church of All-Hallows Barking, Tower-Street, near the place of his execution; but afterwards tranſlated [g] to Framlingham, in com. Suff. where he lieth honourably entombed, under a monument erected to his memory by his ſecond ſon, Henry Earl of Northampton, A. D. 1614.

His Lordſhip was not only one of the beſt warriors, but alſo the moſt accompliſhed ſcholar of his time. His ſonnets in praiſe of the fair Geraldine, the firſt object of his love, exhibit an elegance of compoſition unknown before in Engliſh poetry. That Lady is, by the Honourable Horace Walpole, Eſq; in his Catalogue of Noble Authors, with great probability, ſuppoſed to be Elizabeth, ſecond daughter of Thomas Fitz-Gerald, tenth Earl of Kildare, by his ſecond wife, Elizabeth, fourth daughter of Thomas Grey, Marquis of Dorſet, uterine brother to King Edward V. The Earl of Surry, while on his travels at Florence, from whence the Fitz-Geralds are ſaid to have come, publiſhed a general challenge in honour of her beauty, and came off victorious. The Grand Duke of Tuſcany, on that occaſion, made him a preſent of a ſhield, which Mr. Vertue has repreſented in his print of the Arundel family, and was in the poſſeſſion of the late Earl of Stafford: but the Lady married Edward Clinton, Earl of Lincoln, who left her a widow, January 16, 1584-5, without iſſue.

By Frances, his wife, daughter to John de Vere, Earl of Oxford, he left iſſue [h] two ſons; Thomas, fourth Duke of Norfolk, and Henry Earl of Northampton; as alſo three daughters; 1. Jane, who, by her grandfather's will, had 1000 l. portion, and was married to Charles Nevil, Earl of Weſtmoreland; 2. Catherine, to Henry Lord Berkeley; 3. Margaret, to Henry Lord Scrope of Bolton.

Which Henry, with his ſaid three ſiſters, were reſtored [i] in blood, in the parliament held 1 Elizabeth: and, being a per-

[c] Godwin, p. 204. [d] Herb. ut ſupra. [e] Ibid. [f] Stow's Survey of London, p. 131. a. [g] Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 852. [h] Cole's Eſcheat. lib. ii. ut antea. [i] Journals of Parliament, 1 Elizabeth.

ſon highly eſteemed for his great learning, he was, in 1 Jac. I.[k] one of that King's Privy-council. Alſo, on January 1 next following, conſtituted [l] Warden of the Cinque-ports, and Conſtable of Dover-caſtle. And on March 13 next enſuing, advanced [m] to the honour of a Baron of this realm, by the title of Lord Howard of Marnhill; as alſo [n] to the dignity of the Earl of Northampton. Likewiſe made [o] one of the Commiſſioners for exerciſing the office of Earl-Marſhal of England: and, on April 24, anno 1605 (3 Jac. I.) inſtalled [p] Knight of the Garter. On April 29, 1608 (6 Jac. I.) he was made [q] Lord Privy-Seal; and departing [r] this life unmarried, at his houſe near Charing-Croſs, built by himſelf out of the ruins of that religious houſe, called Rouncivall (and now Northumberland-houſe) 15 Junii, anno 1614, 12 Jac. I. was interred in the church of Dover-caſtle. His Lordſhip was alſo Chancellor of the univerſity of Cambridge: and founded three hoſpitals; one at Greenwich, commonly called The Duke of Norfolk's college, for thirty poor men, and a Governor; another at Glyn, in Shropſhire, for twelve poor men, and an Overſeer; and the third at Caſtleriſing, in Norfolk, for twelve poor women, and a Governeſs, for ever.

Thomas Howard, fourth Duke of Norfolk, and eldeſt ſon to Henry Earl of Surry, cut off in 38 Hen. VIII.[s] was eighteen years of age at the death of his grandfather in 1554, 2 Mariæ, and was then married to Mary, daughter and heir of Henry Fitz-Allan, Earl of Arundel, and had the title of Duke of Norfolk; his ſaid grandfather, Thomas Duke of Norfolk, being fully reſtored in blood [t], when the act of his attainder was made void, and thereby he became his next hereditary ſucceſſor. At the coronation of Queen Mary [u], October 1, 1553, he had the title of Earl of Surry, and officiated under his grandfather, as Marſhal of England. In 1557, he had a ſon born, and chriſtened Philip at Whitehall, July 2 that year, King Philip, and Stephen Gardiner, Biſhop of Wincheſter, Lord Chancellor, being his Godfathers, and the Dutcheſs of Norfolk Godmother. His Dutcheſs [x] died at Arundel-houſe in the Strand, on Auguſt 25 following (4 Philip and Mary) and was buried at St. Clement's church, near Temple-bar, on the 31ſt.

On the deceaſe of Queen Mary, Novem. 17, 1558, the Duke [y] was preſent, with others of the Nobility, at the proclamation of Queen Elizabeth, and after grew into her favour and eſteem; ſo that he was elected one of the Knights of the moſt noble order of the Garter in the firſt year of her reign [z], with the

[k] Annal. Eliz. per Camd. [l] Pat. 1 Jac. p. 6. [m] Ibid. p. 3.
[n] Ibid. [o] Ibid. p. 10. [p] Annal. R. Jac. per Camd. [q] Ibid.
[r] Ibid. [s] Cole's Eſch. lib. ii. ut antea. [t] Rot. Parl. 1. Mar. n. 13.
[u] Strype's Memorials, col. iii. p. 37. [x] Ibid. [y] Ibid. p. 451.
[z] Camden's Life of Queen Elizabeth, in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 383.

Marquis of Northampton, and the Earl of Rutland. In the ſecond year of her reign, the Scots having aſked aid of the Queen, to expel the French, who had landed in Scotland, their King being married to Mary the Scottiſh Queen. Forces being raiſed to diſplace ſuch dangerous neighbours [a], Queen Elizabeth ſent the Duke of Norfolk into the North, to command them as General; and the troops entering Scotland under Lord Gray of Wilton, and Sir James Croſts, beſieged Leith. The Duke of Norfolk, whilſt the ſiege was carrying on, remained at Berwick for the ſecurity thereof; and [b] Sir George Howard being diſpatched to him there, to certify him of the ſtate of the ſiege, his Grace arrived at the camp before it, April 28, 1560. The ſiege continued (the French being very numerous in Leith) till July 7 following [c], when a peace was concluded, and the French obliged to leave Scotland. His Grace was the next year [d] conſtituted Lieutenant-general of the North: and in 6 Elizabeth, he waited on the Queen on her viſiting the univerſity of Cambridge [e], where, on Auguſt 5, the degree of Maſter of Arts was conferred on him, and others of the Nobles that attended on her Majeſty.

In 1565, 7 Elizabeth, Chriſtopher, Prince and Margrave of Baden, with Cicely his wife, ſiſter to John II. King of Sweden, landing at Dover, in the beginning of September, were on the 11th brought to the Earl of Bedford's manſion in the Strand; where, on the 15th, the Princeſs was delivered of a ſon, who, on the laſt of the month, was chriſtened Edwardus Fortunatus in the Queen's chapel at Whitehall; her Majeſty perſonally attending as Godmother [f], and the Duke of Norfolk, with Matthew Parker, Archbiſhop of Canterbury, as Godfathers.

In the beginning of the ninth year of the Queen's reign, Charles IX. of France having ſent Ramboulet into England as his proxy to be inſtalled Knight of the Garter, and to compliment the Queen, with the privilege of conferring the Order of St. Michael on any two Noblemen ſhe thought fit [g]; ſhe made choice of the Earl of Leiceſter, as her favourite, and the Duke of Norfolk, as a perſon of honour; and accordingly they were inveſted with the habit and enſigns of that Order in the Queen's chapel at Whitehall, on January 24, 1566-7.

In 1568, 11 Elizabeth, he [h] was, with Thomas Ratcliff, Earl of Suſſex, Lord Preſident of the North, and Sir Ralph Sadler of the Privy-council, commiſſioned by the Queen to hear

[a] Stow's Annal's, p. 640. [b] Ibid. p. 643. [c] Ibid. p. 645. [d] Aſhmole's Order of the Garter, in Appendix, N° 53. [e] Fuller's Hiſtory of the Univerſity of Cambridge, p. 139. [f] Stow, præd. p. 658. [g] Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 399. and Stow, p. 659. [h] Camden, in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 412.

and

and examine the cauſe of the Queen of Scots being depoſed; and at York met the Earl of Murray the Regent, and the Commiſſioners for James, the infant King, in October. After many conferences, Camden gives this account [i]. "Now were the "deputies recalled, and their commiſſion expired, to the great "ſatisfaction of the Duke of Norfolk, who had always heartily "eſpouſed the Queen of Scots title to the ſucceſſion; being of "opinion, that, in the late debate, it was aimed to fix a laſt-"ing mark on herſelf and her ſon, and ſo to exclude them both, "as unworthy to ſucceed to the throne of England; and he "thought he was happily rid of a double danger. He was afraid, "had he given ſentence againſt her, he muſt have wronged his "own conſcience, and utterly ruined her: and ſhould he have "determined in her favour, he muſt of courſe have incurred the "Queen's high diſpleaſure, and drawn on himſelf the odium of "all that were ill affected to the Queen of Scots, on the ſcore "of religion, or any other account." But about that time [k], there being ſome tumults in Scotland, occaſioned by ſome of the Queen's friends, and they requiring Murray's preſence to re-ſettle affairs, he drew up an accuſation before the Queen, the Lord Keeper Bacon, the Duke of Norfolk, the Earls of Arundel, Suſſex, Clinton Lord Admiral, Sir William Cecil, and Sir Ralph Sadler, conſtituted, by a new patent, to examine that matter. The conferences thereon are too long to be recited; but Murray, juſt before his departure for Scotland, made (as obſerved by the ſaid Author) a ſubtil kind of propoſal, relating to the Duke's marriage with the Queen of Scots; and had likewiſe given her, by Melvin, ſome hope that ſhe ſhould be reſtored again to her Kingdom, &c. In the next year, 12 Eliz. he recites [l], "That the Duke of Norfolk, the Marquis of "Wincheſter, the Earls of Arundel, Northumberland, Weſt-"moreland, Pembroke, Leiceſter, and others, began to cla-"mour againſt Cecil, and had laid a plot to proclaim the Queen "of Scots undoubted heir of the Crown, ſhould Queen Eliza-"beth do otherwiſe than well." Afterwards he [m] relates, "It is whiſpered, about this time, that the Duke of Norfolk "was to marry the Queen of Scots. And this ſeveral perſons "wiſhed heartily, as their intereſts ran, or their affections were "engaged. Moſt certain it is, that many, obſerving Queen "Elizabeth's averſeneſs to marriage, &c. conſidered the Queen "of Scots as the undoubted heir of the Crown of England; "and believed it would tend more to the ſettlement of affairs, "and fixing the Queen of Scots to juſt meaſures of govern-"ment; *ſhould ſhe marry the Duke of Norfolk, the firſt Noble-*"*man in England, a man of popular intereſt, and of the Pro-*

[i] Camden, in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 414. [k] Ibid. [l] Ibid. p. 417. [m] Ibid. p. 419.

"*teſtant*

" *teſtant religion; than ſhould ſhe admit of a foreign Prince,* " *who, by her help, might embroil both Kingdoms, and at laſt in-* " *herit them; ſhould the young King of Scots do otherwiſe than* " *well.*"

Camden [a], from the written confeſſion of the Duke himſelf (which he had ſeen) and out of the Diary of the Biſhop of Roſs, has given a particular account of Murray's propoſal to the Duke of Norfolk for marrying the Queen of Scots; and that his anſwer was, *He could reſolve on nothing to that propoſal, before the Queen ſtood acquitted of the crimes laid to her charge.* And that he had been ſolicited thereto by Sir Nicholas Throgmorton; and encouraged, through the aſſiſtance of Robert Earl of Leiceſter, to obtain Queen Elizabeth's aſſent; many of the Nobility liking well thereof, if the Queen was content.

But the Queen, having diſcovered the intrigues, was utterly averſe to the marriage; which, when the Duke underſtood [o], he earneſtly intreated the Earl of Leiceſter, as well by himſelf, as his friends, immediately to acquaint the Queen with the whole proceeding: but Leiceſter uſed only fair words, and long delays; and, in the interim, the Queen took the Duke to dinner at Farnham, and pleaſantly adviſed him *to be careful on what pillow he laid his head.* Soon after, Leiceſter falling ſick, or at leaſt feigning himſelf ſo, the Queen came to pay him a viſit at Titchfield, when he opened to her the whole buſineſs, and begged her pardon with all poſſible appearance of concern.

After this, the Queen called the Duke to her into the gallery, and roundly reprimanded him for attempting a match with the Queen of Scots, without her cognizance; and commanded him, on his allegiance, to give over thoſe pretenſions. The Duke made her a very hearty and chearful promiſe, that he would; and, as if he had a very ſlight regard for the Queen of Scots, was not ſhy to affirm, *That his eſtate in England was worth little leſs than the whole kingdom of Scotland,* in the ill ſtate the wars had now reduced it to; and that when he was at his own tenniscourt in Norwich, he thought himſelf at leaſt a petty Prince. However, his mettle (as Camden relates) was conſiderably abated after this interview; and when he perceived, both in the Queen's looks and behaviour, a greater indifference to him than before; that Leiceſter had laid aſide the friend; and many of the firſt Nobility ſhrinking by degrees from his intereſt, and declining his converſation; paying him, now and then, as they happened to meet, a ſhort compliment, and away; he reſolved to go for London without taking leave of the Court, then at Southampton; and took up his reſidence with the Earl of Pembroke, who gave him all the hopes and encouragements he was capable of. The very ſame day, the Queen, in a great diſguſt,

[a] Camden, p. 419. [o] Ibid. p. 420.

refuſed the ſuit of the Spaniſh Ambaſſador, in reference to the enlargement of the Queen of Scots; and adviſed her to bear her condition with leſs impatience, or otherwiſe ſhe might chance to find ſome, on whom ſhe had grounded her beſt hopes, the head ſhorter in a very little time.

When the report of this marriage was more and more blazed abroad, and the French Ambaſſador was mighty importunate with the Queen to ſet at liberty the Queen of Scots, freſh jealouſies ſprang up on both ſides; and Cecil applied himſelf, with all poſſible dexterity, to trace out the matter, by the means of the Earl of Suſſex, Lord Preſident of the North, and Murray, Regent of Scotland. The Duke, in the mean time, terrified with a falſe report of a rebellion in the North, and hearing from Leiceſter, that he was moſt certainly to go to the Tower, withdrew himſelf from London to Kenning-hall in Norfolk, deſigning to continue there, till, by the management of his friends at Court, the preſent ſtorms ſhould blow over, or he could appeaſe the Queen by ſubmiſſive letters at that diſtance. However, he had ſpies ſet over him, to obſerve his looks and geſtures, as well as his general conduct: and when he found there was little to be expected from his friends [p], and that it was the opinion and advice of Heydon, and Cornwallis, and others of the firſt rank and quality in thoſe parts, that, if he knew himſelf guilty, he ought to fling himſelf upon the Queen's mercy; he was half diſtracted with a throng of different thoughts and ſcruples. The Court, in the mean time, were not without ſuſpicions and fears, leſt this ſhould end in a rebellion: and it was commonly rumoured, that, if it did ſo, the Queen of Scots was to be put to death. But the Duke being conſcious of no ill deſigns, that might bring him under the charge of high-treaſon; for that act of Henry VIII. *That none ſhould marry with the children of the ſiſters, brothers, or aunts, of the King, without the King's knowledge, on pain of high-treaſon*, was repealed by Edward VI. and being apprehenſive, that the Queen of Scots would find the harder treatment, on the ſcore of theſe popular ſurmiſes, he ſent letters to his friends at Court to aſſure and acquaint them, that he had retired to his ſeat for fear of being impriſoned; deſiring them to remove, if poſſible, thoſe peſtilent reports, which had been ſpread at Court; whither he was preparing to come to receive the Queen's pardon. When on his journey to Court, then at Windſor, he was arreſted at Uxbridge by Fitz-Gerald, a Lieutenant of the Band of Penſioners, on account of letters being ſent to the Queen from the Earl of Murray, Regent of Scotland, intimating, that the Duke had been practiſing with him to favour and aſſiſt his marriage with the Queen of Scots, and threatened him hard if he did not comply; that he promiſed

[p] Camden, p. 421.

to

to do him what ſervice he could, to prevent a deſign upon his life; that ſhortly after, the Duke ſent him a letter, written in private characters, wherein he deſired his concurrence to the match, and ſent him word likewiſe, that he would never relinquiſh the Queen of Scots. Soon after, the Duke was examined at Burnham in Bucks, the place of his confinement, upon his intended marriage with the Queen of Scots, and his private conferences with the Biſhop of Roſs; and, confeſſing a great deal, he was ſent to the Tower, October 11, 1569, after he had received a ſharp reprimand, for withdrawing from Court without leave, and taxed with a deſign to diſturb the tranquillity of the nation; and many, who had been concerned in promoting the match, were likewiſe confined and examined. After his confinement, a rebellion broke out in the North under the Earls of Northumberland and Weſtmoreland; and another like to break out in Norfolk, but cruſhed in its birth. Several Norfolk Gentlemen, willing to ſet the Duke at liberty (for whom all of them had a ſingular reſpect) laid a plot to gather the mob together at Harleſton-fair [q], June 24, under pretence of driving the Netherlanders out of England, who, to avoid Alva's tyranny, had fled over to that county: for which John Throgmorton and two others were hanged. The Duke confeſſed, that, through imprudence, he had done amiſs, and had ſo far repented of what he had done, that his mind was averſe from thinking on, and his ears from hearing, any mention of the match; and binding himſelf in a bond, not to concern himſelf any further in the marriage with the Queen of Scots, without Queen Elizabeth's knowledge, [r] he was, on Auguſt 4, 1570, diſcharged from the Tower of London, where the plague then raged, and removed to the Charter-houſe, then called Howard-houſe, where he lived under the eaſy confinement of Sir Henry Nevil. He could not be proceeded againſt by the ſtatute of 25 Edw. III. concerning high-treaſon, as intimated by Cecil; who did all he could to work the Duke to marry any other woman, whereby he would be free from ſuſpicion, and the ſtate be out of fear. But ſome thought he was ſet at liberty, on purpoſe that he might be brought into greater danger.

Soon after divers tranſactions paſſed in England [s], which put the Queen of Scots out of all hopes of procuring her liberty, and, being full of ſorrow, ſhe then diſcloſed that, which ſhe had long kept within her own breaſt. She ſecretly ſent a long draught of her deſigns, which ſhe had drawn up, with ſeveral love-letters to the Duke of Norfolk, written in cyphers known only to them two; and other letters to be conveyed by Ridolpho, a Florentine, to the Pope and the Spaniſh King. Higford,

[q] Camden, ut antea, p. 428, 429. [r] Stow's Annal's, p. 666. [s] Camden, ut antea, p. 432.

the Duke's Secretary, who tranſcribed thoſe papers in the uſual character, was ordered by him to burn them; but he hid them under the mats of the Duke's bed, as it ſeemed, on purpoſe too, as will hereafter appear. There were other deſigns in agitation, for delivery of the Queen of Scots from her confinement, too long to be inſerted here; and as to the Biſhop of Roſs's plot, to ſeize Queen Elizabeth, and break up the Parliament, Camden recites [t], the Duke (who was naturally averſe to any baſe action) deteſted it from his heart, as villainous, and full of danger. But [u] the Queen of Scots ſending a certain ſum of money to the French Ambaſſador, to be by him conveyed to her party in Scotland, he delivered it to Barker, and Higford, the Duke's Secretary, who, giving his Grace a hint of it, delivered it to Browne, a citizen of Shrewſbury, one of the Duke's retainers, in order to be conveyed into Scotland to John Maxwell, Lord Herries. Browne, being of a ſuſpicious nature, and perceiving, by the weight, that gold coin was delivered him for ſilver, put the ſame, with the letters, into the hands of the Privy-council. By which, it was obſerved, the Duke firſt became guilty of high-treaſon, in that he would have relieved Herries, and the Scots, who were proclaimed enemies, having ravaged the frontiers of England: and, upon this, Higford was caſt into priſon, who preſently, of his own accord, confeſſed the whole matter about the money, and diſcovered where he had hid the letters and cyphers, with the Queen of Scots draught beforementioned.

When the Queen's council had received the draught, with the letters beforementioned, and others ſent by the Pope; and Barker being apprehended, who alſo confeſſed every particular, Sir Ralph Sadler was ordered to keep a ſtrong guard on the Duke's houſe at London (now called the Charter-houſe) and the third day after the Duke himſelf was examined. He, not knowing what his ſervants had confeſſed, and ſuppoſing the draught, with the letters, were burnt, ſtiffly denied all they had confeſſed. On which, on September 4, 1571, he was [x], to the great grief of the people, ſent to the Tower of London. Afterwards, Baniſter, the Duke's Counſellor at law, the Earls of Arundel, and Southampton, the Lord Lumley, the Lord Cobham, and Thomas his brother, Henry Percy, Louther, Powel, Goodier, and others, were clapt into priſon, who, every one of them, in hopes of pardon, confeſſed what they knew.

On the Council's producing to the Duke, September 7, theſe perſons confeſſions, the Queen of Scots, and the Biſhop of Roſs's letters, with her draught, he was much ſurpriſed, believing them to have been burnt as he had ordered; and, amazed thereat, ſaid, *I am betrayed and undone by my confidents, not knowing how to*

[t] Camden, ut antea, p. 433. [u] Ibid. p. 434. [x] Ibid. p. 435.

diſtruſt

diſtruſt them; though diffidence is the very eſſence of wiſdom. And thereupon prayed the Council to intercede for him with the Queen, promiſing to conceal nothing that he knew; and ſolemnly proteſting, he had never conſented to any thing, which might prejudice the Queen, or injure the realm; but had declared heartily againſt the plots they laid for ſurpriſing the Queen, the ſeizing on the Tower of London, and ſetting the Queen of Scots at liberty. The ſame day he was examined on about fifty articles, and concealed nothing. Afterwards the whole, with many exaggerating annotations, was reported in the Star-chamber, in a full aſſembly of the Nobility, the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen; and after, to all the citizens at Guildhall, by Fleetwood, their Recorder. A narrative of the ſame import was alſo diſperſed over the kingdom, in order to leſſen the Duke's popularity, and pave the way for his deſtruction.

On January 16, 1571-2, he was brought to his trial in Weſtminſter-hall[7], before twenty-five Peers, beſides George Talbot, Earl of Shrewſbury, conſtituted High-Steward on that occaſion. He was arraigned for having, in the 11th year of Queen Elizabeth, and afterwards, entered into a treaſonable conſpiracy, about depoſing her from her throne; taking away her life; invading the kingdom by raiſing war; and bringing in a foreign power:—for having treated, without acquainting Queen Elizabeth, about a marriage with Mary, late Queen of Scots, though he knew for certain, that ſhe had uſurped the Crown of England, with the title and arms thereof; and having lent her a great ſum of money, contrary to what he had promiſed under his hand:—for having ſupplied the Earls of Northumberland and Weſtmoreland with money, though he was ſure, that they, and others, had raiſed a rebellion againſt the Queen, and were driven into Scotland:—for having, in the thirteenth year of the Queen's reign, by letters, craved auxiliary forces of Pope Pius V. her profeſſed enemy, of the Spaniards, and of the Duk of Alva, to ſet the Queen of Scots at liberty, and reſtore the Popiſh religion in England:—and, laſtly, that he had relieved Lord Herries the Scot, and other the Queen's enemies in Scotland. After his indictment was read, he craved, if the law would allow it, to have Council aſſigned him to defend his Cauſe. Sir Robert Cateline, Lord Chief Juſtice, anſwered, *The law could not allow it. It is fit* (ſaid the Duke) *I ſhould ſubmit myſelf to the opinion of the Judges; but in this caſe, there are many nice points; nor had I notice, till within theſe fourteen hours, that I ſhould be brought to my trial. I have alſo been unprovided of books. I ſee now I muſt fight for myſelf without weapons. However, I have heard, that, in the reign of King Henry VII. Sir Henry Stafford had Council allowed him in a caſe of high-treaſon.* Dier, Lord

[7] Camden, p. 437, & ſeq.

Chief Juſtice of the Common Pleas, anſwered, *That Stafford had Council aſſigned him about the privilege of ſanctuary, from whence he was violently drawn: but in the caſe of high-treaſon, he pleaded his own cauſe without Council. To-day then* (ſaid the Duke) *I muſt plead for my life, my eſtate, my children, and (which is above all) my honeſty (as for my honour, let it go.) If I die innocent, God will be ſure to avenge my cauſe. Yet let me aſk this one queſtion; Whether that enumeration of my crimes be to be taken for true in every part, and to which part I muſt anſwer?* Cateline ſaid, *Since the cauſes are true, that enumeration is alſo to be taken for true. I deſire* (ſaid the Duke) *to be informed, whether every particular therein be high-treaſon, for I have heard ſay, in the Caſe of the Lord Scroop's, in the reign of Henry IV.*—As he was going on, the Clerk interrupted him, crying, "Thomas Duke of "Norfolk, art thou guilty of thoſe crimes, or not?" He anſwered, *Not Guilty.* The Clerk aſked him again, "How "wilt thou be tried?" He anſwered, *To God, and theſe Peers, I commend my cauſe. The heinouſneſs of theſe crimes daunts me, but the royal goodneſs of the Queen refreſhes me, from whom I could expect no better. But of you, my Lord Steward, I earneſtly deſire, that I may have a fair trial; and that my memory, which is very weak, may not be over-charged with any variety of matter. That I have ſuch as you for my Peers and Judges, I acknowledge myſelf happy; to moſt of whoſe integrities, I would willingly and readily commit my life. I truſted to my innocence, and ſo have not ſhifted for myſelf by flight. Yet I muſt ingenuouſly confeſs, I have failed in my duty towards the Queen; but not ſo as to amount to high-treaſon. I beſeech you, that theſe lighter crimes may not promiſcuouſly be reckoned among crimes of high-treaſon.*

Concerning the laſt article of the indictment, his Grace aſked the Judges, Whether the ſubjects of another Prince, in confederacy with the Queen, were to be reputed her enemies? Lord Chief Juſtice Cateline was ſo ignorant of, or paid ſo little regard to, the law of nations, and the nature of treaties between ſovereign powers, that he anſwered, The Queen might wage war with any Duke in France, and yet, at the ſame time, be in peace with the French King. In fine, he was unanimouſly pronounced guilty by the Peers, without any parole evidence, that could convict him of high-treaſon, being produced, or the witneſſes brought into Court, according to the ſtatute of the fifth and ſixth of Edward VI. which enacts, that no perſon ſhall be found guilty, except upon the evidence of two witneſſes at leaſt to be confronted with the accuſed; his adverſaries urging, that his confeſſion before the Council was ſufficient proof of his guilt. Being brought to the bar, the Lord Steward, ſaid, *Thomas Duke of Norfolk, thou haſt been arraigned of divers crimes of high-treaſon, and haſt ſubmitted thyſelf to God and theſe Peers,*

who have all found thee guilty. Haſt thou any thing to ſay why ſentence ſhould not be paſſed upon thee? His Grace anſwered, *God's will be done, who will judge between me and my falſe accuſers.*

On this, Barnham required the Lord Steward, in the Queen's name, to paſs ſentence, which he, with tears in his eyes, pronounced according to the uſual form. The Duke, with a preſence of mind, anſwered, *Sentence is paſſed upon me as upon a traitor: I have none to truſt to but God and the Queen; I am excluded from your ſociety, but hope ſhortly to enjoy the heavenly. I will fit myſelf to die. Only this one thing I crave, that the Queen would be kind to my children and ſervants, and take care that my debts be paid.* Camden (from whom this account is taken) ſays, he heard theſe things himſelf, and penned them down exactly.

He remained under ſentence four months, the Queen affecting an inclination to pardon him; but, upon an addreſs of a Committee of both houſes of Parliament, ſhe ſigned the warrant for his execution, pretending that ſhe could not reſiſt the voice of her people. On the 2d of June, at eight in the morning, the [z] Duke was brought to a ſcaffold erected upon Tower-hill; whereon he was no ſooner mounted (and Alexander Nowell, Dean of St. Paul's, who was there as his ghoſtly comforter, deſiring the multitude that ſtood round to keep ſilence) but he ſaid, *It is no new thing for men to ſuffer death in this place; though, ſince the beginning of our moſt gracious Queen's reign, I am the firſt, and God grant I may be the laſt.* At this the people cried, *Amen.* Then (to give you an abſtract, ſays Camden, of what I heard at large) he went on: *I acknowledge my Peers have juſtly ſentenced me worthy of death; nor have I any deſign to excuſe myſelf. I freely confeſs that I treated with the Queen of Scots, in things of great moment, without my Sovereign's knowledge; which I ought not to have done. Whereupon I was caſt into the Tower; but I was afterwards ſet at liberty, having made a humble ſubmiſſion; and promiſed, upon honour, to have nothing more to do with her; yet I confeſs I acted contrary, and this, in truth, diſturbs my conſcience. But I neither promiſed, nor ſware it at the Lord's table, as is commonly reported. I once conferred with Ridolpho, but not to the Queen's deſtruction; for there are ſeveral which know I had to do with him, about money matters, upon bills and bonds. I found him to be one that envied the peace of England, and forward to contrive any villainy. Two letters from the Pope I ſaw, but by no means approved of them, nor of the rebellion in the North. I have not been popiſhly inclined ever ſince I had any taſte of religion; but was always averſe to the popiſh doctrine, and embraced the true religion of Jeſus Chriſt, and put my whole truſt in the blood of Chriſt, my bleſſed Redeemer and Saviour. Yet I muſt own, that ſome of my ſervants, and acquaintance, were addicted to the Romiſh religion. If, in this, I*

[z] Camden, p. 448.

have offended either God, the Church, or the Proteſtants, I pray God and them to forgive me. Then after reading a pſalm or two, he ſaid, with a loud voice, *Lord, into thy hands I commend my ſpirit.* After this, he embraced Sir Henry Leigh, whiſpered ſomething to him, and to Dean Nowel; who, turning to the people, ſaid, "The Duke deſires you would all of you pray to God to "have mercy on him; and withall keep ſilence, that his mind "may not be diſturbed." The executioner aſked him forgiveneſs, and had it granted. One offering him a handkerchief to cover his eyes, he refuſed it, ſaying, *I am not in the leaſt afraid of death.* Then, falling on his knees, he lay proſtrate with his mind fixed upon God, and Dean Nowel prayed with him. Preſently after, he ſtretched his neck upon the block, and his head was immediately cut off at one blow, and ſhewed by the executioner, as a doleful ſight, for the ſorrowful and weeping multitude.

Blomfield, vol. i. has his ſpeech at large from a MS. in the library of Caius-college, Cambridge, wherein he defies the Pope and all his religion.

His Grace, after the death of his firſt Dutcheſs, already mentioned, married Margaret, daughter and ſole heir to Thomas Lord Audley, of Walden in Eſſex, and Chancellor of England, widow of the Lord Henry Dudley, John Duke of Northumberland's younger ſon (ſlain at St. Quintin's in Picardy without iſſue, Auguſt 10, 1557) by whom he had iſſue three ſons; Thomas, afterwards made Earl of Suffolk; Henry, who died young; and William, of Naworth in Cumberland, anceſtor to the Earl of Carliſle; with two daughters, Elizabeth, who died in her infancy; and Margaret, married to Robert Sackville, Earl of Dorſet. He laſtly married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Francis Leyburne, of Cunſwick in Weſtmoreland, Knt. widow of Thomas Lord Dacre of Gilleſland; but by her had no iſſue, ſhe dying [a] in 1567, 10 Elizabeth, being married about a year.

The title of the Duke of Norfolk being, by the attainder of this Thomas, thus taken away, Philip, his eldeſt ſon, was called Earl of Arundel, as owner of Arundel-caſtle in Suſſex, by deſcent from his mother; it having, in 11 Hen. VI. been adjudged [b] in Parliament to be a local dignity, ſo that the poſſeſſors thereof ſhould enjoy that title of honour. Whereupon, by that appellation, he had ſummons [c] to the Parliament, begun at Weſtminſter, January 16, 1579-80, 22 Elizabeth, and ſoon after, in the ſame Parliament, was by a ſpecial act, reſtored [d] in blood: and, that ſame year, made a Privy-counſellor. But not long after this, by the artifices [e] of Robert Earl of Leiceſter, and Se-

[a] Camden, in Hiſt. of Engl. vol. ii. p. 408. [b] Rot. Parl. in 11 Henry VI.
[c] Journ. of Parl. [d] Ibid. [e] Camden's Eliz. ut ſupra, in an. 1584. 23 Eliz.

cretary Walſingham (who, for the entrapping of eminent perſons of the Romiſh religion, diſperſed counterfeit letters) this Earl Philip was confined to his own houſe, upon ſuſpicion of practiſing againſt the government in favour of Mary Queen of Scotland. During his reſtraint, Queen Elizabeth offered him his liberty, provided he would carry the ſword of ſtate before her to the chapel, and there attend the ſervice of the eſtabliſhed church; which his Lordſhip declined: and nothing appearing againſt him, he obtained his enlargement. He was ſoon after taken up again, and ſent to the Tower, from which he was likewiſe releaſed for want of evidence againſt him. Alarmed by theſe repeated attacks upon his liberty, and terrified [f] with the ſeverity of certain laws, then made againſt Jeſuits and Prieſts, he reſolved to [g] betake himſelf beyond the ſeas; but in the firſt place to repreſent his grief to the Queen by a letter, which he determined ſhould be delivered unto her after his departure: wherein he complained of the malice of his powerful adverſaries, which he could not withſtand, and their triumphing over his innocency; putting her alſo in mind of the unhappy fate of his three laſt anceſtors. Therefore, that he might not ſo periſh, he choſe to live retired, for his ſoul's health; and left his country, but not his loyalty to her his Sovereign; whom he beſeeched God to ſend as great happineſs, as he wiſhed to his own ſoul.

But, before this letter could be delivered (being gone into [h] Suſſex, there to take ſhipping in an obſcure creek) through the treachery of ſome of his ſervants, he was apprehended, and committed to the Tower. Being thus impriſoned, a charge was brought againſt him into the Star-chamber, "That he had "ſupported Romiſh Prieſts contrary to law: alſo, that he held "intelligence with Cardinal Allen, and Parſons the Jeſuit, the "Queen's enemies: [i] that he had publickly, in writing, que"ſtioned the juſtice of the kingdom: and, that he had inten"tions of departing the realm without licence." The Earl (as Camden obſerves) proteſting his obedience to the Queen, and love to his country, modeſtly excuſed himſelf, by his affection to the Catholic religion, and his ignorance of the laws; and, confeſſing his fault, ſubmitted himſelf to the cenſure of the bench; who fined him 10,000 l. and impriſonment during the Queen's pleaſure.

Notwithſtanding this fine and impriſonment, he was, about four years afterwards, arraigned of high-treaſon, and brought to his trial in Weſtminſter-hall, before twenty-five of the Peers. On April 14, 1589, 31ſt of Queen Elizabeth, [k] Henry Earl of Derby, being created Lord High-Steward on this occaſion,

[f] Camden's Eliz. ut ſupra, in an. 1584. 27 Eliz. [g] Ibid. p. 503. [h] Ibid. p. 504. [i] Camden's Life of Queen Elizabeth, in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 512. [k] MS. de Fam. de Howard, D. 12. folio 219.

the

the Earl appeared in a wrought velvet gown, furred with mattins, laid about with gold lace, and buttoned with gold buttons, a black ſattin doublet, a pair of velvet hoſe, and a high black hat on his head. He was a very tall man, ſomewhat ſwarthy; and, coming to the bar, he made two obeyſances to the State, and to the Nobles, and others preſent.

Being required to hold up his hand, he raiſed it very high, ſaying, *Here is as true a man's heart and hand, as ever came into this Hall.* His indictment conſiſted of the points on which he had been convicted in the Star-chamber, together with five additional articles, accuſing him of engaging to aſſiſt Cardinal Allen in his attempts to re-eſtabliſh Popery; ſuggeſting, that the Queen was unfit to govern; procuring Maſs to be ſaid for the ſucceſs of the Spaniſh Armada; intending to withdraw himſelf beyond ſeas, to ſerve under the Duke of Parma againſt his native country; and being privy to the bull of Pope Sixtus V. transferring the Queen's dominions to Philip II. King of Spain. Two emblematical pieces, found in his Lordſhip's cuſtody, were produced in Court as evidence againſt him. The firſt repreſented a hand ſhaking a ſnake into the fire, with this motto, *If God is for us, who can be againſt us?* The other was that of a lion without claws, with the inſcription, *Yet ſtill a lion.* The Earl being aſked if he were guilty, or not guilty, of the ſeveral treaſons in the indictment, his Lordſhip deſired to know, *Whether the ſeveral points, in the indictment contained, were but one indictment, yea or no?* Whereupon the Judges ſatisfied him it was but one. And being aſked a ſecond time, ſaid, *Not Guilty, and that he was well contented to be tried by ſuch good Noblemen then preſent, that knew his life.* He ſaid, *He had been a priſoner four years, and twenty-five weeks cloſe priſoner; that he had been ſick and weak, whereby his memory may fail him*; and therefore deſired the Lord Steward, *That he might be heard to make anſwer to every particular point.* To which the Lord Steward replied, "There was no other meaning, and that he ſhould be heard "deliberately."

It was urged againſt him, *That he was a traitor, becauſe a Papiſt; the Queen of Scots had conſidered him as one of her beſt friends; Cardinal Allen had ſpoken of him as the chief hope of the Roman Catholics in England; and that his letter to Queen Elizabeth plainly accuſed the national juſtice with regard to his father's trial.* The lawyers for the Crown, willing to make a handle of the moſt trivial circumſtances againſt him, produced letters written abroad, wherein he was ſtiled Philip Duke of Norfolk. His Lordſhip *acknowledged a correſpondence with Cardinal Allen, but merely upon his ſpiritual concerns; and that he intended to have ſerved under the Duke of Parma, as many had done by the Queen's own approbation; and inſiſted that he had ſaid nothing of his father's*

ther's ſentence, but what was on record; that he could not be anſwerable for what had been written concerning him; and that Popham, the Attorney-general, had managed the letters and confeſſions produced againſt him, as ſpiders to flowers, by extracting from them nothing but poiſon. He pointed out ſeveral inconſiſtencies in the indictment; and proved, that *the letters between the Queen of Scots and Cardinal Allen, about invading England, were wrote the very year in which he intended to have left it; and that the bull of Pope Sixtus V. had been publiſhed the year before.* Sir Thomas Gerard, —— Shelley, then under ſentence of death, and one Bennet, a profligate Prieſt, were examined as witneſſes againſt him. What the firſt ſwore, does not appear; and Shelley, being adjured, by his Lordſhip, to ſpeak nothing but the truth, would give no evidence at all: but Bennet, the informer of the Earl's having had Maſs ſaid for the ſucceſs of the Spaniſh invaſion, perſiſted in what he had declared before the Council; notwithſtanding his having wrote a letter to the Earl, aſking his Lordſhip pardon, and acknowledging that his confeſſion had been extorted by fear of the rack; an inſtrument well known to ſtate-priſoners in that reign. That letter was, unfortunately for the Earl of Arundel, intercepted by the miniſtry; and therefore he could make no uſe of it, when he impeached Bennet's character. After all the ſtruggles of the proſecutors, no charge of high-treaſon could be fixt upon his Lordſhip, but that of being reconciled to the church of Rome; upon which he was unanimouſly found guilty by his Judges. After ſentence, he beſought them to intercede with the Queen for the payment of his debts; that his officers might have acceſs to him; and his wife permitted to viſit him with his infant ſon, whom he had never ſeen, having been born ſince his confinement. As the Earl had been convicted merely on a religious account, the Queen did not allow his ſentence to be put in execution; but ſuffered him to languiſh in the Tower, where he ſpent the remainder of his days in exerciſes of devotion, until November 19, 1595, when he died in the thirty-ninth year of his age. He left iſſue by Anne, his wife, eldeſt daughter of Thomas, and ſiſter and coheir to Thomas, Lords Dacre of Gilleſland, Thomas his only child, afterwards Earl of Arundel, &c.

Which Thomas Earl of Arundel, &c. was born on July 7, 1592, ſeventh in deſcent from John Howard, firſt Duke of Norfolk of that ſurname; and by his father's attainder, being deprived of honour, and the greateſt part of the eſtate of his family, he had only the title of Lord Maltravers, by courteſy, all Queen Elizabeth's reign. During his youth, he was under the care of his mother, "who, being a Lady of great and eminent virtues, "was not negligent in his education, and yet ſo wary (the fa-"mily being under a cloud) as not to expoſe him to travel "abroad,

"abroad, or to appear in much converſation at home[l]. So as "Robert Devereux, Earl of Eſſex (to whom this Earl often "ſaid he was in his youth much beholding) was wont to call "him the *Winter Pear*; and that, if he lived, he would be a "great and a wiſe man."

He was, in 1603, 1 Jac. I. not only reſtored[m] in blood by act of parliament in the firſt year of King James I. but to all ſuch titles of honour and precedence, as Philip Earl of Arundel loſt by his attainder; as alſo to the honour, ſtate, and dignity of Earl of Surry; and to ſuch dignity of baronies, as Thomas Duke of Norfolk, his grandfather, loſt by his attainder. And though he was, by the ſaid act, reſtored to all the honours dependent on the title of Earl of Arundel, yet he was not to all the poſſeſſions; the baronies of Clun, and Oſwaldeſtrie, in Shropſhire, the ancient inheritances of the Fitz-Alans, Earls of Arundel, being given, from this Earl, to his great uncle, the Earl of Northampton, and by him transferred to his nephew, Thomas Earl of Suffolk, and to his poſterity.

When he had attained to the age of twenty years, the care of his friends, for the honour and continuation of his family, and his own inclination, prompted him to think of marriage; in which felicity he came not behind any of his anceſtors, taking to wife the Lady Alathea, third daughter and coheir of Gilbert Talbot, Earl of Shrewſbury: and by her had large poſſeſſions; for her two ſiſters, the one married to William Earl of Pembroke, and the other to Henry Earl of Kent, both died without iſſue.

In the year 1607[n], he was ſworn of the Privy-council to King James I.; and his Majeſty did him the honour to ſtand godfather to his eldeſt ſon[o], baptized James, July 17 that year. In 1609, he was neceſſarily induced to travel for the recovery of his health, paſſing through France and Italy; but in the interim loſt his couſin, Thomas Viſcount Bindon, to whom he was heir at law; but the greateſt part of the Viſcount's poſſeſſions was transferred on the Earl of Suffolk, and his children. Upon his return, he was at Windſor inſtalled Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, with Charles Prince of Wales, on May 13, 1611.

The year following, he was preſent at the marriage of the Prince Elector Palatine with the Princeſs Elizabeth, only daughter of King James, at Whitehall, Feb. 14, 1612-13, 10 Jac. I. when this Earl of Arundel carried the ſword[p], and ſtood on the right hand of his Majeſty, during the ceremony. He was alſo one of the four[q], commiſſioned by the King to conduct them to

[l] Short View of the Life of Thomas Earl of Arundel, p. 210, in Sir Edward Walker's Hiſtorical Diſcourſes. [m] Inter Brevia de Certiorare de anno 2. Jac. I. [n] Lloyd's Memoirs, p. 284. [o] Camden's Annals of King James, in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 642. [p] Sir John Finnet's obſervations on the Reception of foreign Ambaſſadors, &c. p. 10. [q] Stow's Annals, p. 918.

Bacharack,

Bacharack, the firſt city in his country; but at the requeſt of the Elector, they accompanied them to his chief city of Heidelberg. The Counteſs, his Lady, alſo accompanied the Princeſs thither; and took their leaves on the 14th of June following.

Soon after he went into Italy, where he very much pleaſed himſelf; and either took up, or improved, his natural diſpoſition of being the great maſter and favourer of Arts; eſpecially of Sculpture, Deſign, Painting, and Architecture, which rendered him famous, and acceptable to all ingenious ſpirits both at home and abroad.

He [r] returned in November 1614; and his two eldeſt ſons being grown up, he ſent them to travel, eſpecially to his beloved Italy, where they had not been long, but their mother, out of natural affection to ſee her children, had a deſire to make a journey, and to accompany them on their return. In all places, through which ſhe paſſed, ſhe was received with reſpect. As ſhe returned, her eldeſt ſon, James Lord Mowbray and Maltravers, died at Ghent, to the unſpeakable grief of his parents, being of great and notable hopes.

In 1619 he narrowly eſcaped with life, for being [s] appointed to conduct Count Gondemar, the Spaniſh Ambaſſador, to his firſt public audience at Whitehall, on March 12 that year; after a ſmall ſtay in the Council-chamber, as they were paſſing over a wooden terras to enter the guard-chamber, the weight of the over-thronging multitude made it ſuddenly fall, with the Earl of Arundel, the Lord Grey, and others, who received ſome hurt; but the Ambaſſador, as he was entering the door, after half his body was in the ruins, was pulled in by his ſervants that were before him, and afterwards conducted by the Lord Chamberlain to the King.

The year following, the French King ſending for his Ambaſſador, the Marquis de Cadenet, one of the Mareſchals of France, and brother to the Duke de Luines, his favourite, with between fifty and ſixty perſons of title and diſtinction, and above 300 others, King James ordered the Earl of Arundel [t], accompanied with the Lord Hunſdon, and divers Gentlemen of the Privy-chamber, to viſit him in his Majeſty's name, at his lodging in Graveſend. The Ambaſſador not meeting his Lordſhip, till he came to the ſtair-head of his chamber, and, at his parting, accompanying him no further; the Earl of Arundel, diſpleaſed with ſuch a neglect of his quality, deſired the Maſter of the Ceremonies, the next day, to go to the Ambaſſador, and tell him, in regard his train was great, and his lodging little, he would not be troubleſome to him there, but would meet him in the ſtreet, and thence accompany him to his embarking, having brought twenty barges from London to receive him and his

[r] Camden's Annals, præd. p. 644.
[s] Sir John Finet's Obſervat. p. 63.
[t] Ibid. p. 67, 68.

train.

train. And on their arrival at Somerſet-houſe, then called Denmark-houſe (ordained for the Ambaſſador's abode) the Earl landing him at the garden-ſtairs, accompanied him no further than to the foot of the firſt ſtair aſcending to the privy-lodgings, where he took his leave, ſaying, the Gentlemen there ſhould ſhew him his lodging. "This (ſays Sir John Finet) bred much diſcourſe, "and was ſoon conveyed to the knowledge of his Majeſty, who "(ſenſible more of the cauſe given by the Ambaſſador, than of "the meaſure returned by the Earl of Arundel) ſtormed much "at it. And the Ambaſſador the next day made his excuſe to "the Lord Arundel, that his indiſpoſition in his journey, and "when he came to receive him, was the cauſe that he met him "no ſooner, nor accompanied him any further; whereupon the "difference was accommodated."

On the removal of the Lord Chancellor Bacon, in 1621, 19 Jac. I. the [u] Seal was delivered to him and three other Commiſſioners, with whom it reſted from May 3, till July 10 following: and on Aug. 29 that ſame year [x], was conſtituted Earl-Marſhal of England for life, with a penſion of 2000 l. *per annum*; having been before appointed one of the Commiſſioners for executing that office.

And thereupon reviving that honourable court, which had antiently been held by the Conſtable and Marſhal jointly, wherein remedy was given for ſuch abuſive provocations, as might occaſion no little bloodſhed by duels, or other more miſchievous ways of revenge, ſome ſcruple being made as to the juriſdiction of the Earl-Marſhal alone, without the Conſtable; he, the next enſuing year, obtained other letters patent [y], bearing date Auguſt 1, 20 Jac. I. whereby that King, after mature advice had with the Lords of his Council upon the point, did declare, that, in the vacancy of the Conſtable of England, the Earl-Marſhal had the like juriſdiction in that Court, as both Conſtable and Marſhal jointly ever exerciſed, commanding him to proceed accordingly. Which he thereupon did, with much honour to himſelf, and his authority, and to the great ſatisfaction of the Nobility and Gentry of this realm; in caſes where they received ſuch affronts and injuries, for which, by the rule of the common law, no redreſs could be had. In the ſeſſions of Parliament, 1621, Robert Lord Spencer, in the debates on the prerogative, ſpeaking with great freedom againſt the government, and citing examples from hiſtory to illuſtrate his arguments, the Earl of Arundel interrupted him, ſaying, *When thoſe things happened, my Lord, your anceſtors were keeping ſheep* [z]: to which Spencer replied, *and yours were hatching treaſon.* They were both ordered to retire: and Arundel, as the aggreſſor,

[u] Biſhop Hacket's Life of Archbiſhop Williams, part i. p. 51. [x] Pat. 19 Jac. I. p. 13. [y] Pat. 20 Jac. I. [z] Wilſon's Life of King James I.

was,

was, notwithſtanding the court-intereſt, ſent to the Tower, from which he was ſoon releaſed upon making his ſubmiſſion. During the remainder of King James's reign, his Lordſhip lived in great honour and eſteem; and either not affecting it, or rather not chuſing to come behind any Duke of a new creation, had no other addition than Earl of Arundel, and Surry.

On the acceſſion of King Charles I. to the Crown, he was continued in his office of Earl-Marſhal, and Counſellor; and at the funeral of the late King, on May 17, 1625 [a], was one of the ſupporters to his Majeſty, the chief mourner. Alſo, at the coronation of King Charles, was joined in commiſſion [b] with William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke, to make ſuch perſons Knights of the Bath, as the King ſhould then think fit to call to that dignity. He was [c] likewiſe one of the Commiſſioners, authoriſed to determine the claims exhibited concerning ſervices to be performed at the coronation: at which, on February 2, 1625-6, he attended in his place of Earl-Marſhal, and with George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, Lord High-Conſtable of England for that day, went next before his Majeſty. He had a grant (dated December 22, 1625, 1 Car. I.) of the [d] wardſhip of the body, and leaſe of the lands, of Henry Lord Stafford, during the minority of his ſaid ward; together with a fine of 500 marks impoſed upon the ſaid Lord Stafford, in the court of wards and liveries, to the King's uſe, for the ſaid lordſhips, wardſhip, and marriage.

About a year after, he fell into the King's diſpleaſure, on account of the marriage of his ſon, Henry-Frederick Lord Maltravers, with the Lady Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter of Eſme Stuart, Duke of Lennox, by the mediation of the old Dutcheſs of Lennox, his relation, and the Counteſs of Arundel, without the knowledge and conſent of his Majeſty, who deſigned her, as his own ward and kinſwoman, for Archibald Lord Lorne, afterwards Marquis of Argyle. The new-wedded couple were confined at Lambeth under the inſpection of Archbiſhop Abbot; and the Earl and Counteſs of Arundel were at firſt reſtricted to their ſeat at Horſeley in Surry [e], and afterwards ſent to the Tower. His commitment being while the Parliament was ſitting, John Williams, Biſhop of Lincoln, took notice that they wanted a member who was debarred from the houſe; and no cauſe of his commitment being expreſſed, the Peers preſented ſeveral petitions to the King to preſerve the privileges of Parliament [f]. In anſwer to one of them, his Majeſty returned this meſſage—*That the Earl of Arundel was reſtrained for a miſdemeanor, perſonal to his Majeſty, and lay in his proper knowledge, and had no relation to*

[a] Kennet's Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 4. [b] Pat. 1 Car. I. p. 5 in dorſo. [c] Ruſhworth's Collections, vol. i. p. 203, 204. [d] Rymer's Fœdera, tom. xviii. p. 248. [e] Ruſhworth, præd. p. 367. [f] Ibid.

matters

matters of Parliament. To which they [g] made a remonſtrance, aſſerting their privileges. [h] He had five proxies, which were loſt by his impriſonment; and this affair was in agitation for almoſt three months. But on Thurſday, June 8, 1626, the Lord Keeper, Sir Thomas Coventry, delivered to the Lords this meſſage [i],—*That on Saturday laſt his Majeſty ſent word to the Houſe, that, by this day, he would ſend them ſuch an anſwer concerning the Earl of Arundel, as ſhould ſatisfy them in point of privilege. And therefore to take away all diſpute, and that their privileges may be in the ſame eſtate as they were when the parliament began, his Majeſty hath taken off the reſtraint of the ſaid Earl, whereby he hath liberty to come to the Houſe.* The Earl of Arundel, upon his return to the houſe, gave their Lordſhips moſt hearty thanks for their interceſſions for him to the King; and proteſted his loyalty, and faithful ſervice unto his Majeſty: whoſe goodneſs he likewiſe acknowledged for his enlargement.

He was ſhortly after admitted to Court, and by degrees into the King's favour; and was likewiſe reconciled to the Duke of Buckingham, between whom there had been no good underſtanding: but this happened but a little before the Duke was murdered at Portſmouth, on Auguſt 24, 1628. In the year 1631, he [k] was one of the Commiſſioners appointed to examine the oppreſſions of the fees exacted in all courts and offices, civil and eccleſiaſtical, throughout England: and on June 18, 1633, waited on the King at his coronation in Scotland; where all perſons ſtrived to outvie each other in the bravery and riches of their apparel and entertainment; but this Earl kept his old plainneſs, and yet wanted not the honour and eſteem due to his perſon and quality. He [l] was alſo conſtituted Chief Juſtice of all the foreſts north of Trent. About the end of that year, he was ſent to the Queen of Bohemia in Holland, to condole the death of her huſband, which happened on November 29; being at the ſame time appointed Ambaſſador extraordinary to the States-General.

In the beginning of the year 1636, the affair of the reſtitution of the Palatinate to the Prince Elector, the King's nephew (who, at that time, with his brother Prince Rupert, were in England) being moved with probable aſſurances, given by the King's agent then at Vienna, of a good iſſue thereof; if a perſon of honour and intereſt were ſent to the Emperor, and to the diet appointed to meet that ſummer. This Earl therefore was made choice of for that embaſſy; which, out of his affection to the Queen of Bohemia, and the Palatine family, he willingly embraced. But Sir Edward Walker is of opinion [m], he was

[g] Ruſhworth, præd. p. 369, 370. [h] Whitlock, p. 6. [i] Journal Dom. Procer. [k] Hacket's Life of Archbiſhop Williams, part ii. p. 93. [l] Pat. 9 Car. I. p. 1. [m] Obſervations on L'Eſtrange's Annals, p. 344, 345.

made

made choice of for that employment, to introduce, in his abſence, Algernon Earl of Northumberland into the office of Lord High-Admiral. He began his journey about the end of March 1636, and landing in Holland, was kindly received by the Queen of Bohemia, the Prince of Orange, and the States-General. Having ſtaid a week at the Hague, he paſſed on his journey to Nuremburg, where he reſted a week, pleaſed with the beauty of the place, and the variety of paintings and other curioſities there to be ſeen. Amongſt others, he bought an excellent library, being the collection of Birkhemer, a Counſellor of the Emperor Charles V. From thence, through the Upper Palatinate, he went to Ratiſbon, where the diet was to be held. But the time being not come of that meeting, he paſſed down the Danube to Lintz, in the Upper Auſtria, where the Emperor Ferdinand II. then kept his Court; by whom he was received with much honour and reſpect; and during his reſidence there, he found the Emperor could not ſatisfy the King's deſire, and that things had been repreſented in England, otherwiſe than they truly appeared. Whereupon he diſpatched a courier for England, and being unwilling to be any longer at the Emperor's allowance, he took his leave for the preſent, and paſſed down the river to Vienna; where he waited on the Queen of Hungary, wife to the ſucceeding Emperor, Ferdinand III. and the Archduke Leopold. Thence he returned to Ratiſbon; where, having ſettled his family, and the Emperor nor Elector yet come, his curioſity led him to ſee the cities of Augſburg, Newburg, Ingolſtadt, and other places. About autumn, the Emperor, the Duke of Bavaria, the Elector of Mentz, and Commiſſioners and Deputies from the reſt met; and then the affair of the Palatinate was, by this Earl, propoſed and purſued; but yet he found no diſpoſition of ſatisfaction to his Majeſty's deſires; the main end of this aſſembly being to elect the King of Hungary King of the Romans, thereby to make way for his ſucceſſion in the Empire, to which he ſucceeded ſix months after, at the death of his father, by the name of Ferdinand III. Three months being ſpent without any progreſs in the buſineſs, the Earl took his leave of the Emperor, and Elector, and, by the ſame way he came, he returned to Holland; and thence, about the end of December, embarked for England, having ſpent nine months in this journey, and much money. He met with a moſt gracious reception from the King, it being evident he had done his beſt in this negotiation. And on February 4 following, a warrant was iſſued by Secretary Coke [n] to the Exchequer for payment of 7,262 l. without account, to the Earl of Arundel and Surry, his Majeſty's late Ambaſſador extraordinary to the Emperor of Germany; being the remainder of 19,262 l. for his extraordinary expences

[n] Ex Autog. int. Evident. apud Penſhurſt.

and diſburſements of ſeveral ends, over and above his allowance of 6l. *per diem.*

And by commiſſion in 1636, the King reciting [o], that, being reſolved to take into his own hands, and for his own uſe and benefit, all the ſalt-petre made within his kingdom of England, and dominion of Wales, and to ſell and diſtribute all ſuch powder as ſhall be made thereof, to ſuch of his ſubjects as ſhall deſire the ſame, above that which ſhall be neceſſary for his own ſervice, conſtituted the Earl of Arundel, and other five Noblemen, Commiſſioners for his ordnance: giving them power and authority to ſign warrants to the Maſter of the ordnance, for the time being, to ſell and deliver ſuch quantities of gunpowder, as ſhall be deſired by any of his ſubjects for their uſe, according to their diſcretions, or any three of them; and to pay the money, ariſing by the ſaid ſales, into the hands of the Lieutenant of the ordnance.

In 1637, the Scots being offended that a Liturgy, conformable to that of England, was, at this time, preſſed on them, began in fury to threaten their Biſhops and Miniſters, and grew to ſuch height, that, after many commiſſions and delegations, of the Marquis of Hamilton, and others, between the King and them, no way was found ſo proper, as to reduce them by arms to due obedience; and no perſon for quality, integrity, and courage, thought fitter to be employed as General againſt them, than this Earl, whoſe anceſtors had ſo often, with advantage, encountered that nation, before their union with England. Wherefore, in 1638, he was conſtituted General of the army to be raiſed and employed againſt them, conſiſting of 8,000 foot, and 2,000 horſe, beſides the auxiliaries of the northern trained-bands. He had under him the Earl of Eſſex, the Earl of Holland, the Earl of Newport, with the Earl of Pembroke, General of the King's ſervants (or Lord-Chamberlain of the houſhold) the Lord Willoughby, Captain of the King's guards. The Marquis of Hamilton was ſent with a ſeparate force, to invade Scotland by the Frith, all in a manner independent from the General, which made many doubt the event. The army rendezvouſed at Selby-upon-Ouſe in Yorkſhire, on April 10, 1639, and thence marched to a place called Birques, four miles from Berwick, where the King put himſelf at the head of it. But, after ſome ſkirmiſhes, a treaty was begun, and a peace enſuing, the army was diſmiſſed in three months from the time it was levied.

"In a commiſſion ſigned by him to Captain Slaughter, dated "March 17, 1638, he [p] uſed theſe titles, Sir Thomas Howard, "Chief of the Howards, Earl of Arundel and Surry, Firſt Earl, "and Earl-Marſhal, of England; Lord Howard, Mowbray, "Segrave, Brews of Gower, Fitz-Alan, Clun, Oſwaldeſtie,

[o] Rymer, vol. xx. p. 17. [p] MS. Not. L. 25. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis Arm.

"Mal-

" Maltravers, and Grayſtock; Chief-Juſtice, and Juſtice in " Eyre, of all his Majeſty's foreſts, parks, and chaces, be- " yond Trent; Lord Lieutenant of the counties of Norfolk, " Suſſex, Surry, Northumberland, Cumberland, and Weſt- " moreland; Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, " one of his Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-council, in all " his kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland; and Ge- " neral of all his Majeſty's forces in the preſent expedition, for " the defence of the realm, &c. &c. &c."

On the Earl's return to London, finding the King diſſatisfied with the peace his Majeſty himſelf had made, and that there was likely to be another breach with the Scots, and obſerving diſſentions among the King's Miniſters, withdrew into the country; where, as likewiſe on his return to London, he diverted himſelf with a deſign of going to plant at Madagaſcar. [q] To which purpoſe, he had ſeveral meetings with merchants, and other adventurers. This laſted till the year following, and he was ſo pleaſed with it, that the famous Sir Ant. Vandike drew this Earl and his Lady, ſitting with a terreſtrial globe between them, he, with his Marſhal's ſtaff, pointing at Madagaſcar.

In the end of the year 1639, there were new preparations for a war with the Scots, which drew on a Parliament, when this Earl, then Lord Steward of the King's houſhold, adminiſtered the oaths to the houſe of Commons the firſt day of their ſitting, on April 23, 1640.

In Auguſt next, the Scots paſſed the Tyne, and poſſeſſed themſelves of Newcaſtle. The King was then at York, and the army commanded by Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford.

In the abſence of the King, and for governing the ſouthern parts, the Earl of Arundel was made General on the ſouth of Trent, with deſign to raiſe another army to ſecond the former; but the neceſſity of calling a Parliament, and appointing it at Weſtminſter on November 3 following, gave a period to his commiſſion, and that reſolution.

No ſooner was this Parliament aſſembled, but the lives and affections of all men in authority were examined: yet this noble Earl had the felicity to be irreproveable; only the power and juriſdiction of his court, as Earl-Marſhal, was queſtioned in the houſe of Commons; but they had greater irons in the fire, and ſo it reſted. At the Earl of Strafford's trial, which began on March 22, 1640-1, this Earl ſat as High-Steward: and, in that ſtation, his Lordſhip carried himſelf with that judgment, gravity, and impartiality, as the moſt paſſionately affected to the Earl of Strafford could not but confeſs it. When the bill of attainder was paſſed againſt that unfortunate Nobleman, the King gave commiſſion to this Earl, and to the Earl of Mancheſter

[q] Sir Edward Walker, præd.

Lord Privy-Seal, to give his royal aſſent to it; together with that againſt diſſolving the Parliament without the conſent of Lords and Commons. The Earl afterwards preſented the following remonſtrance, and petition.

[r] To the KING's Moſt Excellent Majeſty.

The humble Remonſtrance, and Petition, of Thomas Earl of Arundel and Surry, Earl-Marſhal of England, &c.

Who, in all humility, ſheweth, to your moſt excellent Majeſty, That his grandfather, Thomas Howard, late Duke of Norfolk, having loſt that dutchy, by attainder in the reign of Queen Elizabeth; ſince which time your petitioner hath done the beſt ſervice he could to King James, your father, of ever bleſſed memory, and your Majeſty; for the ſpace of almoſt forty years: wherein he hath employed the beſt faculties of his mind, and pains of his body, not ſparing any expence; which he thought might be honour to your Court, or further your ſervice, both at home and abroad, in divers weighty and difficult employments. And having been all this while ſo modeſt, that he did never ſo much as make any ſuit unto your Majeſty, by himſelf, or any other, to reſtore him to the ſaid dutchy, until within this month.

He doth now hold it a moſt fit time for many weighty reaſons; and therefore, as he hath, within theſe few days, by word of mouth, beſeeched your Majeſty; ſo he doth now, by this, moſt humbly and inſtantly beſeech your Majeſty, as the fountain of honour, to reſtore him, and his family, to the ſaid dutchy of Norfolk: wherein he is the more confident of your Majeſty's grace and favour, in reſpect that neither the King, your father, of happy memory, nor yourſelf (as he remembers) have ever denied, or made difficulty (upon the humble ſuit of the party) to reſtore any Peer of this Realm to the honour loſt by his anceſtor: and ſo have diſpenſed the honours which have lain depoſited in the Crown; and thereby comforted, and encouraged the noble families, who have ſucceeded unto them; as alſo gave great ſatisfaction to all noble, worthy-diſpoſed perſons, who eſteem it both a great glory to the King, that reſtores antient families; and a ſingular contentment to the people at home and abroad; that the dignities and honours, acquired by the virtue of ſo many anceſtors, may be centered in their loins, to the ſervice and proſperity of your Majeſty and this kingdom: to which no man ſhall more faithfully contribute,

Than your Majeſty's

Moſt humble, and loyal Servant,

June 29, 1641. Arundel and Surry.

[r] MS. de Famil. de Howard, præd. p. 239.

Likewiſe ſeveral Noblemen had that regard to his Lordſhip, as to ſubſcribe the following petition to his Majeſty, on his behalf.

[s] To the KING's Moſt Excellent Majeſty.

The humble Petition of the Subſcribed,

Shewing,

With due reverence, That, whereas your Majeſty's faithful liege-man, Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundel and Surry, is the firſt of that blood; being lineally deſcended from Thomas late Duke of Norfolk, attainted in the fifteenth year of Queen Elizabeth, upon certain treaſonable allegations; which at this time we forbear to mention, for many conſiderable reaſons:

As likewiſe how the dutchy of Norfolk hath, ever ſince 1 Richard III. been annexed unto this family, both by creation, and alliance from Margaret, daughter and coheir of Thomas de Mowbray.

In conſideration whereof, ſome of your Majeſty's royal predeceſſors did, graciouſly, call ſuch of the ſame family to their former place and title, as were heretofore either maliciouſly, or unfortunately loſt:

We therefore moſt humbly ſupplicate your ſacred Majeſty, in caſe it may ſtand with your princely honour and juſtice, to reſtore the ſaid Earl of Arundel unto the precedence and dignity of his anceſtors:

And your petitioners ſhall ever pray, &c.

Hen. Bathon,	*Jo. Rochford,*
Nottingham,	*Fer. Haſtings,*
Suffolke,	*Hen. Dover,*
Lindſey,	*Mowbray,*
Huntingdon,	and
Montague,	*Matravers,*
Dorſet,	*C. Howard,*
Strange	*H. Pierrepont,*
J. Peterburgh,	*Ed. Howard.*

The King ſo far favoured theſe petitions; that, [t] by letters patent, bearing date June 6, 1644, the twentieth year of his reign, in conſideration of his ſpecial ſervices, and great merits (as recited in the patent;) as alſo in reſpect of his lineal deſcent from Thomas of Brotherton, Earl of Norfolk, ſon of King Edward I. he created his Lordſhip Earl of Norfolk, with limitation to the heirs male of his body. But Norfolk diſcerning the

[s] MS. de Famil. de Howard, præd. p. 203. [t] Pat. 20 Car. I.

cloud hanging over the nation, willingly reſigned his ſtaff of Steward of the houſhold, and reſolved to travel. His Lady took the ſame reſolution, and a fair and honourable opportunity immediately offered. For Mary de Medicis, the Queen-Mother of France, having been in England about two years, was, by the violence of the times, forced away; and the care of conducting her was committed to the Earl, which he did in July, 1641. His Counteſs then likewiſe paſſed the ſeas, and made her reſidence at Cologne, with the French Queen, who died there on July 13, 1642. The Earl ſpent ſome time at Utrecht, whither he had formerly ſent his grandchildren, ſons to his eldeſt ſon (afterwards Earl of Arundel) to be educated. In the beginning of the winter, he arrived in England; and being indiſpoſed in his health, and his Lady and grandchildren abſent, in whoſe company he placed his chief delight, he again reſolved to return to them; and had another fair occaſion offered him, with high reſpect and eſteem, to quit his country before he ſaw it ruined. The King, in the beginning of the ſummer, viz. May 2 before, had matched his eldeſt daughter, the Princeſs Mary, unto William the young Prince of Orange; and the Queen, her mother, having a deſire to abſent herſelf for a time, took this occaſion of conducting and ſettling her daughter in Holland. And this noble Peer had the honour to be the chief perſon of quality, that waited on the Queen and the Princeſs thither; embarking at Dover about the midſt of February, 1641-2, there taking leave of his native country, which he never ſaw after.

Having ſpent ſome time in Holland, he thence went to Antwerp, where he was received, and eſteemed equal to the greatneſs of his birth, and eminent qualities. At this place he and his Lady took their laſt leave of each other, the recovery of his health, and his natural love of motion, drawing him thence, only at firſt to go for the Spa; but afterwards he paſſed into France, and then into his beloved Italy, having in his company two of his grandſons, then grown up, and learned in the Latin, French, and Dutch tongues. And as he was highly honoured and eſteemed on this ſide of the Alps, he was as much, if not more, there; being the only great ſubject of the northern parts, that had, by his converſation and great collections, ſet a value on that country. Here two misfortunes fell on his family: Thomas, his eldeſt grandſon, a Gentleman of a goodly perſon and parts, was ſeized with a diſtemper of the brain; and his third grandſon, Philip, afterwards the famous Cardinal Howard, going from him to Milan, was ſeduced by an Italian Dominican frier, and became one of that Order, notwithſtanding all poſſible means uſed to prevent it. His chief comfort then remained in the hopes of his ſecond grandſon, Mr. Henry Howard, which did not deceive him, having no ſuperior, in all reſpects, of birth,

perſon,

perſon, wit, learning, and height of courage, ſays Sir Edward Walker. Thus this great Earl having, in this moving condition, ſpent four or five years abroad, he retired to Padua; where, about the end of the year 1645, his eldeſt ſon, the Lord Mowbray, viſited him.

In the year 1646, he had thoughts and intentions of returning, and had made preparations towards it; but being on the point of beginning his journey from Padua, fell ſuddenly indiſpoſed, and died on October 4, 1646, in the fifty-fifth year of his age [u]; his ſon, and grandchild, being preſent.

He was tall of ſtature, and of ſhape and proportion rather goodly than neat; his countenance was majeſtical and grave, his viſage long, his eyes large, black, and piercing, a hooked noſe, and ſome warts or moles on his cheeks: His countenance was brown, his hair thin both on his head and beard; of a ſtately preſence and gate, ſo that any man, who ſaw him, though in never ſo ordinary a habit, could not but conclude him to be a great perſon; his garb and faſhion drawing more obſervation than did the rich apparel of others; it being a common ſaying of James Hay, Earl of Carliſle, *Here comes the Earl of Arundel in his plain ſtuff, and trunk hoſe, and his beard in his teeth; that looks more like a Nobleman than any of us.* He was more learned in men and manners, than in books, yet underſtood the Latin very well, and was maſter of the Italian; and a great favourer of learned men, ſuch as Sir Robert Cotton, Sir Henry Spelman, Mr. Camden, Mr. Selden, and other antiquaries. He was a great maſter of order and ceremony, and knew and kept greater diſtance towards his Sovereign, than any perſon of that time, and expected no leſs from his inferiors; often complaining, that the too great affability of the King, and the French garb of the Court, would bring Majeſty into contempt. In Council he was grave and ſuccinct, rather diſcharging his conſcience and honour, than complying with particular intereſts; and ſo was never at the head of buſineſs, or principal in favour; contenting himſelf to be as it were the ſupporter of antient Nobility and Gentry, and to interpoſe in their behalfs. Witneſs the care he had in the education of the Earl of Oxford, and the young Lord Stafford, who were in his houſe together with his grandchildren. He wanted not a ſhare of the royal favours, as may appear by the many employments he had under King James I. and King Charles I. the former of which loved him more, and the laſt had him in greater veneration and regard (though not in intimacy of favour) he being a perſon of an auſtere diſpoſition, and not ſo complacent as other perſons that had more ends. He was the greateſt favourer of arts, eſpecially Painting, Sculpture, Deſigns, Carving, Building, and the like, that this age

[u] Mr. Edmondſon's Tables.

hath produced; his collection of deſigns being more than of any perſon living, and his ſtatues ſuperior in number, value, and antiquity, to thoſe in the houſes of moſt, if not all, Princes; to procure which, he had perſons many years employed both in Italy, Greece, and ſo generally in any parts of Europe, wherein rarities were to be had; which were by him placed in the garden, and are accurately deſcribed, in that tract of his, intituled, *Marmora Arundeliana*. His paintings likewiſe were numerous, and of the moſt excellent maſters, having more of that exquiſite painter, Hans Holben, than are in the world beſides: and he had the honour to be the firſt of the quality, that ſet a value on them in our nation. He was alſo the firſt perſon that brought in uniformity in building, and was chief Commiſſioner to ſee it performed in London, which added exceedingly to the beauty of that city. Before the commencement of the civil wars, he formed the grand deſign of delineating the Roman ſtations and roads in England, and had made conſiderable progreſs: but his drawings are unfortunately loſt, or miſlaid. He was likewiſe ſumptuous in his plate and houſhold-ſtuff, and full of ſtate and magnificence in his entertainments, eſpecially of ſtrangers; and, at his table, very free, polite, and pleaſant. He was a perſon of great and univerſal civility, but yet with that reſtriction, as forbid any to be bold, or ſaucy with him; though with thoſe whom he affected, which were lovers of ſtate, nobility, and curious arts, he was very free and converſible; but he had not many confidents or dependants; neither did he much affect to have them, they being unto great perſons both burthenſome and dangerous. He was not popular at all, nor cared for it, as liking better, by a juſt hand, than flattery, to let the common people know their diſtance, and due obſervance. Neither was he of any faction in Court or Council, eſpecially not of the French, or Puritan. He was free from covetouſneſs, and ſo much above a bribe or gratuity (for favours done) as no perſon ever durſt tempt him with one. He was a Proteſtant in religion, but no Bigot, or Puritan; and profeſſed more to affect moral virtues, than nice queſtions and controverſies. He was moſt faithful and affectionate to his Lady, indulgent to his children, and more to his grandchildren. His recreations were the care of their education, and converſation with them; overlooking his rare collections, and (when not diverted by buſineſs) pleaſing himſelf in retirement to the country. If he were defective in any thing, it was, that he could not bring his mind to his fortune; which, though great, was far too little for the vaſtneſs of his noble deſigns; yet that is pardonable, as being for the glory and ornament of his country. To conclude, this noble Earl would have appeared far more eminent, had the times he lived in been more conſonant to his diſpoſition. However, as

they

they were, he muſt, by all wiſe and noble perſons, be looked upon as the greateſt aſſertor of ſplendor and greatneſs of the Crown, and the antient honour of Nobility and Gentry, that lived in his time; and as the laſt great and excellent perſon that age of peace had bred. The Earl's corpſe was brought into England, and buried at Arundel, in Suſſex.

He had iſſue, 1. James, Lord Mowbray and Maltravers, who was made Knight of the Bath, on November 3, 1616, the day before the creation of Charles Prince of Wales; and after making the tour of France and Italy, died unmarried at Ghent in Flanders, as before related, p. 109: 2. Henry-Frederick, Lord Mowbray and Maltravers, his ſucceſſor in honours and eſtate: 3. William, anceſtor of the late Earls of Stafford, of whom more fully afterwards: 4. Thomas, 5. Gilbert, and, 6. Charles, who all three died unmarried.

The ſaid Sir William Howard, the ſecond ſurviving ſon, was one of the Knights of the Bath, made in February, 1625-6, at the coronation of King Charles I. and having wedded Mary, ſiſter and heir of Henry Stafford, Lord Stafford, the laſt heir male of the illuſtrious family of Stafford, Dukes of Buckingham, Earls of Stafford, &c. who were paternally deſcended from Hervey Bagot (a younger ſon of the family of Sir Walter-Wagſtaffe Bagot, of Blithfield in Staffordſhire, Baronet) who, in 1193, married Millicent, ſiſter, and ſole heir, to Robert de Stafford, whoſe anceſtor, Robert de Toeni, attending William Duke of Normandy in his Conqueſt of England, at the battle of Haſtings, October 14, 1066, obtained large poſſeſſions in the counties of Suffolk, Northampton, Worceſter, Lincoln, and Stafford, in reward for his ſervices; and being Governor of the caſtle of Stafford, aſſumed the ſurname of Stafford: and Hervey, the ſon of the ſaid Hervey Bagot and Millicent Stafford, relinquiſhed his own ſurname, and took that of his mother.

Sir William Howard, and his wife Mary, before-mentioned, were by letters patent, dated September 12, 1646, 16 Car. I. *1640* created Baron and Baroneſs Stafford, of Stafford-caſtle: and on November 11 following, his Lordſhip was promoted to the dignity of Viſcount Stafford. His Lordſhip's caſe is an inſtance how little innocence avails againſt the machinations and arts of deſigning men: for though he had never deviated from the ſtricteſt principles of loyalty, yet he was accuſed, with divers other worthy perſons, in October, 1678, of conſpiring againſt the life of his Sovereign. He happened to be from his own houſe, when he was ſent for; but confiding in his innocence, he voluntarily ſurrendered himſelf in two days afterwards. The fury of the times was ſuch, and the people ſo blinded with falſe zeal, that he was one of the five Peers impeached by the Houſe of Commons of being concerned in that commonly called the

Popiſh

Popiſh plot; though the diſcerning part of mankind then, and the unprejudiced ſince, looked upon it as a contrivance calculated to ſerve the nefarious views of ſome traiterous politicians. However, his Lordſhip's trial began on November 30, 1680, and after five days continuance, he was, upon the evidence of the perjured Titus Oates, and other flagitious wretches, convicted of high-treaſon, fifty-five Peers pronouncing him guilty, and thirty-one voting him not guilty. His Lordſhip being brought to the Scaffold, on December 29 following, averred his innocence to the laſt, ſolemnly proteſting, before God and man, that what the witneſſes againſt him had ſworn, was falſe; and ſubmitted to the ax with great compoſure and devotion. His fate was lamented by all good men; and his enemies were diſappointed in their ſcheme of overthrowing the Conſtitution at that time. On June 3, 1685, a bill paſſed the houſe of Peers, entitled, "An act for reverſing the attainder of William, late "Viſcount Stafford;" in the preamble to which, it was aſſerted, "That it was now manifeſt, that William, late Viſcount Staf- "ford, died innocent; and that the teſtimony, on which he "was convicted, was falſe: alſo, that it appeared by record of "the King's Bench, that one of the witneſſes was convicted of "perjury."

By his ſaid Lady, he had three ſons, and ſix daughters. The ſons were, 1. Henry, afterwards Earl of Stafford: 2. John, continuator of the line: and, 3. Francis, who being Groom of the bedchamber to King James II. when he was ordered by a meſſage from the Prince of Orange, on December 17, 1688, at one in the morning, to remove from Whitehall, attended his Maſter into France, and dying at Paris, in 1692, leaving by Eleanor, his wife, daughter of Henry Stanford, of New Inn in Staffordſhire, Eſq; a ſon, Henry, who wedded —— daughter of Bartholomew Berkeley, of Speckley in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; but died without iſſue.

Of the ſix daughters of William Viſcount Stafford, and his ſaid Lady, Alathea, Urſula, and Mary, were nuns; Iſabella, the ſecond, was the third wife of John Powlett, fifth Marquis of Wincheſter; Anaſtaſia, the fifth, was married to George Holman, of Warkworth in the county of Northampton, Eſq; and Helena, the youngeſt, died ſoon after ſhe was born.

Henry, the eldeſt ſon of William Viſcount Stafford, in conſideration of his father's ſufferings, and his noble deſcent, was, by King James II. created Earl of Stafford, by letters patent, dated October 5, 1688, 4 Jac. II. with remainder, for want of iſſue male, to John and Francis, his brothers, and their heirs male reſpectively. By the ſame patent, Mary, his mother, was made Counteſs of Stafford for life, and his ſiſters were allowed the rank of daughters of an Earl of England, and to uſe

and bear the ſurname of Stafford. This Henry Earl of Stafford retiring, in 1688, with his Sovereign into France, was, on April 3, 1694, married at St. Germain's in Leye, to Claude Charlotte, eldeſt daughter of Philibert Count of Gramont, by Elizabeth his wife (daughter of Sir George Hamilton, great-grandfather of James, ſeventh Earl of Abercorn in Scotland, and ſecond Viſcount Strabane in Ireland) but had no iſſue by her; and dying on April 19, 1719, was ſucceeded by William, ſon of his brother John Stafford-Howard.

The ſaid John Stafford-Howard married, firſt, Mary, daughter of Sir John Southcote, of Muſtham in Surry, Knt. and, ſecondly, Thereſia, daughter of Robert Strickland, Eſq; By the firſt he was father of William, ſecond Earl of Stafford; John-Paul Stafford-Howard, fourth Earl of Stafford; Mary, wedded to Francis Plowden, of Plowden in Shropſhire, Eſq; Xavaria, and Louiſa, both nuns. By his ſecond wife, he had a ſon, Edward, and a daughter, Harriot.

William, ſecond Earl of Stafford, married his couſin, Anne, daughter of George Holman, and his Lady Anaſtaſia, before-mentioned: and by her Ladyſhip, who died on May 21, 1725, he had William-Matthias, his ſucceſſor, as third Earl of Stafford; Lady Mary, wedded the Count of Chabot, of the houſe of Rohan, in France; and the Ladies Anaſtaſia and Anne, both nuns at Paris. His Lordſhip dying in France, in January, 1733-4, had ſepulture in the church of Notre Dame in Paris: and his Lady ſurvived him till September 19, 1754, when ſhe departed this life at Twickenham in Middleſex.

William-Matthias, his only ſon, third Earl of Stafford, married Henrietta, daughter of Richard Cantillon, Eſq; but dying on February 28, 1750-1, without iſſue by her (who took to her ſecond huſband Robert Maxwell, now Earl of Farnham in Ireland) the honours and eſtate devolved on John-Paul Stafford-Howard, his uncle, before-mentioned, ſecond ſon of John Stafford-Howard and Mary Southcote, his wife.

The ſaid John-Paul Stafford-Howard, fourth Earl of Stafford, wedded, in 1738, Elizabeth, daughter of —— Ewen, of —— in the county of Somerſet; but departing this life, without iſſue, on April 2, 1762, the male line of this noble branch of the illuſtrious houſe of Howard expired with him.

We now return to the eldeſt ſon, Henry-Frederick, Lord Mowbray and Maltravers, who was Earl of Arundel, Norfolk, &c. on his father's deceaſe. He married, in the ſecond year of K. Charles I. the Lady Elizabeth Stuart, eldeſt daughter of Eſme Earl of March, afterwards Duke of Lennox; but being married without his Majeſty's conſent, he and his Lady were confined (as ſaid before) at Lambeth, under the care of Archbiſhop Abbot. But, on his father's coming into favour with the King, he was called

called up by writ on March 21, 1639, 15 Car. I. to the Houſe of Peers, and took his place there accordingly, by the title of Lord Mowbray. On the bill of attainder of Thomas Earl of Strafford being brought, from the Commons, to the Houſe of Peers, his Lordſhip [x] gave his vote againſt it, and was ſteady in his adherence to the King. And ſoon after (as obſerved by the Earl of Clarendon [y]) "At a Committee of the Houſe of "Lords in the afternoon, in ſome debate, paſſion aroſe between "the Earl of Pembroke, who was then Lord Chamberlain of "the houſhold, and the Lord Mowbray, eldeſt ſon of the Earl "of Arundel; and from angry and diſdainful words, an offer, "or attempt of blows was made: for which miſdemeanor they "were the next day both ſent to the Tower by the Houſe of "Lords. The King, taking advantage of this miſcarriage, "and having been incenſed by the carriage of the Earl of Pem-"broke, ſent to him for his ſtaff, and beſtowed it upon the Earl "of Eſſex."

In 1642, he waited on his Majeſty at York, and was with thoſe Peers, who, on June 13, the ſame year, ſubſcribed, "To "obey no orders or commands whatſoever, not warranted by "the known laws of the land; and to defend his Majeſty's "Perſon, Crown, and Dignity, together with his juſt and legal "Prerogatives, againſt all perſons and power whatſoever, &c." [z] "He was alſo among thoſe Lords, who atteſted, that they had "been witneſſes of his Majeſty's frequent and earneſt declara-"tions, of abhorring all deſigns of making war upon his Par-"liament, &c." Which teſtimonies, with the names of the Lords and Counſellors, who ſubſcribed thereto, were, with their conſent, immediately printed, and carefully divulged over the kingdom. He attended on his Majeſty, and was at Oxford [a] on November 1, 1642, when he was created Maſter of Arts, with James Duke of York; ſo that it is very probable he was at the battle of Edge-Hill. It is certain, his Lordſhip [b] faithfully adhered to the King, ſerving as a volunteer in his army till the year 1645; about the end of which year, being ſent for by his father, he repaired to him at Padua; and, after ſome ſtay, was on the point of beginning his journey homewards. But his fa-ther (who reſolved to follow him) falling ſuddenly indiſpoſed, induced him to defer ſetting out till he ſaw the iſſue of his ill-neſs, and in a few days he deceaſed. Whereupon his Lordſhip immediately gave orders for embalming his remains, and came over with them to England, where he found the King's affairs in a deplorable condition; Oxford ſurrendered; and his Majeſty obliged to fly to the Scots.

[x] Sir Edward Walker's Hiſtorical Diſ. p. 219. [y] Hiſtory of Rebellion, 8vo. vol. i. p. 263. [z] Ibid. vol. ii. p. 564, 565, 566. [a] Wood's Faſti Oxon. vol. ii. p. 4 & 7. [b] Walker, ut antea, p. 221.

By

By the death of his father, on October 4, 1646, he was Earl of Arundel, &c. and heir to his great eſtate; but the Parliament had taken poſſeſſion of it, ſo that, with difficulty, he ſubſiſted, till the Commons, on November 24, 1648, voted, "That the "Earl of Arundel ſhould be admitted to the compoſition of his "eſtate for 6,000l. in regard he had ſuffered loſſes by the Par- "liament's forces; and that the 6,000l. ſhould be paid for the "uſe of the navy."

He afterwards lived retired, and departed this life [c] at his houſe in Arundel-ſtreet in the Strand, on April 7, 1652. He had iſſue by his Lady, Elizabeth, before mentioned [d], nine ſons, and three daughters, whereof Lady Anne died young; Lady Catherine was married to John Digby, of Gothurſt, in com. Buck. Eſq; and Lady Elizabeth, to Sir Alexander Macdonnel, Baronet (great-grandſon of Sir James Macdonnel, brother to Randal Earl of Antrim, in Ireland) to whom ſhe bore a ſon Randal, who died without iſſue, and was ſucceeded in the Baronetage by his uncle Randal.

The ſons were, 1. Thomas, his ſucceſſor in honours and eſtate; of whom hereafter.

2. Henry Howard, heir to his brother Thomas.

3. Philip, who was Lord Almoner to Queen Catherine, conſort of Charles II. and was a Cardinal of the church of Rome. Wood, in his Athenæ Oxonienſes, vol. i. p. 238, gives this account of him. "He was born in Arundel-houſe, London, "in 1629, and there educated till he was fourteen years of age; "and, travelling with his grandfather, Thomas Earl of Arun- "del, into Italy, became a Dominican at Cremona. After "ſeveral years ſpent there, he returned into England, and up- "on the marriage of King Charles II. became Lord Almoner "to his Queen, and continued in her ſervice ſeveral years; till "on the nation's being exaſperated againſt Popery, he quitted "that ſervice, went to Bornheim in Flanders; where he had "a Cardinal's cap ſent him by Pope Clement X. in the month "of May, 1675, and was generally ſtiled, *The Cardinal of* "*Norfolk*, and by ſome, *The Cardinal of England*. He after- "wards went through Flanders to Doway, and from thence to "Paris, where he continued ſome time incognito; and at "length, with ſome of the Nobility his relations, and other "perſons of quality, journeying to Rome, he there made a "public entry."

Biſhop Burnet ſays [e], he was treated by him, 1685, with great freedom, and that he was a very good-natured man; "That he told him, all the advices writ over from thence to

[c] Ex Collect. MS. per Greg. King, Lanc. Fecial. [d] Ex Collect. Car. Townley, Clarenc. Reg. Armor. [e] Hiſtory of his own Time, 8vo. vol. ii. p. 352, 353, 354.

"England,

" England, were for ſlow, calm, and moderate courſes. He " ſaid, he wiſhed he was at liberty to ſhew me the copies of " them: but he ſaw violent courſes were more acceptable, and " would probably be followed, which were the production of " England, far different from the councils of Rome. He alſo " ſpoke with great ſenſe of the proceedings in France, which " he apprehended would have very ill conſequences in England, " &c. He lived to the ſixty-fifth year of his age[f], and died " at Rome, on June 16, 1694."

Charles Howard, fourth ſon[g], married Mary, eldeſt daughter and co-heir of George Tatterſhall, of Finchampſtead in Berkſhire, Eſq; by Mary his wife, daughter of Henry Aſtell, of Baſledon in the ſame county, Eſq; She died on November 7, 1695, and having had iſſue two ſons, Charles Howard, and Henry, who died young. Charles, their father, departed this life on March 31, 1713, having been ſeated at Greyſtock, in the county of Cumberland, which devolved on him by ſettlement of Henry-Frederick Earl of Arundel, his father. On his deceaſe, Charles Howard, Eſq; his eldeſt ſon, became ſeated at Greyſtock, and dying poſſeſſed thereof on June 10, 1720[h], was buried at Darking in Surry, as were his ſpouſe (who died on October 2, 1747) his father, and mother. He had to wife Mary, daughter and coheir of John Aylward, Eſq; deſcended from the Aylwards of the county of Waterford, in the kingdom of Ireland, by whom he had iſſue three ſons and three daughters, Mary and Catherine, who died in France unmarried, and Frances. And of the three ſons, Henry the eldeſt, and Thomas the third ſon, died unmarried. The ſecond ſon and heir, Charles Howard, Eſq; of Greyſtock, in 1739, married Catherine, daughter of John Brockholes, of Clayton, in com. Pal. Lanc. Eſq; by Mary, eldeſt daughter and coheir of Michael Johnſton of Twiſel, in the county of Northumberland, Eſq; who wedded Mary, daughter and heir of William Eure, of the city of Durham, Eſq; ſecond and only ſurviving ſon of Sir William Eure, of Bradley in the Biſhopric of Durham, Knt. by Catherine, ſole daughter and heir of Sir William Bowes, by Mary, only daughter of Henry Lord Scrope, of Bolton, Knight of the Garter. The ſaid Charles Howard, of Greyſtock, and his wife Catherine, have iſſue Charles Howard, born on March 15, 1745, and a daughter, Mary, born in June, 1742.

Talbot Howard, fifth ſon, died on February 1, 1634, unmarried; and Edward ſixth ſon, Francis ſeventh ſon, alſo died unmarried.

Bernard Howard, the eighth ſon[i], had to wife Catherine, ſecond daughter of George Tatterſhall, of Finchampſtead in

[f] Ex Collect. Car. Townley, præd. [g] Ibid. [h] Ibid. [i] Ex Collect. Car. Townley, præd.

Berkſhire,

Berkſhire, Eſq; and ſiſter to the wife of his brother Charles; and ſhe was the widow of Sir Richard Lichford, of Darking in Surry, Knt. The ſaid Bernard Howard had iſſue by her three daughters, Elizabeth, Mary, and Catherine, who all became Nuns at Bruxelles; and one only ſon, Bernard Howard, who married Anne, daughter of Chriſtopher Roper, Lord Teynham, by whom he had iſſue Bernard Howard, who died unmarried; Henry Howard; Thomas, third ſon, who died unmarried; and Charles Howard, fourth ſon. Anne, the eldeſt daughter of the ſaid Bernard and Anne, became Abbeſs of the Engliſh Nuns at Paris; and Mary, ſecond daughter, died young.

Eſme, ninth ſon of Henry-Frederick Earl of Arundel, &c. married, and had iſſue, Elizabeth, only child and heir.

I now return to Thomas (ſon and heir to Henry Earl of Arundel) who was Earl of Arundel, Surry, and Norfolk, &c. Which Earl, on the humble petition of James Earl of Suffolk, Thomas Earl of Berkſhire, William Viſcount Stafford, Charles Lord Howard of Charlton, Edward Lord Howard of Eſcrick, Henry, ſecond ſon to the late Earl of Arundel, Surry, and Norfolk, and Charles Howard of Naworth, all lineally deſcended from Thomas Duke of Norfolk, attainted in 15 Eliz. and other of the Engliſh Nobility, to the number of ninety-one in the whole, through the ſpecial grace and favour of King Charles II. obtained a ſpecial act in the Parliament begun at Weſtminſter, 8 Maii, 1664, 13 Car. II. for his reſtoration unto the title of Duke of Norfolk, and to the heirs male of his body; with limitation thereof to the heirs male of the ſaid Henry, late Earl of Arundel, Surry, and Norfolk, with divers other remainders; and all privileges, precedencies, and pre-eminencies, thereunto belonging, as fully, amply, and honourably, as the ſaid Thomas Duke of Norfolk did, or might at any time before the ſaid attainder, hold and enjoy the ſame. Afterwards, travelling into Italy, his Grace died at Padua unmarried, on December 1, 1677 [k], whereby the honours and eſtate deſcended to Henry his brother.

See Journ. Dom. Proc. Rev. H. Cha. 2.

Which Henry, ſixth Duke of Norfolk, &c. was born on July 12, 1628, and deſirous of improving his natural abilities by travel, ſet out from London on February 21, 1664, with his brother Edward, to ſee Conſtantinople; being invited thereto by his intimate correſpondent, Count Leſley, whom the Emperor Ferdinand III. nominated his Ambaſſador extraordinary to the Grand Seignior Ibraim, for the ſettling and eſtabliſhing the peace agreed on by the Miniſters of each ſtate. His Lordſhip was received in every city and town, through which he paſſed in his way to Vienna, with all honours due to his birth

[k] Ex Collect. Greg. King, Lanc. Fecial.

and

and fortune. At Vienna, he was introduced to his Imperial Majeſty, and had the honour of partaking, with the Emperor and Empreſs, in ſome public diverſions, &c. as contained in *A relation of a journey of the right honourable my Lord Henry Howard, from London to Vienna, and thence to Conſtantinople, in the company of Count Leſley, Knight of the Order of the Golden Fleece, &c.* London, printed. His Lordſhip returned to England in 1665, and on June 5, 1668, was created Doctor of the Civil law at Oxford [l], having been a munificent benefactor to that Univerſity, by beſtowing thereon *Marmora Arundeliana*, or the marbles, which, for ſome years, had ſtood in the garden of Arundel-houſe, London [m], and are indiſputably the beſt documents extant for illuſtrating the hiſtory of Greece. Alſo his two ſons, Henry and Thomas, of Magdalen-college, were, at the ſame time, created Maſters of Arts. "And, in the life-"time of his brother, his Lordſhip, in conſideration [n] of his "eminent ſervices, performed by his noble father and grandfa-"ther to King Charles I. and to the Crown of England, both "here and abroad, to their great peril and coſts; as alſo of "his own perſonal ſervices to King Charles II. in the times of "the uſurpation, when he was neceſſitated to be in foreign "parts, in a baniſhed condition, was advanced by letters "patents, bearing date 27 Martii, 1669, 21 Car. II. to the "dignity of a Baron of this realm, by the title of Lord Howard, "of Caſtle-Riſing, in com. Norf." Likewiſe by other letters patent, bearing date October 19, 1672, 24 Car. II. [o] was created Earl of Norwich to him and the heirs male of his body: Alſo, by the ſame patent, had granted to him the office and dignity of Earl-Marſhal of England, with all rights, &c. thereunto belonging, to him and the heirs male of his body: and for default of ſuch iſſue, to the heirs male of the body of Thomas Earl of Arundel, Surry, and Norfolk, grandfather of the ſaid Henry Lord Howard: and in default of ſuch iſſue, to the heirs male of the body of Henry Howard, Earl of Arundel, Surry, and Norfolk, ſon and heir of the ſaid Thomas Earl of Arundel, &c. (in which remainder is the preſent Charles Howard, of Greyſtock, Eſq; grandſon of Charles, fourth ſon of the ſaid Henry Earl of Arundel, &c. and, next to him, Henry Howard, and Charles Howard his brother, and grandſons of Bernard, eighth ſon of the ſaid Henry Earl of Arundel:) and for default of ſuch iſſue, to the heirs male of Thomas, late Earl of Suffolk; in default to the heirs male of the body of the Lord William Howard, of Naworth in the county of Cumberland, youngeſt ſon of Thomas Duke of Norfolk (beheaded in 15 Elizabeth.)

[l] Wood's Faſti Oxon. vol. ii. p. 846. [m] Ibid. [n] Pat. 21 Car. II. [o] Pat. 24. Car. II.

And

And in default of ſuch iſſue, to Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham, and the heirs male of his body.

Which Henry Howard, ſo created Earl of Norwich, and Earl-Marſhal, became (on the death of Thomas his brother, December 1, 1677) ſixth Duke of Norfolk, and was introduced into the Houſe of Peers, January 5 enſuing. His Grace married, to his firſt wife, the Lady Anne, eldeſt daughter to Edward Somerſet, Marquis of Worceſter, by Elizabeth his firſt wife, daughter of Sir William Dormer, Knt. ſon and heir of Robert Lord Dormer; and by her (who died in 1662) had iſſue two ſons, and three daughters, hereafter mentioned. His Grace, by his ſecond wife, Jane (who died on Auguſt 28, 1693) daughter of Robert Bickerton, Eſq;[p] ſon of James Bickerton, Lord of Caſh in the Kingdom of Scotland, had iſſue four ſons, and three daughters: Lord George Howard, who married Arabella, daughter and ſole heir to Sir Edmund Allen, of Hatfield-Peverel in the county of Eſſex, Bart. widow of Francis Thompſon, of Humbleton in the county of York, Eſq; but died without iſſue, on March 6, 1720-1: Lord James Howard, who died unmarried on Auguſt 12, 1702, being unfortunately drowned, attempting to ride over Sutton-Waſh in Lincolnſhire: Lord John, who died an infant: Lord Frederick Howard, who was born after his father's deceaſe . . . September 1684, and marrying Catherine, daughter to Sir Francis Blake, of the county of Oxford, Knt. relict of Sir Richard Kennedy, of Mount-Kennedy in Ireland, Bart. by her had a daughter, Elizabeth, married to Sir William Dudley, of Clopton in Northamptonſhire, Bart. who died on March 16, 1726-7, his Lady ſurviving him until January 22, 1731-2: Lady Catherine, and Lady Anne, who were both Nuns in Flanders; Lady Philippa, who was born in 1678, and married to Ralph Standiſh, of Standiſh in the county of Lancaſter, Eſq; and died on April 5, 1731, having had ſeveral ſons and daughters by him, whereof Cecilia was the wife of William Towneley, of Towneley in com. Pal. Lanc. Eſq; ſon and heir of Richard Towneley, of Towneley, by Mary his wife, daughter of William Lord Widrington.

The Duke's daughters, by his firſt wife, were, Lady Anne-Alathea, who died in her infancy; Lady Elizabeth, who was married to Alexander Gordon, Marquis of Huntley, afterwards created Duke of Gordon, in Scotland, and died in 1732; and Lady Frances, married to the Marquis Valpareſa, a Spaniſh Nobleman in Flanders. His ſons were Henry, his ſucceſſor, and Lord Thomas. And his Grace, departing this life aged fifty-five years, at his houſe in Arundel-ſtreet, on January 11, 1683-4, was ſucceeded by his ſaid eldeſt ſon Henry, born on Jan. 11, 1653-4.

[p] Wood's Faſti, vol. ii. p. 846.

Which Henry, ſeventh Duke of Norfolk, was [q] of Magdalen-College, in Oxford, under the inſpection of Dr. Henry Yerbury, and the degree of Maſter of Arts was conferred on him in 1668. In his father's life-time, he was ſummoned to Parliament, Jan. 27, 1677-8, by the title of Lord Mowbray, and next day, being introduced into the Houſe of Peers [r], took his place at the upper end of the Barons bench. On the death of Prince Rupert, he was, in December, 1682 [s], conſtituted Conſtable and Governor of the caſtle of Windſor, and Warden of the foreſt of Windſor; alſo Lord Lieutenant of Berkſhire, and Surry. Likewiſe, on the deceaſe of his father, was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of the county of Norfolk; and, ſucceeding to his honours, was alſo Earl-Marſhal of England. On the acceſſion of James II. to the Throne, he ſigned the order, dated at Whitehall, on February 6, 1684-5, for proclaiming him King of England, &c. And by his Majeſty's being Sovereign of the Order of the Garter, his ſtall, as Duke of York, was vacant; whereupon his Grace, at a chapter held at Whitehall, May 6, 1685, was elected a Knight Companion of that moſt noble Order; and was inſtalled, at Windſor, on July 22 the ſame year. He was, that ſame year, appointed Colonel of the twelfth regiment of foot: but, on May 6, 1686, reſigned his command, which was given to Edward-Henry Lee, Earl of Litchfield. Biſhop Burnet [x] relates, That the King giving the Duke of Norfolk the ſword of ſtate, to carry before him to the chapel, he went with it as far as the door, and there ſtood; upon which the King ſaid to him, *My Lord, your father would have gone further:* to which the Duke anſwered, *Your Majeſty's father was the better man, and he would not have gone ſo far.*

His Grace obtained a commiſſion under the Great-Seal, on the 13th of Auguſt, 1687, 3 Jac. II. whereby, as Earl-Marſhal of England, he was empowered to revive and hold a court of chivalry, &c. [y] And ſetting out for France on the 24th of March following, conſtituted his brother, the Lord Thomas Howard, his Lieutenant in the court of chivalry, and Sir Thomas Exton, and Sir Richard Raines, Surrogates. His Grace returned to England by the way of Flanders [z], July 30, 1688; and joined in the invitation of the Prince of Orange. In November following, he was among the Proteſtant Lords, in London, who, with the Archbiſhops of Canterbury and York, and others of the Biſhops, drew up a petition, wherein they repreſented to the King, "The deep ſenſe they had of the miſeries of a war,

[q] Wood's Faſti, vol. ii. p. 846. [r] Journal Dom. Procer. [s] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 397. [x] Hiſtory of his own Time, 8vo. vol. ii. p. 381. [y] Journal, MS. per Gregor. King, Lanc. Fecial. [z] Ibid.

"now

" now breaking out in the bowels of the kingdom, &c. and " that, in their opinions, the only viſible way to preſerve his " Majeſty, and his kingdoms, would be the calling of a Par- " liament, *regular* and *free* in all reſpects. Therefore they " earneſtly beſeeched his Majeſty to call ſuch a Parliament " with all ſpeed, wherein they ſhould be moſt ready to pro- " mote ſuch counſels and reſolutions of *peace* and *ſettlement* in " church and ſtate, as might conduce to his Majeſty's honour " and ſafety, and to the quieting the minds of his people, &c." [a] The Duke of Norfolk, the Marquis of Halifax, the Earls of Oxford, and of Nottingham, and the Lord Carbery, deſired it might be inſerted in the petition, *That the Peers, who had joined the Prince of Orange, might ſit in that free Parliament.* But the other Lords thought that clauſe needleſs, and it was left out. It was preſented on Nov. 17, 1688, to the King, who in his anſwer told them, *He would have a Parliament, and ſuch an one as they aſked for, as ſoon as the Prince of Orange quitted the realm, &c.* The King, the ſame day, began his journey towards Saliſbury, to put himſelf at the head of his army. Whereupon his Grace ſet out for his ſeat in Norfolk, and immediately declared for the Prince of Orange, and brought over that, and ſome of the neighbouring counties, to his intereſt; and raiſed a regiment, which was afterwards ſent into Ireland, for the reduction of that kingdom to the obedience of the Crown of England.

His Grace came with the Prince of Orange to St. James's on December 18; and, on December 21, was among the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, who waited on his Highneſs, deſiring him to call a free Parliament, and to purſue the ends of his *declaration.* Alſo, the next day, he was among the Peers, who met on that extraordinary conjuncture, and appointed Francis Gwyn, Eſq; for them, and in their names, to ſign and ſubſcribe ſuch orders, as ſhall be from time to time by them made. His Grace voted for the ſettlement of the Crown on the Prince and Princeſs of Orange [c], who were proclaimed King and Queen on Aſh-Wedneſday, February 13, 1688-9; and the next day, their Majeſties ſummoning a Privy-council [d], his Grace was ſworn thereof. He alſo was continued Conſtable and Governor of his Majeſty's royal caſtle and honour of Windſor, Lord Warden of New Foreſt, Lord Lieutenant of the counties of Norfolk, Surry, and Berkſhire, of the city of Norwich, and county of the ſame; as alſo Cuſtos Rotulorum of the ſaid counties. At the funeral of Queen Mary, on March 5, 1694-5, he was the firſt ſupporter of her Majeſty's pall. His Grace, in 1677, wedded Lady Mary, daughter and ſole heir of Henry Mordaunt,

[a] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 529. [c] Hiſtory of England, ut antea, p. 544. [d] Ibid. p. 550.

Earl of Peterborough, but having reaſon to be offended at her conduct, he ſeparated himſelf from her about a week before Michaelmas, 1685, and in 1695 moved for an act of Parliament for diſſolving his marriage with her, and allowing him to marry again: but the bill miſcarried then. However, in the ſeſſion of Parliament, which began at Weſtminſter, November 16, 1699, his Grace again moved for a bill in the Houſe of Peers, *to diſſolve his marriage with the Lady Mary Mordaunt, and to enable him to marry again*; which, in a few days, paſſed both houſes (but not without a proteſt) and had the royal aſſent on April 11, 1700. But the Duke did not marry again; and, after his deceaſe, ſhe took Sir John Germain to her huſband, who, by her will, became, at her death, Nov. 16, 1705, poſſeſſed of her eſtate, and erected a fine monument to her memory at Luſwick St. Peter's in Northamptonſhire, where ſhe lies buried. At the funeral of William Duke of Glouceſter, Auguſt 9, 1700, in Weſtminſter-Abbey, his Grace was chief mourner, his ſupporters being the Dukes of Ormond and Northumberland. And departing this life at his houſe in St. James's Square, in the forty-eighth year of his age, on April 2, 1701, without iſſue, was [g] buried on the eighth of the ſame month, in Arundel-church, in Suſſex. I ſhall now treat of his brother, the Lord Thomas Howard, whoſe eldeſt ſon, Thomas, ſucceeded to his Grace's honours and eſtate.

The ſaid Lord Thomas Howard, at the coronation of King James II. April 23, 1686, as Lord of the manor of Workſop, in com. Nott. claimed to find the King a right-hand glove, and ſupport the King's right arm, whilſt he held the ſcepter; which being allowed, he accordingly performed that ſervice. In 1686, he was made Maſter of the robes to King James, and, being of the Romiſh religion, was in great eſteem at Court; ſo that, on the recalling Roger Palmer, Earl of Caſtlemain, he was ſent Ambaſſador to Rome [h], and ſet out from London on his journey thither, on Tueſday, June 12, 1688. He continued there till King James left England; when, repairing to him in France, he ſoon after came to London, and from thence went to Ireland, and, returning to France, was ſhipwrecked, on November 9, 1689. He married Elizabeth-Maria, daughter and ſole heir of Sir John Savile, of Copley in com. Ebor. Bart. and by her (who died on December 10, 1732) had iſſue five ſons, Thomas, Henry, Edward, Richard, and Philip; alſo a daughter, Mary, who was married to Walter Lord Aſton, of Forfar, in Scotland, and died in 1723. Of the ſons, Henry, the ſecond, died unmarried, on November 22, 1720; and Richard, the fourth, deceaſed alſo unmarried; Thomas, the eldeſt, was

[g] Leneve's Monument. Angl. p. 30. [h] Journal of Greg. King, Lancaſter Herald, MS.

Duke

Duke of Norfolk, and Edward is now Duke of Norfolk, of whom I ſhall further treat; Philip, the youngeſt ſon, on January 7, 1724-5, married, firſt, Winifrede, daughter of Thomas Stonor, of Watlington-park in the county of Oxford, Eſq; by whom he had iſſue a ſon, named Thomas, who was born on February 4, 1727-8, and died on January 11, 1763, and a daughter Winifrede, who was born on Auguſt 31, 1726, and in October, 1749, was married to the Hon. William Stourton, brother to Charles Lord Stourton, whom he ſucceeded. On the deceaſe of his firſt wife, February 3, 1730-1, he, ſecondly, married, in 1739, Henrietta, daughter of Edward Blount, of Blagdon in com. Devon, Eſq; (ſiſter to the preſent Dutcheſs of Norfolk, and widow of Peter Proli, of Antwerp, Eſq;) by whom he had iſſue Anne, born on Auguſt 29, 1742, and married to Robert Edward, Lord Petre, on April 19, 1762; and Edward, born on January 22, 1743-4. Their father died at his houſe, in Upper Groſvenor-ſtreet, on February 23, 1749-50.

I now return to Thomas, the eldeſt ſon, who, upon the death of his uncle Henry, April 2, 1701, became eighth Duke of Norfolk. He was born on Decemb. 11, 1683, and on May 26, 1709, his Grace was married to Mary, daughter and ſole heir of Sir Nicholas Shireburn, of Stonyhurſt in the county-palatine of Lancaſter, Bart. and died without iſſue on December 23, 1732, at his houſe in St. James's Square, leaving his Dutcheſs ſurviving, who deceaſed on September 24, 1754.

His brother Edward, thereupon, became the ninth Duke of Norfolk, and is the eleventh in paternal deſcent from his great anceſtor, John Howard, the firſt Duke. When the young Chevalier was advancing, in 1745, with his followers to Derby, the Duke and Dutcheſs of Norfolk retired from their ſeat of Worksop in Nottinghamſhire, and upon their arrival at London, on December 6, waited upon his Majeſty at St. James's, where they were moſt graciouſly received. Since the acceſſion of the preſent King, their Graces have been frequently at Court.

His Grace, on November 6, 1727, married Mary, ſecond daughter and coheir of Edward Blount, of Blagdon in the county of Devon, Eſq; third ſon of Sir John Blount, of Sodington in Worceſterſhire, Bart.[k] lineally deſcended from Sir Walter Blount, who, in the reign of King Edward I. married Joan, daughter and ſole heir of Sir William de Sodington in that county; of which family was Robert le Blund, as the name was wrote at the time of the general ſurvey (made in 14 William the Conqueror[l]) who was poſſeſſed of thirteen Lordſhips in Suffolk. And contemporary with him was William le Blund

[k] Ex Stemmate de Famil. Blount. [l] Doomſday, Lib. in Scac.

(probably his brother) who likewiſe [m] held (as appears by the ſaid ſurvey) ſix Lordſhips in the county of Lincoln. His Grace has no iſſue.

His Grace hath precedence of all other Dukes, not only by his creation, but likewiſe in reſpect of his office, as hereditary Earl-Marſhal of England (by grant to Henry Duke of Norfolk, 24 Charles II. as before obſerved) and takes place with the Lord Great Chamberlain, Lord Great Conſtable (but after them) and Lord High-Admiral of England, Lord Steward, and Lord Chamberlain of the King's houſhold, next after the Lord Privy-Seal; and above all other perſonages, being of the ſame eſtate and degree. His Grace's TITLES are,

The High, Puiſſant, and moſt Noble Prince, Edward Howard, Duke of Norfolk, Earl-Marſhal, and Hereditary Earl-Marſhal of England, Earl of Arundel, Surry, Norfolk, and Norwich; Baron of Mowbray, Howard, Segrave, Brewſe of Gower (in Caermarthenſhire) Fitz-Alan, Warren, Clun, Oſwaldeſtre, Maltravers, Greyſtock, Furnival, Verdon, Lovetot, Strange (of Blackmere) and Howard, of Caſtle Riſing; Primier Duke, Earl, and Baron of England, next the Blood-Royal; and Chief of the Illuſtrious Family of the Howards.

CREATIONS.] Baron Howard, by writ of ſummons to Parliament, October 15 (1470) 10 Edward IV. alſo Aug. 19, 1472, 12 Edw. IV. Earl-Marſhal, and Duke of Norfolk, and Earl of Surry, June 28 (1483) 1 Richard III. confirmed Earl of Surry, Nov. 3 (1492) 8 Henry VII. and again May 13 (1509) 1 Hen. VIII. again Earl of Surry and Duke of Norfolk, Feb. 1 (1513) 5 Hen. VIII. Earl of Arundel in the county of Suſſex [a feudal honour, or local dignity, as adjudged in Parliament, July 8 (1433) 11 Hen. VI.] by inheritance and poſſeſſion of that caſtle only, without any other creation; alſo by ſummons to Parliament, Jan. 16, 1580, 23 Eliz. By deſcent originally, as well before, as after the Conqueſt, by King William I. and by Maud the Empreſs (temp. Steph.) confirmed by K. Hen. II. and alſo, June 27 (1189) 1 Rich. I. Earl of Norfolk, June 6 (1644) 20 Car. I. Duke of Norfolk by act of Parliament, with an entail on the heirs male, and divers limitations, May 8 (1661) 13 Car. II. Baron Howard, of Caſtle-Riſing, in com. Norfolk, March 27 (1669) 21 Car. II. Earl of Norwich, and hereditary Earl-Marſhal, October 19 (1672) 24 Car. II. Baron Mowbray, by writ of ſummons to Parliament, March 6 (1678) 31 Car. II. and likewiſe March 21 (1639) 15 Car. I. By deſcent originally, June 8 (1294) 22 Edward I.

ARMS.] Gules, in the middle of a Bend between ſix Croſs Croſlets, fitchée, Argent, a Shield, Or, therein a demi Lion rampant (pierced through the mouth with an Arrow) within a double

[m] Doomſday, Lib. in Scac.

Earldom of Arundel.

~~1 — As~~ in Wm. de Albini the 2d. See 1. Dugd. 118. 119.
From him it passed in 10. H. 3. to his brother Hugh de
Albini. Upon his death the family possessions
descended upon his two sisters. Ibid. 315. — 2. Isabel the
2d. sister of William & Hugh de Albini marr.d
John Fitz-Alan of Clun; & upon his death
his son & successor John upon a partition
of Hugh de Albini's possessions had the castle
of Arundel assigned to him for his principal
seat; & so the earldom of Arundel became
vested in the family of Fitz-Alan of
Clun. 1. Dugd. Bar. 315. 316. This was in
28. Hen. 3. — 3. The earldom appears to have
continued in the Fitz-Alans till the death
of Henry Fitz-Alan earl of Arundel in
the 22d ~~reign~~ of Elizabeth, without issue male;
in consequence of which the earldom descended
upon his grandson Philip Howard eldest son of Thomas
Howard 4th Duke of Norfolk of that name by
Mary his first wife who was the daugh-
-ter of the same Henry Fitz-Alan Earl of Arundel.
Thus the Earldom of Arundel passed into ~~the~~ the
Howard family; & with them it still remains.
1. Dugd. Baron. 325. See further
see before p. 98. & 1. Hen. VI. no. 32. & 3. Cha. 1. c. 4. of private acts.
& vol. parl. XI & 29. Cha. 2. See 1. Bar. general. 3/4.

Jam. 1. c. 5. of private acts

Barony of Mowbray.

---

1. Note Summons by this title in 15. Cha. 1.

In the reign of Henry the first Robert de
Molbray, who was Earl of Northumberland, forfeited his lands both
in England & Normandy, by con-
spiracies agt. that King, who conferred the forfeited
estates upon Nigel de Albini brother of William
de Albini first Earl of Arundel of that family: &
it is said, that Nigel de Albini's son Robert
on account of having the Molbray estate took
the name of Molbray. 1. Dugd. Baron. 121. 122.
His descendants were accordingly summoned
as barons Mowbray. See ibid. & Dugd. Summons 6.
But John Lord Mowbray one of those descendants,
his mother being dauter & sole heir to Thomas
of Brotherton (2d. son of King Edw. 1.) Earl of
Norfolk & Earl Marshal of England, was in
9. R. 2. constituted Earl Marshal for life
& in 20. R. 2. was so confirmed Earl Marshal
to him & the heirs male of his body. & in 21. ~~Rich.~~
Rich. 2. was made Duke of Norfolk. Upon his son's death without issue
~~2 coheirs & sister~~ male, the Howard & Berkley families being
2 coheirs interested, see 1. Dugd.

1. Dom. Proc. VI.

[illegible] Duke of Norfolk [illegible] 20 Sept. 1772.

1. Titles derived from the Mother of the first Howard Duke of Norfolk.

Dukedom of Norfolk.

Earldoms of Norfolk & Earldom Marshal, & hereditary Earldom Marshal of England, see 1. Dugd. Bar. 128. ~~Bar.~~ 599. Art. 128. & 2. Dugd. Bar. 63.

Baronies of, — Mowbray — Segrave — Howard — Breuse of Gower in Carmarthenshire.

~~Greystock~~ Note the barony of Greystock

2. — ~~title~~ derived to him from the mother of the Earl of Arundel temp. Jac. & Cha. in consequence of her being sister & coheir of George Lord Dacre of Gillesland, & the titles of Earl of Norwich & baron [illegible] of Castle Rising derived from Henry the letters patent 21 Cha. 2d. Henry Howard brother of the Duke who was restored in 1660.

Howard Duke of Norfolk. 5

3. Titles derived to the same Duke through the first wife of Thomas Duke of Norfolk beheaded in the reign of Eliz. see private act of 3 Cha. 1. chap. 4.

Earldom of Arundel. — Old Earldom of Surry, namely, from the Warrens Earls of Warren in Normandy & Surrey in England.

Baronies.

Fitz-Alan. — Warren. — Clun — Oswaldestre — ~~Verdon~~ — ~~Lovet~~ Maltravers, — ~~Furnival~~ — ~~Lovetot~~ — ~~Strange~~ of

4. Baronies derived to the same Duke from Alethea 3d dau. & coheir of Gilbert ~~Talbot~~ Earl of Shrewsbury & wife of the Earl of Arundel in the reigns of Jam. & Cha. 1. namely, Furnival Verdon Lovetot Le Strange of Blackmere.

double Treſſure counterflory, Gules, being an augmentation for the victory at Flodden. This is the paternal coat of the illuſtrious houſe of Howard. But his Grace alſo bears, and likewiſe the deſcendants of his family, a ſecond quarter, Gules, three Lions paſſant paleways, Or, a Label in chief of three points, Argent, for Brotherton: a third quarter cheque, Or and Azure, for Warren, Earls of Surry: a fourth, Gules, a Lion rampant, Argent, armed and langued, Azure, for Mowbray, Dukes of Norfolk. Behind the whole, two Truncheons, or Marſhals Staves, in ſaltire, Or, enamelled at each end Sable, having the King's Arms at the upper, and his own at the lower, end; the badge of his office, as Earl-Marſhal.

CREST.] On a Chapeau, Gules, turned up ermine, a Lion paſſant guardant, Or (his tail extended) gorged with a ducal Coronet, Argent, as deſcended from Margaret, daughter and heir of Thomas de Brotherton, Earl of Norfolk, fifth ſon of King Edward I. His Grace has another creſt, viz. within a Wreath, a Mount vert, ſurmounted by a Horſe paſſant, Argent, holding in his mouth a ſlip of oak, fructed proper, as Earl of Arundel: but the original Creſt of the family was, upon a Chapeau, as before, a pair of Wings, each charged with the Arms of Howard.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide a Lion, and on the ſiniſter a Horſe, both Argent; the latter holding a ſlip of oak, fructed proper: but before the match with the heireſs of Arundel, the ſiniſter was as the dexter.

MOTTO.] SOLA VIRTUS INVICTA.

CHIEF-SEATS.] At Arundel-caſtle in the county of Suſſex, eight miles from Chicheſter, and fifty-ſix from London; Worksſop-manor, containing 500 rooms, in the county of Nottingham, 133 meaſured miles from London, accidentally burnt down on October 20, 1761, but now rebuilding; and which he holds by Grand-ſerjeanty, viz. a glove to the King's right-hand, and ſupporting his right arm, at the coronation.

Note that by an 3. Cha. I. an act was made concerning the title & dignity of Earl of Arundel, & for annexing the caſtle, honor & manor of Arundel in Suſſex, with the titles & dignities of the Baronies of Fitz-Alan

No writ of ſummons per Lovetot ſince Willm. de Lovetot's failure of iſſue male & leaving a female heir who married Girard de Furnival.

SEYMOUR, Duke of Somerſet.

AMONG others who entered England with William the Conqueror, or ſoon after, were thoſe of the name of Seymour, as the learned Camden and other genealogiſts agree; and that the name was antiently written St. Maur [a], and in old Latin records D. S. Mauro, deduced from a place of the ſame name in Normandy.

Roger de St. Mauro [b] lived in the reign of Henry I. Almericus de St. Mauro was Maſter of the Order of Knights Templars, and Milo de St. Maur was one of the Barons of the realm in the reign of King John, as his deſcendants were till the reign of Henry V. that Richard de St. Maur left an only daughter and heir, the wife of Sir William le Zouch, Knt. But ſeveral of this family were exiſting in the reigns of King Henry III. and the name I find written Semere, Semor, and Seymour.

The earlieſt and moſt certain information, concerning this family, and the place of their reſidence, is given us by Camden in his Britannia (in Monmouthſhire) in theſe words: "Not far "from Caldecot, are Woundy and Penhow, the ſeats formerly "of the illuſtrious family of St. Maur, now corruptly called "Seymour. For we find that about the year 1240 (in order to "wreſt Woundy out of the hands of the Welſh) Gilbert Marſhal, Earl of Pembroke, was obliged to aſſiſt William of "St. Maur; from whom was deſcended Roger of St. Maur, "Knt. who married one of the heireſſes of the illuſtrious John "Beauchamp, the Noble Baron of Hache, &c."

Vincent in his MS. Baronage in the College of Arms, N° 20, has tranſcribed the Latin Record, viz. *Gilbertus Mareſcallus Comes Pembrochiæ tenetur præbere Dn° Willo de S. Mauro conſilium ex auxilium in quantum poterit, ſecundum leges Angliæ ad perquirendum Manerium de Woundy, de Morgano filio Hueli, tali conditione, quod ſi præd. Willus dictum Manerium perquirere poterit, dictus Gilbertus habebit medietatem dicti Manerij, et aliam medietatem faciat extendi dicto Willo, per probos, et legales homines ad hoc, ex eâque parte electos. Ita quod pro quâlibet ſummâ 20 l. redditus dictus Gilbertus dabit Willo de S. Mauro decem Libras. Et quod idem Willus de S. Mauro, teneat medietatem dicti Manerij in manu ſuâ donec inde plenam ſolutionem, ſicut præſcriptum eſt, receperit. Et ſi forte contigerit, quod eidem Willo de conſilio dictus Gilbertus defecerit, dictus Willus de S. Mauro remaneat ſolutus et*

[a] Camden's Remains, p. 113, and 151. [b] Maddox's Formulara, p. 307.

quietus

quietus de obligatione quam dictus Gilbertus fecit ſuper dictum Manerium de Woundy.

Whether the Earl of Pembroke performed his part of this covenant, it does not appear. But certain it is, that this Sir William St. Maur [c] (for Vincent aſſures us he was a Knight) ſoon after became Maſter of Woundy, Penhow, &c. in Monmouthſhire; and at the laſt of thoſe places fixed the ſeat of his family. The church of Penhow was dedicated to St. Maur, their park there was called by their own name; and here likewiſe they had their caſtle, which continued in the family to Hen. VIII's time; for, in a letter of the Earl of Hertford to Sir J. Thynne, he deſires him to inform him, to whom his grandfather had ſold Seymour-caſtle in Wales.

Sir Roger de St. Mauro was the [d] ſon and heir of Sir William. He was Lord of the manor of Woundy, as appears by [e] an aſſize, 53 Henry III. wherein it was found, that Roger de St. Maur ought to have houſebote and heybote at his houſe at Woundy, by the moiety of Magor-park, and upon his fee of Woundy, by the feoffment of Sir Barth. de Moor. And in a grant of his of a meſſuage to Thomas Elliot, of the chapel at Woundy, his ſeal appendant was a pair of Wings, circumſcribed *Sigill. Rogeri de Seimor.* This Sir Roger died before the 28th of King Edward I.

Roger de St. Mauro, the ſecond of that Chriſtian name, was [f] the ſon and heir of Sir Roger. He was Lord of Penhow and Woundy, and was living in the 8th of King Edward II. as appears from an inquiſition of Gilbert de Clare, Earl of Glouceſter; where it is mentioned, that Roger de Seymour, William de Gamage, and their tenants in Woundy, are anſwerable in pleas of the Crown, in the court of Caerleon. This Roger married Joan, daughter and heir of . . . . . Damarel of Devonſhire, whoſe arms were, Per Feſſe, Gules and Azure, three Creſcents, Argent.

His eldeſt ſon was John Seymour, who died in 32 Edw. III. leaving Roger, his ſon and heir, eighteen years of age; after whoſe deceaſe the inheritance went by his daughter to a family of the name of Bowlays, of Penhow in Monmouthſhire, who bore the Seymours arms; and terminated in a daughter and heir, who was married to Sir George Somerſet, a third ſon of Charles, firſt Earl of Worceſter.

The ſecond ſon of Roger de St. Mauro alſo was called Roger; who, by his marriage with Cecilia, one of the daughters and heirs of John de Beauchamp, Baron of Hache, &c. in com. Somerſet, conſiderably added to the fortunes as well as the dignity of his family, and was the cauſe of their removal into So-

[c] Ex Collect. Reverend —— Harbin. [d] Vincent's Baronage in Offic. Arm. p. 20. [e] Ex Collect. Rev. —— Harbin. [f] Vincent, ut antea.

merſetſhire,

merſetſhire, to their very great advantage. On this occaſion I chuſe to repreſent, in the learned Camden's own words, the great acceſſion that accrued to the honour of the family, by this noble alliance.

" From this William de St. Maur, who firſt ſettled at Woundy, deſcended Roger de St. Maur, Knt. who married one of " the heireſſes of the illuſtrious John Beauchamp, the noble " Baron of Hache, who was deſcended from Sibyl, one of the " coheireſſes of that moſt puiſſant William Marſhal, Earl of " Pembroke, and from William Ferrars, Earl of Derby, Hugh " de Vivon, and William Malet, men of eminent worth in " their times. The Nobility of all which, as alſo of ſeveral " others have (as may be made evident) concentred in the Right " Honourable Edward de St. Maur, or Seymour, now Earl of " Hertford, a ſingular encourager of virtue and learning; for " which qualification he is deſervedly famous."

Of which family of Beauchamp, he alſo gives the following account in the county of Somerſet.

" The Beauchamps, otherwiſe called de Bellocampo, have " flouriſhed in great honour from the time of Henry II. eſpecially ſince Cecilia de Fortibus, deſcended from the Earls de " Ferrariis, and from that famous Marſhal of England, William Earl of Pembroke, was married into this family. But " in the reign of Edward III. the eſtate was divided by ſiſters, " between Roger de St. Mauro, or Seymour, and John Meriet, " both of them ſprung from antient and honourable anceſtors. " This was the cauſe why Henry VIII. after he had married " Jane Seymour, Edward VI's mother, made Edward Seymour, her brother, Viſcount Beauchamp, whom King Edward VI. afterwards advanced to the honour of Duke of Somerſet."

The ſaid Ciceley, wife of Roger Seymour, in 36 Edward III. had aſſigned for her ſhare, on the partition of the inheritance of the Beauchamps[g], the manors of Hache, Shepton-Beauchamp, Murifield, and the third part of the manor of Shepton-Malet, in com. Somerſet; alſo certain lands in Sturminſter-Marſhal, in com. Dorſet; the manors of Boultbury, and Haberton, in com. Devon; the manors of Dourton, in com. Bucks; Little-Haw, in com. Suff.; and two parts of the manor of Selling, in com. Kanc. She ſurvived her huſband, and[h] died in 1393, 17 Richard II. ſeiſed of a manor of Shepton-Beauchamp, and the advowſon of the church, Roger Seymour, ſon of Sir William Seymour, being her grandſon and heir, and then of the age of twenty-ſeven years.

[g] Rot. Fin. 36 Edw. III. m. 27. Clauſ. 42 Edw. III. m. 12. [h] Ex Collect. Rev. —— Harbin.

Which

Which Sir William, in 36 Edward III. attended the Prince of Wales into Gaſcony [i], and, on that account, had the King's letters of protection, dated at Bamburge, February 8, the ſame year. He ſometimes reſided at Woundy, as appears by his deed, bearing date therein 36 Edward III. wherein he is ſtiled William Seymour, *Miles, filius & hæres Rogeri Seymour, Militis.* He had to wife Margaret, daughter and heir of Simon de Brockburn, of Brockburn, in the county of Hereford, by Joan, ſiſter and heir of Sir Peter de la Mare, Knt. and died in 15 Richard II. [k] leaving the before-mentioned Roger, his ſon and heir, of full age.

This Roger married Maud, daughter and coheir to Sir William Eſturmi, or Sturmy, of Chadham, in com. Wilts, Knt. Lord of Wolf-hall in the ſame county, whoſe anceſtors were Bailiffs and Guardians of the foreſt of Savernake, by right of inheritance, from the time of Henry II. as Camden has obſerved in his Britannia, in Wiltſhire; and that *their hunters horn, of a mighty bigneſs, and tipt with ſilver*, was, in his time, kept by the Earl of Hertford. The family of the Eſturmies were *founders and patrons of the hoſpital of the Holy Trinity* at Eaſton, near Marlborough, in Wiltſhire; which hoſpital had a Governor, or Maſter, ſet over it (at the preſentation of the Eſturmies to the Biſhop) who was bound to keep continual reſidence in the ſame; and there to keep hoſpitality, and to find five prieſts to ſing every day Maſſes for the founders ſouls, &c. as it appears from a manuſcript, containing the rules and orders for the government of this hoſpital of Eaſton, appointed by Robert Biſhop of Sarum, in the years 1363, and 1368; at which time Henry Eſtormi, the ſon of Henry Eſtormi, is named the Patron of the ſaid hoſpital, and ſo acknowledged by the Biſhop. Richard Eſturmi held his lands in com. Wilts, and Hants, in capite [l] of William the Conqueror, as is evident from Doomſday-Book. The before-mentioned Roger Seymour died, leaving iſſue his ſon and heir in minority, who, by inquiſition taken in the county of Glouceſter, in 1422, 10 Henry V. [m] was found couſin and heir to Sir Peter de la Mare, Knt. viz. ſon of Margaret, daughter of Joan, ſiſter of the ſaid Peter; and that John, ſon of the ſaid Roger Seymour, was next heir, and of the age of twenty years.

Which John Seymour was a very noted and active perſon, having been Sheriff of ſeveral counties, and in other public offices. In 9 Henry VI. he was Sheriff [n] of the county of Southampton, and the year following for Wiltſhire. In 12 Hen. VI. when the title of the houſe of York was ſet on foot, and all per-

[i] Rymer's Fœd. tom. v. p. 845. [k] Eſch. 25 Rich. II. [l] Dr. Brady's Append. to his Tracts, p. 6. [m] Eſch. 10 Henry V. [n] Fuller's Worthies in cod. com. p. 14, 158, 161, 287.

ſons

ſons of note in the ſeveral counties of England were ſummoned to take the oaths, to preſerve the peace for themſelves and retainers, he appeared in Wiltſhire; and is the firſt mentioned in the liſt after the Knights in that county. He was that year Sheriff of Dorſet and Somerſetſhire, and knighted before the 15th year of Henry VI. when he was again Sheriff of the county of Southampton. He was likewiſe in the ſame office for Wiltſhire, in the 29th of Henry VI. and one of the Knights for the ſaid county [o], in the Parliament held at Reading in 31 Henry VI. alſo the year following was a third time Sheriff of Southampton; and departed this [p] life in the 4th year of the reign of Edward IV. He had iſſue by Iſabel his wife, daughter and heir of William Mac-Williams of Glouceſterſhire, John Seymour, Eſq; his ſon and heir.

The ſaid John was [q] Sheriff of Wiltſhire in 36 Henry VI. and died the year before his father, viz. in 3 Edward IV. having to wife Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Sir Robert Coker, of Lawrence Lydiard, in com. Somerſet, by whom he left two ſons, John, and Humphrey Seymour, of Evinſwinden, who married Elizabeth, daughter and one of the heirs of Thomas Winſlow of Burton, in com. Oxon. from whom the Seymours of Oxfordſhire deſcended; and perhaps thoſe of Handford, in com. Dorſet, who have a *Chief charged with three Martlets*, as an additional diſtinction to their arms.

John Seymour, Eſq; the eldeſt ſon, was fourteen years of age at the death of his grandfather. He took to wife Elizabeth, daughter to Sir George Darell, of Littlecote, in com. Wilts, by Margaret his wife, daughter of John Lord Stourton. Which Sir George was keeper of the great wardrobe to Edward IV. and ſon of Sir William Darell, Under-Treaſurer of England; who by marrying Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Thomas Calſton, of Littlecote, Eſq; became Lord of that place; but was deſcended from the Darels of Sezay in Yorkſhire, antiently called De Hairell, as Camden tells us in Buckinghamſhire. The iſſue of this John Seymour by her were four ſons, and as many daughters; viz. 1. Sir John Seymour, hereafter mentioned; 2. Sir George Seymour, Sheriff of Wiltſhire in 14 Henry VII. 3. Sir Robert Seymour; and 4. Sir William Seymour, made Knight of the Bath at the marriage of Prince Arthur, eldeſt ſon to Henry VII. and by his will, dated September 3, 1503, 19 Henry VII. orders his body [r] to be buried in Joſeph of Arimathea's chapel in the abbey of Glaſtonbury; and bequeaths all his lands to Dame Elizabeth Byconyll, his mother; and to Margaret his wife, his manor of North-Moulton in Devonſhire, for her life, with lands in Somerſetſhire to the

[o] MS. penes B. Willis, Arm. [p] Vincent, ut antea. [q] Fuller, ut antea, p. 161. [r] Ex Regiſt. Holgrave, qu. 26.

value

value of 40s. *per annum.* The daughters were, Margaret, married to Sir William Wadham; Jane, the wife of Sir John Huddleſton of Warleſton, in com. Cumbr. Elizabeth, eſpouſed to John Crofts, Eſq; and Catherine, who died a maiden.

He had alſo a ſecond wife, daughter of Robert Hardon, by whom he had iſſue Roger Seymour, Eſq; who left four daughters his coheirs.

Sir John Seymour, before-mentioned, the eldeſt ſon, ſucceeded his father in 7 Henry VII. and was one of the Commanders of thoſe forces that vanquiſhed the Lord Audley, and the Corniſh rebels at Blackheath in Kent, in 12 Hen. VII. 1497, where [s], for his valiant deportment, he was knighted by the King in the field of battle; and in 23 Hen. VII. he was Sheriff of Wiltſhire. Alſo ſerving King Henry VIII. in his wars in France and Flanders, had the honour of Knight-banneret [t] conferred on him in 1513, in the fifth year of his reign, for his gallant behaviour in the ſieges of Theroüne and Tournay, and the action at Guinegaſte, on Auguſt 16, called by our hiſtorians the battle of Spurs. In 7 Hen. VIII. he was [u] Sheriff of Dorſet and Somerſetſhire, as alſo in 18 Hen. VIII. and was twice Sheriff for Wiltſhire, in 10 and 16 Hen. VIII. In 9 Hen. VIII. being then one of the Knights of the body of that King, he [x] obtained a grant of the Conſtablewic of Briſtol-caſtle, to himſelf and Edward his ſon, in as ample a manner as Giles Lord D'Aubeny held the ſame. In 10 Hen. VIII. 1518, he [y] was charged with providing ten men for the King's ſervice in his wars, for lands he held in Wiltſhire. In the year 1520, he attended on Henry VIII. at the [z] great interview with Francis the French King, between Guiſnes and Ardres, having in his retinue one chaplain, eleven ſervants, and eight led horſes. Alſo when the Emperor Charles V. came into England, in 14 Hen. VIII. 1522, he was [a] appointed to attend the King at Canterbury, May 27, in order to his reception. In 22 Hen. VIII. he was one of the five of the county of Wilts [b], who were appointed to enquire into the poſſeſſions of Cardinal Wolſey; and at the ſecond interview with Francis the French King at Boulogne, in the year 1532 (24 Hen. VIII.) was one [c] of the Grooms of the chamber, and waited on his Sovereign.

He departed this life on Decem. 21, 1536, and was buried in the church of Eaſton priory, but that fabric becoming ruinous, his corpſe was removed thence, A. D. 1590, to the church of Great Bedwin, Wilts, where a monument ſtands erected to his memory by his grandſon, Edward Earl of Hertford. His wife was

[s] Nom. equit. in Bibl. Cott. Claud. C. III. [t] Ibid. [u] Fuller's Worthies.
[x] Pat. 9. Hen. VIII. p. 2. [y] MS. ſub. effig. Otho Edw. II. in Bibl. Cotton.
[z] MS. ut antea penes Joh. Anſtis. [a] Rymer's Fœd. tom. xiii. p. 768.
[b] Ibid. tom. xiv. p. 404. [c] MS. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis.

Margery,

Margery, ſecond daughter of Sir Henry Wentworth, of Nettleſted in Suffolk, Knight of the Bath, and anceſtor of the late Earl of Cleveland, and of the preſent Viſcount Wentworth. They had iſſue ſix ſons, and four daughters, viz. John, who died unmarried; Edward, created Duke of Somerſet; Sir Henry; Thomas Lord Sudley (of which three more fully hereafter) John and Anthony, who died young; Jane, third wife of King Henry VIII. by whom ſhe was mother of King Edward VI. twelve days after whoſe birth ſhe died, on October 24, 1537; Elizabeth, ſucceſſively wedded to Sir Henry Ughtred, Knt. Gregory Lord Cromwell, and John Powlet, ſecond Marquis of Wincheſter; Margery, who died in her infancy; and Dorothy, married to Sir Clement Smith, Knt. of Little Baddow in Eſſex, father of Sir John Smith, Knt. Ambaſſador in Spain.

Sir John Seymour had alſo a natural ſon [d], of his own name, who took to wife Jane, daughter of Nicholas Poynings, Eſq; and left iſſue.

His Lady ſurvived him, and died in the year 1550 (4 Edw. VI.) as her laſt teſtament, and the probate thereof, ſhew [e]: wherein ſhe bequeaths her body to be buried as her executors think fit; leaves divers legacies of plate, jewels, &c. to her relations, and mentions Edward Seymour, and Henry Seymour, ſons of the Duke of Somerſet, as her godſons, and conſtitutes her ſecond ſurviving ſon, Sir Henry Seymour, executor.

The before-mentioned Sir Henry Seymour, third ſon (brother of Queen Jane Seymour, and Edward Duke of Somerſet) was [f] made one of the Knights of the Bath made at the coronation of Edward VI. on February 29, 1346-7, with the Duke of Suffolk, the Earl of Oxford, the Earl of Hertford, &c. In 1551, 6 Edward VI. [g] being in the King's ſervice, he had a grant of lands of the yearly value of 186 l. and 4 d.; among which were the manors of Marvel, and Twyford, in com. Southampton, with the parks and houſe of Marvel, being a parcel of the lands belonging to the biſhopric of Wincheſter. The year after, 7 Edw. VI. he [h] had a grant for life of the manors of Summerford, and Hurn, in the county of Southampton; and divers other lands, to the yearly value of 202 l. 6 s. 9 d. In the year 1550, 4 Edw. VI. the Lady Margaret his mother died [i], and conſtituted him her executor. He deceaſed in 1578, having married Barbara, daughter of Thomas Morgan, Eſq; by whom he had iſſue Sir John Seymour, Knt. [k] who had three ſons, but from them there is no male iſſue remaining, and ſeveral daughters, of whom Jane was wedded to Sir John Rodney,

[d] Vincent's Baronage, MS. præd. [e] 1 Ex Regiſt. Coode, qu. 29. [f] MS. N. I. 7. in Offic. Arm. [g] Strype's Memorials, vol. ii. p. 272, 273. [h] Ibid. p. 506. [i] Ex Regiſt. qu. 29. [k] Heylin's Hiſtory of the Reformation, p. 5.

of Stoke-Rodney and Pilton in Somerſetſhire. The ſaid Sir John Rodney had ſixteen children, of whom only ſeven were living at his death, Auguſt 6, 1612, viz. four ſons, Sir Edward Rodney, Henry, George, and William, and three daughters, Elizabeth, Penelope, and Jane; from whom deſcended a numerous offspring, whereof ſeveral perſons of note are now living. Thomas Sadler, Eſq; late Deputy-Clerk of the Pells in the Exchequer (ſon of John Sadler, Eſq; and Jane, third daughter and coheir of John Trenchard, of Warmwell in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; by Jane his wife, daughter of Sir John Rodney, by Jane, daughter of Sir Henry Seymour, before-mentioned) a ſkilful collector of many rare and valuable curioſities, and well verſed in many ſciences, has with great care and exactneſs deduced their ſeveral deſcendants, too long to be here inſerted.

Sir Thomas, the fourth ſon, was, by Henry VIII. nominated one of the twelve aſſiſtants to the executors of his will during the minority of Edward VI. in the firſt of whoſe reign he was, on February 16, created Baron Seymour of Sudley, and ſoon after conſtituted Admiral of England. Being of an aſpiring diſpoſition, he courted the Princeſs Elizabeth; but finding no proſpect of ſucceſs, he made his addreſſes to Queen Catherine, Henry VIII's widow, and got the King's conſent to their marriage. Diſſatisfied that his elder brother ſhould enjoy a greater ſhare in the adminiſtration than himſelf, be caballed among ſuch of the Nobility as envied the Duke's power, in order to get himſelf admitted to the chief management of affairs. To facilitate the execution of his purpoſe, he bribed the attendants next the King's perſon; and by an affable and obſequious behaviour, and ſupplying his Majeſty privately with money, inſinuated himſelf into his good graces, and gained a conſiderable aſcendancy in his eſteem. When the Protector repreſented to the Admiral the dangerous tendency of his underhand practices, his Lordſhip's anſwer convinced his Grace, that he was not to rely upon any friendſhip from their fraternal connexion. The animoſity was fomented by Anne Dutcheſs of Somerſet's being obliged to yield precedence to the wife of her huſband's younger brother. Lord Sudley took the opportunity, during the Duke's abſence in Scotland, to proſecute his ſchemes with redoubled vigour; and was ſo ſucceſsful as to obtain a new patent as Admiral, with an additional ſalary, beſides the grant of a large eſtate. The Protector, apprized of his brother's proceedings, haſtened his return from Scotland: but before his arrival, the Admiral had formed a conſiderable party among the Peers and Commoners, and even prevailed on the King to write to both Houſes, deſiring his Lordſhip might be appointed his Governor. The Council, being informed of that ſtep, let the Admiral know, by a deputation of their own number,

ber, that if he did not deſiſt, he ſhould be proſecuted, on the late ſtatute, for high-treaſon, in attempting to diſturb the order of government. Thus intimidated, he made his ſubmiſſion, and was ſeemingly reconciled to his brother; who, to divert him from his turbulent projects, ſent him with a fleet, and 1200 land troops on board, to intercept Mary, the infant Queen of Scotland, in her paſſage to France: but that Princeſs being conveyed north about round the Orkneys, his Lordſhip was diſappointed of his expected prize, and making ſome deſcents upon the coaſt of Fife, was repulſed, and returned in diſcredit, having loſt half of his land forces. However, he ſtill harboured his aſpiring views; for upon the death of Queen Catherine, in childbed, in September, 1548, he renewed his addreſſes to the Princeſs Elizabeth: but as her right of ſucceſſion to the throne depended, according to her father's will, on her marrying with the conſent of his executors, Lord Sudley propoſed to accompliſh his aim by ſeizing the King's perſon, and taking the reins of government into his own hands; and for that purpoſe retained a great number of men in different parts of the kingdom. His deſign being intimated to the Council, he was, on January 19, 1548-9, committed to the Tower; and Commiſſioners were named to take the depoſitions of his accuſers. The Duke adviſed him to reſign his office, and retire from Court: but perceiving his exhortations ineffectual, he acquieſced in his proſecution. Upon the report of the Commiſſioners appointed to hear what he had to ſay in his defence, both Houſes, with little oppoſition, paſſed a bill of attainder, which receiving the royal aſſent, he was condemned unheard, without an opportunity of examining the evidence againſt him, and without being allowed the peruſal of his charge, the ſubſtance of which was, 1. Attempting to ſeize the perſon of the King, and the government of the realm: 2. Fortifying his caſtle of Holt in Denbighſhire, and enliſting a great number of men into his ſervice: 3. Confederating with Sharrington, by whoſe means he became Maſter of the Mint at Briſtol: 4. Endeavouring to eſpouſe the Princeſs Elizabeth [with whom he had carried on an intrigue too far to be expoſed in a public court of juſtice:] 5. Perſuading the King in his nonage to take upon himſelf the adminiſtration of affairs: 6. Conniving with pirates, and making himſelf maſter of the Scilly-iſlands. He was beheaded on March 10, on Tower-hill; leaving an only child, Mary, who died in her infancy, after being reſtored in blood.

I now return to Edward Seymour, eldeſt ſon of Sir John Seymour. He was educated firſt at Oxford, and after ſome ſtay there removed to Cambridge[1]; from whence returning to his father at Court, when martial atchievements were encouraged

[1] Wood's Athenæ, Oxon. vol. i. p. 711.

by

by Henry VIII. he took early to arms; and landing at Calais with the Duke of Suffolk on Auguſt 24, 1523 (15 Hen. VIII.) was preſent at the taking of Bray, Roye, and Montdidier, in France; where, for his conduct and bravery, he had the [m] honour of knighthood conferred on him by the Duke of Suffolk at Roye, on Alhallows-day, the ſame year. In 16 Henry VIII. being one of the Eſquires of the King's houſhold, he was one of the challengers before the King in the Tilt-yard at Greenwich, on his keeping a royal Chriſtmas there. In 19 Hen. VIII. he accompanied Cardinal Wolſey, who went in great ſtate on an embaſſy to the French King, and was received with the higheſt honour. In 24 Hen. VIII. being 'Squire for the body to the King [n], he was in that gallant train which attended their Sovereign to Boulogne, at his interview with Francis I. On his ſiſter's marriage with Henry VIII. on May 20, 1536, he was one of the Kights for the King's body. On June 5, after that [o] ſolemnity, the King, in conſideration of the acceptable, good and laudable ſervice [p] of his beloved and faithful ſervant, Sir Edward Seymour, Knt. as alſo of his conduct, valour, and loyalty, creates him Viſcount Beauchamp, to have and to hold to him and the heirs male of his body: and further grants to him twenty marks yearly, payable out of the fines and profits of the counties of Somerſet and Dorſet, dated June 5, 28 Hen. VIII. The ſame year (28 Hen. VIII.) with Sir Richard Buckley, Knt. [q] he had a grant of the office of Chancellor and Chamberlain of North Wales for life; as alſo made Captain [r] of the Iſle of Jerſey, upon the ſurrender of that command by Sir Thomas Vaux, Lord Harrowden.

On October 18, 1537 (29 Hen. VIII.) three days [s] after the baptiſm of his nephew, afterwards King Edward VI. he was created [t] Earl of Hertford; and in 32 Hen. VIII. was ſent [u] over to France to aſcertain the limits of the Engliſh borders; and on his return was [x] elected at Hampton-Court (January 9, 1541-2) one of the Knights Companions of the moſt Noble Order of the Garter. In 33 Hen. VIII. as couſin and heir to Sir William Sturmy, Knt. viz. [y] ſon of Sir John Seymour, Knt. ſon of John Seymour, Eſq; ſon of John Seymour, Eſq; ſon of Sir John Seymour, Knt. ſon of Maud, daughter and heir to Sir William Sturmy, of Wolf-hall, before-mentioned, Knt. he had livery of Sturmy's lands: and the ſame year, on the Scots denying their homage, he accompanied [z] the Duke of Norfolk in his expedition into Scotland. In 34 Hen. VIII. he was [a] made

[m] Nom. Equit. præd. [n] MS. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis. [o] Stow's Annals, and Pat. 28 Hen. VIII. p. 3. [p] Rot. Par. 28 Hen. VIII. [q] Priv. Sigill. 28 Hen. VIII. [r] Pat. 28 Hen. VIII. p. 2. [s] MS. in Collegio Arm. I. 24. [t] Pat. 29 Hen. VIII. p. 3. [u] Herb. Hiſt. Hen. VIII. [x] Aſhmole's Order of the Garter, p. 265. [y] Pat. 33 Hen. VIII. p. 1. [z] Herb. ut antea. [a] Pat. 34 Hen. VIII. p. 7.

Lord Great-Chamberlain of England for life; and the ſame year [b] being made Lieutenant-general of the North, he embarqued for Scotland with 200 ſail of ſhips, and landing in the Frith, took Leith, and Edinburgh, and after plundering and burning them, returned by land into England, waſting Hadington, Dunbar, &c. in his march. On the King's expedition into France, in 36 Hen. VIII. 1544, his Majeſty having appointed his conſort, Queen Catherine, *Regent general and Governor* of the Kingdom [c], his Lordſhip bearing the title of *Edward Earl of Hertford, Lord Great-Chamberlain of England*, was, on July 9, eſpecially commiſſioned with Thomas Cranmer, Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Thomas Lord Wriotheſly, Lord Chancellor, Thomas Thirleby, Biſhop of Weſtminſter, and Sir William Petre, Knt. principal Secretary of State, to be aiding and aſſiſting to the ſaid Queen, in her adminiſtration of the government. And the ſaid Earl of Hertford was nominated to be Captain-general of ſuch forces under her Majeſty, neceſſary to be raiſed in the kingdom during the King's abſence. Alſo by commiſſion two days after, the King empowers the Queen [d], and the ſaid Earl of Hertford, &c. in his abſence, to ſign warrants to the Treaſurer, and Treaſurers, and all officers having charge of money, to make payments of ſuch ſums of money they ſhall think convenient for the King's affairs, as matters ſhall for the time occur. Likewiſe by another commiſſion of the ſame date, he was [e], with thoſe aforenamed, impowered to ſign ſuch conveyances for aſſurance of certain manors, lands, &c. to the Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens of London, who advanced money to the King to enable him to paſs the ſeas againſt his antient enemy, the French King: which manors, lands, &c. were to be redeemable in one year, from the dates of the ſaid grants. Alſo in a third commiſſion, of the ſame date, his Majeſty empowers his Lordſhip [f] to compound for licence of abſence with all perſons who choſe to tarry at home, and having any honours, lordſhips, caſtles, manors, &c. or hereditary offices, fees, or annuities of his grants, were obliged, by the ſtatutes of the 11th and 19th of Henry VII. to attend the King, for the time being, perſonally, when, and as often as he ſhould pleaſe to enter into war, and go abroad himſelf, under the penalty of forfeiting the ſaid grants, at the King's pleaſure, unleſs his Majeſty's diſpenſation were firſt obtained. And the ſame year, whilſt the King was at the ſiege of Boulogne [g], he came to his aid with ſeveral troops; and after taking the town, routed an army of 14,000 French, who lay encamped near it.

[b] Stow's Annals. [c] Rymer's Fœd. vol. xv. p. 39. [d] Ibid. p. 44.
[e] Ibid. p. 45. [f] Ibid. p. 46. [g] Herb. uſ antea.

In

In 37 Hen. VIII. the Scots making ſeveral incurſions on the borders, in conjunction with 5000 auxiliaries from France, he being ſent [h] againſt them, deſtroyed all the towns upon the Middle marches, and paſſing towards the Weſt, made great ſpoil in thoſe parts. Soon after, the French endeavouring to regain Boulogne, [i] he forced them to retreat, and purſuing the enemy, beſides the ſlaughter, gained ſeveral trophies of his ſucceſs.

In 38 Hen. VIII. he was elected Chancellor of the Univerſity of Cambridge; and the ſame year the Earl of Surry, Governor of Boulogne, [k] being laid aſide, he was ſent thither with an army of 9,300 men to oppoſe the French, then making head. After which, on propoſals for an accommodation, he was [l] conſtituted the chief of the Commiſſioners for the treaty; and meeting betwixt Guiſnes and Ardres, a peace was concluded. And the King lying on his death-bed, by his will left him [m] a legacy of 500 l. and appointed him one of the Council to his ſon, as alſo one of his Executors; after whoſe deceaſe (Jan. 28, 1546-7) he immediately repaired [n] to the young King at Hertford, and conducting him to London, was by the Council (February 1) unanimouſly elected Governor of the King's perſon, and Protector of his realms, dominions, and ſubjects, until he ſhould accompliſh the age of eighteen years; and proclaimed ſuch according to the uſual cuſtom [o], by the Heralds, with ſound of trumpet, through the city of London. On February 10 following, he was [p] conſtituted Lord Treaſurer of England: and though he had the titles of Viſcount Beauchamp, and Earl of Hertford, yet being no Baron, he was [q] advanced to that degree of honour on the 15th of the ſame month, with limitation to the heirs male of his body by Anne his wife; remainder to Edward Seymour his ſon, by Catherine his firſt wife; by the title of Baron Seymour, *Whereby the name of that family*, as the King declares in the Patent, *from which his moſt beloved mother Jane, late Queen of England, drew her beginning, might not be clouded by any higher title, or colour of dignity.* Alſo the next day he was [r] created Duke of Somerſet, and to the heirs male of his body by Anne his wife; and for default of ſuch iſſue, to the ſaid Edward Seymour, Eſq; ſon of him the ſaid Duke, and the Lady Catherine his firſt wife, and the heirs male of the body of the ſaid Edward Seymour; and for default of ſuch iſſue, to the heirs male of the body of the ſaid Duke, to be lawfully begotten on any other wife.

[h] Herbert, ut ant. [i] Godwin, p. 195. [k] Herbert, ut ant. [l] Godwin, p. 200. [m] Rymer's Fœd. tom. xv. p. 117. [n] Heyward's Life of King Edward VI. in Hiſt. Eng. p. 271, &c. [o] Holinſhed's Chron. p. 979. [p] Pat. 1 Edward VI. p. 6. [q] Pat. in eod. ann. and Rymer's Fœd. tom. xv. p. 125. [r] Pat. in eod. ann.

Likewiſe, on February 17, he had a grant [s] of the office of Earl-Marſhal of England for life, in as ample a manner as John Mowbray, or Thomas Howard, Dukes of Norfolk (the latter being then attainted of high-treaſon) or any other Earl-Marſhal of England, held or occupied. Moreover, on March 12 following, he had a patent [t] for that great office of Protector and Governor of the King and his realms; alſo, on July 9, a grant [u] of 8000 marks *per annum*, during the time he ſhould be Protector.

In this firſt year of his adminiſtration [x], he warily made a peace with France, turning all his thoughts to bring about the match of Mary Stuart, ſole daughter and heir to James V. King of Scotland, with his nephew, King Edward; and to that end firſt aſſailed the Scotch Nobility by friendly letters, remembring them of the promiſes, ſeals, and oaths, which, by public authority, had paſſed for concluding the marriage; as alſo, that the two Princes were agreeable, both for years and princely qualities, to be joined together; and thereby knit both realms into one, which would be profitable as well as honourable to both kingdoms. But theſe and many other reaſons, that were enforced by the Protector, taking no effect, the King, by the advice of his Council, granted him the before-mentioned commiſſion, with thoſe large powers before recited; whereby having prepared an army, he invaded Scotland, and on September 10, 1547, fought that memorable battle at Pinkey, near Muſſleburgh; wherein his undaunted courage, as well as conduct, were the principal means of gaining that ſignal victory, the advantages of which he could not proſecute, being obliged, by the intrigues of his brother, the Lord Sudley, to repair ſpeedily to London; but in his return took the caſtles of Hume, Roxburgh, &c.

When the good news of the victory came to Court, the young King, on the 18th of September, being then at his houſe of Oatlands [y], wrote an anſwer to his uncle with his own hand, acknowledging the mercy of God, and thanking his Grace, and all that ſerved under him, for their courage and conduct: and his Majeſty, on October 18, ſettled upon the Duke, and his heirs for ever, lands to the value of 500l. a year. On November 3 next enſuing, he got this ſpecial grant [z].

"Edwarde the Sixte, &c. Foraſmoche as our moſt dere Vncle, "Edwarde Duke of Somerſette, by the adviſe of the Lords and "the reſt of our Privie Counſaill, with the conſent and good "agreement of the Noble Men of our realm, We have named, "ordeyned and commaunded to be Governour of our perſon,

[s] Rymer's Fœd. tom. xv. p. 130. [t] Ibid. p. 4. [u] Privat. Sigill. 1 Ed. VI. [x] Heyward's Hiſt. Ed. VI. [y] Strype's Memorials. [z] Rymer, tom. xv. p. 164.

"and

" and Protectour of our realmes, dominions and ſubjects, dur-
" ing our minoritye; hath no ſoche place appropriated or ap-
" poynted unto hym in our highe Courte of Parliament, as is
" convenient and neceſſarie, as well in reſpecte of his proxy-
" mytye of bloode unto us, being our uncle, and eldeſt brother
" unto our mother of moſt noble memorie deceaſed, Queene
" Jane; as alſo for his better mayntaining and conducying of
" our affaires to our honour, dignitie, and ſuretie, and the
" welthe and benefitt of our realms, dominions and ſubjects.

" We have therfore, aſwel by the conſent of our ſaid uncle,
" as by the advyce of other the Lords, and the reſte of our Privie
" Counſaill, willed, ordeyned and appoynted, and do by theſe
" preſents will, ordeyn and appoynt, that our ſaid uncle ſhall
" and doo ſit alone, and be placed at all times, aſwell in our
" preſens at our ſaid Courte of Parliament, as in our abſens,
" upon the myddes of the bench or ſtole, ſtanding next on the
" right-hand of our ſiete reall in our Parliament Chamber.

" And that he further ſhall have and do enjoy in our ſaide
" Courte of Parliament, in all ſeſſions, all ſoche other privi-
" legies, preemynences, prerogatyves and liberties in all things,
" and to all entents and effects, as by any lawes or ſtatutes here-
" tofore made, or otherwiſe, any of the uncles by father or mo-
" ther ſide, to any of our moſt noble progenitors, or any Pro-
" tectour of their realms and dominions, being in the minoritie
" of yeres as we be, have had, uſed, or enjoyed, or ought to
" have had, uſed, or enjoyed, in their Courts of Parliament, the
" ſtatute, concerning placing of the Lords in the Parliament
" chamber, and other aſſembles and conferencyes of Counſaill,
" made in the one and thirtieth yere of the reigne of our moſt
" dere father, of moſt famous memorye, Kinge Henry the
" Eight, or any other ſtatute, &c. notwithſtanding, &c."

And the King at Weſtminſter, on Aug. 11, 1548, 2 Edw. VI. makes known to his ſubjects, [a] " That whereas he had declared,
" by advice of his Council and Peers, his dear uncle, Edward
" Duke of Somerſet, Governor of his royal perſon, and Pro-
" tector of his dominions and ſubjects, during his minority, and
" made ſuch ample conceſſions and grants to him as were wor-
" thy of ſo great a perſon; which grants, authorities, and clauſes,
" by advice of his Council, he wills and commands to be inter-
" preted, and deemed in the moſt ample, liberal, and beneficial
" manner, for the extending, enlarging, and ſupport of the au-
" thorities, powers, &c. of his ſaid uncle, as far as the true
" meaning of the ſaid words in the ſaid patents may be conſtru-
" ed and extended.

" And whereas many grand and villainous injuries, ill actions,
" and damages, have fallen on his ſubjects from their old ene-

[a] Rymer, tom. xv. p. 174.

" mies the Scots, and other foreign powers, by ſea and land,
" and ſtill continue; the King therefore, by the advice of his
" Council, conſidering that his tender age will not permit him
" perſonally, as he ought, to ſuppreſs his enemies; and although
" by his letters patents, in general words, he granted to his
" ſaid uncle power and authority perſonally to go againſt his
" enemies with an army, and to do and act at all times all
" matters neceſſary to be done. Nevertheleſs, becauſe certain
" doubts and ſcruples may ariſe, for want, or through the in-
" certainty of words in the ſaid letters patents expreſſed, he
" thinks it neceſſary to declare and make known his mind to all
" his ſubjects, as alſo to all foreign powers:

" That whereas he conſtituted, &c. his dear uncle, Edward
" Duke of Somerſet, Governor of his perſon, and Protector of
" his kingdoms, dominions, and ſubjects, during his minority;
" his intention was, and is, that by the ſaid letters patents,
" he conſtituted, and by theſe doth appoint, the ſaid Duke of
" Somerſet, his Lieutenant and Captain-general in war within
" his dominions, as well as in all other dominions, kingdoms
" and places whatſoever, as well on this ſide, as beyond the ſeas,
" when the cauſe ſhall require and whenever it ſhall ſeem neceſ-
" ſary and expedient to his ſaid uncle. And alſo to ſummon
" and aſſemble together all his liege ſubjects, within his domi-
" nions, of all degrees, or as many of them as ſhall ſeem neceſ-
" ſary to him; and alſo to array them, and chuſe ſuch that to
" him ſeem moſt proper, and them to arm and review in proper
" places, and to hire, at his diſcretion, foreign troops and ſol-
" diers; alſo to take, out of his ſtore-houſes, proviſions, artil-
" lery, tents, &c. for horſes, ſhips, tranſports, galleys, &c.
" for the defence of the kingdom, both by ſea and land. And
" for his ſaid liege ſubjects, ſo choſen, muſtered, and armed, as
" well horſe and foot as archers, as well as armies, and all
" manner of arms and proviſions, and other warlike neceſſaries,
" to tranſport and carry, not only into any part of his domi-
" nions, for the defence of the ſame; but alſo to oppoſe his
" enemies making any attempts on his dominions in an
" hoſtile manner, and alſo to vanquiſh them, and take cities,
" caſtles and towns, for his uſe, and the ſame to garriſon and
" hold.

" He likewiſe empowers him, in his abſence, to reward all
" perſons in the army (at his diſcretion) by conferring the honour
" of Knighthood, or dignity of Baron, or other title of Nobi-
" lity, and to grant arms and enſigns of honour, as ſhall be-
" come them.

" To hear and determine all quarrels and diſputes of thoſe
" matters, which appertain to the office of Lieutenant-general,
" Chief Captain and Commander, or Governor; and to make

" and appoint a Marſhal of the ſaid army; and to take cogni-
" zance of all other cauſes within his ſaid dominions ariſing, as
" well as in the army.

" To make decrees and orders for the ſound and good go-
" vernment of his dominions and army, and to make procla-
" mations, and ſee that they be put in force. To puniſh, with-
" in his dominions and army, delinquents, and oppoſers, by
" impriſonment, or otherways, at his diſcretion.

" To hear and determine all cauſes criminal, as well of life,
" and limbs maimed, and of death, and all other cauſes, con-
" tracts and quarrels, of all perſons whatſoever, within his do-
" minions and army, by himſelf, or ſufficient deputies; with
" power to puniſh or pardon according to the nature of the
" fact.

" And becauſe his ſaid uncle, for diverſe great and neceſſary
" cauſes, touching his royal perſon and dominions, hath daily
" occaſions to treat and confer with foreign Emperors, Kings,
" Princes, and Potentates; he decreed by his ſaid letters patents,
" and by theſe wills, and grants him power to confer, treat, and
" conclude ceſſations of arms, truces, alliances, and leagues
" of peace and war; as alſo any other league or treaty with
" any foreign Prince or Power, or other perſon or perſons, on
" ſuch terms as to him ſhall ſeem moſt congruous, fitting, op-
" portune, and convenient. And alſo on the ending, or breach
" of the ſaid truces, leagues, &c. to proclaim war on all ſuch
" perſons who ſhall break the ſame; and to proſecute the ſame
" to his Majeſty's uſe, in as full a manner as if he himſelf were
" preſent.

" And further the King grants, that whatſoever his ſaid uncle
" in his wiſdom ſhall do in the premiſſes during his minority,
" ſhall be deemed and conſtrued grateful and acceptable, as
" though the ſame had been tranſacted by himſelf. And that in
" caſe his ſaid uncle ſhould be called from the army, ſo that he
" could not attend in time of war, he empowers him, by his
" letters under his hand, to grant commiſſions, conſtituting
" one or more Lieutenants, or Captain-generals, in time of
" war, by ſea and land, under him. And he wills and com-
" mands, in full hopes and confidence of the gravity, care, wiſ-
" dom, and integrity of his ſaid uncle, all perſons whatſoever,
" on pain of their allegiance, to be aiding to him, or his Lieu-
" tenant, or Lieutenants, &c.

" And his will is, that his ſaid uncle, his Lieutenant, or Lieu-
" tenants, &c. and all other his ſubjects ſo raiſed, ſhall be ac-
" quitted and diſcharged from all forfeitures, damages, cenſures,
" pains and troubles, which he or they may be ſubjected to, on
" the ſaid account, notwithſtanding any act or ſtatute hereto-
" fore made."

But not long after this, his power and near alliance to the King expoſed him to the envy of the Nobility, ſo that they ſought means to diveſt him of his places. And in 1549, the third year of the King, the major part of them withdrawing from the Court, by the ſubtle artifices of John Dudley, Viſcount Liſle, Earl of Warwick (afterward Duke of Northumberland) they ſecretly combined to ruin him. Hollinſhed relates, "That ſuddenly, on what occaſion few knew, every "Lord and Counſellor went through the city weaponed, and "had their ſervants likewiſe weaponed, attending upon them "in new liveries, to the great wondering of many. And at "the laſt, a great aſſembly of the ſaid Counſellors was made at "the Earl of Warwick's lodging, which was then at Ely Place "in Holborn, whither all the confederates in this matter came "privily armed; and finally concluded to poſſeſs the Tower of "London, which by the policy of Sir William Paulet, Lord "Treaſurer of England, was peaceably obtained, and who, "by order of the ſaid confederates, immediately removed Sir "John Markham, then Lieutenant of the Tower, and placed "in that room Sir Leonard Chamberleine. And after that the "ſaid Council was broken up at Ely Place, the Earl of War-"wick removed forthwith into the city of London, and lay "in the houſe of one John York, a citizen of London, who "was then Chief Maſter of the Mint, kept at Suffolk Place, "Southwark. The Lord Protector hearing of the manner of "the aſſembly of this Council, and of the taking of the Tower, "which ſeemed to him very ſtrange and doubtful, did pre-"ſently, the ſaid night, remove from Hampton-Court, taking "the King with him, unto the Caſtle of Windſor, and there "began to fortify the ſame." He likewiſe wrote the following letter to the Lord Ruſſell, Lord Privy-Seal, then in the Weſt-Country.

"After our right hartie commendations to your good Lord-"ſhip. Here hath of late riſen ſuch a conſpiracie againſt the "King's Majeſtie and us, as never have been ſeene, the which "they cannot mainteine, with ſuch vaine letters and falſe tales "ſurmiſed, as was never ment nor intended on us. They pre-"tend and ſaie, that we have ſold Bullougne to the French, and "we doo withhold wages from the ſoldiers; and other ſuch "tales and letters they doo ſpread abroad (of the which if anie "one thing were true, we would not wiſh to live) the matter "now being brought to a marvellous extremitie, ſuch as we "would never have thought it could have come unto; eſpeciallie "of thoſe men towards the King's Majeſtie and us, of whome "we have deſerved no ſuch thing, but rather much favour and "love. But the caſe being as it is, this is to require and praie "you, to haſten you hither to the defence of the King's Majeſtie,

"in

" in ſuch force and power as you may, to ſhew the part of a " true Gentleman, and of a verie friend; the which thing we " truſt God ſhall reward, and the King's Majeſtie in time to " come, and we ſhall never be unmindfull of it too. We are " ſure you have other letters from them, but as ye tender your " dutie to the King's Majeſtie, we require you to make no " ſtaie, but immediately repaire with ſuch force as you have, to " his Highneſſe in his Caſtell at Windſor, and cauſe the reſt of " ſuch force as you maie make, to follow you. And ſo we bid " you right hartilie farewell. From Hampton-Court, the ſixth " of October.

" Your Lordſhip's aſſured loving Friend,
" Edward Summerſet."

And in a poſtſcript to this letter, his Grace adds, " They " are not aſhamed to ſend poſts abroad to tell that we are al- " ready committed to the Tower: that we would deliver the " Biſhops of Wincheſter and London out of priſon, and bring " in again the old Maſs." The nature of this work will not permit me to give a full relation of the troubles that befel the Duke; but the courſe his enemies took to bring him under their power, was in part thus: they ſummoned armed men, horſe and foot, to repair to them from every county, to oppoſe the Duke and his men; giving out to the Gentry the great dangers the King's perſon was in, and the neceſſity of reſcuing him out of the Duke's hands; whoſe doings they called *traiterous and falſe, and his proceedings deviliſh.* But on his ſubmiſſion, and ſurrendering the King's perſon, which he was prevailed on to do, to prevent the effuſion of blood, the Lords diſpatched another letter, dated from London, October 11, to forbear the ſending up the forces they required. And by bill ſigned October 13[b], his letters patent of protectorſhip, &c. were made void.—The next day, the Duke was committed to the Tower, and after continuing a priſoner about three months, was adviſed to ſubmit himſelf, and acknowledge that he had deſerved his impriſonment, or whatever greater puniſhment the King ſhould be pleaſed to inflict on him; and withal implore the favour of his Majeſty's royal clemency. To this he eaſily condeſcended, and on February 16 was ſet at liberty, upon giving ſecurity for his future conduct: but was not reſtored to the dignity of Protector, or any other of his great places, but that of a Privy-Counſellor, about two months afterwards. And it being conceived, that revenge might draw the Duke to new practices, his friends mediated a reconciliation between him and the Earl of Warwick; which, that it might be the more firm and ſincere, the Duke's eldeſt daughter, on June 3, was married to

[b] Vincent's Baronage, MS.

John

John Viſcount Liſle, the Earl of Warwick's ſon, the King gracing the nuptials with his preſence.

His eſtate, of which he had been deprived, was given to the Crown by Parliament; but the King, of his ſpecial favour [c], and at the humble petition of the Lords of his Council, by patent, ſealed on June 4, 1550, gave him back ſome lands, which were part of the inheritance of his anceſtors, viz. the caſtle of Marleborough; and all his lordſhips and manors of Barton, Ludgarſhal, Alborn, and Old Wotton, and his parks of Ludgarſhal, Great Vaſtern, Little Vaſtern, Alborn Chaſe, and Alborn Warren, and the foreſts, and the liberties of the foreſts of Bradon and Savernake; with the appurtenances in the county of Wilts; and divers other lordſhips, manors, lands, and tenements in the counties of Wilts, Southampton, Dorſet, Somerſet, Middleſex, Berks, and Bucks.

And on the next day (June 5, 1550, 4 Edw. VI.) the King, by the advice of his Council, grants to his dear and entirely beloved uncle, Edward Duke of Somerſet, authority and licence, during life, to retain two hundred perſons, reſident within his dominions, and at his will and pleaſure to give them his livery, badges, and cognizance, over and above all ſuch ſervants as attend him in his houſhold, or are under him in any office or offices, of ſtewardſhip, &c. And on the 14th, [d] in conſideration of his right to the caſtle and lordſhip of Sleford, and other lands and manors in the county of Lincoln, the King, by patent, gave him all and ſingular the meſſuages, lands, tenements and hereditaments, with the appurtenances, in the town of Glaſtenbury, in the county of Somerſet; and other lands and tenements in Kingſton upon Hull.

On July 19, 4 Edward VI. [e] he had a general pardon; and immediately after was prevailed with [f] to go down into Oxfordſhire, Suſſex, Wiltſhire, and Hampſhire, to ſecure thoſe places from riſing, and to order the keeping of the peace: alſo in Auguſt he went to Reading for the ſame purpoſe, on account of jealouſies of the Lady Mary, who was privately to be conveyed out of England, from ſome creek in Eſſex, by Shipperius, Admiral of the Emperor's navy. On which an open war was to be begun, and an inteſtine conſpiracy to be raiſed at home, as Sir Thomas Chamberlain, Ambaſſador with the Queen of Hungary in the Low-Countries, had learned at that Court, and adverti ſed the Miniſtry in England.

About the ſame time his Grace eſtabliſhed a company of foreign woollen manufacturers, under Polanus their Paſtor, and one Corniſh, in the abbey of Glaſtenbury, of which he had got a grant: and that branch turned out ſo beneficial to the

[c] Strype's Memorials, vol. ii. p. 232. [d] Ibid. [e] Vincent, præd.
[f] Strype's Memorials, vol. ii. p. 220.

Engliſh

Engliſh commerce, that the Privy-Council, after the Duke's death, ordered his agreement with them to be continued in full force.

The Parliament ſat on November 4 following, and broke up on February 1: and it appears [g], that the Commons ſtill favoured the Duke of Somerſet, and conſulted his reſtoration to the office of Protector of the King's perſon, but by their prorogation were prevented. However, they intended the next ſeſſion to endeavour at it, and in the mean time to prepare the Lords for it. And Whaley, the Receiver of Yorkſhire, ſpeaking to divers Noblemen about it, was on that account brought into trouble; Henry Earl of Rutland being one that was witneſs againſt him.

Not long after, as appears by a letter from the Earl of Warwick to the Lord Paget, and other letters in the Cotton Library (Titus B. 2.) feuds began to be viſible between the parties of the Duke of Somerſet, and the ſaid Earl of Warwick, the King ſhewing his uncle favour. And conſidering his narrow circumſtances, having not only been ſtripped of all his beneficial places, but alſo of his lands and revenues, the King, to eaſe the Duke in all he could, being to ſend hoſtages into France, conſiſting of perſons of the beſt Nobility, that might anſwer the quality of the French hoſtages ſent hither, his Majeſty among the reſt made choice of the Earl of Hertford, the Duke's heir, and was at the charge of equipping him (as appears by the King's Warrant Book) which he did not do by any of the others. Alſo about the ſame time the Duke received 500 l. bequeathed to him by King Henry's laſt will, in conſideration of his preſent occaſions; the legacy having in effect been before ſatisfied, when in the firſt year of Edward VI. he had divers grants, in conſideration of ſervices, and for fulfilling the King's will, as it ran in the Book of Sales. He likewiſe got the command of a troop of horſeguards, conſiſting of 100, newly raiſed, to counterballance that lately conferred on the Earl of Warwick, about that time created Duke of Northumberland.

In April 1551, the Duke was made Lord Lieutenant of the counties of Buckingham and Berkſhire; but ſoon after the ill cemented affections of the Dukes of Somerſet, and Northumberland, diſſolved into open enmity. In the proſecution whereof [h], Somerſet (as ſome write) provoked by continual injuries, reſolved to murder Northumberland; and to that end, under colour of a viſit, came privily armed to his lodging, attended by ſeconds. But finding him in his bed, and being courteouſly entertained, did not execute what he propoſed. Whereupon, at his departure, one of the company (Sir J. Thynn his Secretary) aſking him whether he had *done the feat*, and he ſaying *no*, the other replied, *Then you are undone.* This his intent being

[g] Strype, ibid. p. 249. [h] Godwin, p. 239, 246. and Hayward's Hiſt. Edw. VI.

by

by his own party betrayed, he, with the Lord Grey of Wilton, were ſent to the Tower, on October 16, 1551; and the next day his Dutcheſs, Sir John Thynn, Sir Michael Stanhope, his brother-in-law, and other of his friends, were committed to the ſame place, where his Dutcheſs remained till ſet at liberty by Queen Mary, on Auguſt 3, 1553. Alſo, on October 21, the Lord Paget was carried to the Fleet by a guard; and from thence he, with the Earl of Arundel, were ſent to the Tower, charged with being privy to the Duke's practices, as was alſo the Lord Dacre's of the North.

Whereupon the Duke of Northumberland and his party, to make the pretended treaſons appear more formidable, with much ſhew and ceremony came into the city, on October 22; and the ſeveral companies of London being commanded to repair to their halls, he acquainted them, that the Duke of Somerſet would have taken the Tower, ſeized on the Broad-Seal, and have deſtroyed the city, and then to have gone to the Iſle of Wight; all which was thought very improbable.

On December 1, 1551, he was brought to his trial in Weſtminſter-hall, before the Marquis of Wincheſter (then Lord Treaſurer of England) ſitting as High-Steward, and twenty-ſeven Peers [1]. The charge againſt him conſiſted of five parts: 1. Of raiſing men in the north parts of the realm: 2. Of aſſembling men to kill the Duke of Northumberland: 3. Of reſiſting his attachment: 4. Of killing the Gens d'Arms, and raiſing London: and, 5. Of aſſaulting the Lords, and deviſing their deaths. To which he pleaded, not guilty, and putting himſelf upon trial of his Peers, he averred that he had never any intent to raiſe men in the North; but on ſome bruits apprehending a fear, he ſent to Sir William Herbert to remain his friend: that he never intended to kill the Duke of Northumberland, or any other Lord, but ſpoke of it only, and determined the contrary. He further ſaid, that it had been a mad enterprize with his hundred men to aſſail the Gens d'Arms guards, conſiſting of nine hundred, when, in caſe he had prevailed, it would nothing have availed the pretended purpoſe: and therefore, that this, being ſenſeleſs and abſurd, muſt needs diſcredit other matters, which might otherwiſe have been believed.

Next, that at London he never projected any ſtir, but ever held it a good place for his ſecurity. And that for having men in his chamber at Greenwich, it was manifeſt he meant no harm; becauſe, when he might have done it, he did not. Moreover, againſt the perſons of them whoſe examinations were read againſt him, he objected many things, deſiring they might be brought to his face; but his requeſt was rejected. Againſt Sir Thomas Palmer, one of the witneſſes, he urged ſeveral parti-

[1] State Trials, folio, vol. vii.

culars

culars to his diſcredit; and yet in opinion of many, far ſhort of what might have been proved.

The King's learned Council pleaded, that ſome of the crimes charged againſt him were treaſon, and the other felony: nevertheleſs, after many varieties in opinion, he was acquitted of treaſon, but found guilty of felony, by virtue of a ſtatute then in force, which made conſpiring the death of a Privy-Counſellor felony, without the benefit of clergy; and he received ſentence to be hanged.

Thoſe who were preſent at his trial, hearing the Lords ſay, not guilty (which was to the treaſon) thinking he was acquitted, and chiefly for that immediately on thoſe words, the ax of the Tower was taken from before him, they teſtified their joy with loud acclamations. And on his paſſing through London (as Hollinſhed relates) ſome hollowed for joy that he was acquitted, and others cried that he was condemned, and the people murmured againſt the Duke of Northumberland and the other Lords who were his enemies.

On Friday the 22d of January, 1551-2, before eight in the morning, the Duke was brought from the Tower to the ſcaffold, which having aſcended, he changed neither voice or countenance, but kneeling down, and lifting up his hands, commended himſelf unto God. After he had ended ſome ſhort prayers, ſtanding up again, and turning himſelf to the eaſt ſide of the ſcaffold, he with great alacrity, and cheerfulneſs of mind and countenance, uttered theſe words to the people:

"Dearly beloved friends, I am brought hither to ſuffer "death, albeit I never offended againſt the King, neither by "word nor deed, and have been always as faithful and true "unto this realm, as any man hath been. But foraſmuch as "I am by law condemned to die, I do acknowledge myſelf, as "well as others, to be ſubject therunto. Wherefore to teſtify "mine obedience which I owe unto the laws, I come hither to "ſuffer death, whereunto I willingly offer myſelf with moſt "hearty thanks unto God, that hath given me this time of re-"pentance, who might through ſudden death have taken away "my life, that I neither ſhould have acknowledged him nor "myſelf.

"Moreover (dearly beloved friends) there is yet ſomewhat "that I muſt put you in mind of, as touching Chriſtian reli-"gion, which ſo long as I was in authority, I always diligently "ſet forth and furthered, to my power. Neither do I repent me "of my doings, but rejoice therein, ſith now the ſtate of Chri-"ſtian religion cometh moſt near unto the form and order of "the primitive church. Which thing I eſteem as a great be-"nefit given of God, both to you and me; moſt heartily ex-"horting you all, that this which is moſt purely ſet forth, you

"will

" will with like thankfulneſs accept and embrace, and ſet out " the ſame in your living: which thing if you do not, without " doubt, greater miſchief and calamity will follow."

More he would have ſaid, but a ſtrange tumult and ſudden conſternation of the aſſembly interrupted him; but the Duke in the mean time ſtood unmoved, waving his cap which he held in his hands, and making ſigns to the people, to keep themſelves quiet. And when they were compoſed, eſpying Sir Anthony Brown riding to the ſcaffold, they conjectured the King had ſent his uncle a pardon; and thereupon caſting up their caps, they cried, Pardon, pardon is come, God ſave the King!

But at length ſilence being obtained, he ſpoke to them a ſecond time in this manner:

" Dearly beloved friends, there is no ſuch matter in hand, as " you vainly hope or believe. It ſeemeth thus good to Almighty " God, whoſe ordinance it is meet and neceſſary that we be all " obedient unto. Wherefore I pray you all to be quiet, and let " us join in prayer unto the Lord, for the preſervation of our " noble King, unto whoſe Majeſty I wiſh continual health, " with all felicity and abundance, and all manner of proſperous " ſucceſs: *whereunto the people cried out, Amen.* Moreover, I " wiſh unto all his Counſellors the grace and favour of God, " whereby they may rule all things uprightly with juſtice, unto " whom I exhort you all in the Lord to ſhew yourſelves obe- " dient, the which is alſo very neceſſary for you, under the pain " of condemnation, and alſo moſt profitable for the preſervation " and ſafeguard of the King's Majeſty. And foraſmuch as here- " tofore I have had oftentimes affairs with divers men, and that " it is hard to pleaſe every man that hath been offended or in- " jured by me, I moſt humbly require and aſk them forgiveneſs: " but eſpecially Almighty God, whom, throughout all my life, " I have moſt grievouſly offended. And unto all other, what- " ſoever they be that have offended me, I do with my whole " heart forgive them.

" And once again (dearly beloved in the Lord) I require that " you will keep yourſelves quiet and ſtill, leſt, through your " tumult, you might cauſe me to have ſome trouble, which in " this caſe would nothing at all profit me, neither be any plea- " ſure unto you. For albeit the ſpirit be willing and ready, the " fleſh is frail and wavering, and through your quietneſs I ſhall " be much more the quieter: but if that you fall into tumult, " it will be great trouble, and no gain at all unto you. More- " over, I deſire you to bear me witneſs, that I die here in the " faith of Jeſus Chriſt, deſiring you to help me with your " prayers, that I may perſevere conſtant in the ſame unto my " life's end."

Then

Then turning himſelf about, and kneeling down, Doctor Cox (who was preſent to aſſiſt him in his laſt moments) delivered into his hand a paper, wherein was contained a brief confeſſion to God; which being read, he ſtood up again, and bidding the Sheriffs, the Lieutenant of the Tower, and others on the ſcaffold, farewel, taking them all by the hands, he after gave the executioner money. Then kneeling down in the ſtraw, he untied his ſhirt-ſtrings, and the executioner coming to him, turned down his collar round about his neck, and made all things ready for his execution. Which being done, he covered his face with his own handkerchief, and laid himſelf down, ſhewing no manner of trouble or fear, neither did his countenance change, any other than that juſt before his eyes were covered, his cheeks had a little more tincture of red than uſual.

Thus lying on the block, and waiting for the ſtroke, his doublet was taken notice of to cover his neck; and thereupon he was deſired to riſe up and put it off; after which, laying himſelf down again on the block, and calling thrice, *Lord Jeſus ſave me!* he was, on the third time of repeating it, in a moment bereſt of his life. His head and body were put into a coffin, and carried back to the Tower, and buried on the north ſide of the choir of St. Peter's.

That his death was generally lamented is manifeſt[k]. Many there were, who kept handkerchiefs dipped in his blood, as ſo many reliques: amongſt the reſt, a ſprightly Dame, two years after, when the Duke of Northumberland was led captive through the city, for his oppoſition againſt Queen Mary, run to him in the ſtreets, and ſhaking out her bloody handkerchief before him, ſaid, *Behold the blood of that worthy man, that good uncle of that excellent King, which was ſhed by thy treacherous machination, now, at this inſtant, begins to revenge itſelf upon thee.*

From what our hiſtorians have wrote, and from what I have obſerved of his conduct, I think this may be juſtly ſaid of him, That he was a pious, juſt man, and by his influence the reformation of religion in England did ſo well proceed in the beginning. Nor did he want true courage and reſolution, which was conſpicuous on ſeveral occaſions, before recited; and though it was reputed a weakneſs in him, in ſubmitting to his enemies; yet in that emergency it may be ſaid, he ſacrificed himſelf, to prevent a civil war, which might have endangered the life of his Sovereign, and cauſed the introducing of Popery. He was alſo every way good and careful of the weal-public; and I think a greater proof cannot be given of his concern for his King and country, than that (though ſome blamed him for it) he did not ſcreen his own brother from juſtice, when his ambition and evil mind wrought in him thoſe machinations that would have been

[k] Godwin, p. 249.

deſtructive

deſtructive to both. His frailties, which procured him the ill-will of many of the Council, were haſtineſs and paſſion, which too often meet in good-nature and generoſity, in which he had few equals.

During the time of his impriſonment, he omitted no opportunity in employing his time religiouſly, as may appear by a book, by him then written, intitled, *A Spiritual and moſt Precious Pearle, teaching all Men to love and embrace the Croſs, as a moſt ſweet and neceſſary Thing:* Printed at London in 8vo. anno 1550. He likewiſe tranſlated, out of French into Engliſh, an Epiſtle wrote to him by John Calvin, of *Godly Converſation*, which he received whilſt under his confinement, and was printed at London, 1550.

This great Duke had two wives. Firſt, Catherine, daughter and coheir of Sir William Fillol, of Fillol-Hall in Eſſex and Woodlands in com. Dorſet, Knt. and by her had iſſue two ſons, John, and Edward, of whom I ſhall farther treat, being anceſtor to the preſent Duke of Somerſet, as alſo to the Earl of Hertford. His Grace the Duke of Somerſet, by his ſecond wife Anne, daughter to Sir Edward Stanhope, of Sudbury in Suffolk and of Rampton in com. Nott. Knt. (and heir to her mother, Elizabeth, ſiſter to John Bourchier, Earl of Bath, and great grand-daughter of William Bourchier, Earl of Ewe, in Normandy, by Anne his wife, daughter and ſole heir of Thomas of Woodſtock, Duke of Glouceſter, ſeventh and youngeſt ſon of Edward III.) had iſſue three ſons, Edward, afterwards Earl of Hertford; Henry, who married Joan, daughter of Thomas Percy, Earl of Northumberland, and died without iſſue; and another Edward, who died, unmarried, a Knight, in 1574. Alſo ſix daughters: Anne, firſt married to John Dudley (commonly called Earl of Warwick) eldeſt ſon to John Duke of Northumberland; and afterwards to Sir Edward Unton, of Wadley in Faringdon in Berks, Knight of the Bath; Margaret and Jane, who died unmarried; Mary, firſt wedded to Andrew Rogers, eldeſt ſon to Sir Richard Rogers, of Brainſton in com. Dorſ. Knt. and after to Sir Henry Payton, Knt.; Catherine died unmarried; and Elizabeth, who became the ſecond wife to Sir Richard Knightley, of Falveſly in com. Northampt. Knt. The three firſt-mentioned daughters are celebrated by Thuanus, for the compoſition of 160 verſes in couplets, on the death (which happened on December 21, 1549) of Margaret, Conſort of Henry de Albert, King of Navarre, and ſiſter of Francis I. of France. The ſame hiſtorian deſcribes them as worthy of immortal fame for their noble birth, elegance of wit, extraordinary learning, and rare probity of manners.

Edward Seymour, Earl of Hertford, eldeſt ſon and heir of Edward, firſt Duke of Somerſet, by his Dutcheſs, Anne Stanhope

hope (who after the Duke's death married one of his ſervants, named Nudigate) was, by ſpecial entail, inheritor, by deſcent from the ſaid Duke, as well of moſt of his lands, &c. as of all his dignities, and honourable titles of Duke of Somerſet, Earl of Hertford, Viſcount Beauchamp, and Baron Seymour; as not forfeited by the crime for which he ſuffered death. But in the ſeſſion of Parliament, in the fifth and ſixth years of Edward VI. (when he was but thirteen years of age, or thereabout) there paſſed an act, by the procurement of his enemies, by which were given to the Crown the ſaid dignities and titles of honour, with lands of 5000 l. yearly value, viz. All ſuch lands as were purchaſed by the Duke his father, ſince May 25, 1540, 32 Henry VIII. when there paſſed a private act, whereby the lands ſo by him purchaſed were ſpecially entailed on the iſſue of his ſecond marriage. Being thus deprived of all his titles and lands, he continued in this diſconſolate condition, till Queen Elizabeth [1] created him Earl of Hertford, and Baron Beauchamp, in the firſt year of her reign, before her coronation. He married the Lady Catherine Grey, daughter and heir of Henry Grey, Duke of Suffolk, by the Lady Frances his wife, eldeſt daughter and coheir to Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, and Mary the French Queen, who was youngeſt daughter to Henry VII. which Lady had been divorced from Henry Herbert, Earl of Pembroke; and being ſiſter to the Lady Jane, who was beheaded [m], it was the cauſe of great trouble, both to her and the Earl. In 1563, the fifth of Queen Elizabeth, being diſcerned to be big with child, ſhe was committed priſoner to the Tower, though ſhe acknowledged herſelf to be his lawful wife; and he returning out of France, where he had gone with the Queen's leave, and owning his marriage, was alſo impriſoned with her; where ſhe was ſoon brought to-bed of her firſt begotten ſon; after that, of another, having corrupted her keeper. He was, upon this, cenſured in the Star-Chamber, upon theſe three points: firſt, for that he had vitiated a maid of the Royal Blood; next, that he had broke priſon; and laſtly, that he had lain with her again. To which he anſwered, That having lawfully married her, and the priſon doors ſtanding open, he came to her, in her ſadneſs, to comfort, and pay his conjugal debt: yet was, nevertheleſs, fined 15,000 l. and kept priſoner for the ſpace of nine years in the Tower, where his Counteſs died, on January 26, 1567. The validity of this marriage being afterwards tried at common law, the Miniſter who married them being preſent, and other circumſtances agreeing, the jury (whereof John Digby, Eſq; was foreman) found it a good marriage.

[1] 1 Pat. Eliz. p. 4.

[m] Camden's Annals of Queen Elizabeth. for 1562.

This Earl lived to be an aged man [n]; and in the 3d of Jac. I. with much importunity, was prevailed on to go Ambaſſador to the Arch-Duke Albert, Governor of the Netherlands, for confirming a peace.

By the Lady Catherine Grey, his wife, aforeſaid, he had iſſue three ſons; Edward Lord Beauchamp; Thomas, who took to wife Iſabel, daughter of Edward Onley, of Cateſby in com. Northamp. Eſq; and died without iſſue, on Auguſt 20, 1619; and another Edward, who died anno 1602; alſo Catherine, a daughter, who died young. He had likewiſe two other wives; firſt, Frances, who was daughter to William Lord Howard, of Effingham, ſiſter to Charles Earl of Nottingham, and dying on May 14, 1594, was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey on June 20 following. He, laſtly, married Frances, daughter to Thomas Viſcount Howard, of Bindon, and widow of Henry Pranell, Eſq; of London, Vintner; but by neither of theſe had any iſſue; and the latter was ſecondly wedded to Lodowick Stuart, Duke of Lennox and Richmond, but had no children. His Lordſhip, departing this life in April 1621 [o], was buried in the cathedral church of Saliſbury.

Which Edward Lord Beauchamp, his eldeſt ſon (notwithſtanding the Duke's deſcendants, by the firſt venter, had lodged a petition in the Houſe of Peers, againſt the claim of thoſe of the ſecond to the family titles) in the ſixth of Jac. I. obtained letters patent [p], that he and the heirs male of his body, immediately after the death of his father, ſhould be Barons of Parliament, and have place and voice there: as alſo, other letters patents the ſame year, for the enjoyment of the title of Earl of Hertford. And having married Honora, daughter to Sir Richard Rogers, of Brainſton in com. Dorſ. Knt. without the conſent of the Earl his father, it expoſed him to a great deal of trouble. He died before his father, and by the ſaid Lady Honora, he had three ſons and three daughters; firſt, Edward Lord Viſcount Beauchamp, who was created Knight of the Bath, at the creation of Charles Prince of Wales, and married Anne, daughter of Robert Sackvile, Earl of Dorſet. The marriage articles bear date March 20, 1608; by which it appears, the Lady was to have 6000 l. for her portion, payable by her brother, Richard Earl of Dorſet, at Hertford-houſe, in Chanon-Row, in the city of Weſtminſter. And the Earl of Hertford, his grandfather, covenants to ſettle a jointure of 800 l. *per ann.* on her. He died in Auguſt, 1618, before his grandfather, and had iſſue, by the ſaid Lady Anne, one ſon, Edward, who died young. The ſecond ſon of Edward Lord Beauchamp, by the ſaid Lady Honora, was Sir William Seymour, Knt.; and Sir

[n] Camden's Annals, Jac. I.

[o] I. 8. in Offic. Arm. folio 4, 6.

[p] Pat. 6. Jac. I. p. 30.

Francis

Francis Seymour, Knt. was third ſon. Of the daughters, Anne and Mary both died infants; and Honora was married to Sir Ferdinand Dudley, Knight of the Bath, at that time heir-apparent of Edward Lord Dudley.

Sir William Seymour, ſecond ſon of this Edward Lord Beauchamp, on the death of his grandfather, Edward Earl of Hertford, ſucceeded him in his honours.

This William Earl and Marquis of Hertford, and ſecond Duke of Somerſet, was educated in Magdalen-college in Oxford, and in conſideration of his eminent merits, was advanced [q] to the dignity of Marquis of Hertford, 3 Junii (1640) 16 Car. I. and thereupon conſtituted Governor to the Prince of Wales: and faithfully adhering to that King, on the grand rebellion againſt him, was made Lieutenant-general of all his forces, in the counties of Wilts, Southampton, Dorſet, &c. and elected Chancellor of the Univerſity of Oxford, October 24, A. D. 1643, in the room of Philip Earl of Pembroke, who was diſplaced: and the ſame year made Groom of the Stole to the King; whom he attended throughout the courſe of the civil wars, and diſtinguiſhed himſelf on ſeveral occaſions, particularly by his gallant defence of Sherborne caſtle in Dorſetſhire, 1642, againſt the Parliamentarians under William Earl of Bedford, and by his courage and conduct at the battle of Lanſdown, on July 5, 1643. When the Marquis was informed, that the Rebels propoſed to put his Majeſty to Death, he, with James Stuart, Duke of Richmond, Thomas Wriotheſley, Earl of Southampton, and Montague Bertie, Earl of Lindſay, generouſly offered themſelves ſacrifices for the ſafety of their Sovereign, as having been, by their office of Privy-Counſellors, the adviſers of the meaſures imputed to him as criminal: and on his cruel murder, they got a licence from the Parliament to bury his Majeſty's body.

During the uſurpation [r], he was diſmiſſed from being Chancellor of the Univerſity of Oxford, and the Earl of Pembroke reſtored in February, 1647-8; upon whoſe death, on January 23, 1649-50, the place was vacant till January, 1650-1, when Oliver Cromwell procured himſelf to be elected; and after his exit, his eldeſt ſon, Richard, was choſen. But the ſaid Richard, on a foreſight of the reſtauration of Charles II. reſigning his office by a letter ſent to the Univerſity, dated May 8, the Marquis of Hertford was reſtored to his place of Chancellor on the 26th following; and on June 6 was confirmed by the Convocation.

On the King's reſtauration, the Marquis of Hertford met the King at Dover; and the next day, May 27, his Majeſty at Canterbury gave him the Garter (having been elected in Jerſey

[q] Par. 16 Car. I. p. 1. [r] Wood's Faſti Oxon. vol. ii.

on January 12, 1649) at the ſame time that he gave it to the Earl of Southampton, and General Monk. He was alſo, by a ſpecial act, in that Parliament begun at Weſtminſter on April 25, 1660, reſtored to the title of Duke of Somerſet, forfeited by the attainder of Edward Duke of Somerſet, his great grandfather, with limitation to the heirs male of the body of the ſaid Edward, late Duke of Somerſet, begotten on the body of the Lady Anne his wife, with all privileges as fully and amply, as if the act of attainder in 5 Edward VI. had never been made. On the paſſing of which act, the King thus expreſſed himſelf, in Parliament, "That as this was an act of an extraordinary "nature, ſo it was done for an extraordinary perſon, who hath "merited ſo much of his royal father and himſelf, as any ſub-"ject could do; and therefore hoped no man would envy it, "becauſe he had done what a good maſter ſhould do to ſuch a "ſervant."

This great nobleman departed this life on October 24, 1660, and was buried at Great Bedwin. He had two wives; firſt, the Lady Arabella Stuart, daughter to Charles, ſon to Matthew, Earl of Lennox. Which Lady being of the Royal Family, and being married without King James's approbation, he was thereupon committed to the Tower, and ſhe confined to her houſe at Highgate; where, after ſome impriſonment, endeavouring to eſcape beyond ſea to her huſband, who got away to Dunkirk, anno 1611, ſhe was overtaken, and committed to the Tower; where ſhe died, without iſſue, and was interred in Weſtminſter-abbey on September 27, 1615, near [a] Henry Prince of Wales.

His ſecond Lady was Frances, eldeſt ſiſter and coheir to Robert Devereux, Earl of Eſſex, the Parliament General. By this Lady he had five ſons and four daughters, of which William, Robert, and Edward, died unmarried; as alſo one of his daughters, the Lady Arabella: and his eldeſt daughter, Lady Frances, died without children, after having married three huſbands, viz. Richard Viſcount Molineux, Thomas Wriotheſley, Earl of Southampton, and Conyers, ſon and heir to Conyers Lord Darcy. His other daughters were, Lady Mary, married to Heneage Earl of Winchelſey, and Lady Jane to Charles Lord Clifford of Laneſborough, ſon and heir to Richard Boyle, Earl of Burlington.

His ſons that lived to maturity, were Henry Lord Beauchamp, his third ſon, and Lord John Seymour, who at length was Duke of Somerſet, of whom I ſhall farther treat.

Which Henry Lord Beauchamp took to wife Mary, eldeſt daughter of Arthur Lord Capel, of Hadham, and died at the age of twenty-eight years, in his father's life-time, anno 1656;

[a] Ex Regiſt. Eccleſ.

leaving

leaving the ſaid Mary his wife ſurviving, afterwards married to Henry Duke of Beaufort. By the Lord Beauchamp ſhe had one ſon, William, who ſucceeded his grandfather, as third Duke of Somerſet, and three daughters, Frances, and Mary, who died infants; and Elizabeth, who had a warrant from [t] Charles II. on June 28, 1672, allowing her the title of Lady, and the place and precedency of a daughter of the Duke of Somerſet; and on Auguſt 31, 1676, ſhe was married to Thomas Lord Bruce, afterwards Earl of Aileſbury, to whom ſhe brought Tottenham-park, Savernake-foreſt, and other eſtates in Wiltſhire, and other counties, being heir to her brother William, third Duke of Somerſet.

Which William, third Duke of Somerſet, after five days illneſs, died at Worceſter-houſe in the [u] Strand, unmarried (aged twenty years) on September 26, 1671, and the Lord John, his uncle, ſucceeded to the honours.

This John, fourth Duke of Somerſet, having married Sarah, daughter of Sir Edward Alſton, Knt. Preſident of the College of Phyſicians (and relict of George Grimſton, Eſq; ſon of Sir Harbottle Grimſton, Maſter of the Rolls) departed this life without iſſue, at Ameſbury in Wiltſhire, on April 20, 1675, and was buried in the cathedral of Saliſbury.

His Dutcheſs gave a notable inſtance of her regard for the family of Somerſet, having by her will, dated May 17, 1686, ſettled, in the ſtricteſt terms of law, the manors of Powſey and Titcombe, cum Oxenwood, and Harding farm, with their appurtenances, in Wiltſhire, on the ſucceſſive Dukes of Somerſet, deſcendants from Edward Seymour, the firſt Duke. She likewiſe founded the noble alms-houſe at Froxfield, in the ſaid county, for thirty widows not having 20l. a year, one half the widows of clergymen, and the other of laymen.

Now I come to Sir Francis Seymour, Knt. third ſon to Edward Lord Viſcount Beauchamp, ſon and heir to Edward Earl of Hertford, and younger brother to William Duke of Somerſet, who was reſtored to that title, as before-mentioned. Which Sir Francis, on February 19, 16 Car. I. had been advanced to the dignity of a Baron of this realm [x], by the title of Lord Seymour, of Troubridge; and was [y] conſtituted Chancellor of the dutchy of Lancaſter, on June 1, 1660. He married twice; firſt, Frances, daughter and coheir to Sir Gilbert Prinne, of Allington in com. Wilts, by whom he had iſſue one ſon, Charles Lord Troubridge, and a daughter, Frances, married to Sir William Ducie, of Tortworth in com. Glouceſt. Knight of the Bath, who was created Lord Viſcount Down, in Ireland, and died at Charlton in Kent, without iſſue, in the ſixty-fifth year of his age, on

[t] Stanford's Geneal. Hiſtory, p. 366. [u] Hiſt. Eng. vol. iii. p. 309.
[x] Pat. 16 Car. I. p. 7. [y] Pat. 12 Car. II.

September 9, 1679: ſecondly, Catherine, daughter to Sir Robert Lee, of Billeſley in com. Warw. Knt. by whom he had no iſſue; and dying on July 12, 1664, was buried at Bedwin.

Which Charles, his only ſon, ſucceeded him as Lord Troubridge, and died on Auguſt 25, 1665. He married firſt Mary, daughter and ſole heir of Thomas Smith, of Soley in the pariſh of Chilton Foliot in com. Wilts, Eſq; by whom he had iſſue Edward, that died in his infancy, and two daughters, Catherine, who died unmarried; and Frances, wedded to Sir George Hungerford, of Cadingham in the county of Wilts, Knt. And having married, ſecondly, Elizabeth, daughter to William Lord Allington, of Horſheath in the county of Cambridge, had iſſue five ſons, viz. Francis, William, and William, who died young; and Francis and Charles, who ſurvived, and were ſucceſſively Dukes of Somerſet: alſo two daughters, Elizabeth, who died young; and Honora, married to Sir Charles Gerard, of Harrow on the Hill in the county of Middleſex, Bart. and ſhe died in May, 1731.

Francis, eldeſt of the two ſons, ſucceeded his father in 1665. He was born on January 17, 1657, and by the death of the before-mentioned John Duke of Somerſet, who died without iſſue, in 1675, became the fifth Duke of Somerſet: but travelling in Italy, was murdered at a place called Lerice, in the territories of the Genoeſe, on April 20, 1678. This misfortune was occaſioned by his falling into company with ſome French Gentlemen, who perſuaded him to go with them into the church of the Auguſtinians at Lerice, where they offered ſome rudeneſs to certain Ladies of the family of Botti of that town. This was ſo much reſented by the huſband of one of thoſe Ladies, Horatio Botti, that he watched his opportunity, and ſhot the Duke at the door of his inn, of which wound he inſtantly died. It was the Duke's unhappineſs, that he was in company with theſe French Gentlemen, who gave the provocation, he himſelf being intirely innocent. On his death, his uncle, Mr. Hildebrand Allington, afterwards Lord Allington, who travelled with his Grace, immediately gave notice of it to the State of Genoa, and demanded ſatisfaction. That republic was not wanting in doing all that was poſſible, in order to apprehend the ſaid Horatio Botti; but he making his eſcape, they promiſed a reward to any one that ſhould ſeize him, and bring him to juſtice; and he was hanged in effigie, as an attonement to the King of England, for the death of ſo great a ſubject.

The ſaid Francis, fifth Duke of Somerſet, was ſucceeded in his honours and eſtate by his brother Charles, born on Auguſt 12, 1662, commonly called the proud Duke of Somerſet, on account of his magnificent and ſtately manner of living. His Grace, on May 30, 1682, took to wife the Lady Elizabeth,

ſole

ſole daughter and heir of Joſceline Percy, the laſt Earl of Northumberland of that family, who had been before married to Henry Cavendiſh, Earl of Ogle, only ſon and heir to Henry Duke of Newcaſtle, who died before he was of age to cohabit with her. According to the marriage articles, his Grace and his heirs were to relinquiſh the ſurname of Seymour, and inſtead thereof to aſſume and uſe that of Percy: but the Dutcheſs, ſoon after ſhe came of age, releaſed him from that diſagreeable obligation. By that Lady (who died on November 23, 1722) his Grace had iſſue, that ſurvived to maturity, three ſons and four daughters, viz.

Algernon Earl of Hertford, born on Novem. 11, 1684, of whom I ſhall treat, under the title of Earl of Northumberland.

Lord Percy Seymour, who was born on June 3, 1686, ſerved in Parliament for Cockermouth in Cumberland, and died of the ſmall-pox on July 4, 1721, unmarried.

Lord Charles Seymour, who was born in 1688, and died on January 4, 1711, unmarried.

Lady Elizabeth, who was married to Henry Obrien, Earl of Thomond, of the kingdom of Ireland, and Viſcount Tadcaſter in England, and died without iſſue.

Lady Catherine, who was married, on July 21, 1708, to Sir William Wyndham, of Orchard-Wyndham in the county of Somerſet, Bart. the late Earl of Egremont's father, and died in April, 1713.

Lady Anne, married to Peregrine Marquis of Caermarthen, ſon and heir of Peregrine Oſborn, Duke of Leeds.

Lady Frances, who died unmarried, on May 10, 1720.

His Grace, on February 4, 1725-6, had to his ſecond wife, the Lady Charlotte Finch, ſecond daughter to Daniel Earl of Winchelſea and Nottingham; by whom he had two daughters; the Lady Frances, born on July 8, 1728, and married on September 3, 1750, to John Marquis of Granby, ſon and heir of John Duke of Rutland: Lady Charlotte, born on September 21, 1730, and married on October 6, 1750, to Heneage Lord Guernſey, now Earl of Ailesford.

His Grace was admitted Knight of the Garter on April 8, 1684, the 36th of Charles II. and upon the demiſe of that Prince, on Febr. 6 enſuing, was one of the Privy-Counſellors who ſigned the proclamation of James II. for whoſe ſervice, in June following, he aſſiſted in collecting the militia of Somerſetſhire againſt the Duke of Monmouth: but refuſing to introduce Ferdinand Dadda, Archbiſhop of Amaſia, nuncio from Pope Innocent XI. to his audience at Windſor, on July 3, 1687, he was deprived of his place of Lord of the Bedchamber, and the command of the third regiment of dragoons, raiſed in 1685. The Univerſity of Cambridge elected him their Chancellor in

1688, on the death of Chriſtopher Monk, Duke of Albemarle, who had been choſen into that office on the removal of the Duke of Monmouth, in 1682. When the Prince of Orange landed, in 1688, his Grace was one of the Noblemen who offered him their aſſiſtance: and during his reign, was ſome time Preſident of the Council, and one of the Lords of the Regency, in 1701, when his Majeſty made his laſt viſit to Holland. Upon Queen Anne's acceſſion, on March 8, 1701-2, he was ſworn of her Privy-Council; appointed Maſter of the Horſe on July 3 following, and, in 1708, one of the Commiſſioners for treating of the Union. His Dutcheſs, on Jan. 16, 1710-11, was conſtituted Groom of the Stole, and firſt Lady of the Bedchamber to her Majeſty, in the room of the Dutcheſs of Marlborough: but his Grace was removed from the Maſterſhip of the Horſe, on January 17, 1711-12. His unexpected appearance with John Duke of Argyle, both unſummoned, at the Council at Kenſington, on July 30, 1714, when the Queen's recovery was deſpaired of, very probably diſconcerted the ſchemes of ſome of the other Counſellors, with regard to the ſucceſſion: and when her Majeſty expired, on Auguſt 1, his Grace's name was the ſecond in the liſt of the nineteen Peers, whom King George I. had, by a previous deed, added to the ſeven great officers of ſtate, as Guardians of the Realm, until his arrival. In the mean time, his Grace concurred in every ſtep for preſerving the quiet of the nation; and, on Auguſt 31, was employed, with the Duke of Shrewſbury and Lord Cowper, to receive the Seals from Lord Bolingbroke, and ſeal up the doors of his office. King George having landed at Greenwich on September 18, the Duke of Somerſet was nominated one of the new Privy-Council, and reſtored to the place of Maſter of the Horſe, on the 27th of that month, but threw it up on October 25, next year, with marks of indignation, ſoon after the commitment of Sir William Wyndham, his ſon-in-law, to the Tower; his Grace having had a ſolemn promiſe, that if Sir William ſurrendered, he ſhould not ſo much as be confined. The Duke accepted of no office at Court afterwards, though the late King George II. in June, 1727, the firſt of his reign, named him one of his Privy-Council.

His Grace, after his Succeſſion to the Peerage, aſſiſted at almoſt every grand ſolemnity in a ſtation ſuitable to his high quality: at the funeral of Charles II. on February 14, 1684-5, he was one of the ſupporters to Prince George of Denmark, the chief mourner; he carried the orb at the coronation of James II. on April 23, 1685; and the Queen's Crown, at that of William and Mary, on April 11, 1689: at the burial of Queen Mary, on March 5, 1694-5, he was one of the ſupporters of the pall, while his Dutcheſs walked as chief mourner:

at

at the funeral of King William, on April 12, 1702, he was one of the two ſupporters to Prince George, the principal mourner: and at the coronation of Queen Anne, on April 23, 1702; of George I. on October 20, 1714; and of George II. on October 11, 1727, his Grace carried the orb.

His Grace, ſome years before his deceaſe, retired from all public affairs, to his ſeat at Petworth in Suſſex, where he died on December 2, 1748, and on the 26th of the ſame month, was buried in Saliſbury cathedral. In July, 1756, a very fine marble ſtatue of his Grace (done at the expence of his daughters, the Marchioneſs of Granby and Lady Guernſey, by the ingenious Mr. Ryſbrack) repreſenting him in the younger part of his life, raiſed on a ſquare pedeſtal, and dreſſed after the manner of Vandyke, with the enſigns of the Garter, leaning in an eaſy poſture on his left arm, and holding a roll in his right hand, was placed in the ſenate-houſe of the univerſity of Cambridge. The following inſcription, in capitals, is on the front of the pedeſtal:

Carolo
Duci Somerſetenſi
Strenuo juris academici defenſori
Acerrimo libertatis publicæ vindici
Statuam
Lectiſſimarum matronarum munus
L. M. ponendam decrevit
Academia Cantabrigienſis
Quam præſidio ſuo munivit
Auxit munificentia
Per annos plus ſexaginta
Cancellarius.

On the reverſe:

Hanc ſtatuam
Suæ in parentem pietatis
In academiam ſtudii
Monumentum
Ornatiſſimæ feminæ
Franciſca Marchionis de Granby conjux
Charlotta Baronis de Guernſey
S. P. faciendam curaverunt
M. D. C. C. L. VI.

His honours and eſtate devolved on his eldeſt ſon, Algernon, Earl of Hertford, the late Duke of Somerſet, of whom I ſhall treat, under the title of Earl of Northumberland, which he was created by George II.; but dying without iſſue male, on February 7, 1749-50, the honours of Duke of Somerſet, and Baron

Baron Seymour, devolved on Sir Edward Seymour, Bart. lineally deſcended from Edward firſt Duke of Somerſet, by his firſt wife, Catherine, daughter of Sir William Fillol, as beforementioned; who had iſſue by her two ſons, [z] John and Sir Edward Seymour; which John Seymour, by his laſt will, dated on December 7, 6 Edw. VI. [a] after bequeathing legacies to his ſervants, concludes in theſe words, "Alſo I make my "brother, Sir Edward Seymour the elder, my full executor, "and I give him all my lands and goods that is unbequeathed. "He, to paie and diſcharge all my debts." The probate bears date, April 26, 1553.

Which Sir Edward Seymour was, with his father, in the battle of Muſſelburgh [b], and for his valour there, received the honour of knighthood.

In the ſeventh year of Edward VI. he obtained an act of Parliament, entitled, *An act for the reſtitution in blood of Sir Edward Seymour, Knt.* which recites the attainder of Edward Seymour, Duke of Somerſet; and reſtores Sir Edward Seymour in blood (deſcribing him as eldeſt ſon of the ſaid Duke) ſo as to enable him to take any lands that may then after come to him, from any collateral anceſtor. The ſame year he had a grant [c], dated September 6, at Ely, from the ſaid King, of the lordſhips and manors of Walton, Shedder, and Stowey, the park of Stowey, and the hundred of Water-Stock, with the appurtenances, in the county of Somerſet, lately the poſſeſſions of his father, Edward Duke of Somerſet, to him and his heirs for ever; and, from his father's death to that time, there had been no proviſion made for him. He lived retired, without any concern in public affairs, excepting his being [d] Sheriff of the county of Devon in 25 Elizabeth, and other offices in the country ſuiting his degree. He [e] married Mary, daughter and heir of John Walſh, [f] conſtituted one of the Juſtices of the Common Pleas on February 10, 1 Eliz. This Sir Edward Seymour died [g] on May 6, 1593, 35 Elizabeth, as is evident from the inquiſition taken after his death at Totneſs, on September 20, the ſame year, wherein he has the titles of Edward Seymour, Knt. Lord Seymour; and died ſeized of the caſtle and honour of Bury, and Bury-Pomeroy, and Bridgetown in Pomeroy, with the advowſon of the church of Bury, the caſtle and honour of Totneſs, and manor of Totneſs; the manors of Cornworthy, Lodeſwell, Huiſe, Monnockenzeale, alias Zeale-Monacon; the manors of Loſebear, a fourth part of the hundred of Hayborre, the ſcite of the monaſtery of Torr, and divers other lands in Devonſhire;

[z] Vincent's Baronage, MS. N° 20, in Offic. Armor. [a] Ex Regiſt. Taſh. qu. 9. in Cur. Prerog. Cant. [b] Jekyle's Cart. of Knts, MS. [c] Strype's Memorials, vol. ii. p. 502. [d] Riſdon's Deſcription of Devon, p. 203. [e] Vincent, præd. [f] Pat. 1 Eliz. p. 5. [g] Cole's Eſch. in Bibl. Harl. 41. A. 21.

the

the manor and lordſhip of Mayden-Bradley in com. Wilts, and divers other lands; and a capital meſſuage, called the Lord Cheyne's houſe, within the precincts of Black-Friers, near Ludgate in London; to all which, it was found that Edward Seymour was his ſon and heir, and, at that time, thirty years of age, and upwards.

Which Edward Seymour, whilſt his father was living, was choſen [h] one of the Knights for the county of Devon, in 35 Elizabeth; and was alſo returned for the ſame county in 43 Elizabeth, and to the firſt Parliament of James I. He was advanced to the dignity of a Baronet on June 29, 1611, 9 Jac. I. and, in 1576, he had to wife Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Arthur Champernon, of Dartington in com. Devon, Knt. by whom he had iſſue ſeveral ſons and daughters; Edward, John, William, Walter, and Richard; Bridget, wife to John Bruen, of Aldehampſton in Devonſhire, Eſq; Mary, wife of Sir George Farewell, of Hill-Biſhop in com. Somerſet, Knt.; Elizabeth, married to George Cary, of Cockington in com. Devon, Eſq; and Amy, wedded to Edmund Parker, of Northmolton in com. Devon, Eſq;

The ſaid Sir Edward Seymour, Bart. [i] died on April 11, 1613, and was buried in the church of Berry-Pomeroy, on Thurſday, May 27 following, with great ſolemnity: and to him ſucceeded, in title and eſtate, Edward, his eldeſt ſon.

This Edward was knighted at Greenwich, on May 22, 1603, and [k] was ſent by James I. on an embaſſy to the King of Denmark. He was [l] elected one of the Knights for Devonſhire in two Parliaments, in the reign of King James the Firſt, and for Killington and Totneſs, in two other Parliaments, whereof the laſt met at Weſtminſter, on the 6th of February, 1625, by the appointment of Charles I.; but, on the diſſolution thereof, being in an advanced age, he lived retired at the caſtle of Berry-Pomeroy [m], which he made a ſtately houſe. This ſeat had a fine proſpect, being ſituate on a rock on a riſing ground, from the Eaſt and North, over a pleaſant rivulet running through a deer-park, which emptieth itſelf into the Hemms at Little Hemſton, as that doth into the Dart, half a mile from Totneſs; and the pariſh of Berry conjoins to that of Totneſs by a fair bridge, of about eight arches, ſtanding over the river Dart.

This caſtle of Berry, the antient ſeat of the Pomeroys, was a great and noble ſtructure; but, in thoſe times of confuſion, during the civil wars in the reign of Charles I. was demoliſhed, and now lies in ruins. The additions, this Sir Edward Seymour made thereto, are by Mr. Prince, in *Danmonii Orien-*

[h] Willis's Not. Parl. vol. ii. p. 254. [i] MS. I. 16. p. 357. in Offic. Armor. [k] Ex Inform. Dom. Edw. Seymour, Bar. [l] Willis, ut antea, p. 175, 254, and 284. [m] Riſdon, p. 203.

tales

tales Illuſtres, page 492. ſaid to coſt upwards of 20,000 l.

At this ſeat, the ſaid Sir Edward Seymour died, and was buried at Berry-Pomeroy, on October 5, 1659, very much lamented, having, by an obliging temper, attracted the love of his country; and, by a prudent management, gained the character of a perſon of honour, conduct, and experience. He had, by Dorothy his Lady, daughter of Sir Henry Killigrew, of Lathbury in Cornwall, Knt. ſix ſons and five daughters; Elizabeth, married firſt to Francis Courtney, of Powderam in com. Devon, Eſq; ſecondly, to Sir Amos Meredith, of Aſhley in Cheſhire, Bart. Mary, wedded to Sir Jonathan Trelawney, Bart. father of the late Biſhop of Wincheſter; Margaret, eſpouſed to Francis Trelawney, brother of the ſaid Sir Jonathan; Anne, wife to Dr. Stourton, and . . . to Sir Thomas Hall of Wiltſhire.

Of the ſons, Edward, the eldeſt, will be mentioned hereafter: Henry, ſecond ſon, born in the year 1612, was a Gentleman valued and eſteemed by perſons of the greateſt note in the reigns of Charles I. and Charles II. He was, in his youth, Page of Honour to Charles I.; and, on the eruption of the civil wars, went with the Marquis of Hertford into Somerſetſhire, and was at Sherburn with that Noble Peer [n], who, with only two troops of horſe and 4000 foot, couragiouſly withſtood the whole force of the Earl of Bedford, conſiſting of above 7000 foot, beſides horſe, with cannon, &c. and the Marquis ſending the Earl of Bedford a challenge, Mr. Seymour was [o] choſe to carry it. His behaviour in all reſpects won him the eſteem of the whole Court ſo, that, when it was thought neceſſary for the Prince of Wales, afterwards Charles II. to have ſervants peculiar to himſelf, he was nominated one of the Grooms of the Bedchamber. When all was loſt in England, he went with his Royal Maſter abroad, and was entruſted with the laſt letter and meſſage, the Prince [p] ſent to the King, which he delivered on January 27, 1648-9, on the evening of that day the ſentence of death paſſed on his Majeſty; who, after hearing what he had to ſay, imparted to him his anſwer, the laſt he ſent. He left a ſon, Sir Henry Seymour, of Langley in com. Bucks, Bart. who died unmarried, in 1714.

I now return to Sir Edward Seymour, Bart. (eldeſt ſon of Sir Edward Seymour, Knt. and Bart.) Which Sir Edward was [q] two years and a half old at the death of Sir Edward Seymour, his grandfather, April 11, 1613. He was [r] elected one of the Knights for Devonſhire, during the life of his father, in the two laſt Parliaments called by Charles I.; and, adhering to his So-

[n] Clarendon's Hiſtory, 8vo. vol. iii. p. 6, and 19.
[o] Ibid. p. 329.
[p] Wood's Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 523.
[q] MS. I. 16. ut antea,
[r] Willis, ut antea, p. 234.

vereign

vereign in the times of the rebellion, had his houſe of Berry-caſtle in Devon plundered and burnt. He ſat at Oxford, among thoſe members the King convened, in the year 1643; and, ſhewing a ready concurrence in the meaſures for ſupporting monarchy and epiſcopacy, he endured many hardſhips, till ſuch time as the conſtitution was reſtored, by the eſtabliſhment of Charles II. on the throne of his anceſtors[s]. He was Vice-Admiral of the county of Devon, and a Member in all Parliaments, in the reigns of Charles II. and James II. being elected thereto for the borough of Totneſs. And, departing this life, had ſepulture at Berry-Pomeroy, on Dec. 7, 1688, leaving iſſue by Anne his wife (who was daughter to Sir William Portman, and ſurviving him ſix years, was interred by him) a daughter, Elizabeth, wedded to Sir Joſeph Tredenham, of Tregony in Cornwall; and five ſons; Sir Edward, his ſucceſſor, born in 1633; John, a Colonel in the army, who married . . . daughter of Sir Richard Kennedy; Hugh, killed in the Dutch wars; William, fourth ſon, who died unmarried; Henry Seymour, Eſq; fifth ſon, heir to his uncle, Sir William Portman, Bart. whereby he poſſeſſed the large inheritance of the Portmans, at Orchard-Portman, in Somerſetſhire, &c. and aſſumed the name and arms of Portman, by act of Parliament, purſuant to a ſettlement of the ſaid Sir William. This Henry married, firſt, Penelope, youngeſt daughter of Sir William Haſlewood, of Maidwell in com. Northampt. Knt. and coheir to her brother, Peter Haſlewood, Eſq; and, ſecondly, Millicent, daughter of William Fitch, of High-Hall in com. Dorſet, Eſq; but by neither of them had iſſue, and died in February, 1727-8; and his laſt wife was after married to Thomas Fownes, of the county of Dorſet, Eſq;

Sir Edward Seymour, Bart. fifth of that name in lineal ſucceſſion, and eldeſt ſon of the laſt Sir Edward, made a conſiderable figure, both in Court and the Houſe of Commons, in four ſeveral reigns. He conſtantly ſerved in Parliament, after his firſt election to the time of his death, for the city of Exeter, except once for Hindon, once for the county of Devon, and once for Totneſs; and hardly any was better heard, as he always eſpouſed the intereſt of his country; or brought more over to his opinion, than he did. In the year 1667, he promoted the impeachment of the Earl of Clarendon; was the firſt that moved it; and carried it up to the Lords. On June[t] 6, 1667, 19 Car. II. he had a grant of the office of Clerk of the Hanaper in Chancery, for the term of his natural life. On February 15, 1672-3, he was unanimouſly choſen Speaker of that called the Long Parliament, on the reſignation of Sir Job Charleton; and on April 9 following, was ſworn of the Privy-Council,

[s] Ex Inform. Dom. Edw. Seymour, Bar. [t] Pat. 19 Car. II.

and ſoon after made Treaſurer of the Navy. On March 6, 1678-9, being then Knight for the county of Devon, he was again elected Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, at which time he was of the Privy-Council, and Treaſurer of the Navy; but the King having occaſion for his immediate ſervice, which he could not expect, if Sir Edward filled the chair, refuſed his approbation, notwithſtanding the Commons made three repreſentations in Sir Edward's favour; which occaſioned their prorogation to the 15th, when they elected William Gregory, Eſq; Serjeant at Law, then Member for Weobly, and afterwards a Judge. The Commons were ſo diſguſted at his attachment to the conſtitution in oppoſition to their extravagant ſchemes, that they carried an impeachment againſt him, on November 20, 1680, and a motion was made to remove him from his Majeſty's Council and preſence forever; but that was dropped, and no articles were ever exhibited againſt him.

He oppoſed the bill of excluſion, with great ſtrength of argument, in 1679, 1680, and 1681: and in 1679, was a chief promoter of the *Habeas Corpus* act, which both he and his ſucceſſors ſaw ſeveral times ſuſpended, and thereby their fellow ſubjects deprived of the benefit of that intended bulwark of liberty againſt miniſterial tyranny and other oppreſſion.

When King James II. aſcended the throne, Sir Edward Seymour was a ſedulous oppoſer of James Duke of Monmouth, and his rebellious adherents, in 1685: but though a Privy-Counſellor, was far from approving the meaſures purſued by that unfortunate Monarch's treacherous Miniſter. He was a ſincere member of the church of England, and when he ſaw it in danger of being overturned by the united efforts of the Roman Catholics and Preſbyterians, he joined, A. D. 1688, in the invitation of William Prince of Orange, hoping that his Highneſs would act the part of a generous and diſintereſted mediator between the King and people, without attempting to dethrone his Majeſty, or alter the lineal ſucceſſion to the Crown. When the Prince of Orange landed, he found the country ſo backward in repairing to him, that he would probably have found himſelf under the neceſſity of returning with his Dutch forces to Holland, if Sir Edward Seymour had not waited on his Highneſs at Exeter[u], and propoſed the forming and ſigning an aſſociation to ſtand by him, till the religion, the laws, and liberty, of the kingdom, were ſecured by a free Parliament. The appearance of ſo conſpicuous a Gentlement, induced others to join the Prince of Orange, and the aſſociation was not only ſigned at Exeter, but circulated over England, and ſubſcribed

[u] It was on this occaſion, when the Prince of Orange ſaid to him, "I think, "Sir Edward, you are of the Duke of Somerſet's family," that he replied, "No, "Sir, he is of mine."

by

by ſuch a number of perſons, as removed the Prince's dreadful apprehenſions of making an unſucceſsful deſcent.——Although Sir Edward Seymour diſliked the King's proceedings, he did not think them juſtifiable grounds for dethroning his Sovereign, and excluding the true heir from his right of ſucceſſion. Sir Edward was one of the boldeſt orators that ever ſat in the Houſe of Commons, or filled the Speaker's chair: and when he perceived, that the Crown of England was the object of the Prince of Orange's expedition, inſtead of redreſſing grievances by facilitating the calling of a free Parliament, and of making an enquiry into the birth of the Prince of Wales (as his Highneſs had ſolemnly promiſed in his declaration, publiſhed both before and after his landing at Torbay) he did all in his power to fruſtrate his aim. Being a Member of the convention, which aſſembled at Weſtminſter, on January 22, 1688-9, by the Prince's ſole authority, he ſtrenuouſly argued againſt the throne being declared vacant, and filling it with William and Mary, Prince and Princeſs of Orange. However, their Highneſſes, on Febr. 13, being Aſh-Wedneſday, were declared King and Queen of England. Sir Edward alſo diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his oppoſition to the bill for converting the aforeſaid Convention into a Parliament: but that being alſo carried by the majority, he ſubmitted, and took the oath to the new government.

During this ſeſſion, there happened an affair relating to Sir Edward, which, for certain views, has been very much miſrepreſented by a modern writer.—The eſtabliſhment of the Prince and Princeſs of Orange on the Engliſh throne was ſo agreeable to Mr. Edmund Ludlow, who had been one of the Knights in Parliament for the county of Wilts, ſat as one of the Judges at the trial of his Sovereign, King Charles I. and afterwards ſerved the Rump in quality of Lieutenant-general, that, notwithſtanding an attainder againſt him as a regicide, he ventured to return to England, with an offer of his ſervice to King William in the reduction of Ireland. His appearing, publickly, in the ſtreets of London, gave great offence to the true friends of the conſtitution: and Sir Edward Seymour, moved with juſt indignation at the traitor's audacity, obſerved in the Houſe of Commons, how highly it reflected on the honour of the Engliſh nation, that Ludlow ſhould not only be ſuffered to live in the Kingdom, but entertained with hopes of preferment. Thereupon the Commons voted an addreſs to King William to iſſue a proclamation, for offering a reward for apprehending Mr. Ludlow: and a proclamation was accordingly iſſued; but care was previouſly taken to convey the regicide ſafe to Holland. Sir Edward's conduct in this affair, which proceeded from genuine principles of loyalty, is repreſented as intereſted and ſelfiſh by the ſaid modern writer, who boldly aſſerts, that Sir Edward's "ſeat and eſtate

at Maiden-Bradley, in Wiltſhire, where he lived, had belonged to Ludlow, and came to him [Sir Edward] by grant." It happens unluckily for the veracity of this writer, that Maiden-Bradley was never the property of Mr. Ludlow; that Sir Edward Seymour, the firſt Duke of Somerſet's ſecond but oldeſt ſurviving ſon by his firſt Lady, died ſeized thereof, in 1593, 35 Eliz. as before recited, and that it has deſcended through his ſeveral ſucceſſors to Grace, the preſent Duke of Somerſet. It is true, Mr. Ludlow had a ſmall paternal eſtate, called the manor of Yarnfield (or Yardenfield) where, when he made the foreſaid viſit to England, he was permitted to collect the rents, though it had been forfeited to the Crown by his treaſon: but the ſaid manor of Yarnfield, which is within the pariſh of Maiden-Bradley, but in another county (viz. Somerſet) and quite diſtinct from the manor of Maiden-Bradley, was never in the poſſeſſion of the Seymour family, either before or after Ludlow's attainder.

Having vindicated the memory of this great man from the above-mentioned ſlander and ſcurrility, I ſhall next obſerve, that although he oppoſed the meaſures of the Court, it was judged convenient to take him into the adminiſtration, as a Gentleman of his importance and eminence might give a luſtre to it; and in March, 1691-2, he was ſworn of the Privy-Council, and appointed a Commiſſioner of the Treaſury, together with Charles Montagu, afterwards Earl of Halifax. It has been alledged by ſome hiſtorians, that Sir Edward's promotion was owing to his being concerned in a conſpiracy for dethroning King William; and that having his choice, either to take a trial, or a place, he preferred the latter; but this aſſertion is not ſupported by any proof or ſhew of probability, and is equally injurious to the dignity of Sir Edward, who was the proudeſt Commoner in England, as to the character of King William, who was not apt to forgive any treaſonable practices, and among ſome others, took away, upon an accuſation of that nature, the life of a Gentleman, to whom in a great meaſure he owed his own. Sir Edward was one of the perſons of diſtinction to whom King James II. addreſſed a letter, dated April 2, 1692, notifying his royal conſort's being with child, and inviting them to be witneſſes of the birth. It would not have been ſafe for Sir Edward, or any other perſon in England, to have accepted their exiled Monarch's invitation; and her Majeſty, on June 18, O. S. that year, was delivered, at St. Germains en Leye, of a princeſs, who was named Mary-Louiſa, and died there on April 18, 1712.

Sir Edward Seymour continued but little more than two years in the Treaſury, the ſyſtem of the court politics being no ways agreeable to his own; and perſevered in oppoſing the meaſures of

of the Adminiſtration with great acrimony. In Febr. 1695-6, when the Commons were framing an aſſociation for the defence of King William, upon the diſcovery of Sir George Barclay's plot to ſeize that Prince between Brentford and Turnham-green, and then to carry him over to France, he objected to his being ſtiled, "rightful and lawful King." He frequently queſtioned William's title, cenſured his conduct, and reflected on his character. Sir Edward Seymour diſtinguiſhed himſelf very eminently in detecting the corrupt practices with which that reign abounded, particularly thoſe relating to the new Eaſt-India Company; and compared King William's intended partition of the Spaniſh dominions to a robbery on the highway.

Queen Anne having mounted the throne on March 8, 1701-2, Sir Edward Seymour was, on the 14th of the next month, appointed Comptroller of her Houſhold, and ſworn of the Privy-Council three days afterwards. Having been long at the head of the Tories, he became a great favourite; and had an offer of a patent to be a Baron: but knowing that upon failure of iſſue male in the younger branch of his family, the title of Duke of Somerſet would devolve upon his eldeſt ſon, or his heirs, he declined the offer for himſelf, and got the title of Baron Conway conferred on Francis, his eldeſt ſurviving ſon by his ſecond Lady. Although Sir Edward was in place, he did not adopt the politics of the Court, when repugnant to the Tory intereſt. He was a warm ſtickler for the bill to prevent *occaſional conformity*, and moved for one to reſume all King William's grants, and for applying them to the uſe of the public. Both theſe bills miſcarried by the prevalence of the Whig-party, which at that time began to gain ground by the great ſucceſs of the Duke of Marlborough abroad, and the intrigues of his friends at home; and Sir Edward, in 1703-4, was diveſted of the office of Comptroller of the Houſhold. This ſteady Patriot continued to manifeſt his zeal for the good of his country, till his death, which happened on February 17, 1707-8, at Maiden-Bradley, in Wiltſhire, whither he had retired ſome time before.

He was intimately acquainted with the buſineſs of the Houſe of Commons, where he always ſpoke his ſentiments with great freedom, and knew the face of every individual Member ſo well, that, with a glance of his eye, he could foreſee the fate of any motion.

As he had been the conſtant champion for Monarchy and Epiſcopacy, he incurred the malevolence of the Whigs, who not ſatisfied with maligning him in his life-time, endeavoured, with a rancour peculiar to themſelves, to blaſt his reputation when dead. There is a ſtriking inſtance of this in the before-cited modern writer, who, without ſo much as naming any authority (for indeed none he could have) after loading Sir

Edward with many invectives, expreſſes himſelf thus:—— "After he [Sir Edward Seymour] had been the terror of his enemies, and lived among his friends with a haughty ſuperiority, a mean wretch turned him out of the world, as its moſt imperious diſturber. When infirmities confined him to his chair, his houſe was deſerted by his ſervants, on account of ſome new diverſions, and, in the mean time, an old female beggar, of the maddiſh tribe, happened to wander into the apartments. Finding the great man thus alone, ſhe reproached him for all his cruelties and oppreſſions, threatened, terrified, and handled him in a manner, the effects of which ſoon put an end to a life, through the whole courſe of which he ſeemed equally inſenſible of crimes and puniſhments." When this fiction appeared in print, Mrs. Berkeley, Sir Edward's daughter, after-mentioned, Mrs. Pinnel, then a ſervant in the houſe, attending upon Sir Edward during his laſt illneſs, and Mr. Uriah Meſſiter, then, and very lately, if not yet (1765) reſiding at Maiden-Bradley, were all ſeparately examined by a Gentleman related to the family, the two firſt upwards of thirteen years ago, and the latter in 1762: and they all expreſſed their aſtoniſhment at a report ſo groundleſs and deſtitute of truth; not only averring that ſuch a circumſtance never happened, but alſo declaring that no other, bearing any manner of likeneſs to it, or that could poſſibly give riſe to ſuch a falſhood, ever came to their knowledge. The teſtimony of the above perſons (whoſe credit is above all doubt) was corroborated by antient people, living in that pariſh and neighbourhood. The above we can vouch upon the moſt unqueſtionable authority, and muſt lament that any perſon, who calls himſelf an hiſtorian, ſhould advance facts, which if he did not know to be falſe, yet could have no reaſon to believe them true. The ſame writer has been very liberal of abuſe upon Sir Edward: but as he is fully detected of miſrepreſentation in two caſes already quoted, and is known to have wrote to ſerve a party, whereof Sir Edward Seymour juſtly valued himſelf upon being a conſtant opponent, as their views invariably tended to overturn the Engliſh conſtitution, both in church and ſtate, it may reaſonably be concluded, that his other allegations, againſt Sir Edward, are equally void of truth. If thoſe inſinuations of Sir Edward's receiving a bribe of 12,000 l. from the Eaſt-India Company had been true; or of having embezzled a prodigious ſum of the public money, when Treaſurer of the Navy; it might with reaſon be preſumed, that his family, at his deceaſe, would have found the wealth alledged to have been ſo fraudulently acquired. Unfortunately for this writer, the venom of his pen carries along with it a plain refutation of what he advances. Sir Edward Seymour, though he inherited a large paternal

ternal eſtate, though he married two wives, with conſiderable portions each, though he had enjoyed lucrative employments almoſt from his very youth, and though he lived without profuſeneſs, but with as much œconomy as ſplendor; yet the perſonal eſtate, which he left at his death, and the real ones which he had purchaſed, did not amount near to what a perſon of the ſtricteſt probity might have, without any blemiſh, added to his patrimonial fortune.

Had Sir Edward Seymour's conduct been liable to cenſure, he would not have ſo boldly and intrepidly exerted himſelf, as he did, in bringing to light the iniquitous practices of the Adminiſtration during King William's reign: for his adverſaries were deſirous enough to get rid of ſo formidable an antagoniſt.

This great and illuſtrious patriot had ſepulture at Maiden-Bradley, aforeſaid, where a beautiful monument is erected to his memory, with the following elegant inſcription:

Under this marble are depoſited the remains
of Sir EDWARD SEYMOUR, *Bart. late*
of Bury Pomroy in the county of
Devon, and of this Place.
A man of ſuch endowments,
as added luſtre to his noble anceſtry,
commanded reverence from his cotemporaries,
and ſtands the faireſt pattern to poſterity:
Being often called to Council, and always choſen in
Parliament.
(A friend to his Prince, a ſervant to his country)
He adviſed the King with freedom,
the Senate with dignity;
That Senate, the bulwark of the Engliſh liberty,
in which he preſided for ſeveral years,
found his eloquence an advocate,
his integrity a guardian,
his vigour a champion for its privileges:
Nor can any Engliſhman rejoice
in that envied portion of his birth-right,
the HABEAS CORPUS *Act,*
Without gratitude to the aſhes of this patriot,
Under whoſe influence
it became his heritage.
Born in the year 1633,
His childhood felt not the calamities,
which in the ſucceeding years,
the ſpirit of anarchy and ſchiſm
ſpread over the nation:

His manhood ſaw the church and monarchy reſtored,
and he lived in dutiful obedience to both:
Loaden with honour, full of years,
(amidſt the triumphs of his country)
raiſed to the higheſt point of glory
by that IMMORTAL Princeſs QUEEN ANNE,
he died
in the year
1707.
Francis Seymour, Eſq; in juſt veneration
for the memory of his illuſtrious grandfather,
and in due obedience to the laſt will and teſtament
of Lieutenant-general William Seymour,
ſecond ſon to the deceaſed Sir Edward,
hath cauſed this monument
to be erected,
1730.

He married to his firſt wife, Margaret, daughter and coheir to Sir William Wale, of the city of London, Knt. by whom he had Sir Edward Seymour, his ſucceſſor in the title of Baronet, and William Seymour, Eſq; hereafter mentioned. And taking to his ſecond wife, Letitia, daughter to Francis Popham, of Littlecote, in the county of Wilts, Eſq; by her (who died on March 16, 1728-9) had ſix ſons, and a daughter Anne, married to William Berkeley, of Pill in com. Somerſ. Eſq; and father by her of the late Henry-William Berkeley Portman, Eſq; elected Knight for Somerſetſhire, in that Parliament ſummoned to meet on June 25, 1741.

The ſons were,

1. Popham, killed in the twenty-fourth year of his age, in a duel, by Colonel Kirk, in June, 1699: 2. Francis, created Lord Conway, anceſtor to the preſent Earl of Hertford, of whom I ſhall treat under that title: 3. Charles, to whom the Barony of Conway was limited, and who left a daughter: 4. Henry: 5. Alexander, who died unmarried; and John, ſixth ſon, who died young.

William, his ſecond ſon by his firſt wife, diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the military ſervice. In 1695, he commanded a regiment of foot at the ſiege of Namur, and on Auguſt 3, the French hanging out a white flag, and deſiring a parley; which being granted, hoſtages were exchanged, and Colonel William Seymour was the firſt of the two on our ſide. He roſe gradually to be Lieutenant-general of the forces in the reign of Queen Anne, and was alſo General of the Marines. He died without iſſue, on February 9, 1727.

Sir

Sir Edward Seymour, Bart. the eldeſt ſon by the firſt wife, ſucceeded to the eſtate at Maiden-Bradley, &c. He was [x] choſen for Totneſs in the Parliament ſummoned to meet on July 8, 1708; and in the ſucceeding Parliament, in 1710 [y], for Great Bedwin; alſo for the ſame town, in that ſummoned to meet November 12, 1713. Afterwards he lived retired from public affairs, at his ſeat at Maiden-Bradley in Wiltſhire, where he died, aged eighty years, on December 29, 1741. He maried Letitia, ſole daughter of Sir Francis Popham, of Littlecote in Wiltſhire, Knight of the Bath, and by her, who died in 1738, had four ſons and eight daughters.

1. Edward, eighth Duke of Somerſet.

2. Francis Seymour, of Sherborn in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; who was choſen Member of Parliament for Great Bedwin, on the deceaſe of Sir William Willis, in 1732 [z], and for Marlborough in the Parliament ſummoned to meet on June 13, 1734. He died in December, 1761, having married Elizabeth, daughter of Alexander Popham, of Littlecote, relict of Edward Viſcount Hinchinbroke, and mother of the preſent Earl of Sandwich, and had iſſue by her two ſons; Henry, who married, on July 24, 1753, Lady Caroline, only daughter of William Earl Cowper; Francis, who died an infant; and a daughter, Mary, married on November 30, 1758, to John Bailey, of Sutton in Somerſetſhire, Eſq;

3. Alexander, who died unmarried, in April, 1731.

4. William Seymour, of Knoyle in Wiltſhire, Eſq; who married Elizabeth, daughter and heir of . . . Hippye, of Frome in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; and died without iſſue by her.

Of the daughters, Elizabeth was married to John Gapper, of Wincauton in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; Margaret, to Richard Jones, of Ramſbury in Wiltſhire, Eſq; Elizabeth, who was married to Henry Hungerford, of Fiefield in Wiltſhire, Eſq; and died on May 5, 1756; Anne, to William Scroggs, of Chute Lodge in the ſame county, Eſq; Hellena, who died unmarried; Mary, wife of the Rev. Mr. Hammond; Jane, of William Coleman, of Gornhey in com. Devon, Eſq; and Catherine, of John-Phillipa Fuhr, Merchant of Briſtol.

The eldeſt ſon Edward, late Duke of Somerſet, and the eighth of his family, who bore that title, when a Commoner, ſerved for [a] the city of Saliſbury, in that Parliament which ſat firſt on December 4, 1741. And on the death of his Grace, Algernon Duke of Somerſet, on February 7, 1749-50, by the limitations in the creation patents, to Edward Duke of Somerſet, in the reign of King Edward VI. of Baron Seymour, and Duke of Somerſet, being lineally deſcended from that great Noble-

[x] Britiſh Parl. Regiſt. N° 49. [y] Ibid. N° 214. [z] Ibid. N° 214, 218.
[a] Ibid. N° 203.

man, by his firſt wife, which was evidently proved before Sir Dudley Ryder, Attorney-General; and on his report to his Majeſty, on November 23, 1750, that he had a juſt claim to thoſe titles, his Grace had ſummons to Parliament, as Duke of Somerſet and Baron Seymour, and took his place accordingly in the Houſe of Peers; and was chief mourner at the funeral of Frederick Prince of Wales, on April 13, 1751.

On February 11, 1752, he had a grant of the offices of Warden and Chief Juſtice in Eyre, of all his Majeſty's foreſts, parks, chaſes, and warrens, beyond Trent; and alſo conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of Wiltſhire.

His Grace married Mary, daughter and heir of Daniel Webb, of Monkton-Farley in Wiltſhire, Eſq; and niece and heir of Edward Somner, of Send in the ſame county, Eſq; by whom he had iſſue four ſons and a daughter, living at his death, on December 12, 1757.

1. Edward, his ſucceſſor in titles and eſtate.

2. Lord Webb Seymour, who inherits his grandfather's eſtate at Monkton-Farley.

3. Lord William, who being entered in the Inner Temple, was called to the bar, as Bariſter of Law, in 1744.

4. Lord Francis, who is one of his Majeſty's Chaplains in Ordinary, Canon of Windſor, and Vicar of Wantage in Berks; married Catherine, daughter of the Rev. Mr. Payne, of Holme-Lacy in Herefordſhire, and ſiſter of the Counteſs dowager of Northampton, and by her has two ſons, Edward and Francis, and three daughters, Mary, Catherine, and Frances.

His Grace's only daughter, Lady Mary, was married on September 21, 1759, to Vincent Biſcoe, Eſq;

Edward, the preſent and ninth Duke of Somerſet, at the funeral proceſſion of George II. on November 11, 1760, walked as principal ſupporter to the Duke of Cumberland, the chief mourner at that ſolemnity; and at the coronation of George III. on September 22, 1761, carried the orb, as his illuſtrious predeceſſors had generally done at former coronations; the carriage of that of the regalia having been commonly allotted to perſons of the firſt rank. His Grace is yet unmarried.

TITLES.] Edward Seymour, Duke of Somerſet, Baron Seymour, and Baronet.

CREATIONS.] Baron Seymour, by letters patent, on February 15, 1546-7 (1 Edward VI.) and Duke of Somerſet, the day following; and Baronet, by letters patent, dated on June 29, 1611, 9 Jac. I.

ARMS.] Quarterly; firſt and fourth, Or, on a Pile, Gules, between ſix Fleurs-de-Lis, Azure, three Lions of England (an augmentation granted by Henry VIII. on his marriage with the Lady Jane Seymour) ſecond and third, the Paternal Coat

of

Seymour Duke of Somerset.

of Seymour, Gules, two Wings, conjoined in Lure, Tips downwards, Or.

CREST.] Out of a ducal Coronet, Or, a Phœnix in Flames, proper, with Wings expanded, Or; in memory of King Edward VI. but the original creſt was, on a Wreath, a pair of Wings conjoined in Lure, and crowned, Or.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide an Unicorn, Argent, and maned, Or, and gorged with a ducal Collar, Azure, to which is affixed a Chain, Or: on the ſiniſter a Bull, Azure, maned, collared, chained and hoofed, as that on the dexter.

MOTTO.] FOY POUR DEVOIR.

CHIEF SEATS.] At Maiden-Bradley, in Wiltſhire, and Berry-Pomeroy, in Devonſhire.

FITZ-ROY, Duke of Cleveland and Southampton.

CHARLES, firſt Duke of Cleveland, ſurnamed Fitz-Roy, was the eldeſt natural ſon of King Charles II. by the Lady Barbara Villiers, wife of Roger Palmer, Earl of Caſtlemain in Ireland, and daughter and heir of William Villiers, Viſcount Grandiſon in the kingdom of Ireland, who was eldeſt ſon and heir of Sir Edward Villiers, Preſident of Munſter, brother to George Duke of Buckingham, the great favourite of James I. and Charles I. Which William Viſcount Grandiſon received ſeveral wounds at the battle of Edge-Hill, on October 23, 1642, whereof he died ſoon after, and was buried in the cathedral of Chriſt-Church in Oxford, over whoſe grave the ſaid Lady Barbara cauſed a ſtately monument to be erected to his memory.

Which Barbara [a] was by his Majeſty's letters patent, bearing date at Weſtminſter, Auguſt 3, 1670, the twenty-ſecond year of his reign, advanced to the title of Baroneſs of Nonſuch, in the county of Surry, as alſo to the dignities of Counteſs of Southampton, and Dutcheſs of Cleveland, to enjoy during her natural life; the remainder to Charles Fitz-Roy, his ſaid Majeſty's natural ſon by her, and to the heirs male of his body, and for lack of ſuch iſſue to George Fitz-Roy, younger brother to him, the ſaid Charles. This Dutcheſs, after the Earl of Caſtlemain's deceaſe, in 1705, had Robert Fielding, Eſq; for her ſecond huſband.

The ſaid Charles Fitz-Roy was born in Weſtminſter, in June, 1662; and having his education in Oxford, became a Nobleman, or Canon-Commoner, of Chriſt-Church in that Univerſity. On January 25, 1672-3, at a Chapter of the Garter, he was elected a Knight of that moſt noble Order, and on April 1 following inſtalled; bearing then the title of Earl of Southampton, as heir to his mother. And ſhewing a great inclination to honourable and virtuous deeds, was, for his future encouragement to heroic atchievements, [b] advanced to the ſtate and degree of a Peer of this realm; by the titles of Baron of Newberry, Earl of Chicheſter, and Duke of Southampton, to him and the heirs male of his body; and for want of ſuch iſſue, to George his younger brother, and his heirs male, by letters patent, dated on Sept. 10, 1675, 27 Car. II.

On the death of his mother, on October 9, 1709, he ſucceeded as Duke of Cleveland, &c. and on January 14 follow-

[a] Bill ſignat. 22 Car. II. [b] Ibid. 27 Car. II.

ing,

ing, took [c] his place in the Houſe of Peers. Alſo on the death of his brother, George Fitz-Roy, Duke of Northumberland (who died at Epſom, in the fifty-firſt year of his age, on June 28, 1716) his Grace ſucceeded to the office of Chief Butler of England.

He took to his firſt wife Mary, daughter and ſole heir of Sir Henry Wood, of Loudham-hall in Suffolk, ſome time one of the Clerks of the Spicery, in the reign of Charles I. and afterwards one of the Clerks of the Green-Cloth to Charles II. elder brother to Dr. Thomas Wood, Biſhop of Litchfield and Coventry. This Lady died without iſſue, anno Dom. 1680, and was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey: but in Michaelmas-Term [d], 1685, his Grace had a decree in Chancery for 30,000 l. againſt the ſaid Biſhop, as part of his Dutcheſs's fortune.

His Grace continued a widower till the year 1694, when he married Anne, daughter of Sir William Pulteney, of Miſterton in the county of Leiceſter, Knt. grandfather of William Pulteney, who was created Earl of Bath on July 13, 1742, but died without iſſue, on July 7, 1764. His Grace, by the ſaid Anne, had iſſue three ſons and three daughters, viz.

William, now Duke of Cleveland and Southampton, born on February 19, 1697-8.

Lord Charles Fitz-Roy, who was born on February 13, 1698-9, and died on July 31, 1723.

Lord Henry Fitz-Roy, who was born on Auguſt 17, 1701, and deceaſed in the year 1708.

Lady Barbara, who was born on February 7, 1695-6, and died unmarried.

Lady Grace, born on March 28, 1697, and married to Henry Vane, late Earl of Darlington.

Lady Anne, born on November 12, 1702, married to Francis Paddy, Eſq;

His Grace departed this life on September 9, 1730, and was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey: and to whom ſucceeded William his eldeſt ſon. His Dutcheſs was afterwards wedded to Philip Southcote, of Wooburn-farm near Weybridge in Surry, Eſq; and dying on February 2, 1745-6, was alſo interred in Weſtminſter-abbey.

Which William, ſecond Duke of Cleveland and Southampton, was married, in the year 1731, to the Lady Henrietta, daughter to Daniel Finch, late Earl of Winchelſea and Nottingham, and by her, who died in April, 1742, had no iſſue. His Grace is one of the Vice-preſidents of the Lying-in-hoſpital for married and unmarried women.

TITLES.] William Fitz-Roy, Duke of Cleveland and Southampton, Earl of Southampton and Chicheſter, and Baron of

[c] Journal Dom. Procer. [d] Journal 1685, MS. per Greg. King, Lanc. fecial.

Nonſuch

Nonſuch and Newberry; Chief Butler of England, Comptroller of the Seal and Green Wax-office, and Receiver-general and Comptroller of the Profits of the Seals in the Courts of King's Bench and Common Pleas.

CREATIONS.] Baron of Nonſuch, in com. Surry, Earl of Southampton, in com. Hants, and Duke of Cleveland, in com. York, by deſcent from his grandmother Barbara Villiers, who was created Baroneſs, Counteſs and Dutcheſs, Auguſt 3, 1670, 22 Car. II. Baron of Newberry, in com. Berks, Earl of Chicheſter, in com. Suſſex, and Duke of Southampton, in com. Hants, September 10, 1675, 27 Car. II.

ARMS.] Quarterly, the firſt and fourth grand Quarters, quarterly, France and England; the ſecond, Scotland, and the third, Ireland (being the arms of King Charles II.) over all a Batton ſiniſter, Ermine.

CREST.] On a Chapeau, Gules, turned up Ermine, a Lion paſſant-guardant, Or, crowned with a ducal Coronet, Azure, and gorged with a Collar counter-compone, Argent and Azure.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide, a Lion guardant, Or, crowned with a ducal Coronet, Azure, and gorged with a Collar, counter-compone, Argent, and Azure. On the ſiniſter, a Greyhound, Argent, gorged with a Collar, counter-compone, Ermine and Azure.

MOTTO.] SECUNDIS DUBIISQUE RECTUS.

CHIEF SEATS.] At Bayſes in the county of Bucks, three miles from Windſor, and nineteen from London.

LENNOX,

Fitz Roy Duke of Cleveland. 7

LENNOX, Duke of Richmond, &c.

THE next in order of precedency, of whom I am to treat, are the Dukes of Richmond, deſcended from the moſt noble Charles Duke of Richmond, only ſon of King Charles II. by the Lady Louiſe Renée de Penencouet, of Keroualle in France, who coming into England, in the year 1670, with the Dutcheſs of Orleans, the King's ſiſter, his Majeſty was ſo taken with her beauty and deportment, that he created her Dutcheſs of Portſmouth, Counteſs of Farneham, and Baroneſs of Petersfield, all in the county of Southampton, to enjoy during her life, by letters patent, dated at Weſtminſter on Auguſt 19, 1673, 25 Car. II. And likewiſe, by his interceſſion with the then French King, Louis XIV. the territory of Aubigny in France, which, by the death of Charles Stuart, ſixth Duke of Richmond and Lennox, reverted to that Crown, was given to her Grace, by grant, dated at St. Germains en Laye, in the month of December, 1673, and thirty-firſt year of his reign, during her life; the remainder to ſuch of the King of Great-Britain's natural ſons by her, as he ſhall name; under the ſame limitation, as the grant by Charles VII. of France, anno 1422, to John Stuart, anceſtor to the aforeſaid Duke of Richmond. Aubigny is a town in Berry, in France, ſituate on the river Nere, given (according to Pere Daniel) to John Stuart the third Lord Darnley of the name of John, on March 24, 1422, to whom the county and earldom of Eureux was alſo granted in 1426, and who was killed at the battle of Herrings, on February 12, 1428-9.

The French King, by his grant dated at Verſailles, in the month of January, 1684, in the forty-firſt year of his reign, reciteth, "That the territory of Aubigny upon Nere, in the pro-
"vince of Berry, having been given, in the year 1422, by
"King Charles the VIIth to John Stuart, in conſideration of
"the great and commendable ſervices by him done in the wars;
"and by default of heirs male, the ſame having reverted to the
"Crown, anno 1672, on the death of the Duke of Richmond,
"he, in regard to the King of Great-Britain, had, by his
"letters patent, dated in the month of December, 1673, grant-
"ed to the Lady Louiſe Renée de Penencouet de Keroualle,
"Dutcheſs of Portſmouth, the ſaid territory of Aubigny, with
"all rights to the ſame belonging, for her life; remainder to
"ſuch of the natural male children as ſhe ſhall have by the

" King of Great-Britain, in tail-male, by the ſaid King to be " named; remainder to the Crown of France. And whereas, " the ſaid King of Great-Britain had appointed Prince Charles " Lennox, Duke of Richmond, his natural ſon, Maſter of the " Horſe, and Knight of the Garter, to ſucceed the ſaid " Dutcheſs of Portſmouth, in the ſaid inheritance; he, the ſaid " King of France, being willing to annex to the ſaid inheri- " tance a proper title, and ſuch as ſhould be agreeable to the " illuſtrious birth of the ſaid Duke of Richmond; and at the " ſame time to confer honour on the ſaid Dutcheſs of Portſ- " mouth, whoſe progenitors always held a conſiderable rank " in the province of Britany, as well in conſideration of their " birth, ſervices in the army, as alliance to antient families, " and otherwiſe; and alſo conſidering the great extent of the " ſaid territories, conſiſting of the town of Aubigny, two con- " ſiderable caſtles, two pariſhes and fiefs, extending eight " leagues, with the privilege of reſorting to the Court and " Parliament at Paris; being likewiſe miſtreſs of the waters, " foreſts, fairs, markets, and all places in the ſaid territories; " therefore he unites, creates, and erects the ſaid town, terri- " tory, caſtellany and caſtle of Aubigny, fiefs and lands, &c. " into a Dutchy and Peerdom of France, with all pre-emi- " nences and prerogatives thereunto appertaining; to be en- " joyed by the ſaid Lady Louiſe Renée de Penencouet de Ke- " roualle, Dutcheſs of Portſmouth, during her life; and after " her deceaſe, by the ſaid Duke of Richmond, and the heirs " male of his body, in name, title and dignity of Dukes of " Aubigny, and Peers of France; with all juriſdiction, rights, " honours, authority, &c. belonging to the ſaid dignity of Peers " and Dukes, and Sovereignty of the ſaid dutchy; doing homage " to the Crown of France."

Which Charles Duke of Richmond was her only ſon by Charles II. who being preſent at his baptiſm, gave him the ſurname of Lennox, and his own Chriſtian name, Charles. He was born on July 29, 1672, and being of great hopes, was, in the third year of his age, created, by his Royal Father, Baron of Setrington, in the county of York, Earl of March (a title derived from the Marches in Wales) and Duke of Richmond, in Yorkſhire, by letters patent, bearing date at Weſtminſter, Auguſt 9, 1675, 27 Car. II.

And his Majeſty conſidering, with what luſtre and glory the houſe of Lennox had ſhone in former times, and that by the death of Charles Stuart, Duke of Richmond and Lennox (who died on Dec. 21, 1672) the dignity of the Duke of Lennox was immerged in the Crown; therefore, that the honour might be again revived, his Majeſty beſtowed the eſtate of Lennox on his ſon, the aforeſaid Charles Duke of Richmond: and by letters patent,

patent, paſſed in Scotland on September 9, 1675, created him Duke of Lennox, Earl of Darnley, and Baron of Torbolton, and to the heirs male of his body.

His Grace was elected, on April 7, 1681 [e], a Knight Companion of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and inſtalled at Windſor on the 20th of the ſame month. At that time, and formerly, as pictures ſhew, the Knights of the Garter wore the blue ribbon round the neck, with the George appendant on the breaſt: but the Duke's Mother having, ſome time after his inſtallation, introduced him to the King, with his ribbon over his left ſhoulder, and the George appendant on the right ſide, his Majeſty was ſo pleaſed with the conceit, that he commanded all the Knights Companions of the Order to wear it the ſame way. His Grace was made Maſter of the Horſe to the King, on the removal of the Duke of Monmouth; which office, during his minority, was executed by three Commiſſioners, Henry Guy, Theophilus Oglethorpe, and Charles Adderly, Eſqrs. but on the acceſſion of King James to the throne, his mother having promoted the bill of excluſion, his Grace was removed from that honourable employment. On November 14, 1693 [f], he took his ſeat in the Houſe of Peers. In the reign of King William, his Grace ſerved in Flanders, and was Aid de Camp to his Majeſty. He was alſo one of the Lords of the Bedchamber to King George I. and departing this life, at his ſeat at Goodwood in Suſſex, on May 27, 1723, was buried in King Henry the VIIth's chapel, in Weſtminſter-abbey.

His Grace married Anne, widow and relict of Henry, ſon of John Lord Belaſyſe, of Worlaby. She was ſecond daughter of Francis Lord Brudenell (who died *vitâ patris*) ſon and heir of Robert Earl of Cardigan, and ſiſter to George, third Earl of Cardigan, and by her ſecond huſband left iſſue one ſon, Charles, ſecond Duke of Richmond, Lennox, and Aubigny; as alſo two daughters, Lady Louiſe, married to James, third Earl of Berkeley, and Lady Anne, wedded to William-Anne, ſecond Earl of Albemarle. Her Grace departed this life on Dec. 9, 1722.

Which Charles, ſecond Duke of Richmond, Lennox, and Aubigny, in the life-time of his father, was choſen a Member of the Houſe of Commons for the city of Chicheſter, as alſo for the borough of Newport in the county of Southampton, in the Parliament ſummoned to meet on May 10, 1722. And when George I. revived the antient military Order of Knighthood of the Bath, he was declared one of the Knights of that Order, anno 1725. Alſo, on May 26, 1726, was elected one of the Knights Companions of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and inſtalled at Windſor, on June 16 following; at

[e] Elections and Inſtallations of the Garter in Offic. Arm. [f] Journal Dom. Procer.

which

which time he was one of the Lords of the Bedchamber, and Aid de Camp to his Majeſty. Likewiſe, on the acceſſion of George II. he was conſtituted one of the Lords of the Bedchamber, as alſo Aid de Camp to his Majeſty; and at his coronation, on October 11, 1727, was High-Conſtable of England for the day.

His moſt Serene Highneſs, Francis Duke of Lorrain (the preſent Emperor) coming to England in 1731, under the name of Count Blamont, and reſiding here for ſome time, and having taken his leave of their Majeſties and the Royal Family, his Grace the Duke of Richmond accompanied him to Greenwich, and there entertained him at dinner, on December 8, 1731, the day that his Highneſs embarked for Holland.

Her Grace the Dutcheſs of Portſmouth dying on November 14, 1734, the dukedom of Aubigny in France, with the Peerage of that Kingdom, devolved on his Grace; and on January 8, 1734-5, he was appointed Maſter of the Horſe to his Majeſty, and the next day ſworn of his moſt honourable Privy-Council.

On July 2, 1739, his Grace was made Brigadier-general of his Majeſty's forces: on February 16, 1739-40, elected one of the Governors of the Charter-houſe: on May 12, 1740, declared one of the Lords Juſtices for the adminiſtration of the government during his Majeſty's abſence: on January 1, 1741-2, conſtituted Major-general of his Majeſty's forces [e], and of the Staff of General Officers for South-Britain; alſo on June 6, 1745, promoted to the rank of Lieutenant-general.

In 1743, his Grace attended the late King during the campaign, and was preſent at the battle of Dettingen, on June 27, N. S. He had been declared one of the Lords Juſtices of the kingdom before his Majeſty's departure; and was alſo in that moſt honourable truſt in 1745.

The ſame year the Pretender's eldeſt ſon, Charles, landing in Scotland, and advancing as far as Derby, his Grace attended the Duke of Cumberland in his expedition againſt the inſurgents and aſſiſted in the reduction of Carliſle.

In 1748, his Grace was again appointed one of the Lords Juſtices of the kingdom; as alſo in 1750. On the death of the Duke of Somerſet, he was choſe High-Steward of the city of Chicheſter: and his Grace accompanying the Duke of Newcaſtle to his inſtallation at Cambridge, was admitted to the degree of Doctor of Phyſick, on July 3, 1749. In Auguſt following, his Grace and his Dutcheſs ſet out for France, to ſee his territories there, and returned to their houſe in Privy-Garden, on October 27 the ſame year. On February 17 following, his Grace was conſtituted Colonel of his Majeſty's royal regiment

[e] Ex Inform. Car. Duc. Richmond.

of

of horſe guards; and departed this life, generally lamented, on Auguſt 8, 1750.

His Grace married, at the Hague, on December 4, 1719, Sarah, eldeſt daughter and coheir of William Earl of Cadogan, and one of the Ladies of the Bedchamber to Queen Caroline; and had iſſue by her Grace (who died on Auguſt 25, 1751)

1. Lady Georgina-Carolina Lennox, who was born at London on March 27, 1723, of whom hereafter, in vol. vii. under the title of Holland.

2. A ſon, who died immediately after his birth at London, on September 3, 1724.

3. Lady Louiſa-Margaret Lennox, who was born at London on November 15, 1725, and died at Paris in 1728, his Grace in that year taking a tour into France.

4. Lady Anne Lennox, who was born on May 27, 1726, and died the ſame year in London.

5. Charles Earl of March, who was born on September 29, 1730, and died the ſame year in London.

6. Lady Emilia Lennox, who was born on October 6, 1731, and married on February 7, 1746-7, to James, then Earl, and now Marquis of Kildare, of the kingdom of Ireland, and Viſcount Leinſter of Great-Britain, &c.

7. Charles, now Duke of Richmond.

8. Lord George-Henry Lennox, born in London on November 29, 1737, who, on February 15, 1754, had an Enſign's commiſſion conferred on him in the ſecond regiment of foot-guards; and on May 8, 1758, was, on his brother's promotion, appointed Lieutenant-colonel of the thirty-third regiment of foot. At the general election, in 1761, he was returned for Chicheſter, of which city he is alſo Mayor. On February 20, 1762, he was nominated one of his Majeſty's Aid de Camps, with the rank of Colonel of foot; and in June, 1763, got the command of the twenty-fifth regiment of infantry. His Lordſhip, in 1759, wedded Lady Louiſa, daughter of William Ker, Earl of Ancram, ſon and heir apparent to William Marquis of Lothian in Scotland; and by her had a daughter, ——— born on November 2, 1760, and a ſon, in December, 1763.

9. Lady Margaret Lennox, who was born in London on November 16, 1739, and died of the ſmall-pox at Goodwood, on January 10, 1740-41.

10. Lady Louiſa-Auguſta Lennox, who was born in London on November 24, 1743, and married on December 30, 1758, to Thomas Conolly, of Caſtletown, Eſq; in the county of Kildare, in Ireland,

11. Lady Sarah Lennox, born in London on February 14, 1744-5, was the firſt of the ten unmarried daughters of Dukes and Earls who ſupported the train of Queen Charlotte, at her nuptials

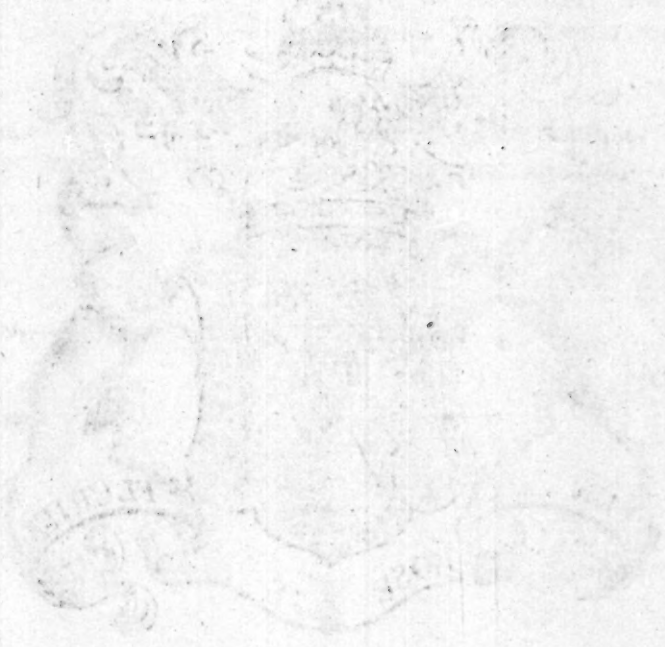
nuptials on September 8, 1761; and on June 2, 1762, wedded Thomas-Charles Bunbury, Eſq; Knight of the Shire for Suffolk, and ſon of the Rev. Sir William Bunbury, of Milden-hall, Baronet.

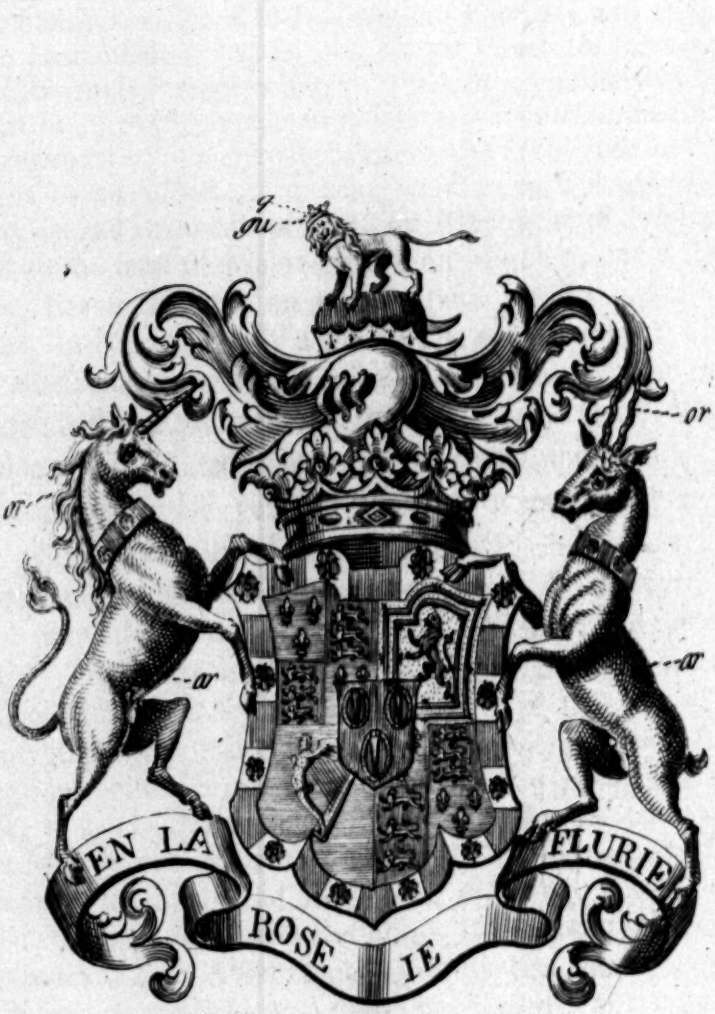
Charles Lennox, the preſent and third Duke of Richmond of his family, was born in London, on February 22, 1734-5, and in September, 1750, ſet out on his travels for further accompliſhment in foreign countries. Chuſing a military life, he was, in June, 1756, appointed Lieutenant-colonel of the thirty-third regiment of foot, having before ſerved in the inferior commiſſions of an officer; and being conſtituted Colonel of the ſeventy-ſecond regiment of foot, on May 9, 1758, was promoted to the rank of Major-general on March 9, 1761. His Grace, having likewiſe an elegant taſte for the polite arts, ordered, in March, 1758, a room to be opened at his houſe at Whitehall, containing a large collection of original plaiſter-caſts, from the beſt antique buſts and ſtatues at Rome and Florence, to which any painter, ſculptor, carver, or other artiſt, and youths above twelve years of age, to whom the ſtudy of thoſe geſſes may be uſeful, are allowed acceſs without any expence: and for the encouragement of genius, he moreover beſtows, annually, two medals on thoſe who make the two beſt models. His Grace is alſo F. R. S. High-ſteward of the city of Chicheſter; one of the Vice-preſidents of the Society for encouraging arts, manufactures and commerce, and of the Lying-in-hoſpital for married and unmarried women, in Duke-Street, near Groſvenor-Square, London. At the coronation of his Majeſty, on September 22, 1761, his Grace carried the ſcepter with the dove; and on October 18, 1763, was declared Lord-Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Suſſex, in the room of Lord Abergavenny. At the acceſſion of the preſent King, on October 25, 1760, his Grace was nominated one of the Lords of Bedchamber, but ſoon after reſigned. He wedded, on April 1, 1757, Mary, daughter of Charles Bruce, late Earl of Aileſbury, by his Lady, Caroline, daughter of General John Campbell, now Duke of Argyle.

TITLES.] Charles Lennox, Duke of Richmond, Earl of March, and Baron Settrington, in England; Duke of Lennox, Earl of Darnley, and Baron Torbolton, in Scotland; and Duke of Aubigny in France.

CREATIONS.] Duke of Richmond in Yorkſhire, Earl of March (a title derived from the Marches in South-Wales) and Baron of Settrington, in the county of York, on Auguſt 9, 1675, 27 Car. II. Duke of Lennox, Earl of Darnley, and Baron of Torbolton, in Scotland, on September 9, 1675; and Duke of Aubigny in France, in January, 1683-4, 41 Louis XIV.

ARMS.]





Lennox Duke of Richmond. 8

ARMS.] Quarterly, firſt and fourth, the arms of France and England, quarterly; the ſecond, Scotland; and the third, Ireland (being the arms of Charles II.) within a Border compone, Argent and Gules, the firſt charged with verdoy of Roſes of the ſecond, and ſeeded proper: Over all, in an eſcutcheon, the arms of Aubigny, viz. Gules, three oval Buckles, Or.

CREST.] On a Chapeau, Gules, turned up Ermine, a Lion paſſant, guardant, Or, crowned with a ducal coronet, Gules, and gorged with a collar gobone, countercharged as the border in the coat.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide, an Unicorn, Argent, armed, creſted and hoofed, Or. On the ſiniſter, an Antelope, Argent, armed, maned, and hoofed, as the dexter. Each ſupporter gorged with a Collar compone, as the Border round the arms.

MOTTO.] EN LA ROSE JE FLEURIE.

CHIEF SEAT.] At Goodwood, in the County of Suſſex, three miles from Chicheſter, and ſixty from London.

FITZ-ROY, Duke of Grafton.

HENRY Fitz-Roy, ſecond natural ſon of Charles II. by Barbary Villiers, Dutcheſs of Cleveland, was born on Sep. 20, 1663; and being of a brave and martial ſpirit, addicted himſelf, firſt, to the experience of maritime affairs, and having been in ſeveral naval expeditions with Sir John Bury, Knt. Vice-Admiral of England, was, by letters patent, bearing date Auguſt 16, 1675, 24 Car. II. created Baron of Sudbury, Viſcount Ipſwich, and Earl of Euſton; alſo on September 11, 1675, 27 Car. II. created Duke of Grafton, in the county of Northampton.

On Auguſt 31, 1680, he was elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter; but being then at ſea with the aforeſaid Sir John Bury, he was inſtalled at Windſor by his proxy, Sir Edward Villiers, Knt. afterwards Earl of Jerſey, on September 30 following.

On December 15, 1681, he was choſen by the corporation of the Trinity-Houſe, to be one of their elder brothers [h]; and on the 30th of the ſame month, conſtituted Colonel of the firſt regiment of foot-guards, which was given, in 1688, to the Earl of Litchfield, but reſtored that year to his Grace by the Prince of Orange. On December 2, 1682, he was [i] appointed Vice-Admiral of England; on October 20, 1684, was ſworn Recorder of St. Edmundſbury in Suffolk; and on May 6, 1685, appointed Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of that county. He was alſo, by patent, Remembrancer in the Firſt-fruit's office; Ranger of Whittlebury foreſt in Northamptonſhire; and Game-keeper at Newmarket.

On April 23, 1685, at the coronation of James II. he performed the [k] office of Lord High-Conſtable of England. And on the landing of the Duke of Monmouth in the Weſt, 1685, he commanded a part of King James's forces, and behaved with great gallantry in the action of Philips Norton Lane, in com. Somerſet [l], narrowly eſcaping with his life.

In 1687, the Duke of Somerſet having declined conducting Ferdinand Dadda, Archbiſhop of Amaſia, Pope Innocent XI's Nuncio, to his public audience, he was prevailed on by the King to perform it [m]; and accordingly, on the 3d of July that year, he ſolemnly conducted him to Windſor, attended by Sir Charles

[h] Hiſt. of Eng. vol. iii. p. 391.
[i] Ibid. p. 397.
[k] Hiſt. of King James's Coronation.
[l] Hiſt of Eng. vol. iii. p. 431.
[m] Ibid. p. 494.

Cotterel,

Cotterel, Maſter of the Ceremonies, in one of his Majeſty's coaches. The ſame year (being then Vice-Admiral of England) he had the command of a ſquadron of his Majeſty's ſhips of war, to receive Mary-Sophia, Queen of Pedro II. King of Portugal, in Holland, and conduct her to Liſbon. His Grace afterwards ſailed for Tunis, where he arrived on October 16, 1687, and having brought the Corſairs of that place to amity, he returned to England in March, 1688, and waiting on the King, was very graciouſly received.

On the landing of the Prince of Orange, his Grace [n] was one of the Proteſtant Peers then in London, who, with the Archbiſhops of Canterbury and York, &c. ſigned a petition to King James. "That in the deep ſenſe of the miſeries of a "war, &c. they did think themſelves bound in conſcience, "and out of the duty they owe to God, their holy religion, "&c. moſt humbly to offer to his Majeſty, That in their "opinions, the only viſible way to preſerve his Majeſty and "his Kingdom, would be the calling of a Parliament, *regular* "and *free* in all reſpects, &c." The Jeſuits were ſo enraged at this petition, that they publiſhed a paper with this title, *Some Reflections upon the humble Petition to the King, of the Lords, who ſubſcribed the ſame; preſented November* 17, 1688.

On King James's arrival with his army at Saliſbury, November 19, his Grace [o], with the Lord Churchill (afterwards Duke of Marlborough) were the firſt that went over to the Prince of Orange. And ſuch confidence had his Highneſs in his Grace's good diſpoſition to him [p], that when King James had the firſt time withdrawn himſelf from Whitehall, he diſpatched the Duke of Grafton from his camp at Henley, to go and take poſſeſſion of Tilbury Fort, with his regiment of foot-guards. But after the meeting of the Convention, when it came to be debated in the Houſe of Peers, *Whether the Throne being vacant, it ought to be filled up by a Regent, or a King*, the Duke [q] was one of the forty-nine, that voted for a *Regent*. However, his Grace, with the Duke of Ormond, the Dukes of Southampton and Northumberland, were ſoon brought over to acknowledge *the Prince and Princeſs of Orange for King and Queen.*

At their coronation, on April 11, 1689, his [r] Grace attended, and bore the King's *Orb.* In 1690, he emkarqued with the Earl of Marlborough for Ireland, who arrived before the harbour of Cork on September 21; [s] and two days after, the greateſt part of the land-forces went on ſhore, headed by the Duke of Grafton, who, coming the next day within a mile of the town of Cork, began a formal ſiege. And a conſiderable breach being made, the grenadeers were ordered to ſtorm the

[n] Hiſt of Eng. præd. p. 529. [o] Ibid. p. 529. [p] Ibid. p. 535.
[q] Ibid. p. 544. [r] Ibid. p. 560. [s] Ibid. p. 610, 611.

town, headed by his Grace, and ſome reſolute volunteers. But as he was leading them on to the aſſault, on September 28, he received a wound with a ſhot, which broke two of his ribs, whereof he died, at Cork, on October 9 following; and his corpſe was brought to England, and buried at Euſton in Suffolk.

His Grace married, on Auguſt 1, 1672, the Lady Iſabella, only daughter, and at length heir, to Henry Bennet, Earl of Arlington, Viſcout Thetford, &c. Secretary of State, and of the Privy-Council, Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and Lord Chamberlain of the houſhold to Charles II. by the Lady Iſabella of Naſſau, his wife, one of the daughters of Lewis of Naſſau, Lord of Beaverwaert, and Count of Naſſau, and ſiſter to Henry of Naſſau, Seignior de Auverquerque, Maſter of the Horſe to William III. and father of Henry, late Earl of Grantham: and by her had Charles, his only child, ſecond late Duke of Grafton, born on October 25, 1683; and in right of his mother (who died on February 7, 1722-3, in the fifty-ſixth year of her age) was Earl of Arlington, Viſcount Thetford, and Baron Arlington; her father being created Baron Arlington, of Arlington, in the county of Middleſex, March 14, 1663, 16 Car. II. and Viſcouut Thetford, in the county of Norfolk, and Earl of Arlington, on April 22, 1672, with limitation to the heirs of his body lawfully begotten.

The ſaid Charles, ſecond Duke of Grafton, after finiſhing his travels abroad, took[t] his ſeat in the Houſe of Peers on October 25, 1704; and on April 4, 1705, was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of the county of Suffolk. On September 25, 1708, he was ſent to Portſmouth, to compliment Mary-Anne of Auſtria, Queen of Portugal, in her Majeſty's name, upon her arrival in Great-Britain. On October 9, 1714, he was again, on the acceſſion of George I. (at whoſe coronation, on the 20th of the ſame month, he carried St. Edmond's crown) conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of the county of Suffolk, and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the ſame. On October 18 he was appointed one of the Gentlemen of his Majeſty's Bedchamber. On Auguſt 27, 1715, his Grace, and Henry Earl of Gallway, were appointed Lords Juſtices of Ireland; and on the 31ſt of the ſame month, he was ſworn one of his Majeſty's Privy-Council. On June 17, 1720, his Majeſty, in Council, declared him Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.

His Grace embarked at Holyhead, on Auguſt 27, 1721, and landing at Dublin the next day about noon, received the compliments as uſual, and proceeding to the Caſtle, took the oaths in Council, as Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. On September 13, he went in the uſual ſtate to the Houſe of Peers, and opened

[t] Journal Dom. Procer.

the

the ſeſſion of Parliament with a ſpeech to them from the throne.

On June 11, 1720, he was alſo nominated one of the Lords Juſtices of Great-Britain, whilſt his Majeſty went to Hanover.

On March 27, 1721, he was elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and was inſtalled on April 25 following.

On June 3, 1723, he was, a ſecond time, made one of the Lords Juſtices of Great-Britain, and, on April 3, 1724, appointed Lord Chamberlain of his Majeſty's houſhold.

On May 12, 1724 (on his return from Ireland, from whence he arrived at Parkgate, on the 9th of that month) he was ſworn Recorder of the city of Coventry, and preſented with the freedom thereof.

Alſo, on June 1, 1725, he was, a third time, one of the Lords Juſtices: and, on May 31, 1727, a fourth time, when his Majeſty died on his journey. On his late Majeſty's aſcending the Throne, he was again appointed, on December 14, 1727, Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Suffolk, and Vice-Admiral of the ſame. He was alſo appointed Lord Chamberlain of his houſhold, and ſworn of his Privy-Council; and in Auguſt, 1734, was elected one of the Governors of the Charterhouſe.

He was, on May 12, 1740, again nominated one of the Lords Juſtices; as he was on every future occaſion, when his Majeſty's pleaſure and affairs called him abroad, until his Grace's death, which happened on May 6, 1757.

His Grace (in 1713) married the Lady Henrietta, daughter to Charles Somerſet, Marquis of Worceſter (eldeſt ſon of Henry Duke of Beaufort) by Rebecca, his wife, daughter to Sir Joſiah Child, of Wanſted in the county of Eſſex, Bart. anceſtor of the Earl Tilney, and by her (who died on Auguſt 9, 1726) had iſſue three ſons and three daughters.

1. George Earl of Euſton, born on Auguſt 24, 1715, who was one of the four young Noblemen, who, at the coronation of his late Majeſty, ſupported his train, and was Member of Parliament for the city of Coventry. He married, in 1741, Lady Dorothy, daughter of Richard Earl of Burlington, who died in April, 1742. His Lordſhip died in July, 1747, leaving no iſſue.

2. Lord Auguſtus, born on October 16, 1716, of whom hereafter.

3. Lord Charles, born on April 28, 1718, who died at Milan, in his travels, anno 1739.

4. Lady Carolina, born on April 8, 1722, and married, in Auguſt, 1746, to William Lord Viſcount Peterſham, now Earl of Harrington.

5. Lady Harriot, born on June 8, 1723, and died in Auguſt, 1735.

6. Lady Arabella, born on July 19, 1726, and married, in May, 1741, to Francis Seymour Conway, Lord Conway, now Earl of Hertford.

Lord Auguſtus Fitz-Roy, ſecond ſon of Charles ſecond Duke of Grafton, being brought up in the ſea-ſervice, was, in September, 1736, Captain of the Kennington, and afterwards of ſeveral other of his Majeſty's ſhips of war. He commanded the Orford man of war at the attack of Carthagena, in Feb. 1740-1, but died at Jamaica, on May 28 following, much regretted for his bravery and diligence in the ſervice, being then alſo Member in Parliament for Thetford, into which he had been elected in February, 1738-9, upon a vacancy. His Lordſhip, in March, 1733-4, wedded Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel William Coſby, ſome time Governor of New-York, a younger ſon of Alexander Coſby, of Strodbell in Ireland, Eſq; and by her (who after his deceaſe married James Jefferys, Eſq;) had three ſons, Charles, who was born at New-York in 1734, and died there, aged four months; Auguſtus-Henry, now Duke of Grafton; and the Honourable Charles Fitz-Roy, who was born in July, 1737, and on July 27, 1758, wedded Anne, one of the daughters and coheirs of the late Sir Peter Warren, Knight of the Bath, and Vice-Admiral of the Red Squadron. By that Lady, he has iſſue, Anne-Caroline, a daughter, born on May 9, 1759; another, named Mary, born on September 7, 1760; a ſon and heir, George-Ferdinand, born on Auguſt 7, 1761; another, on September 4, 1763; and a third, on July 21, 1764. Taking to a military life, he was, after paſſing through the inferior degrees of an officer, appointed Captain of a company in the firſt regiment of foot-guards, with the rank of Lieutenant-colonel of foot, on May 9, 1758, and ſerved under Prince Ferdinand, in the late war, as one of his Aid de Camps. In January, 1760, he was nominated one of the Grooms of the Bedchamber to the late King, and ſince June 20, 1762, takes place as Colonel of foot in the army. He was elected in December, 1759, for Orford, in the room of the Right Hon. Henry Bilſon Legge, Eſq; promoted, and, in 1761, was returned for St. Edmundſbury to the preſent Parliament.

Auguſtus-Henry, the preſent Duke of Grafton, was born in October, 1735, and ſucceeding his uncle, the Earl of Euſton, as heir apparent to his grandfather, was, in November, 1756, appointed a Lord of the Bedchamber to the preſent King, then Prince of Wales. On the death of the late Earl of Harrington, in 1756, and the promotion of the preſent Lord Mansfield, that ſame year, he was elected, in room of the latter, a Member for Boroughbridge, and in place of the former, for St. Edmundſbury,

FitzRoy Duke of Grafton.

mundſbury, for which he choſe his ſeat in Parliament, which he kept till his grandfather's death, on May 6, 1757. His Grace is Recorder of the city of Coventry; and alſo one of the Vice-preſidents of the Lying-in-hoſpital for married and unmarried women, in Duke-Street, near Groſvenor-Square. In the late reign, he was appointed Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Suffolk, and continued ſo in the preſent, till February 8, 1763. On January 29, 1756, he married Anne, only child of Henry Liddel, Lord Ravenſworth; and by her has iſſue, a daughter, Lady Georgiana, born on May 7, 1757; George-Henry, Earl of Euſton, his ſon and heir apparent, born on January 14, 1760; another ſon, born on February 20, 1761, who died ſoon after; and a third ſon, born on July 17, 1764.

TITLES.] Auguſtus-Henry Fitz-Roy, Duke of Grafton, Earl of Arlington and Euſton, Viſcount Thetford and Ipſwich, Baron Arlington of Arlington, and Baron of Sudbury, Remembrancer of the Firſt-fruits office, Ranger of Whittlebury-foreſt in Northamptonſhire, and his Majeſty's Game-keeper at Newmarket.

CREATIONS.] Baron Arlington, of Arlington in com. Middleſex, Viſcount Thetford in com. Norfolk, and Earl of Arlington aforeſaid, by deſcent from his mother Iſabella, ſole daughter and heir to the Right Honourable Henry Bennet, Earl of Arlington, who was created Baron by letters patent, on March 14, 1663, 16 Car. II. and Viſcount and Earl, on April 22, 1672, 24 Car. II. Baron of Sudbury, Viſcount Ipſwich, and Earl of Euſton, all in the county of Suffolk, on Aug. 16, 1671, 24 Car. II. and Duke of Grafton, in the county of Northampton, on September 11, 1675, 27 Car. II.

ARMS.] The arms of King Charles II. with a Battone ſiniſter compone, Argent and Azure.

CREST.] On a Chapeau, Gules, turned up Ermine, a Lion paſſant guardant, Or, crowned with a ducal Coronet, Azure, and gorged with a Collar countercompone, Argent and Azure.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide a Lion guardant, Or, crowned with a ducal Coronet, Azure, and gorged with a Collar countercompone, Argent and Azure: on the ſiniſter, a Greyhound, Argent, gorged as the Lion.

MOTTO.] ET DECUS ET PRETIUM RECTI.

CHIEF SEATS.] At Wakefield lodge in Whittlebury-foreſt, in the county of Northampton, three miles from Towceſter, three from Stoney-Stratford, and fifty-ſeven from London; at Livermore-hall, in the county of Suffolk, three miles from Ixworth, and ſeventy-three from London; and at Euſton-hall in the ſame county, and ſeventy-nine from London.

SOMERSET, Duke of Beaufort.

Ju. 2. f 3. Engl. Bar. 121. to 124.
f Hence again 2 93. Jan. f. Gen. Nob. 321.
to 372.

THIS noble Duke derives his genealogy from Geoffrey Plantagenet, Earl of Anjou, ſon of Foulk, King of Jeruſalem (and grandſon to Foulk Rechin, Earl of Anjou, Tourine and Maine) by Maud the Empreſs his wife, daughter of Henry I. King of England, ſon of William the Conqueror (whence it is obſervable, that his progenitors have flouriſhed with the titles of Dukes, Marquiſſes and Earls, and have not deſcended to a lower degree for theſe 700 years) being lineally deſcended from John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaſter, ſon of Edward III. who cauſed all his children, by his third wife Catherine Swinford, daughter of Sir Payn Roet, alias Guyen, King of Arms, and widow of Sir John Swinford, Knt. to be called Beaufort, from the caſtle of Beaufort in the county of Anjou, the place of their nativity; which caſtle came, A. D. 1276, to the houſe of Lancaſter by the marriage of Blanch, daughter of Robert I. Count of Artois, and widow of Henry I. King of Navarre, with Edmund (ſurnamed Crouchback) Earl of Lancaſter, ſecond ſon of Henry III. King of England.

By the ſaid Catherine he had three ſons, and a daughter Joan, who was firſt married to Sir Robert Ferrers of Overſley, and ſecondly to Ralph Nevill, the firſt Earl of Weſtmoreland. Of the ſons, which were John, Henry, and Thomas, the latter was created Earl of Dorſet on July 5, 1412, 13 Henry IV. and on November 18, 1416, 4 Henry V. Duke of Exeter; the ſecond was made Biſhop of Wincheſter, anno 1405, 6 Henry IV and was alſo Cardinal and Lord Chancellor, and father of a natural daughter, Joan, wife of Sir Edward Stradling in Wales; and John, the eldeſt, was created Earl of Somerſet, anno 1396, 20 Richard II.

Which John Earl of Somerſet died on April 21, 1410, having married Margaret, ſiſter and coheir to Edmund Holland, Earl of Kent, and by her had four ſons and two daughters, whereof Joan, the eldeſt, was married firſt to James I. King of Scots, and after his death, to Sir James Stuart, ſon to Lord Lorne, from whom the Duke of Athol; and Margaret, to Thomas Courtney, who was the ſixth Earl of Devonſhire, of his family, and beheaded for adhering to the Lancaſtrians, A. D. 1461, 1 Edward IV.

The ſons of the ſaid John Earl of Somerſet were, Henry, John, Edmund, and Thomas; whereof Henry the eldeſt dying unmarried, left his inheritance to his brother,

John,

John, who ſucceeded him as third Earl of Somerſet; and in 1443, the 21ſt of Henry VI. was created Duke of Somerſet, and Earl of Kendale, and conſtituted Lieutenant and Captain-general of Aquitain; as alſo of the whole realm of France, and dutchy of Normandy. His Grace departed this life on May 27, 1444, 22 Henry VI. and was buried at Winborne-minſter in Dorſetſhire; leaving iſſue by Margaret his wife, daughter to Sir John Beauchamp, of Bletſhoe in the county of Bedford, Knt. (and heir to John her brother) an only daughter, Margaret, married to Edmund of Hadham, Earl of Richmond, eldeſt ſon of Owen ap Merideth ap Tudor, and Catherine of France, Queen of England, dowager to Henry V. and by him was mother of Henry VII.

To him ſucceeded Edmund his next brother, who was Earl of Mortein in Normandy, and created Marquis of Dorſet on June 24, 1443, 21 Henry VI. In 24 Henry VI. he was Regent of Normandy; and in 26 Henry VI. created Duke of Somerſet; but was ſlain in the battle of St. Alban's, on May 22, 1455. He married Eleanor, ſecond daughter and coheir to Richard Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, and by her had four ſons and five daughters, viz. 1. Eleanor, the ſecond wife of James Butler, Earl of Ormond and Wiltſhire; 2. Joan, firſt married to Sir Robert St. Lawrence, Baron of Howth in Ireland, and ſecondly to Sir Richard Fry, Knt. 3. Anne, married to Sir William Paſton, of Paſton in the county of Norfolk, Knt. 4. Margaret, firſt married to Humphrey Stafford, Earl of Stafford, and ſecondly, to Sir Richard Darrel, Knt. by whom ſhe had a daughter, Margaret, wedded to James Touchet, Lord Audley, anceſtor to the preſent Earl of Caſtlehaven; and 5. Elizabeth, married to Sir Henry Lewis, Knt.

The ſons of Edmund, the ſecond Duke of Somerſet, were Henry, Edmund, John, and Thomas. Henry, the eldeſt ſon, Knight of the Garter, ſucceeded his father as third Duke of Somerſet; but he having no lawful iſſue, the honour devolved upon Edmund, his next brother, who was beheaded in 1471, 11 Edward IV. without iſſue; and John and Thomas, his next brothers, alſo dying iſſueleſs (the firſt of them being killed at the battle of Tewkeſbury, in May, 1471) in them terminated the male of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaſter, not only by Catherine Swinford, but alſo by his wife, Blanch (mother of King Henry IV.) who was his only other wife that bore him any male iſſue.

However, we return to Henry, third Duke of Somerſet, Knight of the Garter, as anceſtor to his Grace, the preſent Duke of Beaufort. The ſaid Henry Duke of Somerſet had the title of Earl of Moreton in his father's life-time, and gained great honour in the French wars. Among other ſervices, he is remembered

remembered for his deſperate aſſault of the caſtle of St. Anjou in Mayenne, in 27 Henry VI. in which he put to the ſword 300 Scots, and hanged all the French found therein. In 36 Henry VI. he was conſtituted Lieutenant and Governor of the Iſle of Wight, and caſtle of Cariſbroke, and the year after made Governor of Calais; but being by King Henry VI. recalled into England, to ſupply the command of Duke Edmund his father (who was, as is ſaid before, ſlain in behalf of that King in the battle of St. Alban's, againſt Richard Duke of York) was taken priſoner at the battle of Hexham, in the county of Northumberland, by John Nevil, Marquis of Montacute, and there (on April 3, 1463, the third of Edward IV.) beheaded for his adherence to the houſe of Lancaſter, leaving iſſue by Joan Hill, or, De la Montaign, an only natural ſon, named Charles, who aſſumed the ſurname of Somerſet.

Which Charles, being a perſon of great abilities, arrived to very high advancements, as well in honour as eſtates. In 1485, 1 Hen. VII. ſo much did this prudent Prince diſcern his merits, that he [u] conſtituted him one of his Privy-Council; and in 2 Henry VII. being then a Knight [x], made him Conſtable of Helmſley-caſtle in Yorkſhire, and the year after [y], Admiral of his fleet at ſea; in which poſt he [z] continued in 4 Henry VII. In 6 Henry VII. he was [a] ſent Ambaſſador with the Order of the Garter to the Emperor Maximilian I. He was alſo, by the ſame King, his near kinſman (for the King's mother and Henry Duke of Somerſet his father were brothers children) created a Banneret, elected Knight of the Garter, and made Captain of the guards, on July 17, 1496. In 17 Henry VII. he [b] was ſent Ambaſſador to the ſaid Maximilian, and concluded two treaties, one dated at Antwerp, on June 19, 1502, and the other the day after; at which time he gave bond for the payment of 10,000 l. to the deputies of the ſaid Maximilian, in aid againſt the Turks, in defence of the Chriſtian religion: and therein is ſtiled Sir Charles Somerſet, Knight of the Garter, Chamberlain and Captain of the guard to the King of England. At a [c] Chapter of the Garter held on May 7, 18 Henry VII. at Windſor, by Thomas Earl of Derby, appointed thereto by the King's commiſſion, the Sovereign, by letter to that Earl, excuſed Sir Charles Somerſet's attendance there, being employed by him on arduous affairs. Thoſe eminent favours were, doubtleſs, a great furtherance of his marriage with Elizabeth, the ſole daughter and heir to William Herbert, Earl of Huntingdon, Lord Herbert of Ragland, Chepſtow and Gower: and in her right

[u] Polyd. Virg. p 567. [x] Pat. 2 Henry VII. p. 2. m. 5. [y] Pat. 3 Henry VII. p. 1. in dorſ. [z] Pat. 4 Henry VII. m. 8. [a] Aſhmole's Order of the Garter, p. 391. [b] Rymer's Fœd. tom. xiii. p. 8 and 9. [c] Anſtis's Reg. of the Garter, vol. i. p. 242.

he

he bore the title of Lord Herbert; by which appellation he was [d] made Governor of Payne-caſtle, and Montgomery-caſtle, in Wales, and had [e] ſummons to Parliament in the firſt and third of Henry VIII. among the Barons, by the name of Charles Somerſet de Herbert, Chevalier. Having been Lord Chamberlain to Henry VII. he was alſo in [f] the ſame office to Henry VIII. at his firſt coming to the Crown, likewiſe one of his Privy-Council, and continued in his other employments. In 1513, the fifth of this King, in his expedition into France, he [g] followed him thither with 6,000 foot, and was preſent at the taking of Therrouenne and Tournay; where meriting highly for his heroic actions, and exemplary valour, he [h] had the office of Lord Chamberlain beſtowed on him for life; and likewiſe, by reaſon of his noble deſcent, and near alliance to the King in blood [i] (as the patent itſelf did then import) was on the feſtival of the Virgin Mary, in 1514, advanced to the dignity of Earl of Worceſter. And on October 9 that year, he [k] attended the Lady Mary, the King's ſiſter, at her coronation at St. Dennis in France. He was afterwards employed by the King (with the Biſhop of Ely) for [l] confirming articles of peace between England and France; and after that, with Cardinal Wolſey, in 1521, to mediate peace between the Emperor Charles V. and Francis I. King of France; having before, on May 13 that year, been one of the Peers who ſat on the trial of Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham; and continued in great favour with King Henry VIII. till his Lordſhip's death, on April 15, 1526.

By [m] his teſtament, dated 21 Martii, anno 1524, 15 Henry VIII. bearing then the title of Earl of Worceſter, Lord Herbert of Gower and Chepſtow, Lord Chamberlain to the King, and Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, he ordered his body to be buried in the church of our Lady and St. George, within the caſtle of Windſor, by his firſt wife, in his chapel of our Lady, now called Beaufort-chapel, where her tomb was then made, by the conſent and agreement of the Dean and Canons of the ſame place, at ſuch time as he endowed a Prieſt to ſay Maſs, daily and perpetually there, to pray to God for his ſoul, and for the ſoul of Elizabeth his firſt wife, his own, her friends, and mother's ſouls, and all other: appointing, that in caſe he ſhould depart this life in London, Kaiho, or near the River of Thames, that his body ſhould be brought by water to the ſaid church of Windſor, as privately as might be, without pomp, or great charge of torches, or cloathing, hearſe, wax,

[d] Pat. 19 Henry VII. p. 1. m. 16. [e] Clauſ. de iiſd. ann. in dorſ. [f] Herbert's Hiſtory of Henry VIII. p. 3. [g] Stow's Annals. [h] Pat. 5 Henry VIII. p. 2. m. 30. [i] Ibid. m. 13. [k] Herb. ut ſupr. p. 52. [l] Ibid. p. 116. [m] Ex Regiſt. Porrh. qu. 22.

or great dinner, but only for them that muſt needs be had; that is to ſay, twenty men of his own ſervants, to bear every man a torch, and to have cloathing; and the bier, or hearſe, to be covered with black cloth, and his body under the ſame, with a white croſs upon it. He likewiſe bequeathed to Eleanor, his wife, ſix hundred marks in plate; to his ſon Henry all his harneſs, artillery, and habiliments of war, except the harneſs for his own body, which he gave to his ſon George: and to his ſon Henry all his robes of eſtate, and robes of Parliament, with his mantle, gown, and hood of the Order of the Garter. For his firſt wife he had [n] Elizabeth, daughter and heir (as has been ſaid before) to William Earl of Huntingdon, and by her had iſſue Henry, his ſon and ſucceſſor; and a daughter Elizabeth, married to Sir John Savage, of Clifton in com. Ceſtr. Knt. Progenitor of the late Earls Rivers. For his ſecond wife he eſpouſed Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Weſt, Lord de La War, by whom he had iſſue Sir Charles Somerſet, Knt. Captain of the Tower of Ryſebank in the haven of Calais; Sir George Somerſet, of Badmundesfield in com. Suff. Knt. who wedded Mary, ſole daughter and heir of Sir Thomas Bowlays, of Penhow in the county of Monmouth, Knt. who bore the arms of Seymour, being deſcended from the daughter and ſole heir of Roger Seymour, elder ſon of John Seymour, who died in 1358, 32 Edward III. and was elder brother of Roger, anceſtor to the Duke of Somerſet. Sir George Somerſet, by the ſaid Mary Bowlays, was father of two ſons, Charles and William, and a daughter Anne, who wedded Edward Barret, of Belhouſe in Eſſex, Eſq; This Earl Charles had alſo, by his ſecond wife, a daughter Mary, married to William Lord Grey of Wilton. By his third wife, Eleanor, daughter of Sir Edward Sutton, Lord Dudley, he had no iſſue.

Henry, his ſon and heir, the ſecond Earl, for his ſignal exploits performed in the wars of France, during his father's lifetime [o], had been knighted by Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk; and ſhortly after his father's death, was [p] appointed one of the Commiſſioners for concluding a peace with the French. And departing this life [q] on November 26, 1549, 3 Edw. VI. was buried at Ragland. [r] The inquiſition taken after his deceaſe, at Wotton-under-Edge in Glouceſterſhire, on February 21, 4 Edward VI. ſhews, that he died ſeized of the manors of Wolveſton, alias Wollaſton, and Grange of Wollaſton, Modeſgate, alias Maiott, Brockwere, Alverſton, Halleſhall, and Hewelfield, and 82 meſſuages, 3 mills, 1000 acres of ploughed land, 70 of meadows, 1000 of paſture, 600 of wood, 500 of heath

[n] Cat. of Nob. by R. Brook. [o] Hollinſh. p. 880. [p] Herb. ut ſupra, p. 180. [q] Eſch. 4 Edward VI. [r] Cole's Eſch. lib. 5. n. 61. A. 16. p. 372. in Bibl. Harley.

and

and turf, and 20l. 8s. rent in Brockwere, Wolveſton, Almington, Alverſton, Hewelsfield, and Modeſgate, with the fiſheries in the Wye, called Plomwere, Aſhwere, Ithelſwere, and Walwere, and rectory of Walwere, and advowſons and vicarage of the ſame; the manor of Tiddenham, and divers meſſuages, lands and tenements in Strote, Widden, Biſten, Botteſley, and Sudbury, all in the county of Glouceſter: and that William Lord Herbert, Earl of Worceſter, was his ſon and heir, and of the age of twenty-two years. This Earl Henry married [s] Elizabeth, daughter to Sir Anthony Browne, Knt. Standard-Bearer to Henry VII. and anceſtor to the Lords Viſcounts Montacute, and by her had iſſue four ſons; 1. William; 2. Thomas, who died on May 27, 1587, in the Tower of London; 3. Sir Charles, who was Standard-Bearer to the Band of Penſioners in the time of Queen Elizabeth, and died on March 2, 1529; and 4. Francis, ſlain at Muſſelborough-field, on September 10, 1547, firſt of Edward VI. Alſo four daughters; 1. Eleanor, married to Sir Edward Vaughan, of Tretour in com. Brecon, Knt.; 2. Lucy, to John Nevil, Lord Latimer; 3. Anne, to Thomas Percy, Earl of Northumberland; and 4. Jane, to Sir Edward Manſel, Knt. anceſtor to the late Lord Manſel.

Which William, his eldeſt ſon and heir, was Knight of the Garter; and in 1551, 5 Edward VI. [t] accompanied William Parre, Marquis of Northampton, into France, to preſent King Henry II. with the order of the Garter. In 1573, 15 Elizabeth, he was [u] ſent into France with a fount of pure gold, for the chriſtening of a daughter to Charles IX. King of that realm, and to ſtand in the Queen's ſtead, as one of the ſureties. He married Chriſtian, daughter to Edward North, Lord North of Carthledge, by whom he had Edward, his only ſon and heir; and two daughters, Elizabeth, married to William Windſor, Eſq; ſeventh and youngeſt ſon of William Lord Windſor; and Lucy, to Henry Herbert, Eſq; at that time ſon and heir of Sir Thomas Herbert, of Wyneſtone in com. Monmouth, Knt. [x] By the inquiſition, taken on September 20, 1589, 31 Elizabeth, at Cardiffe, in the county of Glamorgan, the jury found, That at the time of his death, on February 21 before, he was ſeized of the lordſhips and manor of Gower, Kilvey, and the caſtle and borough of Swanſey, parcel of the manor of Gower; the demeſne lands of the caſtle of Oyſtmouth, with the appurtenances, in Clyn-foreſt; the manors of Wringſton, Michelſton, and the rectory of the church; half the manor of Weſt-orchard, and the manor of Lancarnan, all in the county of Glamorgan:

[s] Cat. of Nob. by R. Brook.
[t] Aſhmole's Order of the Garter, p. 394.
[u] Camden's Annals of Queen Elizabeth.
[x] Cole's Eſch. lib. 3. note 61. A. 14. in Bibl. Harley, p. 204.

and

and that Edward Earl of Worceſter was his ſon and heir, and of the age of thirty-ſix years, and upwards.

Which Edward, fourth Earl, in 1591, 33d of Elizabeth, was [y] ſent Ambaſſador to James VI. of Scotland, to congratulate his marriage and ſafe return from Denmark, &c. And in the 43d of her reign, was [z] made Maſter of the Horſe, being the [a] beſt horſeman and tilter of the times; which office he [b] had continued to him by James I. being alſo [c] conſtituted one of the Commiſſioners for executing the office of Earl-Marſhal. In the 13th of King James [d], reſigning his office of Maſter of the Horſe, he was [e] made Lord Privy-Seal; and two years after, had a new grant of that office [f], with the fee of 1,500 l. *per annum* for life. This Earl, being alſo Knight of the Garter, wedded Elizabeth, daughter of Francis Earl of Huntingdon; by whom he had iſſue eight ſons. William Lord Herbert, eldeſt ſon, died unmarried in the life time of his father; and Henry Lord Herbert, ſecond ſon, ſucceeded his father; Thomas, the third ſon (who was, on March 24, 1602-3, ſent with Sir Charles Percy, by the Privy-Council, to notify to the ſaid King James the demiſe of Queen Elizabeth, and his Majeſty's being proclaimed her ſucceſſor the ſame day, to the univerſal joy of every good ſubject) was made Knight of the Bath on Jan. 5, 1604-5, with Prince Charles, the day before his Royal Highneſs was created Duke of York; and when that Prince aſcended the throne by the name of Charles I. he promoted Sir Thomas, on December 8, 1626, the ſecond year of his reign, to the dignity of Viſcount Somerſet, of Caſhel, in the county of Tipperary in Ireland. The preamble to the patent [g] recites, That he had performed many acceptable ſervices, both to the King himſelf, his father and mother, eſpecially as a faithful Counſellor of his father, and as Maſter of the Horſe. He married Eleanor, daughter of David Lord Barry, and Viſcount Buttevant of Ireland, relict of Thomas Butler, Earl of Ormond, by whom he left Elizabeth, his daughter and heir, who never married. Charles Somerſet, and Francis, fourth and fifth ſons, died infants. Charles, ſixth ſon, of Troy in Monmouthſhire, made Knight of the Bath at the creation of Henry Prince of Wales, on June 4, 1610, married Elizabeth, the daughter and heir of Sir William Powel, of Llanpylt, in the county of Monmouth; and had iſſue three daughters, Elizabeth, the wife of Francis Anderton, of Loſtock in com. Pal. Lanc. Eſq; Mary, who died unmarried; and Frances, the wife of Sir Henry Brown, of Kiddington in the county of Oxford, Bart. Chriſto-

[y] Camden's Annals. [z] Pat. 43 Eliz. p. 12. [a] Fragm. Regalia, p. 87. [b] Pat. 1 Jac. I. p. 6. [c] Pat. 2 Jac. I. p. 24. [d] Annal. R. Jac. I. per Camd. [e] Ibid. [f] Pat. 15 Jac. I. p. 6. [g] Pat. 2 Car. I. p. 5. N° 10.

pher

pher Somerſet, ſeventh ſon, died young; and Sir Edward Somerſet, eighth ſon, made Knight of the Bath with his brother, Sir Charles, married Bridget, daughter and heir to Sir William Whitmore, of Leighton, in com. Ceſtr. Knt. but died without iſſue. The Earl had likewiſe ſeven daughters; 1. Elizabeth, married to Sir Henry Guildford, of Hemſted-place in Kent, Knt. 2. Catherine, married to William Lord Petre, of Writtle; 3. Anne, married to Sir Edward Winter, of Lidney in com. Glouceſter, Knt. 4. Frances, married to William Morgan, Eſq; at that time ſon and heir to Edward Morgan, of Lanternam in com. Monmouth, Eſq; 5. Mary, who died an infant; 6. Blanch, married to Thomas, at that time ſon and heir-apparent to Thomas Lord Arundel of Wardour; and, 7. another Catherine, married to Thomas Lord Windſor.

The ſaid Edward, fourth Earl of Worceſter, died at his houſe in the Strand, 3 Martii, 1627-8, and was buried in St. Mary's chapel, before mentioned, within Windſor-caſtle. Sir Robert Naunton [b], who was of the Privy-Council to Queen Elizabeth, and well known to moſt of them, gives this character of his Lordſhip. "My Lord of Worceſter I have here put laſt, but "not leaſt in the Queen's favour. He was of the antient "and noble blood of the Beauforts, and of her grandfather's "line by the mother; which the Queen could never forget; "eſpecially when there was a concurrency of old blood with "fidelity; a mixture which ever ſorted with the Queen's nature. And though there might appear ſomething in this houſe "which might avert her grace (though not to ſpeak of my "Lord himſelf, but with due reverence and honour) I mean "contrariety or ſuſpicion in religion, yet the Queen ever reſpected this houſe, and principally this noble Lord, whom "ſhe firſt made Maſter of the Horſe, and then admitted of her "Council of ſtate. In his youth (part whereof he ſpent before "he came to reſide at Court) he was a very fine Gentleman, "and the beſt horſeman and tilter of the times, which were "then the manlike and noble recreations of the Court, and "ſuch as took up the applauſe of men, as well as the praiſe "and commendations of Ladies. And when years had abated "theſe exerciſes of honour, he grew then to be a faithful and "profound Counſellor. And as I have placed him laſt, ſo "was he the laſt liver of all the ſervants of her favour; and "had the honour to ſee his renowned Miſtreſs, and all of "them, laid in the places of their reſt: and for himſelf, after "a life of a very noble and remarkable reputation, he died "rich, and in a peaceable old age. A fate (that I make the "laſt and none of the ſlighteſt obſervations) which befel not "many of the reſt, for they expired like unto lights blown out

[b] Fragm. Regalia, p. 87.

"with

" with the ſnuff ſtinking, not commendably extinguiſhed, and " with offence to the ſtanders by." He was ſucceeded by his eldeſt ſurviving ſon,

Henry, fourth Earl and firſt Marquis of Worceſter, who was, in the life-time of his father, ſummoned to the firſt Parliament of James I. and was a Nobleman of great parts, piety, and wiſdom, and of a free and generous diſpoſition, ſupported by an equal and flowing fortune, which was much impaired by his ſignal and manifeſt loyalty to Charles I. in the large ſupplies of men and money he aſſiſted his Majeſty with; whoſe intereſt he powerfully aſſerted during that fierce and unnatural war. He maintained his caſtle of Ragland, in the county of Monmouth, with a garriſon of 800 men, from 1642 to Auguſt 19, 1646, without receiving any contribution from the country, and then yielded it to Sir Thomas Fairfax, the parliamentary General (who beſieged it in perſon) upon very honourable articles for all the officers and ſoldiers that were therein. This was amongſt the laſt places in England, that held out againſt the rebels: but after its ſurrendery, was demoliſhed, and all the timber in the three parks, that lay near to the houſe, was cut down and ſold by the Committees for Sequeſtration, the offal of which (for there was no coppice-wood in any of the parks) according to the Sub-committees (whoſe cuſtom was not to acknowledge the utmoſt of the profits they made) amounted to 37,000 cords of wood. The lead, that covered the caſtle, was ſold for 6,000 l. and a great part of the timber thereof to the citizens of Briſtol, to rebuild the houſes on the bridge there, which had been lately burnt. The loſs to this truly noble family, in the houſe and woods, was modeſtly computed at 100,000 l. beſides, at leaſt, as great a ſum lent to his Majeſty, by the ſaid Marquis, and the ſupporting the above-mentioned garriſon, and raiſing and maintaining two ſeveral armies at his own expence (commanded by his ſon, Edward Earl of Glamorgan) together with the ſequſtration from 1646, and afterwards the ſale of that whole eſtate by the Rump, which (beſides what the family diſpoſed of in thoſe neceſſitous times) amounted, as appears by that year's audit, to about 20,000 l. *per annum*, and was not reſtored till 1660, when his ſaid ſon got it again. The conditions of capitulation being baſely violated, the Marquis was taken into the cuſtody of the Parliament's Black Rod, in which he died in December following, and was buried at Windſor, near the tomb of Charles Earl of Worceſter, his anceſtor. He was, by letters patent, dated at Oxford on November 2, 1642, 18 Car. I. created Marquis of Worceſter. This Henry Earl and Marquis of Worceſter married Anne, the only child of John Lord Ruſſell, who died in the life-time of his father, Francis Earl of Bedford; and by her, who died on April 1, 1639, he had iſſue nine ſons, and four daughters.

Edward

Edward Lord Herbert, the eldeſt, ſucceeded him in his honours.

Lord John Somerſet, ſecond ſon, who was knighted, had by his firſt wife, Mary, daughter of Thomas Lord Arundel of Wardour, iſſue three ſons. The firſt was Henry Somerſet, of Pantley-court in Glouceſterſhire, who wedded Anne, daughter of Walter Lord Aſton, Baron Forfar, in the kingdom of Scotland, and by her was father of Edward-Maria, who married two wives, viz. Clare, daughter of Charles Calvert, Lord Baltimore, of the kingdom of Ireland, and Anne, daughter of Charles Calvert, Lord Baltimore, ſiſter to Clare, but died without iſſue[1]; and of Mary, who was a nun. The ſecond ſon of Sir John Somerſet, was Thomas, who departed this life in 1671. Sir John Somerſet's third ſon was Charles, who was of Roſs in Herefordſhire, and wedded three wives, viz. Jane, daughter of Walter Thomas, of Swanſey in Glamorganſhire, Eſq; Catherine, daughter of Walter Baſkerville, and widow of George Sawyer, Eſqrs. and Alice, daughter of John Goodyer, of Burghop in Herefordſhire, Eſq; By the firſt he had no iſſue: but by the ſecond, he had two ſons, Charles and James, and as many daughters, viz. Mary-Johanna and Elizabeth; and by the third, a daughter Anne, who died in her infancy.

Lord William Somerſet, third ſon, died an infant. Lord Henry Somerſet, fourth ſon, died, at the age of twenty years, unmarried. Lord Thomas Somerſet, fifth ſon, lived at Rome, in the year 1676. Lord Charles Somerſet, ſixth ſon, was Governor of Ragland-caſtle, under his father, and having ſignalized himſelf in the cauſe of his injured Sovereign, died a Canon of Cambray in Flanders. Lords Frederick, Francis, and James, all died young; Lady Elizabeth Somerſet, eldeſt daughter, died an infant; Lady Anne, ſecond daughter, died a nun; Lady Mary, third daughter, died unmarried; and Lady Elizabeth, youngeſt daughter, was wedded to Francis Brown, Viſcount Montague.

Edward Somerſet, Lord Herbert, eldeſt ſon, ſucceeded his father, anno 1646, and attaching himſelf to the royal cauſe, was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of North-Wales, by King Charles I. who directed ſeveral letters to this Edward, in the life-time of his father, by the title of Earl of Glamorgan, which title he uſually bore; there now remaining in the Signet-office a bill under the Royal Sign Manual at Oxford (if a patent did not paſs the Great Seal thereupon) in order to his being created Earl of Glamorgan, and Baron Beaufort, of Caldecot-caſtle, in the county of Monmouth: and in 1644 he had the following remarkable and extraordinary commiſſion:—"Charles, by "the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and "Ireland,

[1] Mr. Edmundſon's Tables.

" Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To our right truſty, " and right well-beloved couſin, Edward Somerſet, alias Plan- " taginet, Lord Herbert, Baron Beaufort, of Caldicote, Griſ- " mond, Chepſtow, Ragland and Gower, Earl of Glamor- " gan, ſon and heir apparent of our entirely beloved couſin, " Henry Earl and Marquis of Worceſter, greeting. Having " had good and long experience of your proweſs, prudence, " and fidelity, do make choice, and by theſe nominate and ap- " point you, our right truſty, and right well-beloved couſin, " Edward Somerſet, &c. to be our Generaliſſimo of three ar- " mies, Engliſh, Iriſh, and Foreign, and Admiral of a fleet " at ſea, with power to recommend your Lieutenant-general " for our approbation, leaving all other officers to your own " election and denomination, and accordingly to receive their " commiſſion from you: willing and commanding them, " and every of them, you to obey, as their General, and you " to receive immediate orders from ourſelf only. And leſt, " through diſtance of place, we may be miſinformed, we will " and command you to reply unto us, if any of our orders " ſhould thwart, or hinder any of your deſigns for our ſervice. " And there being neceſſary great ſums of money, to the car- " rying on ſo chargeable an employment, which we have not " to furniſh you withal, we do by theſe empower you to con- " tract with any of our loving ſubjects of England, Ireland, " and Dominion of Wales, for wardſhips, cuſtoms, woods, " or any our rights and prerogatives; we by theſe obliging our " Selves, our Heirs and Succeſſors, to confirm and make good " the ſame accordingly. And for perſons of generoſity, for " whom Titles of Honour are moſt deſirable, we have entruſted " you with ſeveral patents under our Great Seal of England, " from a Marquis to a Baronet, which we give you full power " and authority to date, and diſpoſe of, without knowing our " further pleaſure; ſo great is our truſt and confidence in you, " as that, whatſoever you do contract for, or promiſe, we will " make good the ſame accordingly, from the date of this our " commiſſion forwards; which for the better ſatisfaction, we " give you leave to give them, or any of them, copies thereof, " atteſted under your hand and ſeal of arms. And for your " own encouragement, and in token of our gratitude, we " give and allow you henceforward ſuch fees, titles, prehemi- " nences, and privileges, as do, and may belong unto your " place and command above-mentioned, with promiſe of our " dear daughter Elizabeth to your ſon Plantaginet in marriage, " with three hundred thouſand pounds in dower or portion, " moſt part whereof we acknowledge ſpent and diſburſt by " your father and you, in our ſervice; and the title of " Duke of Somerſet to you and your heirs male for ever;

" and from henceforward to give the Garter to your Arms, " and at your pleaſure to put on the George and Blue Ribbon: " and for your greater honour, and in teſtimony of our reality, " we have with our own hand affixed our Great Seal of Eng- " land, unto theſe our commiſſion and letters, making them " patents. Witneſs our ſelf at Oxford, the firſt day of April, " in the twentieth year of our reign, and the year of our Lord " one thouſand ſix hundred and forty-four."

After the reſtoration of Charles II. the Houſe of Lords appointed a Committee (on Auguſt 18, 1660) to conſider of a patent granted to the Marquis of Worceſter in prejudice to the Peers: whereupon, the Committee, on Auguſt 23 following, reported, that the Marquis was willing to deliver it to his Majeſty; and accordingly the patent was delivered up on September 3, 1660.

His Lordſhip is found among the Honourable Mr. Walpole's account of royal and noble authors, as the author of two pieces, viz. *A Century of the Names and Scantlings of ſuch Inventions*, &c. and *Certamen Religioſum, or, a Conference between King Charles I. and Henry late Marquis of Worceſter, concerning Religion.* This noble Peer married, to his firſt wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Dormer, Knt. (who died in the life-time of his father, Robert Lord Dormer of Wenge) and ſiſter to Robert Earl of Carnarvon; and ſhe dying on May 30, 1665, was interred in the pariſh church of Ragland, leaving iſſue by him one ſon and two daughters; viz. Henry Lord Herbert, who ſucceeded him: Lady Anne, eldeſt daughter, firſt wife of Henry Howard, who was ſecond ſon to Henry Earl of Arundel, Surrey, and Norfolk, and Earl-Marſhal of England, and afterwards Earl of Norwich and Duke of Norfolk: Lady Elizabeth, ſecond and youngeſt daughter, who was married to William Herbert, Earl and Marquis of Powis, and died at St. Germains en Lay, in March, 1692. He, ſecondly, married Margaret, daughter to Henry Obrien, Earl of Thomond; by which Lady, who died on July 26, 1681, he had iſſue a daughter, Mary, who died in her infancy: and departing this life on April 3, 1667, was buried at Ragland.

His only ſon, Henry, ſucceeding him in his honours, was in the life-time of his father, on the reſtoration of Charles II. [k] conſtituted on July 30, 1660, Lord Lieutenant of Glouceſterſhire, and, in 1672, Lord Preſident of the Council in the principality of Wales; [l] and Lord Lieutenant of the ſeveral counties of Angleſey, Brecon, Cardigan, Caermarthen, Glamorgan, and Radnor, in South-Wales; and of Carnarvon, Denbigh, Merioneth, Montgomery, Flint, and Pembroke, in North-Wales. He was alſo, on Auguſt 22, appointed Lieu-

[k] Bill ſignat. 12 Car. II. [l] Ibid. 24 Car. II.

tenant of the county and city of Briſtol; and on Auguſt 27, the ſame year, ſworn of his Majeſty's Privy-Council; having, on June 3, the ſame year, been inſtalled one of the Knights of the Garter. *And having been eminently ſerviceable to that King* (as is expreſſed in the patent) *ſince his moſt happy reſtoration; in conſideration thereof, and of his moſt noble deſcent from King Edward the IIId, by John de Beaufort, eldeſt ſon of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaſter, by Catherine Swinford, his third wife,* he was by letters patent, dated on December 2, in 1682, the thirty-fourth year of his reign, advanced to the title of Duke of Beaufort, with remainder to the heirs male of his body. At the funeral of Charles II. on February 14, 1684-5, his Grace was one of the ſupporters to George Prince of Denmark, chief mourner: and, by James II. was made Lord Preſident of Wales, and alſo [m] Lord Lieutenant of all the above-mentioned counties; and at his coronation, on April 23, 1685, carried the Queen's crown. In 1685, he was made Colonel of the eleventh regiment of foot, then firſt raiſed, the command of which he reſigned that year to his eldeſt ſurviving ſon, Charles Marquis of Worceſter. He exerted himſelf againſt the Duke of Monmouth, in 1685; and in 1688, endeavoured to ſecure Briſtol againſt the adherents of the Prince of Orange: upon whoſe elevation to the throne, his Grace, refuſing to take the oaths, lived in retirement till his death, which happened on January 21, 1699, in the ſeventieth year of his age. He was buried in Beaufort-chapel, before-mentioned, having had, by Mary his wife, daughter of that valiant Nobleman, Arthur Lord Capel, widow of Henry Lord Beauchamp, five ſons, and three daughters; and the ſaid Mary, his Dutcheſs, died in the eighty-fifth year of her age, on January 7, 1714.

1. Henry, eldeſt ſon, who died young, was buried in Beaufort-chapel in Windſor-caſtle: 2. Charles, called at firſt Lord Herbert, but after his father was created Duke of Beaufort, ſtiled Marquis of Worceſter: 3. another Henry, 4. Edward, who both died young: and, 5. Arthur, who married Mary, daughter and ſole heir to Sir William Ruſſel, of Llanhern in Caermarthenſhire, Bart. and widow of Hugh Calveley-Cotton, Eſq; ſon and heir to Sir Robert Cotton, of Cumbermere in com. Ceſtr. Bart. had iſſue a ſon Edward, who died young; alſo three daughters; Mary, married to Algernon Greville, ſecond ſon of Fulk Greville, Lord Brook; Elizabeth, and Anne.

Lady Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter of Henry Duke of Beaufort, died an infant. Lady Mary, ſecond daughter, was married, in 1685, to James Duke of Ormond; and died in November, 1733. Lady Henrietta, third daughter, was married, in 1686,

[m] Bill ſignat. 1 Jac. II.

firſt

firſt to Henry Lord Obrien, who was eldeſt ſon, by the ſecond venter, of Henry Earl of Thomond, and died *vita patris*, having had iſſue by her, Henry Earl of Thomond; and after Lord Obrien's death, to Henry Earl of Suffolk and Bindon. Lady Anne Somerſet, fourth daughter, was married, on May 4, 1691, to Thomas Earl of Coventry.

Charles, before-mentioned Marquis of Worceſter, ſecond, but eldeſt ſurviving ſon of Henry, firſt Duke of Beaufort, was a Nobleman of great parts and learning, and died in the life-time of his father, in the thirty-eighth year of his age, unhappily leaping out of his coach, to avoid the danger he was expoſed to by the unrulineſs of the horſes running down a ſteep hill with him; whereby he received a violent bruiſe, and broke his thigh-bone, which brought him to his end three days after, viz. on July 13, 1698. His Lordſhip, in 1683, married Rebecca, daughter to Sir Joſiah Child, of Wanſtead in the county of Eſſex, Knt. and Bart. ſiſter to Richard Earl Tilney, and by her had iſſue three ſons, and three daughters. (She was afterwards the wife of John Lord Granville, but had no iſſue by him, and died on July 27, 1712.)

Henry, eldeſt ſon, ſucceeded his grandfather as ſecond Duke of Beaufort, anno 1699.

Lord Charles Somerſet, born anno 1689, died in his travels in Italy, on March 4, N. S. 1710, aged twenty-one; and left 500 l. towards building of Peckwater-quadrangle in Chriſt-church college in Oxford.

Lord John, third ſon, died on December 31, 1704, and was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey.

Lady Mary, and Lady Elizabeth, both died young.

Lady Henrietta, youngeſt daughter, born on Aug. 27, 1690, was married, in 1713, to Charles Duke of Grafton.

Which Henry, ſecond Duke of Beaufort, born on April 2, 1684, on Queen Anne's viſiting the Univerſity of Oxford, in 1702, and going thence to Bath, met her Majeſty not far from Cirenceſter, on Auguſt 29, accompanied by great numbers of Gentlemen, Clergy, and Freeholders; and conducted her to his ſeat at Badminton, where a very ſplendid entertainment was prepared by his Grace for her Majeſty, who was very well pleaſed with it, as well as Prince George of Denmark, her Royal Conſort.

On October 25, 1705 [n], he took his ſeat in the houſe of Peers; but did not go to Court till after the change of the Miniſtry, in 1710, when he told her Majeſty, that *he could then call her Queen* IN REALITY. On January 10, 1711-12, he was conſtituted Captain of the Band of Penſioners. His Grace was likewiſe appointed Lord Lieutenant of Hampſhire and Warden of New

[n] Journ. Dom. Procer.

Foreſt, Lord Lieutenant of Glouceſterſhire, and cities of Briſtol and Glouceſter, and counties of the ſame, on February 29 following, and was inſtalled Knight of the Garter at Windſor, on Auguſt 4, 1713. He was alſo one of her Majeſty's Privy-Council: and departing this life, on May 24, 1714, in the thirty-firſt year of his age, at Badminton, had ſepulture in the church there, where a monument is erected with the following inſcription:

The High, Puiſſant and moſt Noble PRINCE
HENRY SOMERSET,
Duke of BEAUFORT,
Marquis and Earl of WORCESTER,
Earl of GLAMORGAN,
Baron HERBERT, Lord of RAGLAND,
CHEPSTOW and GOWER,
Baron BEAUFORD of CALDECOT-CASTLE,
Lord Lieutenant of the Counties of
SOUTHAMTON and GLOUCESTER,
And CITY of BRISTOL,
And Cuſtos Rotulorum,
And Lord Warden of New Foreſt,
Captain of her Majeſty's Honourable Band of Gentlemen Penſioners,
And one of the Lords of her Majeſty's moſt Honourable Privy-Council,
And Knight of the moſt Noble Order of the Garter,
Died at BADMINTON, the 24th Day of May, 1714,
In the 30th Year of his Age.

His Grace married, in 1702, to his firſt wife, Lady Mary, only daughter of Charles Sackville, Earl of Dorſet, ſiſter to Lionel, now Duke of Dorſet, who died in childbed on June 18, 1705, leaving no ſurviving iſſue. He married, in 1706, to his ſecond wife, Lady Rachel, ſecond daughter and coheir to Wriotheſley-Baptiſt Noel, Earl of Gainſborough, by whom he had iſſue, Henry Marquis of Worceſter, born on March 26, 1707; Lord John, who died ſoon after he was born, in 1708; and Lord Charles-Noel Somerſet, born on September 12, 1709, of whom his mother died in childbed the next day. On September 14, 1711, he married, to his third wife, Lady Mary, youngeſt daughter to Peregrine Oſborne, Duke of Leeds; but by her had no iſſue; and, her Grace ſurviving, was ſecondly married to William Cochran, Earl of Dundonald, and died in Scotland, on February 4, 1722.

Henry,

Henry, his eldeſt ſon, third Duke of Beaufort, upon his return from his travels through France, Italy, &c. took his ſeat in the Houſe of Peers, ſoon after he came of age; and on June 16, 1729, was elected High-Steward of the city of Hereford. On the 28th of that month, in the ſame year, he wedded Frances, only child and heir of Sir James Scudamore, of Home-Lacy in Herefordſhire, Bart. and Viſcount Scudamore in the kingdom of Ireland (who died on December 12, 1716) by Frances his wife (who died on May 3, 1729, aged forty-four) only daughter of Simon Lord Digby, in the ſaid kingdom. Next year an act paſſed in Parliament, authorizing the Duke and Dutcheſs, and their children, to take and uſe the additional ſurname and arms of Scudamore, purſuant to a ſettlement made by the Dutcheſs's ſaid father: but his Grace having fully proved the incontinence of his conſort, obtained a divorce on March 2, 1743-4; and he was enabled, by act of Parliament, to marry again; but though he had no heirs of his own body, died without taking any advantage of that ſtatute, at Bath, on Febr. 24, 1745-6, in the thirty-ninth year of his age; and his repudiated Lady, after his death, was married to Charles Fitz-Roy, Eſq; natural ſon to the firſt Duke of Grafton, Groom-Porter, and Member for Hereford, by whom ſhe left a daughter, heir to the Scudamore eſtate. His Grace was interred at Badminton, juſtly reſpected for his unbiaſſed conduct in the Senate, and munificence in private life. His ſucceſſor in dignity and eſtate, was his brother, aforeſaid,

Lord Charles-Noel Somerſet, who in July, 1730, was created Doctor of Laws by the Univerſity of Oxford, in conſideration of his diſtinguiſhed zeal for both Univerſities, and, in 1731, was choſe one of the Knights of the Shire for the county of Monmouth, on the deceaſe of Sir William Morgan, Knight of the Bath: alſo in the ſucceeding Parliament, which ſat firſt on buſineſs on January 23, 1735, was choſe for the town of Monmouth; and was elected for the ſame place in that ſummoned to meet on June 25, 1741, which was ſitting when the honours fell to his Grace by the deceaſe of his brother. This noble Duke, who diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the Senate, both whilſt a Commoner and Peer, by a ſteady oppoſition to unconſtitutional and corrupt meaſures, and endeared himſelf to mankind by his ſocial virtues, departed this life on October 28, 1756, in the forty-ſeventh year of his age, and was buried at Badminton. His Grace, on May 1, 1740, married Elizabeth, daughter of John Berkeley, of Stoke-Gifford in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; and ſiſter of Norborne Lord Botetourt, by whom he had iſſue Henry, now Duke of Beaufort, born in Brook-Street, Groſvenor-Square, on October 16, 1744, and five daughters, viz. Lady Anne, married, on September 13,

1759, to Charles Earl of Northampton (of whom in his Lordſhip's pedigree) Lady Elizabeth, who departed this life on May 10, 1760: Lady Rachael, who died an infant: Lady Henrietta, born in 1747-8: and Lady Mary-Iſabella, born on Auguſt 3, 1756.

His Grace's only ſon, Henry, fifth Duke of Beaufort, ſeventh Marquis and eleventh Earl of Worceſter, the thirteenth in paternal deſcent from John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaſter, &c. fourth ſon of King Edward III. and father of King Henry IV. having accompliſhed his ſtudies at Oxford (where he received the degree of LL. D. for his proficience in literature, as well as the hopeful appearance of his inheriting the patriotic qualities of his illuſtrious anceſtors, together with their titles) embarked at Dover, on March 15, 1764, for his travels in foreign parts, for the further capacitating himſelf for the important duties of his high ſtation.

TITLES.] Henry Somerſet, Duke of Beaufort, Marquis and Earl of Worceſter, Earl of Glamorgan, Viſcount Groſmont, Baron Herbert, Lord of Ragland, Chepſtow and Gower, as alſo Baron Beaufort of Caldecot-caſtle, all in the county of Monmouth.

CREATIONS.] Baron, Jure Uxoris, and by letters patent, Nov. 26, 1506, 22 Henry VII. originally by deſcent and writ of ſummons to Parliament, July 26, 1461, 1 Edw. IV. Earl, Feb. 2, 1513-14, 5 Hen. VIII. Marquis, Nov. 2, 1642, 18 Car. I. and Duke of Beaufort, Dec. 2, 1682, 34 Car. II.

ARMS.] Quarterly, France and England, within a Bordure compone, Argent and Azure: anciently, Or, on a Feſs bordered gabone (or compone) Argent and Azure, France and England, quarterly.

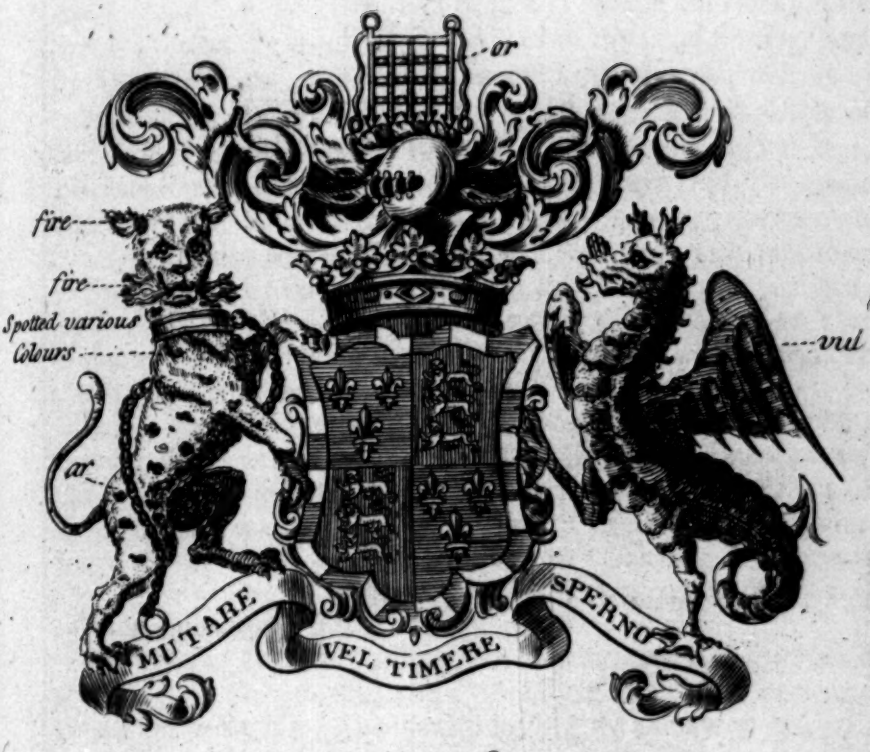
CREST.] On a Wreath, a Portcullis, Or, nailed Azure, Chains pendant thereto of the firſt, which the family bears in memory of John of Gaunt's caſtle of Beaufort, before-mentioned. Antiently the Creſt was a Panther, Argent, diverſly ſpotted, and gorged with a ducal coronet, Or.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide a Panther, Argent, ſpotted with various Colours, Fire iſſuing out of his mouth and ears proper, gorged with a Collar, and Chain pendant, Or: on the ſiniſter, a Wyverne, Vert, holding in his mouth a Siniſter hand coupé at the wriſt proper.

MOTTO.] MUTARE VEL TIMERE SPERNO.

CHIEF SEATS.] At Badminton in the county of Glouceſter, three miles from Sudbury, three from Wickware, fifteen from Glouceſter, and 103 from London; at Chepſtow-caſtle, in the county of Monmouth; at Troy-houſe, in the ſame county; and at Nether-Haven, five miles from Ambreſbury in Wilts.

BEAU-



Somerset Duke of Beaufort 10

BEAUCLERK, Duke of St. Alban's.

HIS Grace, Charles Duke of St. Alban's, was a natural ſon of Charles II. (begotten on Mrs. Eleanor Gwin) on whom his Majeſty did confer the ſurname of Beauclerk. He was born in Lincoln's Inn-Fields, on May 8, 1670, and by letters patent, dated at Weſtminſter, on Dec. 27, 28 Car. II.[a] was advanced to the ſtate and degree of Baron of Heddington in com. Oxon. as alſo Earl of Burford in the ſame county, and to the heirs male of his body, with remainder, for default of ſuch iſſue, to James, likewiſe ſurnamed Beauclerk (another of the natural ſons of the ſaid King by the before-mentioned Mrs. Eleanor Gwin) and the heirs male of his body; which James died in France about Michaelmas, in the year 1680, unmarried. The ſaid Charles was alſo further advanced to the dignity of Duke of St. Alban's, by other letters patent, dated on Jan. 10, 1683-4, 35 Car. II. and was conſtituted Regiſter of the High-Court of Chancery, as alſo Maſter-Falconer of England, with remainder to the heirs male of his body.

In the reign of James II. his Grace had a regiment of horſe; which[b] being under the command of his Lieutenant-Colonel Langſton, was among the firſt that went over to the Prince of Orange, on his landing in the Weſt. His Grace at that time was with the Emperor's army in Hungary, having been at the ſiege of Belgrade, wherein he gained great honour in the general aſſault, on September 6, 1688.

His Grace, being of full age, was introduced into the Houſe of Peers, on Septem. 26, 1692[c]; and the year after made the campaign under King William, arriving in the camp at Park, near Louvain, in June, 1693. Returning with his Majeſty into England, he was ſworn Captain of the Band of Penſioners, on November 30, 1693, in the place of the Lord Lovelace, deceaſed; and ſerved in the campaign of 1695.

In 1697, the King of France acquainting his Majeſty with the Duke of Burgundy's marriage, he was pleaſed at Kenſington, on December 21, to appoint his Grace, then one of the Lords of the Bedchamber, to return the compliment of the French King and the Dauphin.

Queen Anne continued his Grace Captain of the Band of Penſioners, and at the head of them he cloſed the proceſſion,

[a] Bill ſignat, 28 Car. II.
[b] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii, p. 528.
[c] Journal Dom. Procer.

on

on September 7, 1704, on her Majeſty's going to St. Paul's, on the thankſgiving-day for the glorious victory obtained at Blenheim, or Hockſtet, on Auguſt 13, N. S. that year. On the change of the Miniſtry, in 1710, his Grace reſigned his place of Captain of the Band of Penſioners; and was ſucceeded therein by Henry Duke of Beaufort: but George I. on his acceſſion to the throne, re-inſtated him in that poſt; and conſtituted him, on Novem. 12, 1714, Lord Lieutenant, and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Berkſhire. On March 31, 1718, he was elected one of the Knights Companions of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and inſtalled at Windſor, on April 30 following.

His Grace departed this life in the fifty-ſixth year of his age, on May 11, 1726; at which time, beſides the offices beforementioned, he enjoyed thoſe of High-Steward of Windſor and Oakingham, in Berkſhire.

His Grace had a ſtately and handſome ſeat at Windſor, which he greatly improved with beautiful gardens extending to the Park-wall, and opening a view into the high ſtreet of the town. On Tueſday, April 13, 1694, he married the Lady Diana Vere, who was daughter and, at length, ſole heir of Aubrey de Vere, the twentieth and laſt Earl of Oxford, of that noble family, whereof Alberick, their direct anceſtor, is mentioned in Doomſday-book to be an Earl in the reign of King Edward the Confeſſor. She was firſt Lady of the Bedchamber, and Lady of the Stole, to Queen Caroline, when Princeſs of Wales. His Grace by her (who ſurvived him till January 15, 1741-2) left eight ſons.

1. Charles, of whom I ſhall hereafter treat, as ſecond Duke of St. Alban's.

2. Lord William Beauclerk, born on May 22, 1698. He was Captain of a troop in the Royal Regiment of Horſe-guards, and was a Member in two Parliaments for Chicheſter. On November 15, 1728, he was conſtituted Vice-chamberlain of her Majeſty's Houſhold; and died at the Bath on February 23, 1732-3. In 1725, he married Charlotte, daughter and coheir of Sir John Werden, of Cholmeſton in Cheſhire, and Layland in Lancaſhire, and Hollyport in Berkſhire, Bart. and by her (who died on June 17, 1745) left two ſons, William, who died at Eton-ſchool; and Charles Beauclerk, who, in March 1739-40, was appointed one of the Pages of Honour to the Duke of Cumberland: and after ſeveral gradations in the army, promoted, on October 16, 1761, to the command of the 107th regiment of foot. His Lordſhip had alſo two daughters, Charlotte and Caroline. Charlotte, the eldeſt, is married to John Drummond, Eſq; ſon of Andrew Drummond, Eſq; Banker at Charing Croſs, Weſtminſter, and brother to the Right Honourable William Drummond, fourth Viſcount Strathallan, and by him hath

hath iſſue, one ſon, George, and two daughters, Charlotte and Diana.

3. Lord Vere Beauclerk, born on July 14, 1699, now Lord Vere of Hanworth, of whom I ſhall diſtinctly treat.

4. Lord Henry, born on Auguſt 11, 1701, who diſtinguiſhed himſelf at the ſiege of Gibraltar as a volunteer under the Earl of Portmore, in 1727, and after being Captain of a company, with the rank of Lieutenant-colonel in the firſt regiment of foot-guards, was, on March 19, 1742-3, conſtituted Colonel of the fifty-ninth regiment of foot, and of the thirty-firſt on April 25, 1745. He was firſt elected for Plymouth, on a vacancy, in 1740, and afterwards ſerved for Thetford in Norfolk till his death, on January 6, 1761. He married, in December, 1738, Mary, ſiſter and heir of Nevil Lord Lovelace, by whom he had a ſon George, who died an infant; and a ſon Henry, and ſeveral daughters.

5. Lord Sidney, born on February 27, 1702, whom Richard Topham, of Windſor, Eſq; made heir to his eſtate, was one of the Members of Parliament for New Windſor in Berkſhire. In April, 1740, his Lordſhip was declared Vice-chamberlain of the Houſhold to his Majeſty, and ſworn of his moſt Honourable Privy-Council, on May 1 following. On December 9, 1736, he was married to Mary, daughter of Thomas Norris, of Speek in com. Pal. Lancaſt. Eſq; by whom he left iſſue one ſon, named Topham, born in December, 1739. He died Member of Parliament for Windſor, on November 23, 1744.

6. Lord George, born on December 26, 1704, made Captain of a company in the firſt regiment of foot-guards, on September, 1736, and Aid de Camp to his late Majeſty, on June 15, 1745. On December 5, 1747, he was made Colonel of a marine regiment, and on March 15, 1748, ſucceeded to the command of the nineteenth regiment of foot. On December 4, 1753, his Lordſhip was conſtituted Governor of Landguard-fort, on the coaſt of Suffolk, and appointed Major-general on March 18, 1755. On January 25, 1758, he was promoted to the rank of Lieutenant-general, and has been, for ſome years, Commander in Chief of the forces in Scotland.

7. Lord James, born in 1709, who, in February, 1732-3, was made a Prebendary of Windſor, and Canon, on March 4, 1737-8: and, in 1745, promoted to the ſee of Hereford.

8. Lord Aubrey, born in 1711, who being alſo brought up to the ſea-ſervice, was Captain of ſeveral of his Majeſty's ſhips, and loſt his life, after a very noble behaviour in the attack of the harbour of Carthagena, on March 24, 1740-41.

A monument is erected to his memory in Weſtminſter-abbey.

He

He married ——— daughter of Sir Henry Newton, Knt. and widow of Colonel Francis Alexander; but had no iſſue.

Charles, ſecond Duke of St. Alban's, who was born on April 6, 1696, and during his being a Commoner, and ſtiled Earl of Burford, was firſt elected a Member for the borough of Bodmin, on the deceaſe of the honourable Francis Robartes, Eſq; in the firſt Parliament called by George I. and in the Parliament ſummoned to meet on May 10, 1722, was choſen for the borough of New Windſor. In the year 1725, his Grace was one of thoſe perſons, who, in conſideration of their great merits, were choſen Knights Companions of the moſt honourable Order of the Bath. In 1726, he ſucceeded his father in his honours; and on February 22 following, was appointed Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum for the county of Berks; as he was on September 14, 1727, in the firſt year of George II. and on October 11 following, aſſiſting at his Majeſty's coronation, carried the Queen's crown. In May, 1730, his Grace was made Governor of Windſor-caſtle, and Warden of the foreſt of Windſor, and was one of the Lords of his Majeſty's Bedchamber. On March 20, 1740-1, his Grace was elected a Knight of the Garter, and inſtalled, at Windſor, on April 21 following.

On December 13, 1722, he married Lucy, daughter and coheir of Sir John Werden, of Hollyport in Berkſhire, Bart. and by her, who died on November 12, 1752, had iſſue one ſon, George, now Duke of St. Alban's, and one daughter, Lady Diana, wedded on February 2, 1761, to the Honourable and Reverend Shute Barrington, Canon of Chriſt's Church, Oxford, one of the King's Chaplains in Ordinary, and brother to William-Wildman Barrington, Viſcount Barrington in Ireland. His Grace departed this life on Saturday, July 27, 1751, in the fifty-ſixth year of his age, at his houſe in St. James's Place, and was ſucceeded in his honours and eſtate by his ſaid only ſon George.

Which George, now Duke of St. Alban's, was born on June 25, 1730, and on December 15, 1751, was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Berkſhire. His Grace is High-Steward of the corporation of Windſor, but reſigned the Lieutenancy, &c. of Berkſhire to his uncle, Lord Vere. In 1754, he married Jane, ſole daughter and heir of Sir Walter Roberts, of Glaſſenbury, in the pariſh of Cranbrook, Kent, Bart. by his wife Elizabeth, ſole daughter and heir of William Slaughter, of the city of Rocheſter, Eſq; but has no iſſue by her.

TITLES.] George Beauclerk, Duke of St. Alban's, Earl of Burford, and Baron of Heddington, Hereditary Grand Falconer of England, and Hereditary Regiſter of the Court of Chancery.

CREA-

Beauclerck Duke of S.t Albans.

CREATIONS.] Baron of Heddington, and Earl of Burford, in com. Oxon. on December 27, 1676, 28 Car. II. and Duke of St. Alban's, in com. Hertford, in January 10, 1683-4, 35 Car. II.

ARMS.] The arms of King Charles II. with a Batoon ſiniſter, Gules, charged with three Roſes, Argent, ſeeded and barbed proper.

CREST.] On a Chapeau, Gules, turned up, Ermine, a Lion paſſant, guardant, Or, crowned with a ducal Coronet, party per pale, Argent and Gules, and gorged with a Collar, Gules, charged with three Roſes, Argent, ſeeded and barbed proper.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide, an Antelope, Argent, gorged as the Creſt, armed and unguled, Or: on the ſiniſter, a Grey-hound, Argent, gorged and unguled, as the other.

MOTTO.] AUSPICIUM MELIORIS ÆVI.

CHIEF SEAT.] At Windſor.

POWLETT,

POWLETT, Duke of Bolton.

THIS name, according to antient cuſtom, has been variouſly wrote, as Paulet, Powlet, Pawlet, Poulet, &c. Hercules, Lord of Tournon in Picardy [a], came into England with Jeffery Plantagenet, Earl of Anjou, third ſon of Henry II. and having, among other eſtates, the lordſhip of Paulet in Somerſetſhire, now in the poſſeſſion of the Earl of Shafteſbury, aſſumed his ſurname from that place. And his ſon, Sir William de Paulet, reſiding at Leigh in Devonſhire [b], gave to it the denomination of Leigh-Paulet, and dying in 1242, 27 Henry III. was ſucceeded by Sir William his ſon and heir, who was alſo wrote of Leigh-Paulet, and died in 1281, 10 Edward I. leaving iſſue Sir William Paulet, who died in 1314, 8 Edw. II. and was ſucceeded by Sir Walter Paulet, of Rode in com. Somerſet, who departed this life, A. D. 1322. The next, mentioned in the ſucceſſion, is Sir William Paulet of Rode (but omitted by ſome ganealogiſts) whoſe ſucceſſor was John Paulet, of Paulet, and Gotehurſt in Somerſetſhire.

Which John had the honour of Knighthood conferred on him, and died in 1356, 30 Edward III. having made an addition to his eſtate by marriage with Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Thomas Reyney, of Rowd in Wiltſhire, and Shyrſton in Somerſetſhire. She was ſuch a conſiderable heireſs [c], that Sir John Paulet, her ſon, ſealed with the arms of Reyney in 15 Rich. II.

In 4 Rich. II. the laſt-mentioned Sir John Paulet was in that expedition under Thomas Plantagenet, Earl of Buckingham [d], Duke of Glouceſter, and youngeſt ſon of Edward III. in aid of the Duke of Britany againſt the French, and had the honour of Knighthood conferred on him in the camp before St. Omer's; and afterwards the ſame honour was conferred on his ſon, Sir Thomas Paulet [e], when the army the ſame year came before Trois.

This Sir John Paulet married Elizabeth, daughter and heir of William Creedy, of Creedy in com. Devon, and left iſſue two ſons, Sir Thomas Paulet, from whom the preſent Earl Paulet is deſcended; and William; alſo a daughter, Dioniſia, wife of John Popham, of Huntworth, Eſq; Which William Paulet, ſecond ſon of Sir John Paulet, being called to the degree of Serjeant at Law in 3 Henry V. was wrote of Melcomb-

[a] Ex Collect. T. Miller & Stebbing, Somerſ. fecial. [b] MS. de Famil. Nob. in Bibl. Lambeth. [c] MS. in Bibl. Lamb. præd. [d] Hollinſhed, Chron. vol. ii. p. 426. [e] Ibid.

Paulet

Paulet in Somerſetſhire. And departing this life on Auguſt 8, 1435, 14 Henry VI. had ſepulture by Eleanor his wife, who died in 1413, 1 Henry V. and was buried at Melcomb-Paulet. She was eldeſt daughter of Philip de la Mere, of Noney-caſtle in Somerſetſhire, and Fiſherton de la Mere in Wilts, and ſiſter[f] and heir to Sir Elias de la Mere of the ſame places, whereunto ſucceeded Sir John Paulet their ſon and heir.

Which Sir John alſo added greatly to his eſtate by marriage with Conſtance, ſecond daughter and coheir of Hugh, only ſon and heir of Sir Thomas Poynings, Lord St. John of Baſing, who died in the life-time of his father, in 5 Henry VI. And Sir Thomas Poynings, Lord St. John, dying[g] on March 7, 1428-9, 7 Henry VI. the ſaid Conſtance was found to be one of his coheirs, and then of the age of twenty years. And in 8 Hen. VI. Sir John Paulet had[h] livery of that purparty (or ſhare) of thoſe lands which were of the inheritance of the ſaid Conſtance his wife, and by her left iſſue John.

Which John did likewiſe not a little augment his eſtate, by his marriage with Eleanor, daughter and coheir to Robert Roos, of Gedney, Skelton, and Irby in com. Linc. Eſq; and by his laſt will and teſtament, bearing date December 1, 1470, ordered his body to be buried in the church of the monaſtery of Boxholme. He had iſſue a daughter, Margaret, wife of Sir Amias Paulet, of Hinton St. George in com. Somerſet, and a ſon of his own name, who was knighted.

Which Sir John Paulet was one of the Commanders of the army[i], that ſubdued the Corniſh men at Blackheath, on June 22, 1497, 12 Hen. VII. under the conduct of James Lord Audley; and was created one of the Knights of the Bath, at the marriage of Prince Arthur, on November 14, 1501, 17 Henry VII. By his wife Elizabeth (called Alice by Dugdale) daughter to Sir William Paulet of Hinton St. George, he had iſſue four ſons: 1. Sir William his heir: 2. Thomas, who died without iſſue: 3. Sir George Paulet; and, 4. Richard Paulet. Sir John Paulet had alſo two daughters, viz. Eleanor, married to Sir William Gifford, of Sekil, Knt. and Catherine, fourth wife of Sir William Fermor, of Summerton in the county of Oxford, Knt.

A miſtake ſee 2. Dugd. Bar. 376.

Sir George Paulet, third ſon of Sir John Paulet, beforementioned, had three wives, viz. 1. Jane, daughter of Peter Larke, of Thetford in the county of Norfolk, Eſq; 2. Elizabeth[k], daughter of William, ſecond Lord Windſor, and widow of Henry Sands, Eſq; eldeſt ſon of Thomas Lord Sands;

[f] Clauſ. 8 Hen. VI. m. 2. [g] Eſch. 7 Hen. VI. n. 69. [h] Rot. Fin. 8 Hen. VI. m. 18. [i] Polyd. Virg. p. 600.

[k] If, according to other accounts, ſhe was married, thirdly, to Richard Scrope, of Hamilden in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; ſhe muſt have been Sir George's third wife.

and,

and, 3. Barbara, daughter of Sir John Hamden, and widow of Henry Smith, Eſq; By the firſt Lady, Sir George had a ſon, William Paulet, who, by Elizabeth his wife, daughter of Henry Smith, Eſq; and Barbara, above-mentioued, was father of another William Paulet, who wedded Elizabeth, daughter and coheir of Henry Codingham, Eſq; and by her had Elizabeth, his only child and heir, married to Oliver St. John, Lord St. John of Bletſhoe, afterwards created Earl of Bolingbroke. The iſſue of Sir George, by his ſecond Lady, were two ſons, George Paulet, and Giles Paulet; and two daughters, Catherine, who died a nun, and Mary, the wfe of —— York, Eſq; Giles Paulet, the youngeſt ſon of the ſecond marriage, was of Swanthorp, and died without iſſue by his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Williams, of Stoure in the county of Devon. George Paulet, the eldeſt ſon of the ſecond venter, was ſeated at Crundall, and having eſpouſed Jane, daughter of —— Kyne, and heir of John Kyne, of Lewes in Suſſex, Eſq; by her had four ſons and three daughters, viz. Thomas Paulet; William Paulet; Andrew Paulet; George Paulet; Frances, wedded to Richard Maſcal, of Maling in Suſſex, Eſq; Dorothy Paulet, and Anne Paulet. Sir George Paulet's children by Barbara, his third wife, were, 1. Hamden Paulet, who, by his firſt ſpouſe, Mary, daughter of John Mitchell, had no iſſue; but by his ſecond, Anne, daughter and coheir of Sir John Hadnol, of the county of Cornwall, Knt. had a daughter, Elizabeth, his heir, married to Francis Dowſe, of Broughton in Hampſhire, Eſq; 2. Mabel, ſucceſſively wedded to Thomas Chandler, and Roger Corham; and, 3. Elizabeth, who had alſo two huſbands, viz. —— Reniger, and Walter Lambert.

Richard Paulet, fourth and youngeſt ſon of Sir John Paulet, and his wife Elizabeth Paulet, married Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Peter Coudrey, of Harriot (or Harriard) in the county of Southampton, Eſq; and by her had a ſon, John Paulet, who by his wife Catherine, daughter and heir of Richard Andrews, of Trefolk in Hampſhire, was father of one ſon and four daughters, viz. Richard; Anne, wedded to Nicholas Sutton, Gent. Jane, firſt married to Arthur Malhurſt, and ſecondly to George Foukes, Eſq; Elizabeth, the wife of Philip Morgan, of Hammoys in the county of Surry; and Elizabeth, the ſpouſe of James Moore, Eſq; The ſaid Richard, only ſon of John Paulet and his wife Catherine Andrews, wedded Anne, daughter of Sir Henry Wallop, of Farley-Wallop in Hampſhire, Knt. anceſtor to the Earl of Portſmouth, and by her had two daughters, his coheirs, whereof Agnes, the eldeſt, was married to John Jarves, or Jervois, of Chilmarſh in Shropſhire, anceſtor to —— Jervois, of Harriot, Eſq; and Lucy, the youngeſt, was wedded to Sir Thomas Jarves, but died without iſſue.

Sir

Sir William, the eldeſt ſon and heir of Sir John Paulet and Elizabeth Paulet, being a perſon ſingularly accompliſhed with learning, and excellent parts, arrived by ſundry ſteps to ſeveral degrees of high advancement, both in honours and eſtate [l]. For in 24 Henry VIII. (being then a Knight) he was Comptroller of the King's Houſhold; and in 25 Henry VIII. [m] he was ſent with the Duke of Norfolk, to attend Francis I. King of France, unto his intended interview with the Pope at Marſeilles.

In 29 Henry VIII. [n] he was made Treaſurer of the King's Houſhold; and the next enſuing year, by letters patent, bearing date 9 Martii, 1538-9, advanced to the dignity of a Baron of this realm [o], by the title of Lord St. John of Baſing. And in 1539, 31 Henry VIII. [p] having ſummons to Parliament, he took his place there on the 28th of April.

In 32 Henry VIII. [q] he was made Maſter of the Wards, which office was confirmed to him in 34 Henry VIII. [r] with the fee of 200 l. *per annum*, he being the firſt on whom it was beſtowed, after the eſtabliſhment of that Court by authority of Parliament; and the year following, on April 23, was elected [s] a Knight Companion of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and inſtalled on May 5 following.

In 36 Henry VIII. he accompanied the King at the taking of Boulogne, and was one of the King's Executors, and one of the Council to Prince Edward, afterwards King Edward VI. in the firſt of whoſe reign [t] he had the Cuſtody of the Great Seal (being then Lord Great-Maſter of the Houſhold) till Nov. 30, that the Lord Rich was made Lord Chancellor.

On January 19, 1549-50, 3 Edward VI. [u] he was created Earl of Wiltſhire; in the fourth [x], made Lord High-Treaſurer of England; and [y] on October 12, 1551, created Marquis of Wincheſter; in which year, on December 1, he alſo ſat as [z] Lord High-Steward upon the trial of Edward Seymour, Duke of Somerſet.

By his councils it was, in a great meaſure, that the Duke of Northumberland's deſign in ſetting the Lady Jane Grey on the Throne was prevented; for which the Queens, Mary and Elizabeth, continued him in the Treaſurer's Office, which he enjoyed for thirty years; and being aſked, how he preſerved himſelf in that place through ſo many changes of government? he anſwered, *By being a willow, and not an oak.*

He built the beautiful and magnificent ſeat, called Baſing, in the county of Southampton; and living till he had fully accom-

[l] Pat. 24 Henry VIII. p. 2. [m] Herbert, Hiſt. Henry VIII. p. 352. [n] Ibid. p. 430. [o] Pat. 30 Henry VIII. p. 4. m. 1. [p] Journal of Parl. [q] Pat. 32 Henry VIII. p. 8. [r] Pat. 34 Henry VIII. p. 2. [s] Anſtis's Regiſt. vol. i. p. 426. [t] Pat. 1 Edward VI. p. 4. [u] Pat. 3 Edward VI. p. 7. [x] Pat. 4 Edward VI. p. 2. [y] Pat. 5 Edward VI. p. 4. [z] Hayward's Hiſt. Edw. VI. p. 6 and 7.

pliſhed the age of ninety and ſeven years, ſaw 103 perſons that were deſcended from him, as Camden, in his Hiſtory of Queen Elizabeth, has obſerved; and that he died in his place of Lord High-Treaſurer of England, at Baſing aforeſaid, on March 10, 1571-2.

His ſecond wife was Winifrede, daughter of Sir John Bruges, Lord Mayor of London, and widow of Sir Robert Sackville, Knt. and by her, who died at Chertſey, in 1585, and was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey, 1586, he had no iſſue: but by his firſt wife Elizabeth, daughter to Sir William Capel, Knt. anceſtor to the preſent Earl of Eſſex, he had four ſons and four daughters, of which the Lady Alice was married to Richard Stowell, of Cotherſton in com. Somerſet, Eſq; Lady Margaret, to Sir William Berkeley, Knt. Lady Margery, to Sir Richard Waller, of Oldſtoke, Hants, Knt. and Eleanor, to Sir Richard Peckſall, Knt. John, the eldeſt ſon, ſucceeded his father, as Marquis of Wincheſter.

Lord Thomas Poulet, of Coſſington in the county of Somerſet, ſecond ſon, married Mary, daughter and heir of Thomas Moore, of Melplaſh in Dorſetſhire, and by her had, 1. George Poulet, who by Alice his wife, daughter of Thomas Pacy (or Pleſey) of Holberry in Hants, was father of Rachael, married to Philip de Carteret, Lord of St. Owen's and Sark, anceſtor to the Earl Granville: 2. Chriſtopher, who wedded ſucceſſively two wives, viz. —— daughter of Chriſtopher Sacheverelle, and Margaret, daughter of ——— Windham: 3. Elizabeth, the wife of Richard Dowſe, of Morecourt in Wiltſhire: 4. Margaret, married to Robert Frampton of Dorſetſhire: 5. Barbara, ſucceſſively wedded to Lodowick Stukeley and Thomas Melhurſt: 6. Philippa, married to Robert Bond, of Buckland: 7. Mary, the wife of —— Southton, of Dorſetſhire.

Lord Chidieok Poulet, of Wade in Hampſhire, was Governor of the town and caſtle of Portſmouth [a], in the reigns of Queen Mary and Queen Elizabeth, and married two wives, viz. Anne, daughter of Sir Thomas White, of South-Warnbourne in Hampſhire, and Frances, daughter of Sir Edward Nevil, and widow of Sir Edward Walgrave. By the firſt, he had Thomas Poulet, of Eſſex. By the latter, he had William Poulet, who wedded Dowſabel, daughter of James Paget, Eſq; and by her was father of, 1. William Poulet, of Paltons, who by his wife Frances, daughter of —— St. Barb, of Broadlands in Hampſhire, was father of another William Poulet, of Poltons, who by his wife Deborah, daughter of —— Dogget, had Richard Poulet, of Gray's Inn; Thomas Poulet, and two daughters, Frances and Catherine: 2. Chidieok Poulet: 3. Thomas Poulet: 4. Edward Poulet: 5. John Poulet: 6. Eliza-

[a] Pat. 1 Mary, p. 11.

beth,

beth, married to —— Tyne: 7. Dowſabel: and, 8. Chatherine. Lord Chidieok Poulet had alſo, by his ſecond wife, two daughters, viz. Catherine, eſpouſed to Thomas Burgoyne, of the county of Cambridge, Eſq; and Suſan, wedded to Sir John Seymour, of Marvel, Knt.

Lord Giles Poulet, of Cockels in Wiltſhire, fourth ſon, married Mary, daughter and coheir of Nicholas Trapps, of London, Eſq; and by her had one ſon William, who wedded Elizabeth, daughter of William Webb, ſecond ſon of William Webb, of New Sarum; and two daughters, viz. Elizabeth, ſucceſſively married to Weſton Brown, of Eſſex, Eſq; and John Pollard, of Oxfordſhire, Eſq; and Anne, the wife of Francis Harris, of Ichen, Eſq; The ſaid William was anceſtor to Bernard Poulet, Eſq; whoſe daughter and heir, Elizabeth, was married to Thomas Holbeech, of Filongly in com. Warwick, Eſq; whoſe heir by her, Mary, was married to Edward Lord Leigh, of Stoneley.

The eldeſt ſon, John, ſecond Marquis of Wincheſter, was ſummoned to Parliament in the life-time of his father, as Lord St. John [b], and by that title was one of the Peers who, on Jan. 16, 1571-2, 14th of Elizabeth, ſat on the trial of Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk. And [c] by his laſt will, bearing date in 18 Elizabeth, ordered his body to be buried in the pariſh-church of Baſing, in the ſepulchre there ordained by his father for himſelf and his poſterity; appointed a thouſand pounds to be beſtowed on the charge of his funeral. And departing [d] this life at Chelſea in com. Midd. on November 4, 1576, 18 Eliz. was accordingly buried at Baſing.

He married, firſt, Elizabeth, one of the daughters and coheirs to Robert Willoughby, Lord Broke, and by her had four ſons and two daughters; Lady Mary, married to Henry Lord Cromwell, Baron of Oakham; and Lady Elizabeth, firſt to Sir William Courtenay, of Powderham-caſtle in com. Devon, Knt. and afterwards to Sir Henry Oughtred, Knt. The ſecond wife was Elizabeth, the widow of Sir Henry Oughtred, and Gregory Lord Cromwell; and ſecond daughter of Sir John Seymour, father to Edward Duke of Somerſet; but he had no iſſue by her.

The ſons were William, George, Richard, and Thomas. George, the ſecond, was knighted, and was ſtiled of Crundal in com. Hants. He was Governor of Londonderry [e], and murdered there, in May, 1608, by the Iriſh, then exciting freſh commotions.

William, the eldeſt ſon, ſucceeded as third Marquis of Wincheſter, &c. having been, in his father's life-time, ſummoned

[b] Camden's Annals of Queen Elizabeth.
[c] Regiſt. Daughtry, qu. 48.
[d] Ex Collect. St. Loo Kniveton, Arm.
[e] Cox's Hiſtory of Ireland.

to Parliament in 17 Elizabeth, by the title of Lord St. John of Baſing: and departing this life [f] on November 24, 1598, 41 Eliz. was buried at Baſing. He took to wife Anne, daughter of William Lord Howard of Effingham, and by her had iſſue William Powlet, fourth Marquis of Wincheſter, and three daughters. Lady Anne, the eldeſt, was married to Sir Thomas Dennis, of Bickton in com. Devon, Knt. by whom he had three daughters and coheirs, Anne, wife to Sir Henry Rolle, of Stephenſtone, Knt. and Margaret, of Sir Arthur Manwaring, of Ightfield in com. Salop, Knt. The ſecond daughter, Lady Catherine, was married to Sir Giles Wroughton, Knt. and Lady Elizabeth, third daughter, to Sir Edward Hobby, Knt.

William, who ſucceeded as fourth Marquis of Wincheſter, having married Lucy, daughter to Sir Thomas Cecil, Earl of Exeter, by her had ſix ſons, William, Thomas, John, Henry, Charles, and Edward; of which, William married Mary, daughter of Anthony Brown, Viſcount Montague, but died in his father's life-time without iſſue, in Auguſt, 1621; and Thomas, the ſecond ſon, dying unmarried, John, the third ſon, became fifth Marquis of Wincheſter, and on February 4, 1628, ſucceeded his father. But none of the other three ſons left iſſue, except Henry, who was created Knight of the Bath at the coronation of Charles I. and by Lucy his wife, daughter of Sir George Philpot, Knt. had two daughters, Lucy and Elizabeth, and a ſon, Charles Powlett, from whom Francis Powlett, of Anneport in com. Southamp. Eſq; who married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Richard Norton, and heir to Sir John Norton, in com. Southamp. Bart. by whom he had iſſue Norton Powlett, of Rotherfield, Eſq; who by Jane his wife, daughter of Sir Charles Morley, of Droxford in com. Southamp. had iſſue eight ſons and three daughters.

This Marquis, by one Mrs. Lambert, had four natural ſons, viz. Sir William, Sir Hercules, Sir John, and Sir Hector, to whom he leaſed lands of near 100 l. of annual rent for a hundred years. His Lordſhip was author of a treatiſe, called *Idleneſs*.

I now return to John, fifth Marquis of Wincheſter, eldeſt ſurviving ſon of William. He was one of thoſe Noblemen who ſtood firm to Charles I. and made a garriſon for his Majeſty of his fine ſeat at Baſing, which endured a ſiege, from Auguſt, 1643, to October 16, 1645. During which time, having with him ſeveral brave officers, he made ſo many vigilant and dextrous ſallies, that he killed great numbers of the enemy; but being reſolved to maintain it to the laſt, his houſe was taken by ſtorm with himſelf in it, and about 200 perſons. He was ſo true a loyaliſt, that he cauſed to be written in every window of it,

[f] F. F. in Offic. Arm. folio 625.

with

with a diamond, *Aimez Loyaulté*, i. e. Love Loyalty; which ſo provoked the enemy, that they burnt this noble ſeat to the ground, having found in it money, jewels, and houſhold-ſtuff, to the value of 200,000 l. among which was a rich bed worth 14,000 l. A particular Journal of this ſiege was printed at Oxford, anno Dom. 1645. He had afterward the ſatisfaction of ſeeing the Reſtauration of the Royal Family; and dying premier Marquis of England, on March 5, 1674, in the ſeventy-ſeventh year of his age, was buried at Engleheld in com. Berks, where a neat monument was erected to his memory, of black and white marble, and in a compartment, this inſcription in Gold Roman Letters:

He who in impious times untainted ſtood,
And 'midſt Rebellion durſt be juſt and good;
Whoſe arms aſſerted, and whoſe ſufferings more,
Confirm'd the cauſe, for which he fought before,
Reſts here rewarded by an heavenly Prince,
For what his earthly could not recompence.
Pray, Reader, that ſuch Times no more appear,
Or if they happen, learn true honour here.
Ark of his age's faith and loyalty,
Which (to preſerve them) Heaven confin'd in thee.
Few Subjects could a King like thine deſerve,
And fewer ſuch a King ſo well could ſerve.
Bleſt King, bleſt Subject, whoſe exalted ſtate
By ſufferings roſe, and gave the law to fate:
Such ſouls are rare, but mighty patterns, given
To Earth, were meant for Ornaments to Heaven.
By John Dryden, Poet-Laureat.

Alſo in a compartment underneath, is this:

The Lady Marchioneſſe Dowager (in Teſtimony of her Love and Sorrow) gave this Monument to the Memory of a moſt affectionate tender Huſband.

And on a Marble Stone on the Ground, at the Foot of the ſaid Monument, is this Inſcription, in Roman Capitals:

Here lieth interred the Body of the moſt
Noble and Mighty Prince, John Powlet,
Marquis of Wincheſter, Earl of Wilt-
ſhire, Baron of St. John of Baſing, firſt Marquis
of England: A man of exemplary piety towards
God, and of inviolable fidelity towards his Sove-
reign: In whoſe Cauſe he fortified his Houſe of

Baſing, and defended it againſt the rebels, to the laſt extremity. He married three wives; the firſt was Jane, daughter of Thomas, Viſcount Savage, and of Elizabeth his wife, daughter and co-heir of Thomas Darcey, Earl Rivers, by whom he had iſſue Charles, now Marquis of Wincheſter. His ſecond wife was Honora, daughter of Richard Burgh, Earl of St. Alban's, and Clanriccard, and of Frances his wife, daughter and heir of Sir Francis Walſingham, Knt. and principal Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, by whom he had iſſue four ſons and three daughters. His laſt wife (who ſurvived him) was Iſabella, daughter of William Viſcount Stafford, ſecond ſon of Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundel and Surrey, Earl-Marſhal of England; And of Mary his wife, ſiſter and ſole heir of Henry Lord Stafford, who was the heir-male of the moſt High, Mighty, and moſt Noble Prince Edward Stafford, laſt Duke of Buckingham, of that moſt illuſtrious name and family, by whom he had no iſſue. He died in the 77th year of his age, on the 5th of March, in the year of our Lord, 1674.

By Edward Walker, Garter King of Arms.

Of his four ſons by his ſecond Lady (who died on March 10, 1661, aged fifty-one years, ſix months, and nineteen days, and was buried at Englefield) only two lived to maturity, viz. Lord John Pawlet, who departed this life on June 2, 1660, in the twenty-third year of his age, and lies buried at Englefield; and the Lord Francis Pawlet, his brother and heir, who by —— his wife, left iſſue an only daughter and heir —— married to the Reverend Mr. Nathan Wright, who was ſecond ſon to Sir Nathan Wright, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of England, and had iſſue by her three ſons and a daughter, whereof Pawlet Wright, Eſq; the eldeſt ſon, inherited the ſeat and eſtate at Englefield. The three daughters of John, fifth Marquis of Wincheſter, by his ſecond Lady, were Lady Frances, married to Lewis de Ricardie, of the kingdom of France; Lady Anne, to John Lord Belaſyſe; and Lady Honora, who died unmarried, on December 25, 1660, and was buried at Englefield aforeſaid.

Charles Marquis of Wincheſter, eldeſt ſon of the ſaid John Marquis of Wincheſter, was inſtrumental in ſettling the Crown of theſe realms on the Prince and Princeſs of Orange, who, on

April

April 6, 1689, appointed him Lord Lieutenant of the county of Southampton, and advanced him to the honour of Duke of Bolton, on the 9th of the ſame month: but according to our hiſtorians, was ſoon afterwards ſo diſſatisfied with the new government, that he partly engaged in a ſcheme for the reſtoration of King James. However, he raiſed a regiment of foot for the reduction of Ireland; and died on February 26, 1698-9, at Anneport, near Baſingſtoke in com. Southampton. He married, to his firſt wife, Chriſtian, eldeſt daughter to John Frecheville, of Stavely in the county of Derby, Eſq; afterwards created Lord Frecheville, of Stavely; and by her had an only ſon, named John, who died in his infancy. But by his ſecond wife, Mary, the eldeſt natural daughter of Emanuel Scroop, Earl of Sunderland, and widow of Henry, ſecond ſon to Henry Carey, Earl of Monmouth, he had two ſons, Charles, his ſucceſſor, and Lord William; and three daughters, of which Lady Jane, the eldeſt, was married to John Egerton, Earl of Bridgewater; Lady Mary died unmarried; and Lady Elizabeth was the wife of Toby Jenkins, of Grimſton in the county of York, Eſq;

Lord William, the youngeſt ſon, was one of the ſupporters of the pall at the burial of the Duke of Glouceſter, on Auguſt 9, 1700. In 1715, he was appointed a Teller of his Majeſty's Exchequer; and was a Member for the city of Wincheſter in every Parliament, from 1688-9, till his death, except thoſe ſummoned in 1710 and 1713, when he was choſe for Lymington. He died on September 25, 1729, in the ſixty-third year of his age, having married to his firſt wife, the Lady Louiſa, only daughter to the Marquis of Monpouillon in Holland, who was a younger ſon to the Duke de la Force in France; and by her had two ſons and two daughters, viz. William and Charles-Armand, Mary and Jane: and by his ſecond wife, Anne, daughter and coheir to Randolph Egerton, of Betley in the county of Stafford, Eſq; (who died in November, 1737) had a daughter, named Henrietta. Of Lord William's two daughters by his firſt wife, Mary, the eldeſt, was married to Richard Parſons, Earl of Roſs in the kingdom of Ireland; and Jane, the youngeſt, to William Townſhend, Eſq; third ſon to Charles, ſecond Viſcount Townſhend. And of the ſons, William was choſen, on a vacancy in May, 1729, a Member for Lymington; and for the city of Wincheſter in the Parliament ſummoned to meet on June 25, 1741. He married, in February, 1721, the Lady Annabella Bennet, daughter to Charles Earl of Tankerville, by whom he had iſſue a ſon and a daughter, William and Annabella. His brother, Charles-Armand Pawlet, Eſq; was Lieutenant-colonel to Churchill's dragoons, and in 1733, was appointed Deputy Governor of the Iſle of Wight, was alſo Lieu-

tenant-colonel of the Firſt Troop of Horſe-grenadier Guards. On September 17, he was conſtituted Major-general, alſo on October 10, 1747, a Lieutenant-general; on June 26, 1749, he was inſtalled Knight of the moſt honourable Order of the Bath; and, on February 2, 1750-1, was conſtituted Colonel of the thirteenth regiment of dragoons. He married, on June 12, 1738, Louiſa, daughter of ——— and relick of Richard Daſhwood, of Oxfordſhire, Eſq; and died on November 14, 1751.

I now return to Charles, elder brother to the above-mentioned Lord William. Which Charles, ſecond Duke of Bolton, in the life-time of his father, went to Holland, in the reign of James II. and came over with the Prince of Orange at the revolution, wherein he was very ſerviceable. On November 17, 1688, he was, with others, appointed by the Prince of Orange, a Commiſſioner for managing the King's revenues at Exeter. And at the coronation of King William and Queen Mary, on April 11, 1689, he carried the Queen's orb. In 1690, he was one of the few Noblemen of this kingdom, who made the campaign in Flanders, reviving the antient cuſtom of their anceſtors, who choſe rather to ſhare with their Prince in the honourable hazards of the field, than to lead an inactive life at home. In 1692, he was preferred to be Lord Chamberlain of the Houſhold to Queen Mary; and in the reign of King William, was Vice-admiral of Hampſhire, Colonel of a regiment of foot, one of his Privy-Council, of which he was ſworn on June 3, 1690, and one of the Knights for that county in the Parliaments called in 1690 and 1695. He was appointed, in 1697, one of the Lords Juſtices of Ireland, from whence he landed, on May 21, 1699, at Holyhead. On the acceſſion of Queen Anne, he was continued a Member of the Privy-Council; and on July 1, 1702, conſtituted Warden of New Foreſt, and Vice-admiral, Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the counties of Dorſet and Southampton. In April 1705, waiting on the Queen at Cambridge, he was made Doctor of Laws by that Univerſity. The next year his Grace was appointed one of the Commiſſioners to treat of an Union between England and Scotland. In 1708, her Majeſty made him Governor of the Iſle of Wight, and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the counties of Dorſet and Southampton; and on June 26, the ſame year, he was ſworn one of the Privy-Council according to the act of Union.

On the demiſe of Queen Anne, on Auguſt 1, 1714, he was conſtituted, by her ſucceſſor, one of the Lords Juſtices of Great-Britain, till his Majeſty arrived from Hanover; and was continued Lord Lieutenant of the counties of Southampton and Dorſet, and one of his Majeſty's Privy-Council. On October

ber 16, 1714, being elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, he was inſtalled on December 8 enſuing. In 1714, his Majeſty made him Warden and Keeper of New Foreſt in Hampſhire; as alſo of the Duckoy there, the manor and park of Lindhurſt, and the hundred of Rudſberg; and Bailiff of Burley in New Foreſt. On January 11, 1714-15, he was appointed Cuſtos Rotulorum for the counties of Southampton and Dorſet; and on the 19th, Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the counties of Caermarthen and Glamorgan; and was alſo Steward of the King's manors in Caermarthen and Cardigan ſhires.

On July 8 following, he was declared Lord Chamberlain of his Majeſty's Houſhold; and on April 16, 1717, his Majeſty was pleaſed to declare his Grace Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. He arrived at Dublin on Auguſt 7 following, and went immediately to the Council-chamber, where he was ſworn. The Parliament met at Dublin on Auguſt 27, when his Grace going in the uſual ſtate to the Houſe of Peers, opened the ſeſſion with a Speech to both Houſes, and on December 17 following concluded it with another.

On May 9, 1719, he was appointed one of the Lords Juſtices whilſt the King was at Hanover; and on the 31ſt of that month, ſet out again for Ireland, in quality of Lord Lieutenant.

On June 11, 1720, he was again appointed one of the Lords Juſtices during his Majeſty's abſence in his German dominions; and died on Jan. 21, 1721-2, having had three wives.

By his firſt, Margaret, only daughter to George Lord Coventry, whom he married on July 7, 1679 (he being at the age of eighteen, and ſhe fifteen) he had no iſſue: and ſhe dying in Feb. 1682, he had to his ſecond wife Frances, daughter to William Ramſden, of Byrom in the county of York, Eſq; grandfather of Sir William Ramſden, Bart. by whom he had two ſons (Charles and Harry, ſucceſſively Dukes of Bolton) and two daughters; and this Lady dying anno 1696, he married, in 1697, at Dublin, to his third wife, Henrietta Crofts, natural daughter to James Scot, Duke of Monmouth, by Eleanor, youngeſt daughter to Sir Robert Needham, of Lambeth in the county of Surrey, Knt. and by her (who died on February 27, 1729-30) had a ſon, born on June 23, 1698, named Naſſau. Which Lord Naſſau Powlet was, on October 9, 1723, appointed Auditor-general of the Kingdom of Ireland, and on May 27, 1725, choſen a Knight of the moſt honourable Order of the Bath. He ſerved in two Parliaments for the county of Southampton, viz. the latter part of that ſummoned in 1714, and the whole of that called in 1722, and in the next for Lymington; and departed this life on Auguſt 24, 1741. In December, 1731, he married Lady Iſabella, youngeſt daughter and coheir of Thomas Tufton, Earl of Thanet, by whom he had iſſue three ſons, Naſſau, born

born in 1733, and died in April, 1741; Charles, born in December, 1735; and ——, born in February, 1739-40; alſo two daughters. His Lady ſurviving him, married, ſecondly, Sir Francis Blake-Delaval, Knight of the Bath, eldeſt ſon of Francis Blake-Delaval, of Seaton Delaval in Northumberland, Eſq;

His Grace's two daughters, by his ſecond Dutcheſs, were the Lady Mary, married to Charles O-Neal, of the kingdom of Ireland, Eſq; and after his deceaſe to Capel Moor, Eſq; ſecond ſon of Henry Earl of Drogheda, of the ſaid kingdom; and the Lady Frances (who died on July 30, 1715, aged thirty-one) to John Lord Mordaunt, eldeſt ſon to Charles Earl of Peterborough and Monmouth.

His Grace's ſons, by his ſecond marriage, were Charles and Harry, ſucceſſively Dukes of Bolton.

Which Charles, third Duke of Bolton, was born on September 3, 1685. In March, 1716-17, he was conſtituted Colonel of the Royal Regiment of Horſe-guards, and on April 13, 1717, was called up, by writ, to the Houſe of Peers, by the title of Lord St. John, of Baſing in the county of Southampton, having before been elected Member of the Houſe of Commons for the county of Caermarthen. On October 10, 1722, he was elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and inſtalled on November 13 following. On June 1725, he was appointed Conſtable of the Tower of London, and Lord Lieutenant of the Tower Hamlets; alſo, at the ſame time, ſworn of his Majeſty's Privy-Council; and likewiſe was appointed one of the Lords Juſtices of Great-Britain, whilſt his Majeſty went to Hanover. On Auguſt 27, 1726, his Grace was conſtituted Governor of the Iſle of Wight, in the room of William Earl of Cadogan, deceaſed; and on May 31, 1727, was again one of the Lords Juſtices, when his Majeſty died in his way to Hanover. On September 2, the ſame year, he was appointed Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the counties of Southampton and Dorſet, the town and county of Pool, and the town of Southampton, and county of the ſame, and Governor of the Iſle of Wight; Warden and Keeper of New Foreſt, alſo Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Caermarthen, and Governor of Milford-Haven in the county of Pembroke.

On March 26, 1729, he was ſworn Lord Lieutenant of the county of Glamorgan: but in 1733, his Grace, oppoſing the Court meaſures, was diveſted of all his places. However, on May 12, 1740, his Grace was appointed Captain of the Band of Gentlemen Penſioners, and one of the Lords Juſtices for the adminiſtration of the Government during his Majeſty's abſence. On July 13, 1742, he reſigned his poſt of Captain of the Band of Penſioners, and was again appointed Governor of

of the Iſle of Wight, which he alſo reſigned. On July 29, 1742, he was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of the county of Southampton, and town of Southampton and county of the ſame, and afterwards reſigned; but in November, 1745, his Grace raiſed for his Majeſty's ſervice a regiment of foot, at the breaking out of the rebellion.

In 1713, his Grace was married, to his firſt wife, the Lady Anne, daughter and ſole heir to John Lord Vaughan, and Earl of Carberry in Ireland, as alſo Baron of Emlyn in the county of Caermarthen, Engliſh honour, but not cohabiting with her, had no iſſue by her, who deceaſed on September 20, 1751: and he ſoon after married Mrs. Lavinia Fenton, the famous Polly Peacham, who left him no legitimate iſſue at her death, on January 17, 1760.

His Grace, after a tedious indiſpoſition, departed this life at Tunbridge-Wells, on Auguſt 26, 1754, aged ſixty-nine; and was ſucceeded by his brother and heir, the Lord Harry Powlett, in his honours and eſtates.

Which Harry, fourth Duke of Bolton, in his brother's life-time, was ſeated at Edington in Wiltſhire. On February 28, 1728-9, he was appointed one of the Gentlemen of the Bed-chamber to Frederick, late Prince of Wales, and was elected Member for the county of Southampton in five ſeveral Parliaments, till he ſucceeded his brother in his honours. In June, 1733, he was appointed one of the Lords Commiſſioners of the Admiralty, which he reſigned in March, 1741-2, and on June 29 following, was conſtituted Lieutenant of the Tower of London. His Grace, on November 9, 1754, was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Southampton, and town and county of Southampton; and was ſworn at St. James's, on January 9, 1755, of his Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-Council. He married Catherine, daughter of Charles Parry, of Oakfield in Berkſhire, Eſq; who was Envoy to Portugal, and one of the Commiſſioners of the Exciſe, by whom he had at his death, on October 19, 1759, two ſons, and as many daughters.

1. Charles Marquis of Wincheſter, now Duke of Bolton.

2. Lord Henry Powlett, who having paſſed through the ſeveral inferior ranks in the naval ſervice, was declared Vice-admiral of the White, on December 9, 1760. He was returned for Lymington to the preceding Parliament, in 1754; and to the preſent for Wincheſter. His Lordſhip, on May 13, 1752, wedded Miſs —— Nunn, of Eltham in Kent, and by her, who died about the end of May 1764, had a daughter ——, about ten years of age at her mother's death.

Duke Harry's two daughters were, 1. Lady Henrietta, married on July 12, 1741, to Robert Colebrooke, Eſq; afterwards Bart. eldeſt

eldeſt ſon and heir of James Colebrooke, of Southgate in com. Middleſex, Eſq; 2. Lady Catherine, married on Jan. 4, 1748-9, to William Aſhe, Eſq; late Member of Parliament for Heyteſbury in Wiltſhire, who died on July 11, 1750, leaving his Lady ſurviving, who was married in February, 1755, to Adam Drummond, of Meggins in Scotland, Eſq; Member in the preſent Parliament for Lymington in Hampſhire.

Charles, the preſent Duke of Bolton, is the fifth who bore that title, and the tenth Marquis of Wincheſter of his family, and the twentieth in paternal deſcent from Hercules Lord of Tournon. On Auguſt 27, 1753, he was elected a Knight of the Bath, and inſtalled on December 2 following. In the life-time of his father, he was his ſucceſſor in the offices of Lieutenant of the Tower of London, and Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Hampſhire (which he repreſented in Parliament on his acceſſion to the Peerage) and of the town of Southampton and county of the ſame; but reſigned thoſe employments ſince the acceſſion of the preſent King. At the coronation, on September 22, 1761, he carried the Queen's Crown. His Grace is among the number of Privy-Counſellors, as he was alſo in the late reign; and is alſo Colonel of the northern battalion of the Hampſhire militia: but is yet unmarried.

TITLES.] Charles Powlett, Duke of Bolton, Marquis of Wincheſter, Earl of Wiltſhire, Baron St. John of Baſing in com. Wilts, and premier Marquis of England.

CREATIONS.] Baron, by letters patent, March 9, 1538-9, 30 Henry VIII. Earl, Jan. 19, 1549-50, 3 Edward VI. Marquis, October 12, 1551, 5 Edward VI. and Duke, April 9, 1689, 1 William and Mary.

ARMS.] Sable, three Swords in pile, their points towards the baſe, Argent, the pomels and hilts, Or; a Creſcent for difference.

CREST.] On a Wreath, a Faulcon riſing, Or, gorged with a ducal Coronet, Gules.

SUPPORTERS.] Two Hinds, Purpure, ſemée of Eſtoils, Argent, gorged with a ducal Coronet, Or.

MOTTO.] AYMES LOYAULTE'.

CHIEF SEATS.] At Hackwook-park, near Baſingſtoke in the county of Southampton, forty miles from London; at Abbotſtone in the ſaid county; at Bolton-hall in the county of York; at Edington in Wiltſhire; and at Hook-park in the county of Dorſet.

OSBORNE,

Powlet Duke of Bolton.

OSBORNE, Duke of Leeds.

THIS family was for ſome time ſeated at Aſhford in the county of Kent; of which John Oſborne, of Canterbury, Gent. in the 12th of Henry VI. was returned in the liſt of Gentry of the ſaid county, who made oath for the obſervance of the laws then enacted. But the ſaid John Oſborne bore different arms from thoſe uſed by the family of Leeds. [a] Richard Oſborne married Elizabeth, daughter of —— Fyldene, by whom he was father of Richard, who married Jane, daughter of John Broughton, of Broughton, Eſq; and ſiſter and heir to Edward and Lancelyn Broughton, of the county of Weſtmoreland, Eſqrs. and by her had Sir Edward Oſborne, Knt. Thomas, and Julian.

The ſaid Sir Edward Oſborne, diſcovering a genius for mercantile affairs, which about that time began to flouriſh, was put apprentice to Sir William Hewet, of the clothworkers company, one of the moſt conſiderable merchants in London, and poſſeſſed of an eſtate of 6,000 l. a year: and whilſt he lived in that capacity, Sir William's only daughter and child, Anne, having been accidentally dropped, by the maid playing with her in her arms, from the window of his houſe on London-bridge, into the Thames, almoſt beyond expectation of being ſaved, he immediately leaped into the river, and brought her ſafe out. Sir Edward afterwards had the ſaid Anne in marriage, and with her got an eſtate in the pariſh of Barking in Eſſex, together with lands in the pariſhes of Wales and Harthill in Yorkſhire. The ſaid Sir William was Lord Mayor of London, in 1559, 1 Elizabeth; and dying on January 21, 1566-7, 9 Elizabeth (when the ſaid daughter was twenty-three years of age) was buried in the church of St. Martin Orgar (of which he was a pariſhioner) in the ward of Candlewick-ſtreet, near Alice his beloved wife, according to his will (dated on the 27th of that month) wherein he conſtituted his ſaid daughter, with her huſband Edward Oſborne, Thomas Huet his brother, of Bilby in Derbyſhire, Eſq; and his nephew Henry Huet, executors. He was a benefactor to divers of the hoſpitals in London, and to the poor of the ſeveral pariſhes. He bequeathed to the poor in the hoſpital of St. Thomas in Southwark, whereof he was Preſident, 20 l. and to every poor maiden's marriage, that ſhall be wedded in the pariſh of Wales, or Harthill, in com. Ebor.

[a] MS. in Offic. Armor. E. 1. folio 190.

within

within a year after his deceaſe, IVs. VIIId. each. He bequeathed to his nephews, Henry, and William Huet, ſons of his brother Thomas Huet, his manſion and dwelling in Philpot-Lane in London. Sir Edward Oſborne was Sheriff of London in 1575, 17 Elizabeth, and Lord Mayor in 1582, 25 Elizabeth, when he was knighted at Weſtminſter. He ſerved in Parliament for the city of London, 28 Elizabeth, and dying in 1591, was buried in St. Dionis Backchurch, near Fenchurch-Street. Beſides the ſaid Anne, Sir Edward Oſborne had another wife, Margaret, who was buried near him, in 1602, having been ſecondly wedded to Robert Clarke, Eſq; a Baron of the Exchequer. But it was only by the firſt that he had iſſue, viz. Sir Hewit Oſborne, born anno Dom. 1567, Anne, wife of Robert Offley, of London, and Alice, married to Sir John Peyton, of Iſelham in com. Cantab. Knight and Baronet.

Sir Hewit Oſborne was knighted by the Earl of Eſſex, at Menoth in Ireland, in 1599, having valiantly behaved againſt the rebels there. He married Joice (daughter of Thomas Fleetwood, of the Vache, Bucks, Eſq; Maſter of the Mint, and ſiſter to Sir William Fleetwood, of Cranford in Middleſex, Receiver of the Court of Wards) who ſurvived him, and was afterwards married to Sir Peter Frechevile, of Staveley in Derbyſhire, Knt.; but by her firſt huſband had iſſue a ſon and a daughter, Edward, and Alice, married to Chriſtopher Wandesford, of Kirklington in Yorkſhire, Eſq; Lord Deputy of Ireland, and anceſtor to the preſent Earl of Wandesford.

Which Edward Oſborne ſucceeding his father, Sir Hewet, was created a Baronet on July 13, 1620, 18 Jac. I. having before received the honour of Knighthood. In 5 Car. I. 1629[b], when Thomas Lord Viſcount Wentworth, afterward Earl of Strafford, was made Lord Preſident of the North, Sir Edward Oſborne was made Vice-preſident of the Council to Charles I. for the North of England; and upon the breaking out of the grand rebellion, in the year 1641, was Lieutenant-general of the forces raiſed in his defence in that part of the country, upon the recommendation of the ſaid Earl of Strafford, who had a very great opinion of his loyalty and capacity, as may be ſeen in that Nobleman's printed letters. Sir Edward, firſt, married Margaret, eldeſt daughter of Thomas Viſcount Fauconberg, and by her had a ſon Edward, a promiſing youth, who was unfortunately killed, by the fall of ſome chimneys of York-manor (Sir Edward's habitation as Vice-preſident of the North) on October 31, 1638, when his other two children narrowly eſcaped the ſame misfortune, being then paſſing through the great chamber to their brother's apartment. Sir Edward's ſecond wife was Anne, widow of William Midleton, of Stockeld in

[b] Drake's Hiſt. and Antiq. of York, p. 370.

York-

Yorkſhire, Eſq; and daughter to Thomas Walmſley, of Dunkenhalgh in the county of Lancaſter, Eſq; (by Eleanor his wife, daughter and coheir to Sir John Danvers, of Dantſey in the county of Wilts, Knt. by Elizabeth his wife, youngeſt daughter of John Nevil, Lord Latimer, and coheir to her brother[c], John Lord Latimer, who died without iſſue) and by her left iſſue Sir Thomas Oſborne, his ſon and ſucceſſor; and Charles Oſborne, who died unmarried.

This Sir Thomas faithfully adhering to the Royal Intereſt, and co-operating with many others, in order to the happy reſtoration of Charles II. was afterwards, by that King, made Treaſurer of the Navy, in the year 1671, and on May 3, 1672, one of the Privy-Council. The next year, on June 19, he was conſtituted Lord High-Treaſurer of England; and his Majeſty, as a farther teſtimony of his moſt gracious eſteem, by letters patent, bearing date Auguſt 15, 25 Car. II. advanced him to the degree of a Baron of this realm, by the title of Baron of Kiveton, in com. Ebor. and Viſcount Latimer, and to his heirs male. Alſo by other letters patent, 27 Junii the year following, was further advanced to the dignity and title of Earl of Danby; likewiſe Viſcount of Dumblaine in Scotland, 27 Car. II.

On April 21, 1677, having been elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, he was inſtalled on the 29th of the ſame month; but in 1679, when he enjoyed the higheſt marks of his Majeſty's favour, he was impeached by the Houſe of Commons, of which our hiſtorians give an account.

He was in favour with the Prince of Orange, being the principal inſtrument (as owned by his Highneſs himſelf) in procuring the match between him and the Princeſs Mary. He concerted with the then Earl of Devonſhire the Revolution; and, on the landing of the Prince of Orange, ſecured the city of York, and declared for a free Parliament.

He was Chairman of the Committee of the whole Houſe of Peers, when it was reſolved, that the Throne being vacant, it ought to be filled by a King; and made an elaborate ſpeech to prove the reaſonableneſs of ſupplying it with their Highneſſes the Prince and Princeſs of Orange: who therefore, at their acceſſion[d], on February 13, 1688-9, conſtituted him Lord Preſident of the Council; alſo, on March 16, one of the Commiſſioners for hearing and determining the claims due on their coronation; and at the ſame time Lord Lieutenant of the Weſt-Riding of Yorkſhire.

His Majeſty, taking into conſideration his great merits, was pleaſed, on April 20, 1689, to advance him to the title of Marquis of Caermarthen; alſo, on May 4, 1694, created him Duke

[c] Pedigrees from Records, MS. in Bibl. Joh. com. Egmont. [d] Pat. 1 W. & M.

of Leeds. In April, 1695, he was impeached by the Houſe of Commons for receiving money for promoting the charters of the Eaſt-India Company: but the Parliament being prorogued by King William, a few days afterwards, there was no proſecution againſt him, nor other Courtiers, who were alſo ſuſpected of bribery on the ſame account. He was, in that reign, Lord Lieutenant of the Eaſt, Weſt, and North-Ridings in the county of York, of the city of York and county of the ſame; as alſo Cuſtos Rotulorum for the Eaſt-Riding of Yorkſhire, and the liberties of Rippon and Cawood in the ſaid county; and Governor of his Majeſty's town and fortreſs of Kingſton upon Hull. In the reign of Queen Anne, after the Union, he was ſworn of her Majeſty's Privy-Council. He diſtinguiſhed himſelf at the trial of Dr. Henry Sacheverell, in February and March, 1709-10; and on that occaſion ſpoke with great freedom concerning the Revolution, which he concurred ſo ſignally in bringing about. He lived to a very advanced age, in which, by a regular courſe of life, he preſerved a wonderful vigour of mind and body to the laſt. He was a good judge of men, and left a great fortune, raiſed more by good œconomy, than by the places he held, wherein he was a ſtrict obſerver of juſtice, and was alſo an able ſtateſman. He died in the eighty-firſt year of his age, on July 26, 1712, at Eaſton, in the county of Northampton (the ſeat of his grandſon, the Earl of Pomfret) being on his journey to his ſeat in Yorkſhire.

The celebrated John Dryden, Eſq; dedicated to him, when Earl of Danby, his Tragedy of *All for Love*, wherein he recites: "That his Lordſhip had not only an inborn, but an hereditary "loyalty, and that the conſtancy and ſufferings of his father, "was almoſt to the ruin of his eſtate for the Royal Cauſe. "That the Earl, on his coming into the Treaſury, found it "not only diſordered, but exhauſted, ſo that his enemies looked "on his advancement, as the inſtrument of his ruin. You "have not only reſtored, but advanced the revenues of your "Maſter, without grievance to the ſubject. And the debts of "the Exchequer, which lay heavieſt, both on the Crown and "on private perſons, have by your conduct been eſtabliſhed in "a certain ſatisfaction." And in the ſaid Dedication has the following expreſſions: "There is ſomewhat of a tie in nature "between thoſe who are born for worthy actions, and thoſe "who can tranſmit them to poſterity: and though ours be "much the inferior part, it comes, at leaſt, within the verge "of alliance; nor are we unprofitable of the commonwealth, "when we animate others to thoſe virtues, which we copy "and deſcribe from you. It can be only their intereſt to diſ-"courage Hiſtorians, who endeavour the ſubverſion of govern-"ment, for the beſt which can happen to them is to be for-"gotten.

" gotten. But ſuch who, under Kings, are the fathers of their " country, and by a juſt and prudent ordering of affairs pre- " ſerve it, have the ſame reaſon to cheriſh the chroniclers of " their actions, as they have to lay up in ſafety the deeds and " evidences of their eſtates.

" Such records of their actions being undoubted titles to the " love and reverence of after ages."

His Grace married the Lady Bridget, ſecond daughter (by the firſt wife) of Montagu Bertie, Earl of Lindſey, Lord Great-Chamberlain of England, and by her (who died in January, 1704) had three ſons, Edward, Thomas, and Peregrine; and ſix daughters, whereof Lady Elizabeth died unmarried; Anne, the ſecond, was married to Robert Coke, of Holkham in the county of Norfolk, Eſq; anceſtor to the late Earl of Leiceſter, and ſecondly, to Horatio Walpole, Eſq; and died on Auguſt 5, 1722, aged ſixty-four, without iſſue; Bridget, the third, firſt to Charles Fitz-Charles, Earl of Plymouth, natural ſon of King Charles II. by Mrs. Catherine Pegge (daughter of Thomas Pegge, of Yelderſley in the county of Derby, Eſq;) but by him, who died on October 17, 1680, at Tangier, ſhe had no iſſue, and ſecondly, to Dr. Philip Biſſe, Biſhop of Hereford, by whom ſhe had no iſſue; Catherine, to James Herbert, of Kingſey in Bucks, Eſq; ſon and heir of James Herbert, a younger ſon of Philip Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery; Martha, to Edward Baynton, Eſq; and ſecondly, to Charles, ſon and heir to Charles Granville, Earl of Bath; and the Lady Sophia, the youngeſt, firſt to Donatus Lord O-Brien, grandſon and heir to Henry Earl of Thomond, and afterwards to William Farmer, Lord Lempſter, and died in 1688. His eldeſt ſon, Edward Lord Latimer, was one of the Gentlemen of the Bedchamber to Charles II. He married Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter to Simon Bennet, of Beechampton in com. Bucks, Eſq; by whom he had two ſons, who died young, and departed this life himſelf, in January, 1688, without other iſſue; and Thomas, his brother, dying before him in his infancy, Peregrine, the youngeſt ſon, ſucceeded his father in his honours.

This Peregine, ſecond Duke of Leeds, was in his father's life-time created Viſcount Dumblaine in Scotland, on the ſurrender of his father's patent; and being called up by writ to the Houſe of Peers in England, on March 19, 1689-90[e], took his place by the title of Lord Oſborne of Kiveton. And having experienced himſelf in maritime affairs, and commanding in ſeveral expeditions at ſea, was on many occaſions diſtinguiſhed for his gallant behaviour, eſpecially in the unfortunate expedition at Cameret, where he was ordered with ſeven men of war to the bottom of that Bay, to batter a fort and two

[e] Journal. Dom. Procer.

batteries on the weſt ſide of it, and to cover the landing of the ſoldiers; where his conduct and bravery were very remarkable.

In 1697, he was made Rear-Admiral of the Red ſquadron of his Majeſty's royal navy, and Colonel of the firſt regiment of marines; after which he was conſtituted Vice-Admiral of the White; and on March 11, 1702-3, was promoted to be Vice-Admiral of the Red. In September, 1705, with ſix men of war he convoyed the Duke of Marlborough with ſeveral land-forces to Holland; and on April 19, 1713, he took the oaths appointed, as Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the Eaſt-Riding of Yorkſhire. He died on June 25, 1729, in the ſeventy-firſt year of his age.

He married Bridget, only daughter and heir to Sir Thomas Hyde, of North-Myms in the county of Hertford, Bart. and by her (who died on March 8, 1733-4) he had two ſons and two daughters; whereof the Lady Bridget was married to the Reverend Mr. Williams, a Prebendary of Chicheſter; and the Lady Mary was firſt married to Henry Somerſet, Duke of Beaufort; and ſecondly, on October 15, 1715, to William Cochran, Earl of Dundonald, of the Kingdom of Scotland.

Of the ſons, William-Henry, the eldeſt, born in July, 1691, died of the ſmall-pox at Utrecht, on Auguſt 9, 1711, aged twenty-one.

Peregrine-Hyde, the youngeſt, on January 31, 1712-13, the 11th of Queen Anne, was ſummoned to Parliament by the title of Lord Oſborne of Kiveton, and took place according to his anceſtor's patent of creation, on Auguſt 15, 1673, and ſucceeded his father as third Duke of Leeds. His Grace married, to his firſt wife, the Lady Elizabeth Harley, daughter to Robert Earl of Oxford, and Earl Mortimer, Lord High-Treaſurer of Great-Britain; and by her, who died on November 20, 1713, aged twenty-eight, had iſſue Thomas, his ſucceſſor. By his ſecond wife, the Lady Anne Seymour (who died on November 27, 1722) third daughter to Charles Duke of Somerſet, he had a ſon, who died young. In April, 1725, his Grace married, to his third wife, Julian, daughter and coheir to Roger Hele, of Halewell in the county of Devon, Eſq; but had no iſſue by her, who, after his deceaſe, was married to Charles Earl of Portmore. His Grace departing this life, on May 9, 1731, was ſucceeded by his only ſon and heir, Thomas, now Duke of Leeds.

The ſaid Thomas, fourth Duke of Leeds, was born on November 6, 1713, and returning from his travels, on January 29, 1734-5, was, on November 12, 1748, conſtituted Warden and Chief Juſtice in Eyre of all his Majeſty's foreſts, chaſes, &c. ſouth of Trent, having been the ſame year appointed one

of

Osborne Duke of Leeds

of the Lords of the Bedchamber. On June 22, 1749, he was elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and inſtalled at Windſor on July 12, 1750. His Grace, reſigning the offices of Warden and Chief Juſtice in Eyre of the foreſts ſouth of Trent, was appointed Cofferer of the Houſhold, on January 13, 1756. At his preſent Majeſty's acceſſion, he was called to the Council-table; and laying down the office of Cofferer, was conſtituted Chief Juſtice in Eyre of all the royal foreſts north of Trent, on April 14, 1761. His Grace is alſo LL. D. and F. R. S.

He married, on June 26, 1740, the Lady Mary, youngeſt of the two daughters of Francis Earl of Godolphin, and by her, who died on Auguſt 6, 1764, aged forty-one, his Grace had a ſon, who was born in May, 1741, and died immediately after; Lady Harriot, who was born in November, 1744, and died a few days after; Thomas, Marquis of Caermarthen, who was born on October 5, 1747, and died of the ſmall-pox, on Aug. 15, 1761, and Lord Francis-Godolphin, now Marquis of Caermarthen, who was born on January 29, 1750-1.

TITLES.] Thomas Oſborne, Duke of Leeds, Marquis of Caermarthen, Earl of Danby, Viſcount Latimer, and Dumblaine, Baron Oſborne of Kiveton, and Baronet.

CREATIONS.] Baronet, July 13, 1620, 18 Jac. I. Baron Oſborne of Kiveton in Yorkſhire, and Viſcount Latimer (the name of a family) Auguſt 15, 1673, 25 Car. II. Viſcount of Dumblaine in Scotland, July 19, 1675, 27 Car. II. Earl of Danby, in the North-Riding of Yorkſhire, June 27, 1674, 26 Car. II. Marquis of Caermarthen, in com. Caermarthen, April 20, 1689, 1 Will. and Mar. And Duke of Leeds, in com Ebor. May 4, 1694, 6 Will. and Mar.

ARMS.] Quarterly, Ermine and Azure, a Croſs, Or.

CREST.] On a Wreath of his colours, a Tyger paſſant, Argent.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide, a Griphon, Or: on the ſiniſter, a Tyger, Argent; each gorged with a ducal Coronet, Azure, and langued and unguled, Gules.

MOTTO.] PAX IN BELLO.

CHIEF SEATS.] At North-Myms, in the county of Hertford, two miles from Hatfield, and fifteen from London; at Kiveton-park in the county of York, ſix miles from Rotheram, and 120 from London; and at Harthill-Hall, Thorp-Hall, and Waller-Hall, all in the ſame county.

RUSSEL, Duke of Bedford.

THIS illuſtrious family is originally from Normandy, and hath been for many ages poſſeſſed of a large eſtate in the county of Dorſet, as is manifeſt from the account of the Sheriff[a], in 1202, the 3d of King John, when John Ruſſel gave fifty marks for licence to marry the ſiſter of a great man, called Daun Bardolf.

This John (or James according to ſome) was Conſtable of Corſe-caſtle[b] in the county of Dorſet, A. D. 1221, the 5th of Henry III. whoſe ſon and heir, Sir Ralph Ruſſel, Knt. by his wife Jane, daughter of John Tilly, [c] married Iſabel, one of the daughters and coheirs to James de Newmarch, Baron of Newmarch and Derham, and a deſcendant of Bernard de Newmarch, who was one of the Conqueror's followers into England, A. D. 1066, and witneſs to one of his charters granted to the monks of Battel in Suſſex, upon his foundation of that abbey.

This Ralph, in the 8th of Henry III. had livery of thoſe lands that fell to the ſhare of his wife Iſabel, which lay in the counties of Somerſet, Wilts, and Glouceſter; and in the ſame reign[d] had reſpite of what was due from him to the King's Exchequer, upon the collection of divers ſcutages, for the moiety of the honour of the ſame James de Newmarch; which ſhews the prevalency of his intereſt in that Prince's Court. He had iſſue three ſons; but his ſucceſſor was

Sir William Ruſſel, who in 1284, the 12th of Edward I.[e] obtained a charter for a market every Thurſday in the week, and a fair on the eve, day and morrow of St. Matthew, at his manor of Kingſton, commonly called Kingſton-Ruſſel, in the county of Dorſet; which lordſhip was held by ſergeantry[f], viz. to be *Cup-bearer to the King at four principal feaſts in the year.* In the firſt of Edward II.[g] he was returned to Parliament one of the Knights for the county of Southampton: and having married Jane, daughter of Robert Peverel, had iſſue Theobald Ruſſel, his ſon and heir, anceſtor, by his ſecond wife, to the Duke of Bedford. The ſaid Theobald, by his firſt wife Eleanor, daughter and coheir of Ralph de Gorges, a Baron in Par-

[a] Rot. Pip. 3 Joh. Dorſ. [b] Clauſ. 5 Hen. III. m. 8. [c] Clauſ. 5 Hen. III. m. 3. [d] Mich. Rec. 22 Hen. III. Rot. 2. Somerſ. Dorſ. [e] Cart. 12 Edw. I. p. 28. [f] Eſch. 34 Edw. I. n. 130. Dorſ. [g] Pryn's Brev. Parl. Part. I. p. 80.

liament,

liament, temp. Edw. III. had three ſons; Sir John, William, who died without iſſue, and Sir Theobald, who bore the name and arms of Gorges, viz. *Lozengy, Or, and Gules*, and from whom the Gorges of Wraxhall are deſcended. Sir Theobald Ruſſel had alſo a daughter Eleanor, wedded to John Fitz-John. Sir John, the eldeſt ſon of Sir Theobald, by his firſt marriage, ſucceeded his father in the eſtate of Kingſton-Ruſſel, and was three times married; firſt to Eleanor, daughter of ———, ſecondly to Iſabel, daughter of ———, and thirdly to Alicia, daughter of ———: but by the laſt only had iſſue, viz. three ſons, Theobald, John (who both died *ſine prole*) and Maurice; and alſo a daughter Alice, married to —— Hacket. Maurice Ruſſel, the third, but only ſurviving ſon of Sir John, was firſt married to Iſabella, daughter of —— Bruyn, and by her had two daughters, viz. Margaret, married to Sir Walter Dennys, Knt. and Iſabel to Stephen Hatfield. Maurice's ſecond wife was Joane, daughter of —— Stradling, and by her he had Sir Thomas Ruſſel, of Kingſton-Ruſſel, who by —— his wife was father of an only child, Margery, who died without iſſue.

Having brought this line to a period, I ſhall now treat of the iſſue of the before-mentioned Theobald, ſon of Sir William Ruſſel [h], which were by his ſecond wife, Eleanor, daughter and heir of John de la Tour. By this ſaid wife he had William Ruſſel, his ſon and heir, who married ——, daughter and heir of —— Muſtian, and had iſſue Henry, who by his wife ——, daughter of —— Godfrey, had a ſon [i] John, who was of Kingſton-Ruſſel, and by Elizabeth his wife, daughter and coheir of John Heringham, Eſq; was father of Sir John Ruſſel, Knt. and William Ruſſel. The ſaid Sir John Ruſſel was [k] Speaker of the Houſe of Commons in the ſecond year of King Hen. VI. as alſo in the tenth year of that King; and by Alice his wife, daughter of —— Froxmere, had iſſue James his eldeſt ſon and heir, and two daughters, Alice, married to ——— Trenchard, Eſq; father to Sir Thomas Trenchard; and Chriſtian, wife of Walter Cheverell, Eſq;

His eldeſt ſon and heir, James Ruſſel, married, to his firſt wife, Alice, daughter and heir of Thomas Wyle, Eſq; and by her had two ſons, John, his heir, and Thomas, and two daughters afore-mentioned. In his ſickneſs [l] he makes his will, on November 30, 1505, 21 Henry VII. ordering his body to be buried in the church of the Holy Trinity, of Swyre in Dorſetſhire, and bequeaths his whole eſtate to Joan, his then wife, John, his eldeſt ſon, and Thomas, younger ſon, whom he ordains his executors; whereunto were witneſſes, Sir Henry Ruſſel, and

[h] MS. vocat. Yorkſhire, folio 12. l. 6. penes Geo. Com. Cardigan. [i] Ibid. folio 13. a. [k] Cotton's Abridgment of Records, p. 567, 602. [l] Ex Regiſt. A. Dean, qu. 3. in Cur. Prærog. Cant.

Nicholas Boremont, who had married Elizabeth, one of his daughters; and Thomaſin, another, was wife of Robert Huſſey, of Shapwick in com. Dorſet, Eſq;

The eldeſt ſon, John Ruſſel, Eſq; born at Kingſton-Ruſſel aforeſaid [m], reſided at Berwick, about four miles from Bridport in the county of Dorſet, and being a Gentleman of excellent accompliſhments, verſed in ſeveral languages, as alſo one who had travelled, and been in divers battles with King Henry in France, it is no wonder that he attained to great honours and employments.

In 21 of Henry VII. Philip Archduke of Auſtria, only ſon of the Emperor Maximilian I. being bound for Spain, having married the heireſs of that Kingdom, Johanna, daughter of Ferdinand and Iſabel, King and Queen of Caſtile and Aragon, and [n] meeting with a violent ſtorm in his paſſage from Flanders, was neceſſitated to put on ſhore at Weymouth, whereupon Sir Thomas Trenchard, Knt. who lived near that port, accommodated him in the beſt manner he could, till ſuch time as he had ſent to Court to acquaint the King with his arrival; and inviting this Mr. Ruſſel [o], who was his neighbour and relation, and then newly returned from his travels, to wait upon him at his houſe, the Archduke was ſo taken with his converſation, that he deſired he might enjoy his company to the Court, then at Windſor, whither the King had invited that Prince to come: In which journey, being much affected with his learned diſcourſe, and generous deportment, the Archduke recommended Mr. Ruſſel to the King, as a Gentleman fitly qualified to ſerve him in ſome conſiderable ſtation; and he was thereupon taken into great favour, and made one of the Gentlemen of his Privy-Chamber.

In 1513, the 5th of Henry VIII. [p] he attended the King in his expedition, and taking of Therouenne and Tournay; being alſo then one of the Gentlemen of the Privy-Chamber to that King. And in the eighth year of his reign, he obtained, for his ſervices in France, certain lands in Tournay. Alſo in 1519, 11 Hen. VIII. on that agreement made betwixt King Henry and Francis I. King of France, he received his letters for the render of Tournay to the French. After which he was [q] knighted by the Earl of Surry, Admiral of the Engliſh Fleet, in the fourteenth of Henry VIII. for his ſervice at the taking of Morlaix in Bretagne.

In the fifteenth of Henry VIII. he was [r] made Marſhal of the Marſhalſea, and afterwards [s] employed in ſeveral negotiations to the Emperor Charles V. to Francis the French King, to the Pope, and to the Duke of Lorraine; and was likewiſe at the

[m] Ex ſcript. Will. Co. Bedford. [n] Hollinſhed's Chron. p. 792. [o] Ex ſcript. præf. Co. Bedford. [p] Ibid. [q] Hollinſhed, p. 874. [r] Pat. 15 Henry VIII. p. 1. [s] Ex ſcript. præf. Co. Bedford.

great

great battle of Pavia, fought on Feb. 24, 1524-5, 16 Hen. VIII. when Francis I. King of France was taken priſoner by Charles Duke of Bourbonne, who had joined the Imperialiſts. He was conſtituted Sheriff of Dorſet and Somerſetſhire, in the 19th of Henry VIII. and attended King Henry, in 1532[t], at the magnificent interview with Francis I. of France at Boulogne. In 29th of Henry VIII. he was[u] made Comptroller of the Houſhold, and one of the Privy-Council, on November 8. And the King taking into conſideration his great merits and accompliſhments, he was, on March 9, 30 Henry VIII.[x] advanced to be a Baron of the realm, by the title of Lord Ruſſel, Baron Ruſſel of Cheyneys in the county of Buckingham. And that he might the better ſupport the honour conferred on him, the King granted him the manor of Agmondeſham in Bucks, being part of the eſtate of Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, attainted in 1521: and having married Anne, widow of Sir John Broughton, of Suddington in Bedfordſhire, and daughter and coheir of Sir Guy Sapcotes, Knt. (nephew and heir to Dame Agnes Cheney) obtained with her the manor and ſeat of Cheneys and other large poſſeſſions in that neighbourhood; and in the chancel of that church, his family have ever ſince been buried.

In 1540, the 31ſt of Henry's reign, on the diſſolution of the greater monaſteries, he obtained a grant[y] to himſelf, and Anne his wife, and the heirs of their bodies lawfully begotten, of the whole ſcite and circuit of the rich abbey of Taveſtock, in the county of Devon, as alſo of the borough and Town of Taveſtock, and of the manors of Hundewyke, Morewell, and Morewelham, Milton-Abbot, alias Milton-Leigh, Lamerton, Hole, Brentor, Wyke-Dabernon, Peterſtavye, Ottrew, alias Otterye, Whitchurch, and Newton, with the hundred of Hundewyke, otherwiſe called the hundred of Taveſtock; as alſo the rectory and vicarage of Taveſtock; likewiſe the manor of Antony in the county of Cornwall, and the borough of Denbury, with the manors of Denbury, Plymſtoke, Worryngton, Cowyke, Enwyke, Burleigh, Olderidge, Cavelinch, Whimple, Wood-Marſhton, Chriſtenſtow, Borington, and Cornwedede, all in the county of Devon, and belonging to the ſame diſſolved monaſtery of Taveſtock. He had likewiſe divers other lands given him in the counties of Devon, Somerſet, and Bucks; among[z] which was the manor of Abbots-Aſton, in the county of Bucks, belonging to the diſſolved abbey of St. Alban's, in the county of Hertford.

Beſides this vaſt augmentation in lands, he bore ſeveral great offices in that King's reign;[a] as, 1ſt, Lord Warden of the

[t] Stow's Annals. [u] Godwin, p. 158. [x] Pat. 30 Henry VIII. p. 5. m. 1. [y] Pat. 31 Henry VIII. p. 3. [z] Ibid. p. 4. [a] Ex autog. penes præf. Co. Bedford.

Stannaries in the counties of Devon and Cornwall; and in the 32d of Henry VIII. was [b] conſtituted Lord Admiral of England and Ireland; having been, in 1589, the year before [c], admitted into the moſt noble Order of the Garter, on April 23, with Sir Thomas Cheney, and Sir William Kingſton; but not being preſent at his election, the King ſent to him to come immediately. On May 18 following, his Lordſhip, with his two companions, were inſtalled at Windſor; as fully recited by Mr. Anſtis in his Appendix to vol. i. p. 444—5. He [d] had been in nomination for Knight of the Garter in 19 Henry VIII. and in ſeveral ſubſequent chapters of the Order, till he was choſen. His Royal Maſter having had experience of his abilities at home and abroad, in court and camp, by ſea and land, and having thought it expedient to eſtabliſh a Council, in and for the better government of the Weſtern Parts of the Kingdom, his Lordſhip was made Preſident of the counties of Devon, Cornwall, Somerſet, and Dorſet: and in the ſame 32d year, on differences between King Henry [e] and Francis I. King of France, he was ſent into Picardy (accompanied with William Fitz-Williams, Earl of Southampton) to oppoſe Monſieur de Vendome, who was raiſing forces in that country.

On December 3, 1543, 35 Henry VIII. he [f] was appointed Lord Privy-Seal; and two years after, King Henry attacking Boulogne in perſon, the Lord Ruſſel was [g] Captain-general of the Van-guard of his Majeſty's army. And the King drawing now towards the end of his reign, was pleaſed, on his death-bed, to [h] appoint him (being then Keeper of the Privy Seal) one of the ſixteen Counſellors to his ſon, Prince Edward, at whoſe coronation, on February 25, 1546-7, he was [i] conſtituted Lord High-Steward of England for that day; and in the ſame year [k] he had a grant of the monaſtery of Wooburn, &c. in com. Bedford.

The Council to King Edward, being very intent on promoting the Reformation [l], ordered the images to be pulled down, which, with the encloſing of lands that before were common, occaſioned divers inſurrections; whereupon the Lord Ruſſel was the firſt in commiſſion, to put in force all ſuch laws as ſhould be thought moſt neceſſary to be executed; and was diſpatched, in 1549, 3 Edward VI. againſt the Devonſhire and Corniſh men with a body of troops, with which he [m] defeated them at Fenniton-Bridge, relieved Exeter, killed 600, and took 4000 priſoners; and for theſe and other ſervices

[b] Pat. 32 Henry VIII. p. 3. [c] Anſtis's Regiſter of the Garter, p. 412. [d] Ibid. p. 382, & ſeq. [e] Herbert's Hiſt. of Hen. VIII. p. 464. [f] Pat. 34 Henry VIII. p. 2. [g] Pat. 36 Henry VIII. p. 8. [h] Godwin, p. 205. [i] Pat. 1 Edward VI. p. 6. [k] Bill ſignat. 1 Edward VI. [l] Hayward's Life of Edward VI. p. 55. [m] Ibid. p. 60, 61, and Godwin's Annals.

to

to the King's father, and himſelf, he was [n], on January 19, 1549-50, 3 Edward VI. created Earl of Bedford.

In the 4th of Edward VI. his Lordſhip [o], with William Lord Paget, Sir William Petre, and Sir John Maſon, were ſent Ambaſſadors to Guiſnes in France, to treat of a peace between the two kingdoms, which they concluded. At a chapter of the Garter, held at Greenwich, on April 23, 1551, 5 Edward VI. his Majeſty being preſent, the Earl of Bedford was one of the five Knights Companions appointed to peruſe the ſtatutes, and explain the articles, of the order: and having ſurvived the many difficulties and factions of King Edward's reign, he, upon the acceſſion of Queen Mary to the Throne [p], obtained a new patent, dated November 3, for the office of Lord Privy-Seal. Alſo, though then pretty well in years [q], he was, in the firſt year of that Princeſs, ſent into Spain, to attend King Philip II. into England, in order to his nuptials with the ſaid Queen: and this was the more remarkable, that as this Prince's grandfather, Philip Archduke of Auſtria, brought him firſt to Court, and was the occaſion of his riſe to that great fortune and honours he attained to, ſo his Lordſhip's laſt public office, was to bring his grandſon over to lie in the boſom of the Queen, his Royal Miſtreſs, and to enjoy the title of King of England. It is recited by Hollinſhed [r], that the Earl of Bedford, Lord Privy-Seal, and Lord Fitzwalter, were ſent to the Prince of Spain, accompanied with divers Noblemen and Gentlemen, who arriving at the Groyne in Gallicia, were very honourably received; but the Prince being 100 leagues from thence, they were deſired to ſtay there for their better eaſe, till he could repair thither, which was not ſo ſoon as he told them, by reaſon of the ſickneſs of his ſiſter, the Princeſs Dowager of Portugal, and by other weighty affairs. But at length, on his coming to Gallicia, the Earl of Bedford met him at St. James de Compoſtella, and after he had, in preſence of a great number of Noblemen and Gentlemen, ratified the contract and ſworn to obſerve it, he ſet forward for Corunna, where he embarked, attended by 150 ſail, and arrived at Southampton on July 19, 1554.

This great Earl dying [s] at his houſe in the Strand, London, on March 14 following, was buried at Cheneys in the county of Bucks [t]: and his Lady, by [u] her will, dated on Auguſt 19, 1558, 5 and 6 Philip and Mary, bequeathing her manor of Thornhaugh to her grandſon, Edward Lord Ruſſel, and to the heirs of his body, and deceaſed on March 14, 1559 [x], in the

[n] Pat. 3 Edw. VI. p. 11. [o] Haywood, p. 105. [p] Pat. 1 M. p. 8.
[q] Ex ſcript. Will. Com. Bedf. [r] Chron. p. 1121. [s] Stow's Survey, p. 491.
[t] Let. Itin. MS. vol. i. folio 122. [u] Ex Regiſt. Welles, 4u. 52.
[x] Cole's Eſch. lib. i. p. 419. N. 61, A. 12. in Bibl. Harley.

firſt

firſt of Queen Elizabeth, leaving Francis, Earl of Bedford, her ſon and heir, then of the age of thirty-two. A noble monument is erected to the memory of this Lady and her huſband, at the eaſt end of the chapel, on the north ſide of the church of Cheneys, curiouſly embelliſhed with arms, the figure of an Earl in Alabaſter, lying on his back in a Coat of Mail, with a Coronet on his head, and habited with the Collar of the Order of the Garter. And by him his Counteſs, with a Coronet on her Head, habited in a mantle; but the Inſcription ſets forth only his places of honour and truſt that he held, which I have already cited.

His only child, Francis, ſecond Earl of Bedford, was twenty-ſeven years old at his father's death; and at the coronation of Edward VI. on February 25, 1547, among others, was [y] made Knight of the Bath; and upon that King's deceaſe, on July 6, 1553, this Earl Francis [z], together with Sir Maurice Berkeley, Sir William Fitz-William, and Sir Henry Neville, Knts. proclaimed the Lady Mary Queen of England; and put themſelves in arms on her behalf againſt the Lady Jane Grey, who conteſted for the Crown. And Queen Mary being reduced, in the fourth year of her reign, to engage in her huſband's quarrel with France, her forces were very inſtrumental, firſt in gaining the battle of St. Quintin, on Auguſt 10, 1557, and then in taking the town [a], where the Earl of Bedford was preſent, and ſhared both in the glory and danger.

In the firſt of Queen Elizabeth, he [b] was ſworn one of the Privy-Council: and in the ſecond, was ſent [c] Ambaſſador to France; and having diſcharged that truſt fully to her Majeſty's ſatisfaction, he was ſent a ſecond time by her into that kingdom [d], to condole the death of Francis II. and at the ſame time to congratulate his brother, Charles IX. upon his acceſſion to the Throne, which happened on December 5, 1560.

In the ſixth of Elizabeth, he was [e] conſtituted Governor of the town and caſtle of Berwick upon Tweed, and Warden of the Eaſt-Marches towards Scotland. Alſo in the ſame year [f], on May 14, he was inſtalled one of the Knights of the moſt noble Order of the Garter. Being not preſent at his election, Sir Gilbert Dethick was ſent to him with the enſigns of the Order, and he was inſtalled by his proxy, Sir George Howard.

In 7 Elizabeth, he was [g] employed to treat with certain Commiſſioners from Mary Queen of Scotland, for a marriage [h] between her and Robert Earl of Leiceſter.

[y] I. 7. in Offic. Arm. fol. 436. [z] Ex ſcript. Will. Com. Bedf. [a] Hollinſh. p. 1133. [b] Camden's Annals of Q. Eliz. [c] Ex ſcript. Will. Com. Bedf. [d] Camden's Annals. [e] Pat. 6 Elizabeth, p. 6. [f] Aſhmole's Ord. of the Garter, p. 302, 324, 325, 378. [g] Camden's Annals. [h] Ibid.

In

In 8 Elizabeth, the Queen being requeſted to be godmother to James, then Prince of Scotland, who was born on June 19, 1666, he was ſent to ſtand ſurety for her Majeſty, and carried with him a font of pure gold, as an honorary gift at the ſolemnity of his chriſtening, on December 15, 1566, 9 Elizabeth.

In 13 Elizabeth, he obtained the wardſhip of George Earl of Cumberland, on which occaſion he ſent the following letter to the Queen:

" It may [l] pleaſe your moſt excellent Majeſtie to be advertiſed, " that heretofore (as it is well knowne to many) there hath " been communication betweene my Lord of Cumberland and " me, for the marriage of his ſonne to one of my daughters; and " being now informed that he is in ſome danger, I do preſume " to be a ſutor to your Highneſs, that I may have the wardſhip " of his ſonne, if it ſhall ſoe ſtand with youre Majeſties plea- " ſure; and therein I ſhall think myſelfe moſt bounden (as I " have every way good cauſe) to your Highneſs. And thus I " beſeech God to ſend unto your Majeſtie a moſt proſperous " helthfull raigne, to God's glory, and your hearts deſire, &c.

" From Ruſſel-Place, this 3d of January, 1570."

In the 14th of her reign, he [k] was the fourth named among the Peers for the trial of that truly great, but unhappy Peer, Thomas Howard, fourth Duke of Norfolk, on Jan. 16, 1571-2.

In 24 Elizabeth, he was [l] one of the Commiſſioners to treat with thoſe Ambaſſadors ſent from France, to negotiate a marriage between the Duke of Anjou and Queen Elizabeth. He was alſo Warden of the Stannaries in Devon and Cornwall, Chief Juſtice in Eyre of all the foreſts ſouth of Trent, and Lieutenant of Dorſet, Devon, and Cornwall.

This great Earl (who was godfather to that ever famous navigator, Sir Francis Drake, who ſailed round the world) founded a ſchool at Wooburn in the county of Bedford; and by his will, [m] dated on April 7, 1583, gave 20l. *per annum* for the maintenance of two poor ſtudents of divinity in Univerſity-college in Oxford, called the Earl of Bedford's ſcholars, to be nominated and appointed by his heirs for ever; and was a perſon of ſuch great hoſpitality, that Queen Elizabeth was wont to ſay of him, that *he made all the beggars*. He died at Bedford-houſe in the Strand, on July 28, 1585, aged fifty-eight, and lies buried in the chapel before-mentioned at Cheneys, where there is a noble monument erected to his memory, and of his Counteſs, Margaret, daughter of Sir John St. John, and ſiſter to Oliver, firſt Lord St. John of Bletſhoe, with the following inſcription in Roman capitals gilt.

[l] Records de Famil. de Clifford, MS. vol. iii. p. 69. [k] Camden's Annals.
[l] Camden, in an. 24 Eliz. [m] Ex Regiſt. Windſor, qu. 45.

HERE

HERE LY INTERRED THE NOBLE AND RELIGIOUS LORD, FRANCIS RUSSEL EARL OF BEDFORD, BARON RUSSEL, KNIGHT OF THE ORDER OF THE GARTER, PRIVI COUNSELLOR TO Q. ELIZABETH, FROM HER FIRST ENTRY TO THE CROWNE: LORD GOVERNOR OF BARWICK, AND WARDEN OF THE EAST MARCHES TOWARDS SCOTLAND, DURING THE TROUBLES IN THAT KINGDOM: WARDEN OF THE STANNERIES IN DEVON, AND CORNWALL, CHEF JUSTIS AND JUSTIS IN EYER OF ALL THE Q's FORRESTS BY SOUTH TRENT, AND LIEFTENANT OF THE COUNTIES OF DORSET, DEVON, AND CORNWALL: AND THE MOST VIRTUOUS LADY MARGARET COUNTIS OF BEDFORD HIS WIFE, DAUGHTER OF St JOHN St JOHN KNIGHT, AND SISTER TO OLIVER, FIRST LORD St JOHN OF BLETSO, WHO HAD BETWEEN THEM ISSUE 4 SONS AND 3 DAUGHTERS, WHOSE NAMES AND MATCHES WITH THER CHILDREN THEY LEFT, APPEARE ABOUT THIS TOMBE. THE SAID EARLE DEPARTED THIS LIFE WITH MUCH COMFORT, IN ASSURANCE OF A BETTER, AT HIS MANSION PLACE IN THE STRAND, CALLED RUSSEL HOUSE, THE 28 DAY OF JULY, IN THE 58 YEARE OF HIS AGE, AND OF OUR BLESSED SAVIOUR 1585. AND THE SAID COUNTISS MADE THE LIKE GODLY END, AT WOOBOURNE IN BEDFORDSHIRE, THE . . . . . .

His Lordſhip, after the death of the aforeſaid Lady, married Bridget, daughter of John Lord Huſſey, and widow of Sir Richard Moriſon, Knt. and of Henry Earl of Rutland, but had no iſſue by her. By his firſt Counteſs he had four ſons and three daughters.

1. Edward Lord Ruſſel, the eldeſt ſon, married Jane Sibilla, daughter of Sir Richard Moriſon, and died without iſſue *vitâ patris*, and lies buried at Cheneys. He was educated at Univerſity-college in Oxford [n], and took the degree of Batchelor of Arts, on December 16, 1567.

2. John Lord Ruſſel, Baron of Parliament, by writ in the life-time of his father, married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Anthony Cook, of Giddy-Hall in Eſſex, and widow of Sir Thomas Hobby, of Biſham in Berkſhire, Knt. Which Lady died on July 23, 1584, and is buried at Biſham, and left two daughters, Elizabeth, who died unmarried, and is buried by her fa-

[n] Wood's Faſti Oxon. vol. i. p. 728.

ther;

ther; Anne, married to Henry Lord Herbert, ſon and heir apparent of Edward Earl of Worceſter, Lord Privy-Seal. This Lord Ruſſel alſo died in the life-time of his father, and had, beſides the above two daughters, a ſon, Francis, who deceaſed before him.

3. Sir Francis Ruſſel, knighted for ſervices in Scotland (Lord Ruſſel, after the Lord John) married Julian, daughter and coheir of Sir John Foſter, Knt. Lord Warden of the Middle-Marches towards Scotland, was ſlain on an accidental frey on the borders there, on July 27, 1585, the day before his father's death, and lies buried at Alnewick in Northumberland.

He had one ſon, Edward, third Earl of Bedford, who married Lucy, daughter of John Lord Harrington, ſiſter and coheir of John, the ſecond Lord Harrington; but died without iſſue, on May 3, 1627.

4. Sir William Ruſſel, youngeſt ſon, knighted for ſervices in Ireland, married Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Henry Long, Eſq; ſon and heir of Sir Richard Long, of Shengey in Cambridgeſhire, Knt. He had his education with his brethren in Magdalen-college in Oxford; after which he travelled through France, Germany, Italy, Hungary, and other countries. And, as my author [o] obſerves, *on his return, ſpent not his Time idly in the Court, but painfully in the labours of the camp, following the wars in Hungary, in France, Ireland and the Low Countries, where he left many notable proofs of his valour and wiſdom, being Strenuus Miles, Prudens Imperator.*

His firſt ſervice, in Ireland, was in 1580, when he had the command of 150 horſe [p], raiſed by the Clergy of England, for the reduction of the Queen's rebellious ſubjects in that kingdom, where he behaved ſo well, that the honour of knighthood was conferred on him. The year after, 1581, when Monſieur [Francis Duke of Alençon] brother to [Henry III.] the French King, was in England, with the Prince D'Aufine, and a royal combat and fight on foot was performed before Queen Elizabeth, wherein Monſieur, with the Prince D'Aufine, and others, were challengers [q], the Lord Thomas Howard, and Sir William Ruſſel, were the two firſt that were called out as defenders.

On December 8, 1585, he [r] embarked with Robert Dudley, Earl of Leiceſter, then ſent to the aſſiſtance of the States General, and after a proſperous paſſage, landed two days after at Fluſhing. They were received with great joy by the States [s], who nobly entertained them all the Chriſtmas Holidays, and

[o] Wood's Faſti Oxon. vol. i. p. 733. [p] Hollinſhed's Chronicles of Ireland, folio 172, and Cox's Hiſtory of Ireland, p. 367. [q] Honour Milit. and Civil, per W. Segar, Norroy, p. 196. [r] Stow's Annals, p. 709, 710. [s] Ibid. p. 711.

made

made a very ſolemn publication, "of their deſiring, accepting, "and authorizing the ſaid Robert Earl of Leiceſter to be their "Governor, General, and Captain over all the United Pro- "vinces, and aſſociate cities, &c. acknowledging, that the "Queen of England had mercifully ſent him, and his forces, "to their aſſiſtance."

The Earl of Leiceſter was inſtalled their Governor with great ſolemnity, being ſeated two ſteps above the States, twelve of whom ſat on each ſide of him, and the reſt, to the number of twenty, right before him, but four or five ſteps deſcending. On the right hand of the Earl, ſtood the Prince of Portugal, next him the Lord Morley, next him Norris, Governor of Munſter [t], next Sir William Ruſſel, and divers of great account. On the left hand ſtood Prince Maurice of Naſſau, the Earl of Eſſex, Sir William Stanley, &c.

After taking ſeveral towns from the Spaniards, Sir William Ruſſel diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the fight at Zutphen, on September 22, 1586, where the Spaniſh horſe were intirely defeated, though much ſuperior in number, and their Commanders taken priſoners. Stowe relates [u], from a journal of thoſe tranſactions, how Sir William Ruſſel behaved. "He charged ſo terribly, "that after he had broke his lance, he ſo plaid his part with "his cuttle-axe, that the enemy reported him to be a devil, "and not a man; for where he ſaw ſix or ſeven of the enemies "together, thither would he, and ſo behave with his cuttle-axe, "that he would ſeparate their friendſhip." On October 5 following, he [x] commanded a party of 600 horſe, ſent to intercept a convoy of proviſions the enemy deſigned to throw into Zutphen, which he prevented.

Queen Elizabeth, on February 1, 1587, by her patent recites [y], that by the death of the late Sir Philip Sidney, the town of Fluſhing is without a Governor: ſhe therefore confiding in the fidelity and ſufficiency of Sir William Ruſſel, Knt. makes choice of him to ſupply the place of Governor, and Captain of the ſaid town, with the rammekins and forts thereto belonging, and of the garriſon; authorizing him to puniſh by marital law, or otherways, as the cauſe ſhall require, ſuch of the ſaid garriſon, or other perſons reſorting, or remaining there, either by death, &c. according to the quality of their offence. He had alſo a precept to the High-Admiral of England, all Vice-Admirals, Captains, &c. Searchers of Ports, &c. and to all other Officers of the Cuſtoms, &c. Juſtices of the Peace, Mayors, Sheriffs, &c. to ſuffer him with his horſes, money, plate, armour, weapons, ammunition, &c. belonging to him and his private train, and to ſuch of his train as ſhall hereafter repair to him, to paſs

[t] Stow's Annals, p. 714. [u] Ibid. p. 737. [x] Ibid. [y] Rymer's Fœd. tom. xvi. p. 2, 3.

unmoleſted,

unmoleſted, and to be aiding in furniſhing him or them with ſhipping, veſſels, and other carriages, neceſſary for their tranſportation, at reaſonable prices.

On May 16, 1594, 36 Elizabeth, he [z] was conſtituted Lord Deputy of Ireland; and in July following, the Univerſity of Oxford, in convocation, in honour of having his education there, conferred on [a] him the degree of Maſter of Arts. He landed at the head of Hoath, on July 31, 1594, and the next day went to Dublin, but refuſed to accept of the ſword [b], till the Council had firſt given him in writing, under their hands, an account of the ſtate and condition of the kingdom; which being complied with, he was ſworn on Sunday, Auguſt 11, with great ſolemnity.

On Auguſt 19 he ſet out, by the advice of the Council, to relieve Iniſkilling, and after long marches over bogs, with great danger paſſed the river on the 30th with difficulty, and ſome loſs [c]; and then entered the caſtle of Iniſkilling without oppoſition, the enemy flying on his approach. He returned by eaſy marches, and came to Dublin on September 9.

He was afterwards very active in many expeditions againſt the rebels, and ſeveral of them being ſlain [d], and ſome taken, were publicly executed. But that great rebel Tir-Oen raiſing a rebellion in the North, the Lord Deputy, to ſtrengthen his ability in the management of the war [e], beſought the Queen to aſſiſt him with ſome able ſoldiers, and an experienced officer. Camden relates [f], that he had a mind for Baſkervill, before any other, though he did not go ſo far as to mention him; but clear contrary to his expectation, Sir John Norris was pitched upon.

He went over with 1300 veteran ſoldiers, who had ſerved in Bretagne and the Low-Countries, and with other ſupplies out of England, as Camden writes, who alſo gives an account that the rebels were able to muſter 1000 horſe, and 6280 foot in Ulſter, and 2300 in Connaught, every man of them at Tir-Oen's command. And among theſe were ſeveral experienced officers, trained in the exerciſe of war, ever ſince the Lord Deputy Perrot had appointed every Lord in Ulſter to have ſuch a number of men diſciplined to ſerve againſt the Iſland Scots.

The Lord Deputy had no great friendſhip for Sir John Norris; and Sir Richard Cox obſerves [g], that the claſhings and janglings, between theſe two ſpirited men, did very much prejudice the Queen's affairs: but that the Lord Deputy acted prudently and diſintereſtedly, appears from Camden, Borlace, and other au-

[z] Pat. 36 Eliz. p. 5. [a] Wood's Faſti Oxon. vol. i. p. 773. [b] Coxe's Hiſtory of Ireland, p. 403. [c] Ibid. p. 404. [d] Ibid. p. 405. [e] Borlace's Reduction of Ireland, p. 175. [f] Hiſtory of England, præd. p. 587. [g] Hiſtory of Ireland, p. 406.

thorities. The former gives this account [h]: "Sir John Norris "had orders to march againſt the rebels, to prevent the ſuccours "they expected out of Spain; for the Queen had given him the "principal command (to prevent any reflection that might fall "on the Lord Deputy) ſtiling him, *The General of the army in "Ulſter, in the abſence of the Lord Deputy*; and granted him an "abſolute power to pardon what male-contents he ſhould think "fit. With what deſign this was done, I cannot divine; but "moſt certainly it was the ſubject of general wonder, in re-"gard that the very eſſence of government ſeems to conſiſt in "its being lodged in the hands of one, and nothing being either "more monſtrous or miſchievous than a mixed or divided au-"thority. However, the Lord Deputy acted in conjunction "with him, and they advanced as far as Armagh, putting the "rebels into ſuch a conſternation, that Tir-Oen abandoned the "fort of Blackwater, ſet fire on the adjacent villages, and the "town of Dungannon, demoliſhed a great part of his own "houſe there, and looking on his affairs as quite deſperate, "began to look out for ſome fit place to abſcond in; but the "Loyaliſts made a halt for want of proviſion, and after placing "a garriſon in Armagh, returned back. They afterwards for-"tified the garriſon of Montaghan, and when they got pretty "near to Dundalk, the Lord Deputy, according to the inſtruc-"tions he had received, gave up the entire charge of the army "to Norris, and after ſeveral compliments and expreſſions of "civilities between them, returned to Dublin, and kept a ſtrict "eye on the affairs of Leinſter, Connaught, and Munſter;" *and happily managed them, whilſt no good effect came of the truce with Tir-Oen* (as Borlace [i] writes) *which in the end ſo much redounded to Norris's diſcontentment, that Tir-Oen by his diſſembling had mocked him, that ſhortly after he died.*

Camden gives this further account of that tranſaction: "Nor-"ris remained with a ſtrong army in Ulſter, and did nothing "anſwerable to the great hopes conceived of him; perhaps out "of an emulation againſt the Lord Deputy (which the Cour-"tiers endeavoured to foment by all the ſly arts they were "maſters of); the one being as little able to brook an equal, "as the other to endure a ſuperior. Norris gave ſo much cre-"dit to the fine harangues of Tir-Oen and his party, that he "blamed the Lord Deputy, as having dealt too rigidly with "Tir-Oen, when he refuſed to accept of any terms of an ac-"commodation at his hands. The Lord Deputy was really "perſuaded that Tir-Oen did nothing but make pretences of "delay, till the ſuccours which were expected arrived from "Spain. Wherefore he refuſed all terms or overtures of a "treaty, as ſo many tricks and artifices on his ſide, and as in-

[h] Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 588. [i] Reduction of Ireland, p. 176.

"conſiſtent

" conſiſtent with the Queen's honour, and his own reputation, " ſince they were the propoſals of a proclaimed rebel. Norris, " on the other ſide, conceived ſuch hopes of bringing him to " handſome terms, as to admit of a conference with him, which " ended in a truce."

It further appears, that Tir-Oen concluded the truce only to gain time, as Camden obſerves, and that baſe people flocked in every day to the rebels, *the Engliſh forces lying in the mean time unemployed, and at a great expence, and eating the Queen's faithful ſubjects out of houſe and home, becauſe it was provided by the treaty, that they ſhould not quarter in the enemy's country.*

The Lord Deputy, in the mean time [k], was in purſuit of another famous rebel, O-Maden, and laid ſiege to his caſtle of Clohon-O-Maden, the garriſon whereof, being ſummoned to ſurrender, made a rude anſwer: *That they would never deliver the Fort, were there as many Lord Deputies as ſingle perſons before the place.* But within a few days they ſtormed the caſtle, and put every man to the ſword.

The Lord Deputy made ſeveral other ſucceſsful expeditions againſt the rebels, and on September 18, 1596, made very good and neceſſary [l] orders for the army; viz. 1. That on their march they ſhould not ſtay above one night in a place, and then, without exaction, give money or ticket for their diet: 2. That there ſhall be but ſix women (and they ſoldiers wives) permitted to be laundreſſes to a company, and but one boy to two ſoldiers, and that neither women or boys be any charge to the country: 3. No falſe muſters, or any charge on the country for more men than really are: 4. That they ſhall be content with ſuch food as is reaſonable, and with a breakfaſt and ſupper, without exacting *Capury encreaſon*, or *Capury ne hairk*: 5. They ſhall not take the country garriſons without order or payment, nor depart from garriſon without leave. And laſtly, ſhall have their quarters aſſigned by the civil Magiſtrate.

General Norris was not pleaſed with theſe ſtrict orders [m], and therefore refuſed to ſign them; and when Tir-Oen had broke the truce, and attempted Armagh, which he blocked up, Norris ſo far eſpouſed his quarrel [n], as to write to the Council, that one good letter would have prevented the danger Armagh is in, covertly reprehending the Deputy's ſeverity. But the Council ſent him a ſmart anſwer, telling him, *Since he underſtood Tir-Oen's humour beſt, they left it to him to relieve Armagh by force or treaty, as he thought fit.*

The Lord Deputy, at his own requeſt [o], was recalled, and was ſucceeded by Thomas Lord Burrough, who received the ſword in St. Patrick's church, on May 22, 1597; at which Norris,

[k] Camden, ut antea. [l] Cox's Hiſtory, p. 409, 410. [m] Ibid. p. 410, 411. [n] Ibid. [o] Ibid. 413, and Borlaſe, p. 177.

who expected that honour, reſented things ſo deeply, and being much diſturbed that Tir-Oen had ſo often impoſed on him, he was, as Camden writes [p], overcome by the moſt effeminate of his paſſions, which turned to a diſtemper, and carried him off in a little time.

Sir William Ruſſel, after ſome ſtay in England, returned to his government of Fluſhing; and the next mention I find of him, is on King James's acceſſion to the Throne; when, on July 21, 1603, at Hampton-Court, in the Great Hall, the Queen preſent, he created ſeveral Peers [q], and among them this Sir William Ruſſel, by the ſtile and title of Lord Ruſſel, Baron Ruſſel of Thornhaugh, in com. Northamp.

I find this character of his Lordſhip [r]: *He was daring in his perſon, cloſe to his purpoſe, firm to his dependencies, of a deep and large ſoul, who looked on the chargeable war in Ireland as an equal remedy againſt a worſe in England; and adviſed the beſtowing of church lands among the Nobility of both perſuaſions in Ireland, as in England, who would then hold their religion, with their land,* in Capite, *and ſtick to the Queen, as the great ſupport of both.* He died on Auguſt 9, 1613, and was interred at Thornhaugh, in the Iſle of Ely, Northamptonſhire, where a monument is erected to his memory.

He married Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Henry Long, of Shengay in com. Cantab. Eſq; before-mentioned; and left iſſue an only ſon Francis, who on the death of Edward Ruſſel, Earl of Bedford, on May 3, 1627, was the fourth Earl of this family.

5. Lady Anne, eldeſt daughter of the before-mentioned Francis, ſecond Earl of Bedford, married Ambroſe Dudley, Earl of Warwick, and died on February 9, 1603.

6. Lady Elizabeth, ſecond daughter, married to William Bourchier, Earl of Bath, Lord Fitz-Warren, died on March 24, 1604, at Taveſtock in Devon, and is buried there, leaving one ſon, Edward Lord Fitz-Warren, and one daughter, the Lady Frances, who died afterwards unmarried, and is buried at Cheneys.

7. Lady Margaret, youngeſt daughter, married, on June 24, 1577, to George Clifford, third Earl of Cumberland, Baron Clifford, Weſtmoreland, and Veſey, Knight of the Garter; and by him had an only ſurviving child, Lady Anne, the wife of Richard Sackville, Earl of Dorſet. She died on May 24, 1616, at Browgham-caſtle, and is buried in the pariſh church of St. Lawrence of Appleby in Cumberland, where a monument is erected to her memory.

[p] Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 603. [q] Stow's Annals, p. 826, and Pat. 1 Jac. I. p. 14. [r] State Worthies, p. 629.

Francis,

Francis, ſon of William Lord Ruſſel of Thornhaugh (who was youngeſt ſon of Francis, ſecond Earl of Bedford) ſucceeded his couſin Edward, as fourth Earl of Bedford, on May 3, 1627, and in 1630, 6 Car. I. became the principal undertaker in that great and chargeable work of draining thoſe fens, called the Great Level, and ſince Bedford Levels, which extend into the counties of Northampton, Cambridge, Huntingdon, Norfolk, and Lincoln. The ſame year his Lordſhip, with the Earl of Clare, Sir Robert Cotton, Mr. Selden, and Mr. St. John (famous antiquaries) [s] were committed for diſperſing a book wrote by Sir Robert Dudley; but Sir David Fowlis diſcovering the author, they were releaſed. In 11 Car. I. he was in commiſſion with [t] Edward Earl of Dorſet, Henry Earl of Mancheſter, Francis Lord Cottington, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Edward Lord Newburgh, Chancellor of the Dutchy of Lancaſter, George Lord Goring, Maſter of the Horſe to the Queen, Sir Thomas Jermin, Knt. Vice-chamberlain of the Houſhold, Sir Henry Vane, Knt. Comptroller of the Houſhold, and Sir Thomas Trevor, Knt. Baron of the Exchequer, to enquire into defective titles, and to bargain and ſell, and convey all ſuch lordſhips, manors, &c. according to a ſchedule annexed.

In 1640, waiting on his Majeſty at York, he was, with other Lords, all popular men, as my Lord Clarendon writes [Hiſt. Rebel. 8vo. vol. i. p. 155.] empowered to treat with Commiſſioners on the part of Scotland, for preventing all acts of hoſtility, and redreſſing the grievances of the Scotch nation, which ended in a ceſſation of arms, and an adjournment of the treaty from Rippon to London. After which, on Auguſt 28, 1640 [u], he was the firſt of thoſe noble Peers who ſigned a petition, which by ſome of their number they ſent to the King at York, ſetting forth, "The apprehenſions they had of the dan-"gers of the church and ſtate, and to his perſon, and the means "to prevent them; and adviſed his Majeſty to call a Parlia-"ment, whereby the cauſes of their grievances may be taken "away, and the authors and counſellors puniſhed."

The Earl of Clarendon gives this account of him: "That in "the Houſe of Peers he was the great contriver and principal "agent of thoſe who were for aſſerting the liberty of the ſub-"ject; but a wiſe man, and of too great and plentiful a for-"tune to wiſh a ſubverſion of the government; and it quickly "appeared, that he only intended to make himſelf and his friends "great at Court, not at all to leſſen the Court itſelf; and, that "Mr. Pym, though known to be inclined to the *Puritan Fac-*"*tion*, was not of thoſe furious reſolutions againſt the church as

[s] Whitelock's Memorials, p. 14. [t] Rymer's Fœdera, tome xix. p. 670.
[u] Whitelock, p. 35.

" the other leading men were, and wholly devoted to the Earl " of Bedford, who had nothing of that ſpirit." Alſo, *His Majeſty having declared to his people, that He really intended a reformation of all thoſe extravagancies, which former neceſſities, or occaſions, or miſtakes, had brought into the government of church or ſtate: He could not give a more lively and demonſtrable evidence, and a more gracious inſtance of ſuch his intention, than by calling ſuch perſons to his Council, whom the people generally thought moſt inclined to, and intent upon, ſuch Reformation; and, that this would be a good means to preſerve the dignity and juſt power of that board, which might otherwiſe, on the account of the late exceſs and violation, be more ſubject to inconvenient attempts for the future.*

" Hereupon, as the noble author before-mentioned relates, in " one day were ſworn Privy-Counſellors, much to the publick " joy, the Earl of Hertford (whom the King afterwards made " Marquis) the Earl of Bedford, the Earl of Eſſex, the Earl " of Briſtol, the Lord Say, the Lord Savile, and the Lord Kim- " bolton; and within two or three days after, the Earl of War- " wick; being all perſons at that time very gracious to the peo- " ple, or to the Scots, by whoſe election and diſcretion the peo- " ple choſe, and had been All in ſome umbrage at Court, and " moſt in viſible diſfavour there. This act the King did very " chearfully; heartily inclined to ſome of them, as he had rea- " ſon; and not apprehending any inconvenience by that act " from the others, whom He thought this light of his grace " would reform, or at leaſt reſtrain."

And the King confiding in the Earl of Bedford, propoſed to make him Lord Treaſurer; but the Earl was reſolved, " That " he would not enter into the treaſury, 'till the revenue was in " ſome degree ſettled; at leaſt, the bill for tonnage and pound- " age paſſed, with all decent circumſtances, and for life; " which both he and Mr. Pym did very heartily labour to ef- " fect; and had in their thoughts many good expedients, by " which they intended to raiſe the revenue of the Crown. And " none of them were very ſollicitous to take their promotions, " before ſome other accommodations were provided for ſome of " the reſt of their chief companions; who would be neither " well pleaſed with their ſo haſty advancement before them, " nor ſo ſubmiſſive in the future to follow their dictates."

When the bill was brought into the Houſe of Commons, to take away the Biſhops votes in Parliament, the Earl of Clarendon relates, That ſeveral of the popular Lords conſented to it, *believing it could do the church no harm by the Biſhops having fewer diverſions from their ſpiritual charges:* " And that the Earl of " Bedford had no deſire, that there ſhould be any alteration in " the government of the church; and had always lived, to-

" wards

" wards my Lord of Canterbury himſelf, with all reſpect and " reverence, and frequently viſited and dined with him; ſub- " ſcribed liberally to the repair of St. Paul's church, and ſe- " conded all pious undertakings; though it is true, he did not " diſcountenance, notoriouſly, thoſe of the Clergy who were un- " conformable." The noble author alſo relates, that diſcourſing with the Earl, " He lamented the miſery the kingdom was like " to fall into, by their own violence and want of temper, in the " proſecution of their own happineſs." He [the Earl of Bedford] ſaid, *This buſineſs, concerning the Earl of Strafford, was a rock upon which we ſhould all ſplit, and that the paſſion of the Parliament would deſtroy the kingdom. That the King was ready to do all they could deſire, if the life of the Earl of Strafford might be ſpared: that his Majeſty was ſatisfied that he had proceeded with more paſſion in many things than he ought to have done, by which he had rendered himſelf uſeleſs to his ſervice for the future; and therefore, He was well content, that he might be made incapable of any employment for the time to come; and that he ſhould be baniſhed or impriſoned for his life, as They ſhould chooſe: that if they would take his death upon them, by their own judicatory, He would not interpoſe any act of his own conſcience: but ſince They had declined that way, and meant to proceed by an act of Parliament, to which He himſelf muſt be a party, that it could not conſiſt with his conſcience, ever to give His* Royal Aſſent *to that act; becauſe, having been preſent at the whole trial* (as he had been, in a box provided on purpoſe, *incognito*, though conſpicuous enough) *and heard all the teſtimony They had given againſt him, He had heard nothing proved, by which he could believe that he was a traitor, either in fact, or in intention; and therefore his Majeſty did moſt earneſtly deſire, that the two Houſes would not bring Him a bill to paſs, which in conſcience he could not, and would not conſent to.*

The Earl continued, *That though he yet was ſatisfied ſo well in his own conſcience, that he believed he ſhould have no ſcruple in giving his own vote for the paſſing it* (for it yet depended in the Lords Houſe) *he knew not how the King could be preſſed to do an act ſo contrary to his own conſcience, and that for his part, he took all the pains he could to perſuade his friends to decline their violent proſecution, and to be content with the remedy propoſed by the King; which he thought might be rendered ſo ſecure, that there need remain no fears of that man's ever appearing again in buſineſs; and that how difficult a work ſoever he found it to be, he ſhould not deſpair of it, if he could perſuade the Earl of Eſſex to comply; but that he found him ſo obſtinate, that he could not in the leaſt degree prevail with him; that he had left his brother, the Earl of Hertford* (who was that day made a Marquis) *in the lower ground, walking with him, who he knew would do all he could*; and he deſired Mr. Hyde to walk down into that place, and take his

turn to perſuade the Earl of Eſſex to what was reaſonable; which he was very willing to do.

The Earl of Bedford had alſo ſo much the intereſt of his country at heart, that when a propoſition was made to bring the army from the North to London, to awe the Parliament, which was diſcloſed to him, he thought it the more prudent way only to hinder the ill effects of ſuch advice, without making it public. Of which the Earl of Clarendon gives this account: "The diſcovery being made to the Earl of Bedford, the Lord "Say, and the Lord Kimbolton, and no doubt by Them com- "municated to their chief aſſociates; as dangerous as the de- "ſign was afterwards alledged to be, it was not publiſhed in "three months after to the Houſes, againſt whom the deſign "was intended, nor 'till long after the death of the Earl of "Bedford; who, no doubt, rather deſired to bind up thoſe "wounds which were made, than to make them wider, by "entertaining new jealouſies between King and people; and "would not conſent to the extending and extorting conclu- "ſions, which did not naturally flow from the premiſes; with- "out which, this ſo uſeful a treaſon to them could not have "been made up."

His deſire to preſerve the peace of the kingdom cannot better be expreſſed, than in the Earl of Clarendon's words, who attributes to his death one of the great cauſes of thoſe diviſions which rent the nation:

"The other accident (ſays the noble author) that fell out, "during the time that the buſineſs of the Earl of Strafford was "agitated, and by which he received much prejudice, was the "death of the Earl of Bedford. This Lord was the greateſt "perſon of intereſt in all the popular party, being of the beſt "eſtate, and beſt underſtanding, of the whole number; and "therefore moſt like to govern the reſt. He was, beſides, of "great civility, and of much more good nature, than any of "the other. And therefore the King reſolving to do his buſi- "neſs with that party by him, reſolved to make him Lord High- "Treaſurer of England, in the place of the Biſhop of London, "who was as willing to lay down the office, as any body was "to take it up. And to gratify him the more, at his deſire, "intended to make Mr. Pym Chancellor of the Exchequer, as "he had done Mr. Saint-John his Sollicitor General (all which "hath been touched before) as alſo that Mr. Hollis was to be "Secretary of State, the Lord Say Maſter of the Wards, and "the Lord Kimbolton to be Lord Privy-Seal after the death "of his father, who then held that place. Others were to "be placed about the Prince, and to have offices when they "fell.

" The Earl of Bedford ſecretly undertook to his Majeſty, " that the Earl of Strafford's life ſhould be preſerved; and to " procure his revenue to be ſettled, as amply as any of his pro- " genitors, the which he intended ſo really, that, to my know- " ledge, he had it in deſign to endeavour to obtain an act for " the ſetting up the Exciſe in England, as the only natural " means to advance the King's profit. He fell ſick within a " week after the bill of attainder was ſent up to the Lords Houſe, " and died ſhortly after, much afflicted with the paſſion and " fury which he perceived his party inclined to, inſomuch as " he declared to ſome of near truſt to him, *That he feared the* " *rage and madneſs of this Parliament, would bring more prejudice* " *and miſchief to the kingdom, than it had ever ſuſtained by the long* " *intermiſſion of Parliaments.* He was a wiſe man, and would " have propoſed and adviſed moderate courſes; but was not " incapable, for want of reſolution, of being carried into vio- " lent ones, if his advice were not ſubmitted to: and therefore " many, who knew him well, thought his death not unſeaſon- " able, as well to his fame, as his fortune; and that it reſcued " him as well from ſome poſſible guilt, as from ſome viſible " misfortunes which men of all conditions have ſince under- " gone."

This noble Earl died [x] of the ſmall-pox on Sunday, May 9, 1641, and was buried at Cheneys.

In the Hiſtory of the Troubles and Trial of Archbiſhop Laud, wrote by himſelf, folio 178, is the following account of him:

This Lord was one of the main plotters of Strafford's death; and I know where he with other Lords, before the Parliament ſat down, reſolved to have his blood. But God would not let him live to take joy therein, but cut him off in the morning, whereas the bill for the Earl of Strafford's death was not ſigned till night.

How much miſtaken the Archbiſhop was, appears by what I have before cited from the Earl of Clarendon, who poſitively affirms, he undertook to ſave the Earl of Strafford's life; and though he might die on the day the bill was ſigned, yet he was ill for above a week of the ſmall-pox, which at length brought him to his end.

He married Catherine, ſole daughter and heir of Giles Bridges, Lord Chandos, and by her (who died on January 29, 1653-4) had four ſons, and as many daughters; viz. Catherine, the eldeſt, married to Robert Greville, Lord Brooke; Anne, to George Digby, ſecond Earl of Briſtol; Margaret, firſt, to James Hay, ſecond Earl of Carliſle, ſecondly, to Edward Montague, ſecond Earl of Mancheſter, and thirdly, to Robert Rich, fifth Earl of Warwick, and ſecond Earl of Holland, but

[x] Peck's Deſiderata Curioſa, vol. ii. lib. 14. p. 16.

without iſſue by any of them; and Diana, to Francis, Lord Newport, anceſtor to the late Earls of Bradford.

His ſons were William; Francis; John, hereafter mentioned; and Edward, who by his wife Penelope, daughter to Sir Moſes Hill of Hillſborough-caſtle in the kingdom of Ireland (anceſtor to the preſent Earl of Hillſborough) and widow of Sir William Brook, Knight of the Bath, had five ſons and two daughters; and departing this life on September 21, 1665, was ſucceeded by William his eldeſt ſon, who died unmarried, 1674, and was ſucceeded by Edward, his ſecond brother, after Earl of Orford, the others being John, Francis, and James. The daughters of Edward Ruſſel, fourth ſon of the Earl of Bedford, were Letitia, and Catherine, married to Captain William Harbord, a younger ſon of Sir Charles Harbord. The eldeſt, Letitia, was married to Thomas Cheek, of Pirgo in the county of Eſſex, Eſq; and by him had a daughter Anne, their heir, married to Sir Thomas Tipping, of Whitfield in the county of Oxford, Bart. who dying on January 21, 1727-8, left two daughters, his heirs; Letitia, married to Samuel Lord Sandys, and Catherine, to Thomas Lord Archer.

Edward, the ſecond ſon of Edward Ruſſel and Penelope Hill, before-mentioned, was very much employed in carrying on the correſpondence between the male-contents in England and the Prince of Orange in Holland, with whom he came over in 1688; and upon the advancement of his Highneſs to the Throne, was made one of his Privy-Council.

In 1691 (having been bred up in naval affairs) he firſt became Admiral of the Blue Squadron, and then was advanced to the Command of the whole Navy, and made Treaſurer of the ſame, on April 4, 1689, 1 William and Mary [y], and on May 19, 1692, gave a total overthrow to the French fleet, under the command of Monſieur de Tourville, at La Hogue, forcing them to fly; and in the purſuit (beſides ſix conſiderable ſhips burnt by Vice-Admiral De la Val, near Cape de Wick) deſtroyed thirteen of their men of war, and ſeveral of their tranſports, whereof ſix were three-deck ſhips, and the reſt carried from ſixty to ſeventy guns. For that action, he was made firſt Commiſſioner of the Admiralty; and on November 11 following [z], the Commons in Parliament came to a reſolution, That the thanks of their Houſe be given to Admiral Ruſſel, for his great courage and conduct, in the victory obtained at ſea the laſt ſummer. Moreover, on December 20 following, they came [a] to another reſolution, "That Admiral Ruſſel in his "command of the fleet, during the laſt ſummer's expedition, "had behaved himſelf with fidelity, courage, and conduct."

[y] Pat. 1 William and Mary. [z] Votes of the Houſe of Commons, 1692, N° 9. [a] Ibid. N° 36.

And

And reſolved, "that the ſaid reſolution be communicated to "the Lords at a conference." On March 23, 1692-3, he was conſtituted Treaſurer of his Majeſty's Chamber.

In 1694, he ſailed with the fleet for the Mediterranean, where he prevented the deſign of the French againſt Barcelona; and in March, 1695-6, by his diligence, alſo prevented the deſigned invaſion in favour of King James, who lay with a French army, ready to embark, near Diepe; for ſteering over to the coaſts of France with the Engliſh fleet under his command, he diſappointed that unfortunate Monarch's ſetting ſail for England. For theſe and other his ſervices, he was, on May 7, 1697, the 9th of William III. created Baron of Shingey, in the county of Cambridge, Viſcount Barfleur, in the Dutchy of Normandy, and Earl of Orford, in the county of Suffolk, with remainder of Baron of Shingey to the iſſue-male of Letitia, his eldeſt ſiſter.

He was alſo by King William made Vice-Admiral of England, and twice one of the Lords Juſtices whilſt his Majeſty went to Holland. By Queen Anne he was appointed one of the Commiſſioners to treat of an union between England and Scotland, and made one of her Privy-Council, and firſt Lord Commiſſioner of the Admiralty, on November 8, 1709. Alſo upon her deceaſe, was nominated by George I. to be one of the Lords Juſtices till he arrived from Hanover; after which, he was appointed one of the Privy-Council, and again made firſt Commiſſioner of the Admiralty.

He married the Lady Margaret, third and youngeſt daughter to William, the firſt Duke of Bedford, his father's brother; but having no iſſue, and dying on November 26, 1727, in the ſeventy-fifth year of his age, left his houſe in Covent-Garden, London, to Thomas Archer, now Lord Archer; and his fine ſeat at Chipenham, in the county of Cambridge, to his niece, Anne, widow of Sir Thomas Tipping aforeſaid.

I now return to William, Francis, and John, the three eldeſt ſons of Francis, fourth Earl of Bedford, by Catherine Bridges, his wife before-mentioned; whereof Francis [b] died a month before his father, in France, unmarried; and John, the youngeſt, was a Colonel in the Civil Wars for Charles I. and in 1660, after the Reſtauration of Charles II. was made Colonel of the firſt regiment of foot-guards, which he kept till 1681, when he died unmarried.

William, the eldeſt ſon, fifth Earl and firſt Duke of Bedford, had his education [c] in Magdalen-college in Oxford, was made Knight of the Bath [d] at the coronation of Charles I. and in 1637 married Anne, daughter of Robert Carr, Earl of Somerſet.

[b] Peck's Deſiderata Curioſa præd. Trial of William Lord Ruſſel.

[c] Earl of Angleſey's Speech in the

[d] Catalogue of Knights, MS.

He

He was a Member of that fatal Parliament which met at Weſtminſter on November 3, 1640[e], and the Houſe of Commons on their firſt meeting, taking into conſideration the ſtate of the nation, it was moved that both Houſes might jointly addreſs the King for a faſt; and a meſſage being ſent to the Lords, they appointed twelve of their Houſe for a conference with the Commons. Whereupon the Lord Ruſſel[f] was one of the twenty-four of the principal Commoners, who were to conſider of motives to be preſented to the Lords thereupon, and to manage the conference. Alſo, on April 24, 1641, he was[g] ſent by the Commons to the Lords, to deſire a conference by a Committee of both Houſes, on a petition of the citizens of London, ſetting forth their grievances.

His Lordſhip, on May 9 following, ſucceeded his father in his honour and eſtate; at which time all things were tending to an open rupture between the King and his Parliament. His Lordſhip, who had then one of the beſt eſtates in the kingdom, accepted the command of General of the Horſe in the Parliament's ſervice, which was conferred on[h] him on July 14, 1642: but that he had no ill deſign in it, may be collected from what the Earl of Clarendon has obſerved[i], who ſays, the party were prepoſſeſſed with an opinion, that on the firſt appearance of their army, the King would be conſtrained to return to his Parliament. And this Earl of Bedford afterwards ſhewed his good judgment in deteſting the paſſions and wickedneſſes of thoſe men, who were for deſtroying and ſubverting the antient conſtitution of this kingdom.

The Marquis of Hertford, being ſent by the King into the Weſt to raiſe forces, in order to relieve Portſmouth, the Earl of Bedford had the command of 7000 foot, and eight full troops of horſe[k], to prevent his making head in thoſe parts; and marched with ſuch expedition, that he obliged the Marquis to relinquiſh Somerſetſhire, where (as Lord Clarendon obſerves) his power and intereſt were believed unqueſtionable, and ſo prevented that Nobleman from raiſing an army for his Majeſty in the Weſt. After which he joined the Earl of Eſſex, and in the battle of Edgehill, fought on October 23, 1642, commanded the reſerve of horſe, which ſaved the whole army, when the horſe of both wings had been defeated; and after doing great execution on the King's infantry, brought off their own foot; this reſerve being the only forces that ſtood their ground in good order.

In 1643, the Earls of Bedford[l], Holland, and Clare, concurred with the Earl of Eſſex, who was weary of the war, and

[e] Ruſhworth's Collections, vol. iv. p. 29, 30. [f] Ibid. p. 223, 224. [g] Ibid. p. 756. [h] Hiſtory of the Rebellion, folio, vol. ii. p. 14. [i] Ibid. p. 5, 15, 16. [k] Clarendon, ibid. p. 34, 35, 37. [l] Ibid. p. 245, 247. and Whitelocks's Memorials, p. 58, 67, 75.

influenced

influenced the Houſe of Lords ſo, that they deſired a conference with the Commons (on Auguſt 5, 1643) and declared to them, That they were reſolved to ſend propoſitions to the King, and they hoped they would concur in them: but by the artifice of Pennington, Lord Mayor of London, and the Commons, ſuch tumults were raiſed to terrify the Lords, that they left the town; the Commons refuſing to agree to their propoſitions.

The Earl of Bedford, and the Earl of Holland, after this diſappointment, reſolved to go to the King at Oxford [m]; but their purpoſe being diſcovered, or ſuſpected, they with ſome difficulty got into his Majeſty's garriſon at Wallingford, from whence the Governor gave advertiſement of their arrival to the Council at Oxford. The King was then (viz. Auguſt, 1643) at the ſiege of Glouceſter, and the Council had debated whether they ſhould be admitted to come to Oxford, or return from whence they came; but no determination was thereon, till the King came purpoſely from the ſiege for one day. The Earl of Clarendon obſerves [n], "It cannot be enough wondered at, that "there ſhould be any difference of opinion in that matter; but "it cannot be expreſſed with how much earneſtneſs and unreaſonableneſs the whole was debated, and how warmly even "they, who in all other debates ſtill expreſſed all moderation and "temper, did now oppoſe the receiving thoſe Lords with any "grace; with more paſſion, and other reaſons, than had been "offered in their former conferences. Some moved, that they "might not be ſuffered to come to Oxford, or where the King "ſhould be, but have permiſſion to live in ſome other place in "the King's quarters, until they ſhould manifeſt their affections "by ſome ſervice. Others moved, that they might be kept "priſoners of war, ſince they came into the King's quarters "without any paſs. And others propoſed (who thought this "too ſevere and unpolitic) their coming to Oxford, but not "to come to Court, nor no Privy-Counſellor to viſit them. "Sir Edward Hyde, Chancellor of the Exchequer, and the "Lord Savile, were the only two of the Council who were for "receiving of them kindly."

The firſt, as he writes in his Hiſtory of the Rebellion, confidently adviſed, "That they might be very graciouſly received "by both their Majeſties, and civilly viſited by every body, that "other men, by the entertainment that they received, might be "encouraged to deſert the Parliament too. There was one argu"ment againſt their admiſſion urged very loudly, *That it would "diſturb the peace of the place*, the Earl of Bedford having "commanded that part of the army, which infeſted the Mar"quis of Hertford at his being at Sherbourn. And the Mar"quis thereupon ſending a challenge to the Earl to fight him,

[m] Clarendon, p. 250, 251. [n] Ibid. p. 253, 254.

"which

" which he with great reaſon declined at that time; anſwering, " *He would be ready when the buſineſs of the Parliament ſhould be* " *over, to wait upon the Marquis, when he ſhould require it.* " And it was ſaid, the Marquis would exact the performance " of his promiſe;" which (as Lord Clarendon writes) he was too wiſe to do.

" During the debate, the King did not expreſs any thing of " his own ſenſe, but afterwards gave orders to the Governor of " Wallingford to permit them to continue their journey to Ox- " ford, where all men might uſe what civilities they pleaſed to " them, and that himſelf and the Queen would do that towards " them, which upon their application and addreſs they ſhould " think fit." Which, Lord Clarendon obſerves, was not grateful to the table: though, as that noble author relates [o], *The Earl of Bedford had given up his commiſſion of General of the Horſe, and quitted the ſervice, and never had any affection to their ways, in his judgment.*

The Earl of Bedford [p] was much mortified with the time he had been forced to ſpend at Wallingford, and with the diſputation he heard had been held concerning him. The Earl had friends enough to provide for his accommodation in convenient lodgings at Oxford, but he choſe to take up his abode in Magdalen-college, of which houſe he had been a member.

After ſome days ſtay, he offered his ſervice to the King in his army before Glouceſter, and his Majeſty accepting of it, he waited on him there at the ſiege, and throughout his march: and, further, as the Earl of Clarendon writes, *charged in the King's regiment of horſe at the* [firſt] *battle of Newbury* [Sept. 20, 1643] *very bravely, and behaved himſelf throughout very well.* He aſked the King's pardon, when he firſt kiſſed his hand, and wiſely took it out under the Great Seal of England.

On his return to Oxford [q], the King on all occaſions ſpoke very graciouſly to him; but he was not well looked upon by many of his Court; ſo that the Earl of Holland going firſt, the Earl of Bedford and the Earl of Clare followed (who had alſo gone to the King's quarters) and came to [r] the Earl of Eſſex at St. Alban's, on Chriſtmas-day, 1643. Soon after, by order of Parliament, the Earl of Bedford was taken into cuſtody of the Black-Rod, and his eſtate was ſequeſtered, as was alſo the Earl of Clare's, till the Parliament, elevated with their ſucceſſes againſt the King in 1644, in a kind temper (as Whitelock [s] writes) ordered their ſequeſtrations to be taken off: but the Earl of Bedford [t] never after ſat in the Houſe of Peers, or concurred in any of their Councils during the uſurpation.

[o] Hiſtory of the Rebellion, vol. ii. p. 255. [p] Ibid. p. 257. [q] Ibid. p. 279. [r] Whitelock, p. 75. [s] Ibid. p. 90. [t] Clarendon, p. 283.

When

When the Houſe of Peers met, on April 25, 1660 [u], they ordered the Earl of Mancheſter, their Speaker, to write to the Earl of Bedford to take his place in their Houſe; which he accordingly did, believing they deſigned to reſtore the King. On Friday, April 27, 1660, the Lords ordered a conference with the Houſe of Commons, "to conſider of ſome way and means to "make up the breaches and diſtractions of this kingdom;" and the Earl of Bedford was one of the Lords appointed to manage the conference. He heartily concurred in all the meaſures for the reſtoration of the King; and, on May 15, was one of thoſe Peers, appointed "to view and conſider of what ordinances "had been made ſince the Lords and Parliament were voted "uſeleſs, which now paſs as acts of Parliament; and to draw "up and prepare an act to preſent to the Houſe, to repeal what "they think fit, and the Lord Chief Baron Wild, and Serjeant "Mallet, to aſſiſt them."

After the happy reſtoration of King Charles II. the Earl of Bedford was ſo far in his favour, that at the ſolemnity of his coronation, on April 23, 1661, he had the honour to carry St. Edward's Scepter; and, on May 29, 1672, was elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter.

On the exaltation of the Prince and Princeſs of Orange to the Throne, he was ſworn one of their Privy-Council; and at their coronation, on April 11, 1689, carried the Queen's Scepter with the Dove. They conſtituted his Lordſhip, on May 10, 1689, Lord Lieutenant of the counties of Bedford and Cambridge; and, on March 1, 1691, Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum for the county of Middleſex, and the liberties of Weſtminſter. He ſought for no other honours or employments; but their Majeſties, on May 11, 1694, the 6th of William and Mary, created him Marquis of Taveſtock, and Duke of Bedford, and for beſtowing thoſe honours, it is ſet forth [x]:

"That this was not the leaſt, that he was father to the Lord "Ruſſel, the ornament of his age, whoſe great merits it was "not enough to tranſmit by hiſtory to poſterity; but they were "willing to record them in their Royal Patent, to remain in "the family, as a monument conſecrated to his conſummate "virtue; whoſe name could never be forgot, ſo long as men "preſerved any eſteem for ſanctity of manners, greatneſs of "mind, and a love to their country, conſtant even to death. "Therefore to ſolace his excellent father for ſo great a loſs, to "celebrate the memory of ſo noble a ſon, and to excite his "worthy grandſon, the heir of ſuch mighty hopes, more cheer-"fully to emulate and follow the example of his illuſtrious

[u] Journal Dom. Procer. an. 1660.

[x] Pat. 6 William & Mary.

"father,

" father, they intailed this high dignity upon the Earl and his " poſterity."

This Duke, in the year 1695, having ſettled all things in reference to his grandſon's marrying Elizabeth, only daughter and heir of John Howland, of Stretham, Eſq; who was one of the greateſt fortunes of that time, it was thought convenient, for the honour of this alliance, to make him Baron Howland, of Stretham in Surry, on June 13 the ſame year. His Grace departed this life in the eighty-ſeventh year of his age, on September 7, 1700, and was buried with his anceſtors at Cheneys, where a moſt noble monument is erected for him and his Counteſs, before-mentioned (who died on May 10, 1684, aged ſixty-four) their two figures being exhibeted under a canopy, ſupported by two pillars of the Corinthian order. Their children that lived to maturity, were as follow:

1. Francis, Lord Ruſſel, who died A. D. 1679 [unmarried, aged forty-one;] 2. William, Lord Ruſſel; 3. Lord Edward; 4. Lord Robert; 5. Lord James; 6. George; 7. Lady Anne; 8. Lady Diana; 9. Lady Margaret; whereof Lady Anne died unmarried.

Lady Diana, born on April 9, 1652, was firſt married, in Auguſt, 1667, to Sir Grevil Verney, of Compton Verney in com. Warwick, Knight of the Bath; and, ſecondly, to William Lord Allington, of Horſeheath in the county of Cambridge; and Lady Margaret, born on Auguſt 31, 1656, was the wife of Edward Ruſſel, Earl of Orford, before-mentioned.

I ſhall diſtinctly treat of the Lord William.

Lord Edward, third ſon, married, in 1688, Frances, widow of ——— Lloyd, Eſq; and died without iſſue, on June 30, 1714, in the ſeventy-ſecond year of his age. He was choſen ſeven times one of the [y] Knights for the county of Bedford, viz. in the firſt Parliament called by King William and Queen Mary, to that convened in 1702, incluſive; and, on November 22, 1700, he was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Middleſex, during the minority of Wriotheſley Duke of Bedford.

Lord Robert, fourth ſon, was conſtituted Clerk of the Pipe on Auguſt 31 [z], 1689, 1 William and Mary, and having married Letitia, widow of Thomas Cheek, of Pirgo in the county of Eſſex aforeſaid, Eſq; died without iſſue; and his Lady deceaſed on January 8, 1722.

Lord James, fifth ſon, had a learned education in Magdalen-college in Oxford [a], and took the degree of M. A. on Feb. 4, 1666-7. He was ſeated at Maidwell, in the county of Northampton, and died on June 22, 1712, leaving an only daughter,

[y] Willis's Not. Parliament, vol. i. p. 9.
[z] Pat. 1 William and Mary.
[a] Wood's Faſti Oxon.

the wife of Thomas Scawen, of Carſhalton in Surry, Eſq; Knight of the Shire for Surry. His Lady, ſurviving him, married to her ſecond huſband Sir Henry Houghton, of Houghton-tower in Lancaſhire, Bart. and died at Reading, on her return from the Bath, on September 1, 1736.

George, youngeſt ſon, was alſo of Magdalen-college, and took the degree [b] of M. A. on February 4, 1666-7, with his brother, the Lord James. He married Mary, daughter and heir of Mr. Pendleton, Merchant of London; and died in the year 1692, leaving iſſue a ſon William, who died unmarried.

William Lord Ruſſel, ſecond ſon, before-mentioned, was elected to ſit in Parliament for the county of Bedford, in 1678-9, 31 Charles II. and that Parliament being diſſolved by the King's ſpecial order, to the general ſurprize of the Council, who were conſulted upon it, of which this Lord Ruſſel [c] was one, and another called to aſſemble in October, 1679 [d], he was elected one of the Knights of the Shire for the county of Southampton [e], as alſo for Bedfordſhire. But that Parliament did not ſit for the diſpatch of buſineſs till October 21, 1680, being prorogued by ſeveral royal proclamations; and the Lord Ruſſel [f], with the Lord Cavendiſh, and Sir Henry Capel, on Jan. 31, 1679-80, prayed the King to give them leave to withdraw from the Council-board, to which, as it was publiſhed, on February 2, in the Gazette, N° 1482, *His Majeſty was pleaſed to anſwer, with all his heart.* In the Parliament called to meet at Oxford, on March 21, 1680-1 [g], he was again choſen for the county of Bedford, and ſpoke with great vehemency for the bill of excluſion. "He was (ſays Biſhop [h] Burnet) a man of great candor, "and of a general reputation, univerſally beloved and truſted; "of a generous and obliging temper. He had given ſuch proofs "of an undaunted courage, and of an unſhaken firmneſs, that "I never knew any man have ſo entire a credit in the nation "as he had. He quickly got out of ſome of the diſorders into "which the Court had drawn him: and ever after that, his "life was unblemiſhed in all reſpects. He had, from his firſt "education, an inclination to favour the *Non-conformiſts*; and "wiſhed the laws could have been made to them, or they more "pliant to the law. He was a ſlow man, and of little diſ-"courſe: but he had a true judgment, when he conſidered "things at his own leiſure. His underſtanding was not de-"fective; but his virtues were ſo eminent, that they would "more than balance real defects, if any had been found in the "other."

[b] Wood's Faſti Oxon. præd, [c] Temple's Memoirs, part iii. p. 64. [d] Willis's Not. Parl. MS. in Com. Southamp. [e] Ibid. vol. i. p. 9. [f] Temple's Memoirs, p. 95. [g] Not. Parl. præf. [h] Hiſt. of his Own Time, vol. i.

Sir

Sir Robert Atkins, in his defence printed in 1689, ſays of his Lordſhip (p. 7.) "And though I had a very ſmall and ſhort "acquaintance with him, yet no man, that has known any "thing of the publick affairs, or of our late tranſactions, could "be a meer ſtranger to his great worth. He had as great a "name, for a true honeſt Engliſh Gentleman, and for good "temper, prudence, and moderation, as ever I knew any man "have; and was generally beloved by all that love our religion "and country."

His going publicly to Weſtminſter-hall [i], and there, on June 16, 1680, at the King's Bench, preſenting the Duke of York as a recuſant; and the eagerneſs he ſhewed for the bill of excluſion of his Royal Highneſs, which he carried up to the Houſe of Lords, on November 15, 1680, at the head of more than 200 of the Houſe of Commons, gave the friends of the government no favourable idea of his principles. Sir William Temple writes [k], that his ſetting himſelf at the head of theſe affairs, had a great influence on the Houſe, *being a perſon in general repute of an honeſt worthy Gentleman, without tricks or private ambition, who was known to venture as great a ſtake as any ſubject of England.* He was accuſed of being concerned in the Rye-houſe plot; and though he knew of a meſſenger being ſent for him, before he was apprehended, and might have gone away, he ſuſpected that would give the Court too great an advantage, and look like confeſſing of guilt.

He was brought on his trial at the Old Bailey, on July 13, 1683. Unfortunately for his Lordſhip, it was proved that he had been more than once in company with traitors, when treaſonable purpoſes were the principal topic of converſation; it being a maxim in law, that any perſon preſent, though he ſays nothing, is preſumed to give his conſent; and it is miſpriſion of treaſon, if he do not diſcover their deſigns the firſt time. He ſpoke little to the fact; for being adviſed not to tell the whole truth, he ſaid he could not ſpeak againſt that he knew to be true, though in ſome particulars it had been carried beyond the truth; and ſo he left it wholly to the *jury*, who brought in their verdict againſt him for high-treaſon, upon which he received ſentence of death. For further information, as to this ill-fated Nobleman, we refer our readers to his Lordſhip's trial, and the narrative of Ford Lord Grey of Werk, one of the conſpirators.

He had ſuch magnanimity afterwards, when the Lord Cavendiſh offered to change cloaths with him in the priſon, and remain there whilſt he made his eſcape, that he would not ſuffer him to expoſe himſelf to ſo much danger. In the paper

[i] Memoirs, p. 120. and Wood's Athenæ Oxon. vol. ii. p. 544. [k] Memoirs, p. 112.

he

he left with the Sheriffs, on July 21, 1683, the day of his execution, he firſt [1] made a profeſſion of his religion, and of his ſincerity in it: that he was of the church of England; but wiſhed all would unite together againſt the common enemy: that Churchmen would be leſs ſevere, and Diſſenters leſs ſcrupulous. He owned he had a great zeal againſt *popery*, which he looked on as an idolatrous and bloody religion; but that though he was at all times ready to venture his life for his religion or his country, yet that would never have carried him to a black or wicked deſign. He ſaid, he never had any deſign againſt the King's life, or the life of any man whatſoever; ſo he never was in any contrivance of altering the government. He prayed heartily for the King, that in his perſon and government he might be happy, both in this world and in the next. He proteſted, that in the proſecution of the popiſh plot, he had gone on in the ſincerity of his heart; and that he never knew of any practice with the witneſſes. He owned he had been earneſt in the matter of the excluſion, as the beſt way, in his opinion, to ſecure both the King's life, and the proteſtant religion; and to that he imputed his preſent ſufferings. But he forgave all concerned in them, and charged his friends to think of no revenges. As to the ſentence of death paſſed on him, he thought it a very hard one, nothing being ſworn againſt him but ſome diſcourſes about making ſome ſtirs, which was not levying war againſt the King by the ſtatute of Edward III. and not the conſulting and diſcourſing about it, which was all that was witneſſed againſt him, and which at moſt could be but miſpriſion of treaſon; ſo that he ſaid he died innocent of the crime he ſtood condemned for. He wiſhed the rage of hot men, and the partialities of juries, might be ſtopped with his blood, which he ſhould offer up with ſo much the more joy, if he thought he ſhould be the laſt that were to ſuffer in ſuch a way. Killing by forms of law, he ſaid, was the worſt ſort of murder. What the heats, wickedneſſes, paſſions, and vanities of other men have occaſioned, he ought not to be anſwerable for, nor could he repreſs them, though he now ſuffered for them. He averred, that what he ſaid, of not hearing Colonel Rumſey deliver his meſſage from my Lord Shaftſbury, was true, for he always deteſted lying, though never ſo much to his advantage. He concluded with ſome very devout ejaculations; and after he delivered the ſaid paper, he prayed by himſelf; and Dr. Tillotſon (afterwards Archbiſhop of Canterbury) who aſſiſted him in his laſt moments, likewiſe prayed for him. When he had undreſſed himſelf, he laid his head upon the block, without the leaſt change of countenance, and was cut off at two ſtrokes in Lincoln's Inn-Fields, on July 21, 1683. At the Revolution, an act was paſſed,

[1] Burnet's Hiſt. of his Own Time, vol. ii. p. 222.

on March 16, 1688-9, for annulling and making void the attainder of William Ruſſel, Eſq; commonly called Lord Ruſſel.

On that Revolution, Henry Lord De la Mere publiſhed *The late Lord Ruſſel's Caſe: With Obſervations upon it.* And therein confidently affirms, his Lordſhip could not be guilty of the indictment he was tried on; grounded on matter of law, and the inconſiſtencies and contradictions in the evidence againſt his Lordſhip. Alſo Sir Robert Atkyns, one of the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, publiſhed *A Defence of the late Lord Ruſſel's Innocency.* Printed 1694, concluding,

"As to the point of miſpriſion of treaſon, I have fully declared my opinion already, in the former part of this diſcourſe, and I think plainly evinced, that though the noble Lord might be preſent, while others might between themſelves debate matters, and conclude upon them; yet it did not clearly appear, that this noble Lord ever gave the leaſt conſent to what was ſo concluded, without which conſent it could not amount to treaſon; but at the moſt be a miſpriſion only; nor muſt any man's life be taken from him, upon preſumptions or probable arguments, but by plain, direct and manifeſt down-right proofs. But a more ſtrong and indeed a violent preſumption lay quite the other way; that this noble, prudent, and pious Lord, could never be guilty of ſuch a crime, as to conſpire the death of King Charles the Second: it was extremely againſt his intereſt ſo to do; for the life of that King, ſo long as it continued, by the bleſſing of God, was the great ſecurity, both He and all good Proteſtants had againſt the greater danger that might happen, by the change ariſing by the death of that King, of loſing our religion, and all our civil and religious rights, as the experience we have lately had, hath ſadly taught us. And if any thing was conſulted between this excellent Lord, and thoſe with whom he met, as is more than probable, it was how to ſecure themſelves againſt thoſe dangers they ſaw ſo near approaching, if the life of King Charles the Second ſhould fail; and there was ſo great a cauſe to fear them, conſidering who was like to ſucceed in the throne."

His Lordſhip married the Lady Rachel, ſecond daughter, and at length heir to Thomas Wriotheſley, Earl of Southampton, Lord High-Treaſurer of England, the widow of Francis Lord Vaughan, eldeſt ſon of Richard Earl of Carbery, and by her, who died on September 29, 1723, aged eighty-ſeven, left iſſue one ſon, named Wriotheſley, born on November 1, 1680, who ſucceeded his grandfather in his honours and eſtate; and two daughters, whereof, the Lady Rachel, the eldeſt, born in January, 1674, was married to William Cavendiſh, Duke of Devonſhire; and the Lady Catherine, born on Auguſt 23, 1676,

to

to John Maners, Marquis of Granby, ſon and heir of John Duke of Rutland.

The ſaid Wriotheſley, ſecond Duke of Bedford, married, on May 23, 1695, Elizabeth, only daughter and heir of John Howland, of Stretham in the county of Surry, aforeſaid, Eſq; by Elizabeth his wife, daughter of Sir Joſiah Child, of Wanſted in Eſſex, Bart. who by his ſecond wife was alſo father of the late Sir Richard Child, Bart. Lord Viſcount Caſtlemain, and Earl of Tilney. Which John Howland was the laſt ſurviving ſon of Jeffery Howland, of Stretham, Eſq; and died on September 2, 1686, leaving his ſaid daughter Elizabeth, then an infant; and being heir to a very great fortune, his Grace, ſoon after marriage, was created Baron Howland of Stretham, on June 13, 1695, 7 William III. After which he travelled into France and Italy; and on September 7, anno 1700, ſucceeding his grandfather, became Duke of Bedford, &c. As ſoon as he came of age, he was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of the counties of Bedford and Cambridge, on June 27, 1702, and Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Middleſex, and one of the Gentlemen of his Majeſty's Bedchamber. On the acceſſion of Queen Anne to the Throne, he was made Lord High-Conſtable of England, at the coronation, on April 23, 1702; and was ſworn one of the Privy-Council. He was elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, and inſtalled at Windſor on March 13, 1702-3, at which time he was Lord Lieutenant of the counties of Bedford, Cambridge, and Middleſex, and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Middleſex, and liberty of Weſtminſter. He died of the ſmall-pox, on May 26, 1711, in the thirty-firſt year of his age, leaving iſſue by his Dutcheſs (who died at Stretham, on July 29, 1724) two ſons and two daughters, of which the Lady Rachel, the eldeſt, was married to Scroop Egerton, Duke of Bridgewater, and afterwards to Sir Richard Lyttleton, Knight of the Bath, and brother to George Lord Lyttleton; and the Lady Elizabeth, in 1726, to William Capel, Earl of Eſſex.

His eldeſt ſon, Wriotheſley, third Duke of Bedford, born in the year 1708, was married, on April 22, 1725, to the Lady Anne Egerton, only daughter of Scroop Duke of Bridgewater, by the Lady Elizabeth Churchill, his firſt wife, third daughter and coheir to John Duke of Marlborough, by whom he had no iſſue. And labouring under an ill ſtate of health, his phyſicians adviſed his going over to Liſbon; but in his paſſage, his Grace was ſo ill, that he was obliged to be put on ſhore at the Groyne in Spain, where he departed this life, on October 23, 1732; and his body being brought to England, was interred at Cheneys, in the burial-place of his anceſtors.

Whereupon his titles and eſtate devolved on his brother, the Lord John Ruſſel, now the fourth Duke and eighth Earl of

Bedford. His Grace was born on September 30, 1710, and married on October 11, 1731, the Lady Diana Spencer, youngeſt daughter of Charles Earl of Sunderland, by Lady Anne, daughter to John Duke of Marlborough, by whom he had iſſue a ſon, Francis Marquis of Taviſtock, who died on the day he was born, viz. on November 6, 1732. Her Grace departed this life on September 27, 1735: and in April, 1737, his Grace married, ſecondly, Gertrude, eldeſt daughter of John, late Earl Gower, by his firſt wife, the Lady Evelyn Pierrepont, daughter of Evelyn Duke of Kingſton, by whom he has iſſue, Francis Marquis of Taviſtock, who was born on September 26, 1739, and at the general election, in 1761, returned one of the Knights to Parliament for the county of Bedford; and is Colonel of the militia of that county. His Lordſhip, on June 7, 1764, married Lady Elizabeth, daughter of William-Anne Keppel, late Earl of Albemarle. His Grace had alſo another ſon, born in June, 1745, who died an infant; and a daughter, Lady Caroline, who was born in January, 1742-3; was one of the ten unmarried Ladies (daughters of Dukes and Earls) who ſupported the train of Queen Charlotte, at her nuptials, on September 8, 1761, and wedded, on Auguſt 23, 1762, to George Duke of Marlborough.

His Grace was conſtituted firſt Lord Commiſſioner of the Admiralty, in December, 1744; and on the 27th of the ſame month was ſworn at St. James's, one of his Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-Council. On May 28, 1745, he was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Bedfordſhire; and at the rebellion breaking out, he raiſed a regiment of foot for his Majeſty's ſervice. On February 12, 1745, he was conſtituted Warden and Keeper of New Foreſt, in the county of Southampton, but afterwards reſigned; and on February 13, 1747-8, his Majeſty was pleaſed to appoint his Grace one of his Principal Secretaries of State. In October, 1748, he was choſen one of the Governors of the Charter-Houſe. On June 22, 1749[m], his Grace was elected one of the Knights Companions of the moſt noble Order of the Garter; and inſtalled at Windſor, on July 12, 1750. On April 13, 1751, he was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Devonſhire, and of the city and county of Exeter; and in June following, reſigned the Seals of one of his Majeſty's Principal Secretaries of State. His Grace was one of the Lords Juſtices during his Majeſty's abſence in his German Dominions, in the years 1745, 1748, and 1750. On February 28, 1755, his Grace was appointed Major-general, and on February 1, 1759, Lieutenant-general, of his Majeſty's forces. On December 15, 1756, he was declared Lieutenant-general and Governor-general of Ire-

[m] Pote's Hiſt. and Antiq. of Windſor, p. 430, 431.

land:

land: and his Grace being in that kingdom, when the famous M. Thurot, on February 21, 1760, landed with a body of French troops at Carrickfergus, took ſuch meaſures to fruſtrate the attempts of that daring adventurer, that in a few days he was obliged to put to ſea, and meeting with Captain John Elliott, Commander of his Majeſty's ſhip Æolus, and Captains Clements and Logie, of the Pallas and Brilliant, was defeated and ſlain, and the three ſhips under his command taken, on the 28th of that month. In June, 1761, his Grace was nominated Vice-admiral of Devonſhire; and acted as Lord High-Conſtable of England, at his Majeſty's coronation, on September 22 that year. The next preferment of his Grace was to be Keeper of the Privy-Seal, that office having been in commiſſion ſince the reſignation of Richard Earl Temple, on October 9 that year. On September 4, 1762, his Grace was nominated Miniſter Plenipotentiary to the Court of France (the cuſtody of the Privy-Seal being committed to Deputies, during his abſence) and on November 3 enſuing, ſigned, at Fontainbleau, the preliminary articles of peace with France and Spain. On the 3d of next month, he ſigned the ratification of the ſaid preliminaries; and on February 10, 1763, ſubſcribed the ratifications of a definitive peace between the belligerant powers, Britain, France, Spain, and Portugal; which ratifications he exchanged with the Miniſters of thoſe powers, on March 10 enſuing. Upon his arrival in London, on June 12, he immediately waited on the King, and was moſt graciouſly received; and having in April reſigned the Privy-Seal, was declared Preſident of the Council, on November 2 that year, in the room of John Earl Granville, deceaſed. His Grace is alſo Colonel of the firſt regiment of the Devonſhire militia; High-Steward of the corporation of Huntingdon; an elder brother of the Trinity-houſe; and Preſident of the Foundling-hoſpital, in Lamb's conduit fields, London.

TITLES.] John Ruſſel, Duke of Bedford, Marquis of Taveſtock, Earl of Bedford, Baron Ruſſel of Cheneys, Baron Ruſſel of Thornhaugh, and Baron Howland of Stretham.

CREATIONS.] Baron Ruſſel of Cheneys, in com. Bucks, by letters patent, March 9, 1538-9, 30 Henry VIII. Earl of the county of Bedford, January 19, 1549-50, 3 Edward VI. Baron Ruſſel of Thornhaugh, in com. Northampton, July 21, 1603, 1 Jac. I. Marquis of Taveſtock, in com. Devon; and Duke of the county of Bedford, May 11, 1694, 6 William and Mary; and Baron Howland of Stretham, in com. Surry, June 13, 1695, 7 William III.

ARMS.] Argent, a Lion rampant, Gules; on a Chief, Sable, three Eſcallops of the firſt.

CREST.] On a Wreath, a Goat paſſant, Argent, armed, Or.

SUPPORTERS.] On the dexter ſide a Lion, on the ſiniſter an Antelope, both Gules; the latter gorged with a ducal Collar, chained, armed, creſted, tufted, and hoofed, Or.

MOTTO.] CHE SARA SARA.

CHIEF SEATS.] At Wooburn-abbey in the county of Bedford, one mile from Wooburn, and thirty-ſix from London; at Thorney, in the Iſle of Ely; at Cheneys in the county of Bucks, three miles from Agmondeſham, and twenty-five from London; and at Bedford-houſe in the city of Exeter, 172 miles from London.

CAVENDISH,

Rufsell Duke of Bedford.

14

CAVENDISH, Duke of Devonſhire.

AS it is evident from authentic records, and the obſervations of learned men, that, after the cuſtom of the Normans, ſurnames were, for the moſt part, taken from towns, offices, &c. and were not generally aſſumed, till about the reign of King Edward II. [a] which commenced on July 7, 1307: ſo it appears, that this family was denominated from the lordſhip of Cavendiſh in Suffolk, which Robert, a younger ſon of the antient family of the Gernons, acquired by marriage; and his ſon (as was uſual in thoſe times) took the name of Cavendiſh, as will hereafter fully appear.

The Gernons were of great note in the counties of Norfolk and Eſſex, being lineally deſcended from Robert de Gernon, a famous Norman, who aſſiſted William the Conqueror in his invaſion of this realm, A. D. 1066; and in reward of his ſervices, had grants of ſeveral lordſhips [b], particularly of the manors of Merdley, three hides of land in Wallington, two hides and a half in Aiot, one hide in Wimundeley, and the manor of Lechworth, rated at ten hides, all in Hertfordſhire.

This Robert de Gernon [c] gave to the church of St. Peter, in Glouceſter, the church of Winterbourne, as alſo the church of Laverſtoke, and half the lands thereto belonging, to the abbey of Glouceſter, which was confirmed by King Henry I. in the time of Peter the abbot.

His ſon and heir, Matthew de Gernon [d], was one of the witneſſes to the charter of William de Monteſichet, of the donation of divers lands to the priory of Stratford-Langton in Eſſex, founded in 1135, and gave [e] alſo himſelf to the ſaid priory, his lands of Gubige. He had [f] to wife Hodierna, daughter and coheir to Sir William Sackvile, ſecond ſon of Herbran de Sackvile, and brother to Sir Robert Sackvile, lineal anceſtor to his Grace the preſent Duke of Dorſet; by whom he had iſſue Ralph de Gernon.

Which Ralph [g] was a witneſs (with William Earl Warren, and others of prime note) to the Charter of King Henry II. made to the abbey of Bungey in com. Suff. dated at Bromholm in 1167, the thirteenth year of his reign; and by [h] his wife,

[a] Camden's Remains, Tit. Surnames, p. 109, 115, 143. [b] Domeſday-book, folio 137, 138. [c] Dugdale's Monaſticon Ang. vol. i. p. 120. [d] Ibid. vol. i. p. 883. 16. b. [e] Ibid. 49. b. [f] Vincent's Diſc. of Brook's Errors, p. 679. [g] Monaſtic. Angl. vol. i. p. 120. [h] Ex ejuſdem Familiæ ſtemmate.

who was ſiſter to Sir William de Brewſe, Knt. had iſſue a ſon of his own name,

Ralph de Gernon [i], founder of Lees priory in Eſſex, who departed this life in 1248, the 32d year of King Henry III. leaving iſſue William his ſon and heir.

Of this ſurname was alſo Ranulph de Gernon, Earl of Cheſter, who took that name from the caſtle of Gernon in Normandy, for diſtinction from his [k] father Ranulph, who wrote himſelf de Bricaſard, as alſo de Mæcenis, being ſon of Ranulph, who married Maud, eldeſt ſiſter to Hugh Lupus, Earl of Cheſter, and at length coheir of that family; whereby it is probable, that he was of the ſame lineage with Robert de Gernon, firſt named. But Sir William Dugdale having given an account of the Earls of Cheſter, and being no part of my preſent deſign, I ſhall proceed to recite the iſſue of William de Gernon, laſt named, ſon of Ralph, who founded the priory of Lees in Eſſex.

Which William de Gernon [m], Knt. was a witneſs, with William Earl of Albemarle (and others of great note) to the Confirmation-Charter of King Henry III. to Baſedale priory, com. Ebor. dated at Durham, on September 10, 1236, 20 Henry III. and deceaſing in 43 Henry III. 1258, left iſſue, by the Lady Eleanor his wife [n], two ſons, Sir Ralph de Gernon, Knt. and Geoffery de Gernon, anceſtor to the Cavendiſhes.

Sir Ralph de Gernon died in the ſecond year of King Edw. I. and was ſucceeded by William his ſon and heir, who, jointly with Iſabel his wife, in 11 Edward I. conveyed the manor of Fulbroke in Warwickſhire, to William de Hynkelee and Alice his wife, and the heirs of the ſaid William de Hynkelee; [o] reſerving to themſelves, and their heirs, two meſſuages, one mill, x s. rent, and two yard lands; as alſo an annuity of ſix marks of ſilver a year, to be paid at the feaſt of St. Michael the Arch-Angel, together with the ſervice of one Knight's fee. This William was knighted, and died in 20 Edward II. leaving iſſue John his ſon and heir [p], who departed this life in 8 Edward III. and was father of Sir John Gernon, of Lees in Eſſex, who was Sheriff of Eſſex and Hertford in the 39th of Edward III. and deceaſed on January 13, 138$\frac{4}{5}$, 7 Richard II. leaving iſſue two daughters his coheirs; Joan, wife of John de Botetourt; and Margaret, wife of Sir John Peyton, of Peyton-Hall in com. Suff. Knt.

The iſſue male being thus ſpent, I now return to Geoffery de Gernon, ſecond ſon of Sir William de Gernon firſt mentioned. Which Geoffery was [q] wrote of Moorhall in the Peak in

[i] Monaſticon Angl. vol. ii. p. 362. lib. 51.
[j] Baronage of England, vol. i. p. 36, 37, & ſeq.
[k] Ibid. vol. i. p. 309. a.
[m] Monaſt. Angl. vol. i. p. 841.
[n] Seager's Baronage, MS.
[o] Dugdale's Warwickſhire, p. 508.
[p] Ex ſtemmate,
[q] Seager's Baronage, MS.

com.

com. Derb. in the reign of King Edward I. and [r] was ſucceeded by Roger his ſon and heir, ſeated at Grimſton-Hall in Suffolk, who departed this life in 17 Edward II. and by his wife, the daughter and heir of John Potton, Lord of Cavendiſh in the ſame county, had iſſue [s] John, Roger, Stephen, and Richard, who all took the name of Cavendiſh, as was uſual in thoſe times.

Of theſe ſons, Roger, the ſecond, married Chriſtian, daughter of ———, and by her had two ſons, Roger and John; and alſo two daughters, Eleanor, married to —— Biſhop, and Sarah, to —— Chamberlain. Roger, the eldeſt ſon, was one of the Juſtices of Peace in Suffolk [t], 9 Henry IV. and marrying Alice, daughter and heir of Geffroy de Stratton, of Stratton in Norfolk, had with her that manor, which deſcended to their only child and heir, Margaret, wedded to William Laneney. John Cavendiſh, the ſecond ſon, was of the Embroiders company in London, and by his wife Elizabeth, daughter of ——, was father of Thomas Cavendiſh, who married Agnes, daughter of ——, and by her had ſix ſons, John, who died without iſſue; Auguſtine, continuator of the line; William, who died iſſuleſs; Henry, Rowland, and Thomas: and likewiſe three daughters, Elizabeth, Anne, and Jane. Auguſtine, ſecond ſon of Thomas Cavendiſh, wedded Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter of Sir William Brandon, Knt. grandfather of Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, and by her was father of Richard Cavendiſh, who by Elizabeth his wife, daughter to Edward Grimſton, had four ſons, viz. Sir Richard, his heir, John, Henry, and Edward; and alſo four daughters, Catherine; Mary, married to ——— Thorne; Elizabeth; and Anne, wedded to ——— Sands. Sir Richard, eldeſt ſon of Richard Cavendiſh, was Captain and Governor of Blackneſs [u], and received the honour of knighthood in Scotland from the Earl of Hertford, on September 23, 1545, 37 Henry VIII. He was, on February 6, 1551-2, 6 Edward VI. found by inquiſition then taken to be ſixty years of age [x], and one of the coheirs of Henry Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, who had died of the ſweating ſickneſs without iſſue, on July 14 preceding: and having eſpouſed Beatrix, daughter of —— Gold, of the county of Suffolk, was by her father of two ſons, William, his ſucceſſor, and Richard; and likewiſe two daughters, Mary, wedded to —— Felton of Playford, and Margaret to John Clew, of the county of Eſſex. Sir Richard's eldeſt ſon, William, was of Trimley St. Martin's in Suffolk, and alſo inherited the manor of Stonely in War-

[r] Seager's Baronage, MS. & Viſ. Com. Suff. Effing. Julii, F. 11. [s] MS. in Bibl. Cotton. [t] Pat. 9 Henry IV. p. 1. [u] MS. in Bibl. Cotton. Claudius, c. 3. p. 146. [x] Cole's Eſcheat. in Cur. Ward. MS. lib. 1. p. 273. Not. 12. in Bibl. Harleyan.

wickſhire

wickſhire [y] (part of the Duke of Suffolk's eſtate) which he ſold to Sir Rowland Hill and Sir Thomas Leigh, by deed bearing date March 17, 1560-1, 3 Elizabeth. He married Mary, one of the daughters of Thomas Lord Wentworth of Nettleſted, and departed this life in 1572 [z], being then poſſeſſed of Grimſton, Stratton, the inheritance of his anceſtors, and other manors. This William Cavendiſh, by his ſaid wife Mary, had three ſons and three daughters, William, Auguſtine, Thomas, Mary, Beatrix, and Margaret. Thomas Cavendiſh, the third ſon, was the famous navigator our hiſtorians mention [a], who had good poſſeſſions, and a fine ſeat at Trimley near Ipſwich in Suffolk, and, as my [b] author ſays, *was of a delicate wit and perſonage.* After ſome experience at ſea, his generous inclination induced him to make foreign diſcoveries for the uſe and honour of his nation; and at his own coſt, victualled and furniſhed three ſhips, with which he ſet ſail from Plymouth, on July 21, 1586, and [c] met with ſuch proſperous winds, that by Auguſt 26, they had got 930 leagues to the ſouth of Africa. Then bending their courſe ſouth-weſt, they entered the mouth of the Magellan Streights, on January 7, where he named a place Port Famine, from the miſeries of hunger and cold they endured. On February 24 they entered the South-Sea, and frequently landed as they ſaw occaſion, having many conflicts with the natives, but more with the Spaniards, coming off gainers in moſt, and ſavers in all encounters, that alone at Quintero excepted, on April 1, 1587, when they loſt twelve men of account; whereby in June following, he was forced to ſink the Rear-admiral, his leaſt ſhip, for want of men to manage her. Amongſt the many prizes he took, the St. Anne was the moſt conſiderable, being the Spaniſh Admiral of the South-Sea, and a ſhip of 700 tuns, which he boarded, though his own ſhip was but 120 tuns, and had not half their number of men. There were found in this ſhip 122,000 Pezos of gold (in Engliſh money 48,800 l.) and great quantities of ſilks, ſattins, muſks, and other rich commodities. Having laden his ſhips, he came round by the Eaſt-Indies for England. But he, who went forth with three ſhips, came home but with one, and ſafely landed at Plymouth, on September 9, 1588. He was forced to ſink one, as was ſaid before, and the other, called the Content, did not anſwer her name, whoſe men took all occaſions to be mutinous, and ſtaying behind in a road, with Stephen Hare, their Maſter, were never heard of. He was the third man, and the ſecond Engliſhman, which ſailed round the globe: but was not ſo ſucceſsful in his next and laſt voyage; for having ſet ſail from Ply-

[y] Dugdale's Warwickſhire, p. 173. [z] Ex Regiſt. vocat. Draper, qu. 28. in Cur. Prærog. Cant. [a] Stow's Annals, edit. 1614. p. 808, 809. [b] Ibid. [c] Hackluit's Voyages, laſt part, p. 803.

mouth, on Auguſt 26, 1591, and not being able to paſs the Streights of Magellan, by reaſon of bad weather, and contrary winds, he was driven back to the coaſts of Brazil, and there died an untimely death, taxing John Davis with his laſt breath, for having baſely deſerted him, as Camden [d] obſerves.

Stephen Cavendiſh, third ſon of Roger de Gernon, was [e] returned a Member for the city of London, to the Parliament held in 34 Edward III. was [f] choſen Sheriff in 32 Edward III. and again returned one of the Members for the city, to the Parliament held in 34 Edward III. was alſo [g] Lord Mayor in the 37th year of King Edward III. and dying without iſſue, in 1373, the 47th year of that Monarch, was [h] buried in Mercers Chapel.

I now return to John Cavendiſh, the [i] eldeſt ſon of the ſaid Roger de Gernon. Which John having been a ſedulous ſtudent in the laws, arrived to that eminency, as [k] in 39 Edw. III. 1365, he was conſtituted Lord Chief Juſtice of the King's Bench, and was continued [l] therein by Claus writ, on July 15, 46 Edward III. 1272. In the next reign, his patent for that honourable office was likewiſe renewed; and 26 Junii, 1 Richard II. 1377, he had a [m] grant of 100 marks *per annum*. In [n] 4 Richard II. he was elected Chancellor of the Univerſity of Cambridge; [o] and in 5 Richard II. was commiſſioned, with Robert de Hales, Treaſurer of England, to ſuppreſs the inſurrection raiſed in the city of York: in which year the mob being animated to riſe in ſeveral parts of the kingdom, and particularly in Suffolk, a body of 50,000 made it their triumph to plunder and murder [p] the lawyers, and were the more incenſed againſt the Lord Chief Juſtice Cavendiſh, for that his ſon, John Cavendiſh, had killed Wat Tyler in Smithfield. Whereupon they dragged this venerable Judge, [q] with Sir John of Cambridge, Prior of Bury, into the market-place of that town, and there beheaded them. His laſt will and teſtament bears date at Bury St. Edmund, on the Monday after the feaſt of Palm, 4 Richard II. "Wherein he orders his [r] body to be buried "in the chancel of the church of Cavendiſh, near the body of "Alice his late wife, and leaves his manors and lands in Ca-"vendiſh, Pentlowe, Fakenham, Aſpes, and Saxham, to An-"drew Cavendiſh, his ſon and heir, and mentions Roſe the wife, "and Margaret the daughter of the ſaid Andrew; conſtituting

[d] Life of Q. Elizabeth, in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 566. [e] Stow's Survey of London, enlarged by Strype, vol ii. [f] Fabian's Chron. fol. 104. [g] Ibid. p. 108. [h] Stow, b. 3. p. 37. [i] MS. in Bibl. Cotton. Jul. F. 11. [k] Dugdale's Chron. Series, p. 48. [l] Ibid. p. 50. [m] Pat. 1 Richard II. p. 1. m. 28. [n] Le Neve's Faſti, p. 389 [o] Rymer's Fœd. vol. vii. p. 315. [p] Stow's Annals, p. 393. [q] Fuller's Worthies in com. Suff. p. 56. [r] Ex Regiſt. Haydon quod: MS. Not. C. 4. (in Bibl. Johan. Anſtis, Ar. Gart. Reg. Arm.) p. 62.

"executors,

" executors, Robert de Swynbourne, and John Rookſwood, " ſen." Which will was proved, Auguſt 26, 1381, 5 Rich. II. He had alſo a [s] younger ſon, John Cavendiſh, ſucceſſor to his ſaid brother Andrew.

Which Andrew Cavendiſh was elected one of the Knights for Suffolk, in 51 Edward III. [t] and attending forty-one days in Parliament, he, with the other Knight, had 16 l. 8 s. for their expences. In the 8th year of King Richard II. he was [u] Sheriff of the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk, [x] and dying in the 18th of Richard II. was buried in the abbey called the New Abbey, (where the Victualling-office now ſtands) near the Tower of London; as is evident from the laſt teſtament of his Lady, who writing herſelf Roſe Cavendyſhe, wife of Sir Andrew Cavendyſhe, Knight, [y] makes her will, on June 13, 1419 (7 Hen. V.) at Stebney, " deſiring to be buried in the aforeſaid abbey, by " the ſaid Sir Andrew, her late huſband, and bequeaths x l. to " the abbots and monks for her ſepulture, and xx marks to " be diſtributed to the poor, according to the diſcretion of her " executors. She was an inhabitant of the pariſh of Stebney " (now called Stepney) and bequeaths to the church of that " place xx s. and to the vicar x s. conſtituting William Ca- " vendiſh, Robert Cavendiſh, and William Bartilmew, Clerk, " her true and faithful executors; and wills to them all her " goods, &c. to be diſtributed according to their diſcretions, " for the good of her ſoul, the ſouls of her anceſtors, and all " her benefactors."

The ſaid William Cavendiſh, and Robert Cavendiſh, were ſons [z] of John Cavendiſh, brother to the ſaid Andrew. Which John Cavendiſh was one of the Eſquires of the body to King Richard II. and our hiſtorians relate, that it was he who killed Wat Tyler. " For William Walworth, Mayor of London, " having arreſted him, he furiouſly ſtruck the Mayor with his " dagger, but being armed, hurt him not; whereupon the " Mayor drawing his baſclard, grievouſly wounded Wat in " the neck; in which conflict, [a] an Eſquire of the King's " houſe, called John Cavendiſh, drew his ſword, and wound- " ed him twice or thrice, even unto death." And for this [b] ſervice he was knighted by the King in Smithfield, who likewiſe gave him 40 l. *per annum* to him and his heirs for ever. This Sir John Cavendiſh, or another of his name (which in that age was wrote Caundiſh) ſerved under King Henry V. in his wars in France, and [c] was in the famous battle of Agincourt, on

[s] MS. in Bibl. Cotton. Jul. F. 11. [t] Prynne's 4th part of a Brief Reg. p. 312. [u] Fuller's Worthies in Com. Norf. p. 269. [x] Eſch. 18 Rich. II. num. 11. [y] Ex Regiſt. vocat. March. p. 360. in Cur. Prærog. Cant. [z] MS. in Bibl. Cotton. ut antea. [a] Stow's Annals, p. 289. [b] Ibid. p. 209. [c] Ex lib. MS. cont. Nom. Nob. &c. à temp. R. Stephen, ad Hen. VIII. Not. b. 5. in Bibl. Joh. Anſtis.

October

October 25, 1415; and the King, in the 1ſt year of his reign, [d] in conſideration of the diſcretion, prudence, and fidelity, of his beloved Eſquire, John Caundiſh, grants him the office of Brouderer of his Wardrobe, to act by himſelf, or deputies, with all profits, &c. thereto belonging. What time he died, I do not find; but by Joan his wife, daughter of Sir William Clopton, of Clopton in Suffolk (who was buried in the [e] Auguſtine Friers of Clare in Suffolk) he had iſſue three ſons, [f] William, Robert, and Walter Cavendiſh, living in 11 Henry VI.

The ſaid William Cavendiſh, in the 8th year of King Henry V. was [g] one of the executors to the Lady Roſe Cavendiſh, wife of Sir Andrew Cavendiſh, eldeſt ſon of the Lord Chief Juſtice Cavendiſh; and having [h] married Joan, daughter of ——— Staventon, departed this life in the 11th year of King Henry VI. as appears by his laſt will and teſtament. He left two ſons, Thomas, his heir, and William, who married ——, daughter of —— Mack-Williams.

By which teſtament, bearing date at London, Jan. 5, 1432, 11 Henry VI. he [i] orders "his body to be buried in the church "of St. Thomas the Martyr of Acon (now called Mercers Cha-"pel) if ſo be he departed this life in London; but if he ſhould "die at Cavendiſh, or elſewhere in Suffolk, then his body to be "buried in the pariſh-church of the bleſſed Virgin St. Mary, "in Cavendiſh; and that xx l. ſhould be given to that church "where he ſhould be buried. He further wills, That his exe-"cutors provide an obite for him, his parents, and wife, in "the ſaid church of Cavendiſh; and that they repair the high-"ways between Poſlingford and Clare, as alſo the way between "Cavendiſh and Clare; and bequeaths to the church of Pente-"low C s. and the like ſum to the church of Poſlingford, in "Suffolk.

"He wills to Joan his wife, one moiety of his goods and "chattels, in the name of her dower. To Walter, his brother, "an annuity during his life; and to his brother Robert, the "guardianſhip of his ſon Thomas Cavendiſh, during his non-"age; conſtituting the ſaid Robert, William Fleet, and Wil-"liam Berneway, his executors: to which he put his ſeal the "day and year aforeſaid."

Robert Cavendiſh, brother and executor to the ſaid William, was brought up in the ſtudy of the laws [k], and arrived to that eminency, as to be called to the degree of a ſerjeant, in the 3d year of Henry VI. and died 17 Martii [l], 1439, 17 Henry VI.

[d] Pat. 1 Henry V. p. 1. m. 26. [e] Weever's Fun. Mon. p. 742. [f] MS. in Bibl. Cotton. not. Jul. F. 11. [g] Ex Regiſt. March. præd. [h] Ex Stemmate, MS. ut antea. [i] Ex Regiſt. vocat. Luffenham, p. 140. in Cur. Prærog. Cant. [k] Dugdale's Chron. Series, p. 61. [l] Eſch. 17 Henry VI. n. 16. in Turr.

poſſeſſed

poſſeſſed of the manors of Cavendiſh and Overhall, in com. Suff. which deſcended to his nephew, Thomas Cavendiſh, who was under his guardianſhip by the will of his father. Which Thomas was [m] wrote both of Cavendiſh and Poſlingford, in Suffolk; and taking to wife Catherine, daughter and heir of ——— Scudamore, departed this life [n] in the 17th year of Edward IV. leaving his wife ſurviving, who lived till the 5th year of Henry VII. and was buried in the church of St. Botolph's, Alderſgate, London, with this memorial on [o] a monument erected for her.

Hic jacet Katharina Cavendiſh, quondam Uxor Thomæ Cavendiſh, nuper de Cavendiſh, in Com. Suffolke Armig. que obiit XV. *die Septemb. Anno Dom.* M.CCCC.LXXXIX. *Cujus Anima requieſcat in Pace.*

They had iſſue a ſon, named after his father [p], Thomas Cavendiſh, of Cavendiſh, Eſq; who, after the example of his anceſtor, took to the ſtudy of the laws; and in 17 Henry VII. [q] was employed by Thomas Earl of Surry, then Treaſurer of the King's Exchequer, in a plea between him and Thomas Weſt, Lord De la War. He was Clerk of the Pipe in the Exchequer, in the reign of King Henry VIII. "An officer [r], who having "all accounts and debts due unto the King delivered and "drawn out of the Remembrancer's Offices, chargeth them "down into the great roll. Who alſo writeth ſummons to the "Sheriff to levy the ſaid debts, upon the goods and chattels of "the ſaid debtors: and if they have no goods, then doth he "draw them down to the Lord Treaſurer's Remembrancer, to "write eſtreats againſt their land. The antient revenue of the "Crown remaineth in charge before him, and he ſeeth the "ſame anſwered by the Farmers and Sheriffs to the King. He "maketh a charge to all Sheriffs, of their ſummons of the Pipe "and Green-Wax, and ſeeth it anſwered upon their accounts. "He hath the ingroſſing of all leaſes of the King's lands; and "it is probable it was at firſt called, and ſtill hath denomination "of Pipe, and Clerk of the Pipe, and Pipe-Office, from their "records regiſtered in their ſmalleſt rolls, which are like organ "pipes; but their great roll, anno 37 Edward III. cap. 4. is "of another form."

The ſaid Thomas Cavendiſh, Eſq; had firſt to wife, Alice, daughter and coheir of John Smith, of Podbrook-Hall in Cavendiſh, Eſq; who died in the ſeventh year of King Henry VIII. and was alſo buried in the church of St. Botolph's, Alderſgate [s], with this inſcription on her tomb-ſtone.

[m] Vincent's Baronage, MS. Offic. Arm. num. 20. [n] Eſch. 17 Edw. IV. num. 4. [o] Weever's Fun. Mon. p. 693. [p] Vincent, præd. & Eſch. 17 Edward IV. [q] Madox's Baronia Anglia, p. 105. [r] Cowel's Interpreter, Lit. C. [s] Weever, p. 693.

Hic

Hic jacet Alicia nuper Uxor Thomæ de Cavendiſh, de Cavendiſh, & de Scaccario excellentiſſimi Principis Domini Henrici VIII. que quidem obiit xii *Novemb. Anno Dom.* M.CCCCC.XV. *Cujus Animæ propitietur Altiſſimus. Amen.*

He had iſſue by her four ſons, George, William, and Thomas, and another George; and a daughter Mary, by his third wife Agnes, as is evident by his laſt will and teſtament, and it appears by the probate thereof, that he died in the 15th year of Henry VIII. But foraſmuch as the ſaid teſtament ſhews the manner of thoſe times, as alſo his integrity and piety, I ſhall here inſert it in his own words[t]:

" In the Name of the Fader, the Sonne, and the Holy " Gooſt, Three Perſones and One God, I Thomas Cavendiſhe " of the King's Eſcheker, being hole of mynde, and in good " memory, the xiiith day of Apr. in the xvth yere of the reigne " of King Henry VIII. make my teſtament and laſt wille, in " manner and fourme as enſueth. Firſt, I bequeth and geve " my ſoul to Almighty God, my Maker and Redemptor, to " whom I crye for help and grace, during my natural lyfe in " this worlde, and to his bliſſid moder our Lady St. Mary, and " to all the companye of Hevyn, to pray for me at the de- " partyng of my ſoule out of my wretched body, for marcy and " pitie; and that my ſoule may be ſaved by the merits of the " moſt precious paſſion of my Sovrayn Lord God Jeſu Criſte. " Alſo I will, That all other teſtaments and willes made, and " bering date before this day, be void, adnulled, and of noon " effecte: and my body to be buried in holy ſepulture, that is " to witt, with Godd's ſufferaunce, in the church of Saint " Thomas of Acres, within London, in the north iſle of the " quere, next unto my grandfader William Cavendiſhe, yf " it may conveniently be. And if it may not, then ſume- " where ells in the ſame churche, by licenſe of the maiſter of " the ſame place for the tyme being, yf it fortune me to de- " part this preſent lyfe in London, or nygh aboute; or ells in " Chriſten Sepulture, in ſuch place, as it ſhall pleaſe God to " provide and ordeyne for me. Alſo I will, require, beſeke, " and pray, on Godd's behalf, myn executors, that they paye " and content my own debts, which I owe of right or con- " ſcience, that may be provid dew before myn executors, and " the maiſter of the ſaid church of St. Thomas of Acres for the " time being, in the diſcharging of my ſoul, and their con- " ſciences. Alſo I bequeth to the Church-Werks, of the church " of Saint Botulphe without Aldriche-Gate of London, vi s. " viii d. And to the reparacions and bilding of the chauntrye of " the Trinitie in the ſame pariſh xx s. Alſo I bequeth to the " ſaid maſter of Saint Thomas xiii s. iiii d. for my ſepulture

[t] Ex Regiſt. Bodfelde, qu. 23. not. 21. in Cur. Prærog. Cant.

" there,

" there, and xii d. for being at the dirige and maſſe; and to
" every prieſt of the ſame place iiii d. and to every clerk ii d.
" Item, I bequeth to the high awter of the pariſhe churche of
" Saint Alban Wood-ſtreet [u], where I am a pariſhioner, for
" my offerings and tythes forgotten, or necligently paid, in
" diſcharging of my ſoule, vi s. viii d. Alſo I bequeth to the
" iiii orders of Freers in London, That is to ſay, White, Black,
" Greye, and Auguſtine, to every of them vi s. viii d. bring-
" ing my corps to the ſaid churche, and there ſay *de profundis*
" for my ſoule, and all Criſten ſoules. Alſo I will, That
" myn executors ſhall fynde, and geve twenty pounds at my
" burying, and for other my funeral expences, and all other
" the circumſtances belonging thereto. And over that xls.
" for a ſtone to lye upon my grave. Alſo I will, that Agnes,
" my wife, ſhal have all my landes and tenements in the countie
" of Kent to ſell. And the money thereof, coming of the ſaid
" ſale, to take and retayn to her own uſe, one hundred and
" twenty pounds. And of the reſidue of the ſaid money, that
" the ſame Agnes content and paye, or cauſe to be contented
" and paid, to my doughter Mary fourty pounds, at the tyme
" of her marriage. And yf the ſaid Mary deceſſe before ſhe be
" married, then I will, That the ſaid fourty pounds be equally
" divided between Thomas Cavendiſhe, and William Caven-
" diſhe, my ſonnes. And yf any of my ſaid two ſonnes
" happen to deceſſe, ar they come to lawful age of xxi yeres,
" then I will, That the parte of him ſo departing, ſhall re-
" mayne to the other brother ſo over-lyving. And of this my
" laſt will and teſtament, I ordeyn and make myn executors,
" Agnes my wife, Sir Richard Broke, Knyght, one of the
" Juſtices of the Comen Place, and Henry Walter, Gentle-
" man. And to every of the ſaid Richard Broke, and Henry
" Walter, I geve and bequeth a black gowne, and xx s. for
" their labours, deſiring them to take the labour for to ſe the
" execution of this my laſt will and teſtament. And George
" Cavendiſhe my ſonne, to be my overſeer of the ſame, after
" my deceſſe, in maner and fourme aforeſaid. Theſe wit-
" neſs, Sir John Webbe, John Newyngton, Henry Walter,
" and other."

Of theſe ſons, George, the eldeſt, died without iſſue, and the fourth ſon, of that name, was ſeated at Glemsford in Suffolk [x], and left iſſue, Wlliam Cavendiſh, of Glemsford, Eſq; who had only two ſons, William, and Ralph, who died without iſſue.

Thomas, the third ſon [y], was one of the Knights of St. John's of Jeruſalem, and died unmarried.

[u] The King kept his Court, and moſt of the Nobility lived in the City in thoſe Times. [x] Ex Stemmate in MS. præd. [y] Ibid.

The

The chief heir-male, remaining, was [z] William Cavendiſh, ſecond ſon of the before-mentioned Thomas Cavendiſh, and Alice Smith. Which William had divers lands in Suffolk, by the ſettlement of his father, who gave him a liberal education, which recommended him to Cardinal Wolſey, who had a greater eſteem for him, as he was of a Suffolk family; and therefore took him to be about his own perſon, as Gentleman-Uſher of his Chamber, and placed a ſpecial confidence in him.

The Cardinal had, for a long time, the management of all affairs under Henry VIII. and, indeed, the government of the realm; ſo that the coinage of money being under his inſpection, he aſſumed ſo far, as to put T. W. on each ſide the King's Arms, and underneath, the Cardinal's Hat; as is evident from ſeveral pieces of coin yet remaining in the hands of the curious. His court, and ſervants, were ſuch, as no ſubject before, or ſince, ever had; there being, in his houſhold, all officers ſuiting the dignity of a Prince, to the [a] number of 800 perſons, and among them, nine or ten Lords, who had each of them two or three ſervants; but the Earl of Derby had five men allowed him.

Mr. Cavendiſh waited on the Cardinal, in his ſplendid embaſſy into France, in the year 1527, 19 Henry VIII. when the Earl of Derby [b], the Biſhop of London, Lord Privy-Seal, the Lord Sands, Lord Chamberlain of the King's houſhold, with a great number of other Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, attended on him. At Canterbury, Mr. Cavendiſh was diſpatched with letters to a Cardinal at Calais [c], and ſtaid there till his Lord's arrival. Alſo, when the Cardinal had been feaſted by the King at Amiens fourteen days, and it was agreed to remove to Compiegne, Mr. Cavendiſh was ſent before to provide lodgings [d], which he prepared in the great Caſtle of the Town, and ſaw it furniſhed, the King having one half of the Caſtle, and the Cardinal the other; the gallery in like manner being divided between them. It appears, that he was admitted to more [e] intimacy with his Lord, and let more into ſecrets, than any other ſervant; and therefore would not deſert him in his fall, but honourably waited on his old maſter, when he had no office, and no ſalary, to beſtow upon him.

He was with the Cardinal in his chamber, when the Earl of Northumberland, and Sir Walter Walſh, arreſted him in the King's name, on November 4, 1530, and was the chief perſon they ſuffered to be about him. [f] Sir Walter telling Mr. Cavendiſh, "That the King's Majeſty bore unto him his prin-

[z] Vincent's Baronage, MS. ut antea.
[a] Life of Cardinal Wolſey, dedicated to the Marquis of Dorcheſter, p. 19, 20.
[b] Stow's Annals, p. 532.
[c] Life of Wolſey, p. 49.
[d] Ibid. p. 58.
[e] Ibid. p. 72, 105, 129.
[f] Ibid. p. 137, 138.

" cipal favour, for the love and diligent ſervice he had per-
" formed to his Lord; wherefore the King's pleaſure was,
" That he ſhould be about him as chief, in whom his Highneſs
" putteth great confidence and truſt." And thereupon gave him, in writing, ſeveral articles, which, having read, he was content to obey his Majeſty's pleaſure, and was ſworn to the performance of them. He went with the Cardinal to the Earl of Shrewſbury, at Sheffield-park, who ſhewed a particular regard to Mr. Cavendiſh [g], ſaying, " Foraſmuch as I have al-
" ways perceived you to be a man in whom my Lord putteth
" great affiance, and I myſelf knowing you to be a man very
" honeſt (with many other words of commendations and praiſe)
" *ſaid further*, Your Lord hath often deſired me to write to the
" King, that he might anſwer his accuſations before his ene-
" mies; and this day I have received letters from his Ma-
" jeſty, by Sir William Kingſton, whereby I perceive, that
" the King hath him in good opinion, and, upon my requeſt,
" hath ſent for him by the ſaid Sir William Kingſton.

" Therefore, now I would have you play your part wiſely
" with him, in ſuch ſort, as he may take it quietly, and in
" good part; for he is always full of ſorrow and much heavi-
" neſs at my being with him, that I fear he would take it ill if
" I bring him tidings thereof: and therein doth he not well;
" for I aſſure you, that the King is his very good Lord, and
" hath given me moſt hearty thanks for his entertainment:
" and therefore go your way to him, and perſuade him I may
" find him in quiet at my coming, for I will not tarry long af-
" ter you." He went, according to the Earl's deſire, and then attended him, with Sir William Kingſton, to Leiceſter, who, on receipt of letters from his Majeſty, to examine the Cardinal about what money he had, [h] was directed to follow Mr. Cavendiſh's council: but his death prevented what had been aimed at; and Mr. Cavendiſh, when he had paid his laſt reſpects to the Cardinal, by ſeeing him interred in St. Mary's Chapel, at Leiceſter, on November 30, 1530, ſet forward to wait on his Majeſty; and being introduced by Sir Henry Norreys, Groom of the Stole, had a long conference with the King, who was ſo well ſatisfied with the anſwers he made, that, in concluſion, he told him, [i] *For his honeſty and truth, he ſhould be his ſervant in his chamber, as he was with his Maſter. Therefore, go your ways to Sir John Gage, our Vice-Chamberlain, to whom we have ſpoken already to admit you our Servant in our Chamber; and then go to the Lord of Norfolk, and he ſhall pay you your whole year's wages, and a reward beſides.*

[g] Life of Wolſey, p. 141, 142. [h] Ibid. p. 148. [i] Ibid. p. 156, 157.

To

To give a more laſting teſtimony of his gratitude to the Cardinal, he drew up a fair account of his life and death, which he [k] wrote in the reign of Queen Mary, whereof the oldeſt copy is in the hands of the noble family of Pierrepont, into which the author's daughter was married. Lord Herbert, of Cherbury, *in the life and reign of King Henry VIII.* quotes the manuſcript in many places, [l] but mentions George Cavendiſh to be the author of it, which, from divers circumſtances, we may conclude to be a miſtake. In the year 1667, it was printed, and dedicated to Henry Lord Marquis of Dorcheſter, with the author's preface, in which are theſe expreſſions: "The Cardinal was my Lord and Maſter; whom, in his life-time, I "ſerved: and ſo remained with him in his fall continually, "during the time of all his troubles, both in the ſouth, and "north Parts, until he died. In all which time, I punctually "obſerved all his demeanors, alſo his great triumphs, and glo-"rious eſtate, &c. Nevertheleſs, whatſoever any man hath "conceived of him in his life, or ſince his death, thus much I "dare ſay, without offence of any, That, in my judgment, I "never ſaw this realm in better obedience and quiet, than it "was in the time of his authority; nor juſtice better admi-"niſtered, without partiality; as I could juſtly prove, if I "ſhould not be taxed with too much affection." In theſe particulars [m] Lord Herbert agrees, in his character of the Cardinal.

But to return, Mr. Cavendiſh, in 1530, the 22d of Hen. VIII. was conſtituted one of the Commiſſioners for viſiting and taking the ſurrenders of divers religious houſes; [n] and in that year, the Prior and Convent of Sheen came before him at Sheen, and ſurrendered their monaſtery to him. Alſo, on December 5°, in 1539, 31 Henry VIII. the Abbot and Monks of St. Alban's delivered their convent ſeal, and ſurrendered to him, and other of the King's viſitors. In the ſame year he was made [p] one of the Auditors of the Court of Augmentation, then newly erected (and ſo called, becauſe the King's revenue was much augmented, by the acceſs of thoſe monaſtry lands, at that time to the Crown). Alſo, on February 26 following, [q] had, in conſideration of his ſervices, a grant to him, and Margaret his wife (as alſo to his heirs and aſſigns) of the lordſhips and manors of Northawe, Cuffeley, and Chyldewyke, in Hertfordſhire. This Margaret was his firſt wife [r], daughter to Edmund Boſtock, of Whatcroft in Cheſhire, Eſq; by whom he had a ſon, John, who died young, and four daughters, whereof only two were mar-

[k] Vide his Life, p. 9. [l] Life of King Henry VIII. in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 122. [m] Ibid. p. 148. [n] Rymer's Fœdera, vol. xiv. p. 407. [o] Stow's Annals, p. 576. [p] Pat. 31 Henry VIII. p. 2. [q] Bill ſignat. 31 Henry VIII. [r] Ex Stemmate.

ried, viz. Anne, to Sir Henry Bainton, of Bromham in Wiltſhire, Knt. and Catherine, to Thomas Brooke, Eſq; of the ſame county, fifth ſon to Thomas Lord Cobham. His ſaid wife departed this life in the 32d of Henry VIII. and was buried in the church of St. Botolph's, Alderſgate, under the monument of Alice Cavendiſh, wife of Thomas Cavendiſh, of Cavendiſh, father of the ſaid William Cavendiſh [s], as this Inſcription in the ſaid church ſhews:

Here lyeth buried under this ſtone, Margaret Cavendiſh, late wife of William Cavendiſh, which William was one of the ſonnes of the abovenamed [t] *Alice Cavendiſh. Which Margaret dyed the* XVI *day of June, in the year of our Lord God,* M.CCCCC.XL. *Whos Soul Jeſu pardon.*

Heven blis be here mede,
Yat for the Sing, Prey or Rede,

After her deceaſe, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Conyngeſby, Eſq; ſon of Sir Thomas Conyngeſby, Knt. and widow of William Paris; and by her had three daughters, Suſan, Joan, and ———, who died, with her mother, ſoon after her birth.

In the 37th of Henry VIII. he [u] was conſtituted Treaſurer of the Chamber to his Majeſty, a place of great truſt and honour; for by an act in 6 Henry VIII. (concerning the King's general Receivers of his Revenues) it is declared [x], "That every perſon, whome the King hereafter ſhall name and appoint to the "Roome and Office of Treaſurer of his Chamber, bee not "accountable in the Exchequer, for any ſuch as his or their "receipte, or any parte or parcell of the premiſes, but to the "King's Highneſs, or his heires, or before ſuch as his Grace "ſhall thereunto limitt and appointe. Alſo, That all ſuch "perſons as have paid, or hereafter ſhall pay, any ſumme or "ſummes of money to the King's uſe, to the hands of the "Treaſurer of his Chamber for the time being; and for the "proof of the which payment, the ſaid perſon or perſons have, "had, or hereafter ſhall have, any bill or bills, ſigned with the "hands of the ſaid Treaſurer for their diſcharge, or diſcharges: "and if any of the ſaid perſon or perſons bring, or cauſe to "be brought, the ſaid bills into the King's Receipt of the Exchequer, that then, immediately upon ſight of the ſaid bill or "bills, the Treaſurer and Chamberlains of the ſaid Exchequer, "ſhall ſtricke, or cauſe to be ſtricken, a tallye or tallyes, for "the diſcharge of the ſaid perſon or perſons, that ſo have paid

[s] Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 693. [t] Vide the Inſcription on her Monument, wherein ſhe is mentioned to be the wife of Thomas Cavendiſh, of Cavendiſh. [u] Pat. 37 Henry VIII. p. 2. [x] Rot. Parl. 6 Henry VIII.

"their

" their money to the ſaid Treaſurer of the King's Chamber;
" as if they had paid the ſaid ſumme or ſummes of money, in
" the receipt beforeſaid, without any other warrant in that
" behalfe to be obteyned, and without any fine, fee, or reward,
" therefore to be taken."

He received the honour [y] of Knighthood from his Sovereign, on Eaſter-day, in 37 Henry VIII. who afterwards admitted him [z] of his Privy-Council. He was likewiſe continued in the ſame Office of Treaſurer of the Chamber, both to Edward VI. and Queen Mary, and was alſo of their Privy-Council, [a] as appears by ſeveral warrants directed to him, and other authorities. In the 6th of Edward VI. he had a grant of divers manors and lands, belonging to ſeveral diſſolved priories and abbeys in Derbyſhire, Nottinghamſhire [b], Staffordſhire, Dorſetſhire, Cornwall, Kent, and Eſſex, in exchange with the King for his manors of Northaw, in Hertfordſhire, Northawbery in Lincolnſhire, the ſcite of the priory and rectory of Cardigan in South-Wales, with other lands in Cornwall, and elſewhere. But the greateſt addition to his fortunes was made by a prudent and happy match with Elizabeth, his third wife, daughter of John Hardwick, of Hardwick in com. Derb. Eſq; by [c] Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Leak, of Haſland in Derbyſhire, Eſq; and, at length, was coheir to James Hardwick, Eſq; her brother.

This beautiful Lady was married at fourteen years of age to Robert Barley, of Barley in com. Derb. Eſq; who [d] was alſo very young, and died ſoon after (viz. on February 2, 1532-3, 24 Henry VIII.) but his large eſtate was ſettled on her, and her heirs. She lived a widow a conſiderable time, and then took, for her ſecond huſband, this Sir William Cavendiſh, who had ſo great an affection for her [e], that, on her deſire, he ſold his eſtate in the ſouthern parts of England, to purchaſe lands in Derbyſhire, where her own friends and kindred lived. Alſo, on her further perſuaſion, he begun a noble manor houſe at Chatſworth, which he did not live to finiſh, dying [f] in the 4th and 5th years of the reign of King Philip and Queen Mary. He had by her a hopeful number of ſons and daughters.

1. Henry, who was [g] elected one of the Knights for Derbyſhire, in the 14th year of Queen Elizabeth, and ſerved for the ſame county in five other ſucceeding Parliaments, in the reign of that Queen. He married Grace, third daughter of George Earl of Shrewſbury. In the latter part of his life, this Henry

[y] MS. Not. Claudius, c. 3. p. 149. in Bibl. Cotton. [z] Cat. of Nob. by R. B. Tit. Devon. [a] Aſhmole's Order of the Garter, in Appendix, 89. [b] Thoroton's Ant. of Notting. p. 186. b. [c] Ibid. p. 187. [d] Life of William Duke of Newcaſtle, p. 154. [e] Ibid. [f] Ex Stemmate. [g] Willis's Notitia Parliament. vol. ii. p. 222.

reſided at Tutbury priory, in Staffordſhire; but dying without iſſue, on October 12, 1616, was buried at Endſore in Derbyſhire, whoſe memory is preſerved by this Inſcription in that church:

F A M Æ
MS.
Henrico Cavendiſio,
Guil. *Equit. Aurati a* Chateſworth, *in Agro* Derb.
Filio natu Maximo,
Ex matre clariſſima Elizab. Hardwick, *ab*
Hardwick, *in eodem Agro natâ, quæ quarto*
Marito Georgio Salopiæ *Comiti Sexto,*
Innupta eſt.
Viro Strenuo ac Forti,
Ut qui unus (ex primis illis volonibus chiliarchis
Anglis, *Anno* CIↃICLXXVIII.) *Nomen*
Dederit Militiæ Belgicæ:
Cujus erat Patiens, ac Peritus pariter
Navus, Agilis, *Acer.*
Ubi autem Negocia feciſſent Otio Locum,
Liberaliter Lauteq; ipſi indulgens,
Ita tamen ut Splendidus
Ac Hilaris,
Non Deſes audiret.
In hoc Agro,
Armis, Exuviiſq; depoſitis,
Et in Parietes fixis,
Latet Sceleton, expectans,
Pro Famæ clangore, tubam,
Claſſicum Reſurrectionis.
Obiit xii *die* Octobris,
Anno Æræ Chriſtianæ
CIↃICCXVI.

2. William, heir to the whole eſtate, and firſt Earl of Devonſhire; made Knight of the Bath, at the creation of Henry Prince of Wales, on May 30, 1610.

3. Sir Charles Cavendiſh, of Welbeck-abbey in Nottinghamſhire, Knt. who died in 1617, 15 Jac. I. having married two wives, viz. Margaret, eldeſt daughter and coheir of Sir Thomas Kibſon, of Hengrave in Suffolk, and Catherine, daughter and coheir of Cuthbert Lord Ogle, and at laſt declared Baroneſs Ogle. Sir Charles had no iſſue by the firſt, but by the ſecond had two ſons, Sir William, of whom more fully, and Sir Charles of Wallington, who died on February 4, 1653, and was buried at Bolſover.

Sir

Sir William, eldeſt ſon of Sir Charles Cavendiſh, was made Knight of the Bath, A. D. 1610, at the creation of Henry Prince of Wales: and enjoyed the titles of Baron Ogle of Bothal, Baron Cavendiſh of Bolſover, Viſcount Mansfield, Earl of Ogle, Earl, Marquis and Duke of Newcaſtle upon Tyne. His Grace was ſignally active in the cauſe of Charles I. to whom he was a Privy-Counſellor, as he was alſo to Charles II. He had ſeveral offices of great truſt, both civil and military, from theſe two monarchs; was Knight of the Garter; and departing this life on December 25, 1673, was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey, where a monument ſtands erected to his memory. This illuſtrious Peer, commonly ſtiled *the loyal Duke of Newcaſtle*, wedded two wives: 1. Elizabeth, daughter and heir of William Baſſet, of Blore in Staffordſhire, Eſq; and widow of Henry Howard, third ſon of Thomas, firſt Earl of Suffolk of his family; and, 2. Margaret, daughter of Thomas Lucas, of St. John's near Coleheſter in Eſſex, Eſq; His ſecond Lady brought him no children: but by his firſt he had four ſons, Charles, who died an infant; William, who died without iſſue; Charles, who wedded Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Rogers, of Brianſtone in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; and after his death *ſine prole* the wife of Charles Stuart, Duke of Richmond; and Henry, his ſucceſſor in titles and eſtate. His Grace had alſo three daughters, Lady Frances, wedded to —— Cheney, of Cheſham-Boys in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; Lady Elizabeth, to John Earl of Bridgewater; another Lady Frances, married to Oliver St. John, afterwards Lord Bolingbroke; and Lady Catherine, who died young.

Henry Cavendiſh, the fourth, but only ſurviving ſon of William Duke of Newcaſtle, was, at the reſtoration of Charles II. A. D. 1660, appointed Maſter of the Robes, and Lord of the Bedchamber, to his Majeſty, and elected Knight of the Garter, on Febr. 17, 1677-8. When James II. aſcended the Throne, his Grace was conſtituted one of the Lords of the Bedchamber, declared a Member of the Privy-Council, and appointed Lord Chief Juſtice in Eyre north of Trent, Lord Lieutenant of Nottinghamſhire and Yorkſhire, and Governor of Berwick. He oppoſed the ſettlement of the Crown upon William and Mary, Prince and Princeſs of Orange, and when they were declared King and Queen, refuſing the oaths to them, retired from public buſineſs. His Grace departed this life at Walbeck, on July 26, 1691, in the ſixty-ſeventh year of his age; and was interred at Bolſover in Derbyſhire. By his Dutcheſs, Frances, daughter of William Pierrepont, ſecond ſon to Robert Earl of Kingſton, he had four ſons, of whom the two firſt were named William, and died ſoon after they were born: Henry, third ſon, ſtiled Earl of Ogle, after his marriage with Elizabeth, ſole daughter

and heir of Joſceline, Earl of Northumberland, took the ſurname of Percy, but died without iſſue, and his Lady was ſoon afterwards wedded to Charles Duke of Somerſet; and Baſſet, the fourth ſon, died young. His Grace, by the ſaid Dutcheſs, had alſo five daughters, his coheirs: 1. Lady Elizabeth, married to Chriſtopher Monk, Duke of Albemarle, and ſecondly, to Ralph, Duke of Montagu: 2. Lady Frances, married to John Campbell, Lord Glenorchy, eldeſt ſon of the Earl of Breadalbine: 3. Lady Margaret, married to John Holles, Earl of Clare, after Duke of Newcaſtle, by whom ſhe left iſſue one ſole daughter and heir, the Lady Henrietta-Cavendiſh Holles, married to Edward, late Earl of Oxford: 4. Lady Catherine, married to Thomas Tufton, Earl of Thanet; and 5. Lady Arabella, married to Charles Spencer, Earl of Sunderland.

The ſurviving daughters of Sir William Cavendiſh, by his third wife, were Frances, married to Sir Henry Pierrepont, of Holm-Pierrepont in com. Nott. anceſtor to his Grace the preſent Duke of Kingſton: 2. Elizabeth, wedded to Charles Stuart, Earl of Lennox, younger brother to Henry Lord Darnley, father of King James I. and were ſons of Matthew Stuart, Earl of Lennox, by his wife Margaret, daughter of Archibald Douglas, Earl of Angus, and of Margaret his wife, daughter of Henry VII. The ſaid Charles Earl of Lennox left iſſue, by the ſaid Elizabeth his wife, that incomparable Lady Arabella, who being ſo nearly related to the Crown, ſtate-jealouſy confined her, and ſacrificed her, in the Tower.

3. Mary, who was the wife of Gilbert Earl of Shrewſbury. A rare example of two brothers founding two ſeveral dukedoms; and the ſiſters matched, one in a direct branch of the Royal Family of Great-Britain, and the other in the nobleſt families of England.

The Lady Cavendiſh, their mother, continued in her widowhood ſome time, rejecting many offers, and then [h] accepted of Sir William St. Loe, of Tormarton in Glouceſterſhire, Captain of the Guard to Queen Elizabeth, and [i] poſſeſſor of divers fair lordſhips in Glouceſterſhire, which, in articles of marriage, ſhe took care ſhould be ſettled on her, and her own heirs, in default of iſſue by him; and accordingly, having no child by him, ſhe lived to enjoy his whole eſtate, excluding his former daughters and brothers.

"In this third widowhood, ſhe had not ſurvived her charms "of wit and beauty [k], by which ſhe captivated the then greateſt "ſubject of the realm, George Earl of Shrewſbury, whom ſhe "brought to terms of the greateſt honour and advantage to "herſelf and children; for he not only yielded to a conſidera-

[h] Inſcriptio Tumuli. [i] Dugdale's Baronage, vol. ii. p. 420. [k] Biſhop Kennet's Memoirs of the family of Cavendiſh, p. 67.

"ble

" ble jointure, but to an union of families, by taking Mary, her " youngeſt daughter, to wife of Gilbert his ſon, and afterwards " his heir; and giving the Lady Grace, his youngeſt daughter, " to Henry, her eldeſt ſon. On November 18, 1509, ſhe was " a fourth time left, and to death continued a widow. A " change of conditions, that, perhaps, never fell to any one " woman, to be four times a creditable and happy wife; to " riſe by every huſband into greater wealth, and higher ho- " nours; to have an unanimous iſſue by one huſband only; to " have all thoſe children live, and all, by her advice, be ho- " nourably, and creditably, diſpoſed of in her life-time; and, " after all, to live ſeventeen years a widow, in abſolute power " and plenty.

" She built three of the moſt elegant ſeats that were ever " raiſed by one hand within the ſame county, beyond example, " Chatſworth, Hardwick, and Oldcotes, all tranſmitted entire " to the firſt Duke of Devonſhire. At Hardwick, ſhe left the " ancient ſeat of her family ſtanding, and at a ſmall diſtance, " ſtill adjoining to her new fabrick, as if ſhe had a mind to " preſerve her cradle, and ſet it by her bed of ſtate. Which old " houſe has one room in it, of ſuch exact proportion, and ſuch " convenient lights, that it has been thought fit for a pattern " of meaſure and contrivance, of a room in the late Duke of " Marlborough's noble houſe at Blenheim. It muſt not be for- " gotten, that this Lady had the honour to be Keeper of Mary " Queen of Scots, committed priſoner to George Earl of " Shrewſbury, for ſeventeen years. Her chamber, and rooms " of ſtate, with her arms, and other enſigns, are ſtill remaining " at Hardwick; her bed was taken away for plunder in the ci- " vil wars. At Chatſworth, the new lodgings, that anſwer " the old, are called the Queen of Scots apartment, and an " iſland plat at the top of a ſquare tower, built in a large pool, " is ſtill called, the Queen of Scot's garden; and ſome of her " own royal work is ſtill preſerved among the treaſures of this " family: a carpet embroidered with her needle, and particu- " larly a ſuit of hangings, now remaining in a chamber at " Hardwick, wherein all the virtues are repreſented in ſym- " bolical figures, and alluſive mottoes; an ornament, and a " lecture. The Earl's own epitaph does betray that he was " ſuſpected of familiarity with his royal priſoner[1], *quod licet a* " *malevolis propter ſuſpectam cum captiva Regina familiaritatem* " *ſæpius male audivit*, which is not to be imagined true: how- " ever, the rumour of it was, no doubt, an exerciſe of temper " and virtue to the Counteſs, who carried herſelf to the Queen, " and the Earl her huſband, with all becoming reſpect and duty."

[1] Inſcriptio Tumuli apud Sheffeild.

Yet

Yet it was reported of her, That coming to Court [m], and Queen Elizabeth demanding how the Queen of Scots did, ſhe ſaid, *Madam, ſhe cannot do ill, while ſhe is with my huſband, and I begin to grow jealous, they are ſo great together.* Whereupon the Queen was ordered into the cuſtody of Sir Amias Paulet, and others. It is probable it was this that induced Camden [n] to tax her with ill conduct, in the character he gives of the Earl of Shrewſbury.

She endowed a noble hoſpital at Derby, for the ſubſiſtence of twelve poor people, who have each of them an allowance of near 10l. *per annum*; and departing this life in the eighty-ſeventh year of her age, on February 13, 1607, was buried in the ſouth iſle of All-Hallows church in Derby, under a ſtately monument, which ſhe took care to erect in her own life-time. Her ſtatue, in full proportion, curiouſly cut in marble, lies at length, and above it, is a Latin inſcription, ſetting forth her marriages and iſſue before-mentioned.

William Cavendiſh (ſecond ſon of Sir William Cavendiſh) by the death of his elder brother Henry, who died without iſſue in 1616, inherited a great eſtate. He had his education with the ſons of George Earl of Shrewſbury, who married his mother, and being a favourite, ſhe gave him, on his marriage, and at her deceaſe, a greater fortune than his eldeſt brother had. He was [o] returned to Parliament for Newport in Cornwall, in the 31ſt year of Queen Elizabeth; and in 37 Elizabeth, was Sheriff of Derbyſhire; and being diſtinguiſhed for his eminent abilities, King James I. advanced him [p] to the dignity of Baron Cavendiſh, of Hardwick in com. Derb. by letters patent, on May 4, 1605. At which time of his creation, his Majeſty ſtood under a Cloth of State in the Hall at Greenwich [q], accompanied with the Princes his children, the Duke of Holſtein, the Duke of Lennox, and the greateſt part of the Nobility, both of England and Scotland.

His Lordſhip was one of the firſt adventurers, who ſettled a colony and plantation in Virginia; and on the firſt diſcovery of the Bermudas Iſland, had (with the Earl of Northampton, the Earl of Pembroke, the Lord Paget, the Lord Harrington, and others) a grant of them from the King [r]. Whereupon, in April, 1612, they ſent a ſhip thither, with ſixty perſons, to take poſſeſſion thereof, who were followed by others, and yearly ſupplies, which ſoon made them a flouriſhing plantation. The great iſland was divided into eight cantons or provinces, bearing the name of eight of the chief proprietors, whereof one of them ſtill retains the name of Cavendiſh. By the death of his Lord-

[m] Fuller's Worthies, in Com. Derb. p. 237. [n] Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 560. [o] Willis's Not. Parl. vol. ii. p. 164. [p] Pat. 3 Jac. I. p. 12. [q] Stow's Annals, p. 863. [r] Ibid. p. 944.

ſhip's

ſhip's elder brother, in the year 1616, a great addition was made to his eſtate; and being in repute with the leading men in that age, and waiting on his Sovereign in his progreſs, he was declared Earl of Devonſhire, on Auguſt 2, 1618, in the Biſhop's palace at Saliſbury [s]; but the letters patent [t] bear date Auguſt 7, 16 Jac. I. This noble Lord married two wives: 1. Anne, daughter and coheir to Henry Kighley, of Kighley in com. Ebor. Eſq; by whom he had three ſons and three daughters: 1. Gilbert, who died in his youth, and left a very ingenious Book [u], intitled, *Horæ ſubſecivæ*, Obſervations and Diſcourſes, &c. 2. William, his heir and ſucceſſor: 3. James, who died in his infancy: 4. Frances, married to Sir William Maynard, afterwards Lord Maynard: 5 and 6. Mary and Elizabeth, who both died young. His ſecond wife was Elizabeth, daughter to Edward Boughton, of Cauſton in com. Warw. Eſq; and widow of Sir Richard Wortley, of Wortley in com. Ebor. Knt. by whom he had iſſue Sir John Cavendiſh, Knight of the Bath at the creation of Charles Prince of Wales, on November 4, 1616 [x], who departed this life on January 18, 1617, without iſſue by his wife, daughter of William Bruneard, of Wiltſhire, Eſq; This Earl of Devonſhire deceaſed, at his ſeat at Hardwick, on March 3, 1625, leaving William his ſon and heir [y], at that time thirty-ſix years of age, and was buried at Endſore, near Chatſworth, where a monument is erected for him, with this Inſcription:

ARCHIVA
M. S.
GULIELMO CAVENDISIO,
Ex iſdem Parentibus ſecundo genito Filio,
Qui & hic etiam trabeam reliquit,
Viro
Ad omnia nato,
Quæ recte facienda ſunt,
Simplicique Virtute Merenti magis
Quam captanti Gloriam.
Quem cum primum titulo Baronis de Hardwick,
Et poſtea Comitis Devon. *Regum oculatiſſimus,*
IACOB. B. M. & M. B. *Rex inſigniret,*
Non tam Hominem quam Honorem
Cohoneſtare viſus eſt.
Provinciam ſuſtinuit,
Quali peritia integritate ac laude,

[s] Camden's Annals, in Hiſtory of England, vol. ii. p. 649. [t] Pat. 16 Jac. I. p. 11. [u] Wood's Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 474. [x] Vincent's Diſc. of Brook's Errors, p. 166. [y] Cole's Eſch. Not. 16. A. 16. lib. v. p. 184. in Bibl. Harley.

* Imaginem Famæ cum tuba decoratam.

Ipſam * *roga,*
Fama Communis non mentitur.
Vir
Non Seculi ſui, ſed omnis Ævi Optimus,
Neque ſilendus, neque Dicendus
Sine cura.
Laboris ac Fidei capaciſſimus;
Actu otioſis ſimillimus;
Nihil ſibi vendicans,
Eóque aſſequens omnia.
Cui
Cum modicè ac plano ſolo ſe condi
Mandaviſſet,
Majore Pietate quam impenſa
H. M. F. C.
H.
Obiit iii *Die* Martii, *Anno Æræ ejuſdem*
CIↃICCXXV.

William, his ſon and heir [z], having travelled into France and Italy, under the tuition of Mr. Thomas Hobbs, who had been taken (from Oxford in 1607) under twenty years of age, into his father's ſervice; was, on his return [a], knighted at Whitehall, on March 7, 1608-9; and, by the policy of King James, married to Chriſtian, only daughter to his great favourite, Edward Lord Bruce, of Kinloſſe in Scotland; whoſe great ſervices (he being a principal inſtrument of his obtaining the Crown of England) were rewarded by this match into a rich and noble Engliſh family. And for the better grace, the King gave her with his own hand, and made her fortune ten thouſand pounds, and ſolicited for a better ſettlement on them, telling the old Lord Cavendiſh [b], after his marriage with a ſecond wife, that his ſon being matched into a family, for which he was ſo nearly concerned, he expected, out of that plentiful eſtate he himſelf had, ſuch a proportion ſhould be ſettled, that Sir William might bear up the Port of his ſon, and his Lady the Quality of the King's kinſwoman; which mediation proved ſo effectual, that the Lord Cavendiſh did what the King thought reaſonable.

But this addition, though it anſwered the King's [c], yet it did not riſe up to the generoſity of the ſon's mind, which occaſioned his contracting a very great debt, entered into by an exceſs of gallantry, the vice of that age, which he too much indulged himſelf in [d]; for when he was Earl of Devonſhire, and had a much greater fortune than formerly, he increaſed his expences

[z] Biſhop Kennet's Memoirs, p. 73. [a] Philpot's Cat. of Knights, p. 48.
[b] Pomfret's Life of Chriſtian, Counteſs of Devon, p. 23. [c] Ibid. p. 24.
[d] Ibid. p. 25.

by

by his magnificent living, both in town and country; his houſe appearing rather like a Prince's Court, than a ſubject's. He underſtood foreign languages ſo well, that [e], whilſt he was Lord Cavendiſh, he was appointed to conduct Count Swartenburgh, the Emperor's Ambaſſador, to his public audience of James I. as alſo Seignior Valerſio [f], Ambaſſador extraordinary from the Republic of Venice; and [g] Monſieurs d'Arſennes and Joachimi, joint Ambaſſadors of the States of the United Provinces. In the year 1625, his Lordſhip, and his Lady [h], waited on Charles I. to Canterbury, by his Royal Appointment, to be preſent at his nuptials with Maria-Henrietta (ſecond daughter to Henry IV. of France) who arrived at Dover, on May 13, and came the ſame night to Canterbury, where the marriage was conſummated.

This noble Earl [i] was beloved and admired in both houſes of Parliament, and a great ſpeaker in them: Mr. Hobbs, in his Epiſtle Dedicatory to his ſon, of his Hiſtory of Thucydides, gives this ſhining character of him: "By the experience of "many years I had the honour to ſerve him, I know this, there "was not any who more really, and leſs for glory's ſake, favoured thoſe that ſtudied the liberal arts liberally, than my "Lord your father did; nor in whoſe houſe a man ſhould leſs "need the univerſity, than in his. For his own ſtudy, it was "beſtowed, for the moſt part, in that kind of learning, which "beſt deſerveth the pains and hours of great perſons, *Hiſtory*, "and *Civil knowledge*, and directed not to the oſtentation of "his reading, but to the government of his life, and the publick good; for he ſo read, that the learning he took in by "ſtudy, by judgment he digeſted and converted into wiſdom "and ability, to benefit his country: to which he alſo applied "himſelf with zeal; but ſuch as took no fire, either from faction or ambition: and as he was a moſt able man for ſoundneſs of advice, and clear expreſſion of himſelf in matters of "difficulty and conſequence, both in publick and private; ſo "alſo was he one whom no man was able either to draw or "juſtle out of the ſtraight path of juſtice. Of which virtue, I "know not whether he deſerved more by his ſeverity in impoſing it (as he did to his laſt breath) on himſelf; or by his "magnanimity, in not exacting it himſelf from others. No "man better diſcerned of men, and therefore was he conſtant "in his friendſhip, becauſe he regarded not the *Fortune* or "*Adherence*, but the men; with whom alſo, he converſed with "an openneſs of heart, that had no other guard, than his own "integrity, and that *Nilconſoire*. To his equals he carried

[e] Sir John Finnet's Obſervations on Ambaſſadors, p. 95, 96. [f] Life, p. 112 [g] Ibid. p. 138. [h] Ibid. p. 152, 153. [i] Life of the Counteſs of Devon, p. 31.

"himſelf

" himſelf equally; and to his inferiors, familiarly; but main-
" taining his reſpect fully, and only with the native ſplendor
" of his worth. In ſum, he was one in whom might plainly
" be perceived, that *Honour* and *Honeſty* are but the ſame thing,
" in the different degrees of perſons."

He departed this life at his houſe near Biſhopſgate, in London (where Devonſhire-Square is now built) on June 20, 1628, 4 Car. I. and was buried in the vault, with Elizabeth Counteſs of Shrewſbury, his grandmother [k], on July 11 following; where a moſt ſtately monument is erected to his memory, his own ſtatue of white marble ſtanding upright in the midſt of it; and at the four corners, are the figures of his children, which he had by his wife before-mentioned, Chriſtian, daughter of Edward Lord Bruce, of Kinloſſe, and ſiſter to Thomas Earl of Elgin in Scotland, father of Robert Earl of Aliſbury. Theſe were, 1. William, his heir: 2. Charles, Lieutenant-general of the Horſe, under his couſin, the Marquis of Newcaſtle, in the *Civil Wars*: 3. Henry, who died young; and, 4. Anne, married to Robert Lord Rich, ſon and heir to Robert Earl of Warwick.

William, his ſon and heir, was ten years [l], eight months, and ten days old, at the death of his father, being then a Knight, as is evident from the inquiſition taken on Septemb. 17, 4 Car. I. in the Court of Wards. He was [m] made Knight of the Bath at the coronation of Charles I. on February 2, 1625-6; and his mother, the Counteſs Dowager, getting the wardſhip of him, he was under her care, whoſe clear jointure [n] was no leſs than 5000 l. a year, to which ſhe added 4000 l. by her own prudent management. Her ſon's eſtate [o] was charged and complicated with near thirty law-ſuits, which, by the cunning and power of her adverſaries, were made as perplexed, and as tedious as poſſible; yet, by right, managed by diligence and reſolution, ſhe went through them all with ſatisfaction; ſo as King Charles jeſtingly ſaid to her, *Madam, you have all my Judges at your diſpoſal.* The diſcharging of the eſtate from thoſe numerous law-ſuits was not the only thing that required her care [p]; there was a great debt to be ſatisfied, which was another ſpecimen of her trouble, as well as patience. Her Lord had, before his death, obtained an act of Parliament for cutting off an entail, in order to the ſale of lands; a thing not uſual in thoſe times, and had not then been effected, but for the ſakes of thoſe for whom it was done, as King Charles was pleaſed to expreſs it. Yet this bore no proportion towards the payment of that vaſt debt for which it was deſigned; but with what money the ſale

[k] MS. J. 8. in Offic. Arm. folio 18. [l] Cole's Eſch. lib. iii. p. 240. in Bibl. Harley. [m] Cat. of Knights, MS. [n] Vita, p. 26. [o] Ibid. p. 27, 28. [p] Ibid. p. 30.

of

of thoſe lands brought in, together with her own care and management, the debt was diſcharged by her. She was a Lady of that affability and ſweet addreſs, with ſo great a wit and judgment, as captivated all who converſed with her; and of ſuch ſtrict virtue and morals, that ſhe was an example to her ſex [q].

"Prayers and pious readings were her firſt buſineſs; the remainders of the day were determined to her friends; in the entertainment of whom, her converſation was ſo tempered with courtſhip and heartineſs; her diſcourſes ſo ſweetened with the delicacies of expreſſion, that ſuch as did not well know the expence of her time, would have thought, ſhe had employed it all in addreſs and dialogue. In both which, ſhe exceeded moſt Ladies; and yet never affected the title of a wit; carried no ſnares in her tongue, nor counterfeited friendſhips; and as ſhe was never known to ſpeak evil of any, ſo neither would ſhe indure to hear of it, from any, of others; reckoning it not only a vice againſt good manners, but the greateſt indecency, alſo, in the entertainment of friends, and therefore always kept herſelf within the meaſures of civility and religion. Her geſtures correſponded to her ſpeech, being of a free, native, genuine, and graceful behaviour; as far from affected and extraordinary motions, as they from diſcretion. Theſe admirable qualities drew to her houſe all the beſt company; towards whom ſhe had ſo eaſy, and ſuch an obliging addreſs, without the leaſt allay of levity and diſdain, that every one departed with the higheſt ſatisfaction; ſhe ever diſtributing her reſpects according to the quality and merit of each: ſtearing the ſame ſteady courſe in the country alſo; between which, and the town, ſhe commonly divided the year. Her country ſeats were many and noble; ſome of which, when her ſon came of age, ſhe delivered up to him, viz. his great houſes in Derbyſhire, all ready furniſhed; ſhe herſelf living in that of Leiceſter-abbey (near to which ſhe had purchaſed a conſiderable eſtate) until the rebellion broke out."

The young Lord, her ſon, ſhe committed to his father's tutor, Mr. Hobbs [r], who inſtructed him in the family for three years, and then, about 1634, travelled with him, as his Governor, into France and Italy, making the longeſt ſtay in Paris, for all the politer parts of breeding. He returned, in 1637, and when he came of age, his mother delivered up to him his great houſes in Derbyſhire. He married Elizabeth, ſecond daughter of William Cecil, Earl of Saliſbury, who ſurvived him five years, dying on November 16, 1689, and was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey, on the 21ſt of the ſame month, in a vault under the eaſt window of Henry VII's chapel. They had iſſue, Wil-

[q] Vide her Life, p. 36, 38, 39, 40.

[r] In 1631, Vit. Hobbs, p. 41.

liam

liam Lord Cavendiſh, who was created Duke of Devonſhire: Charles, born on October 5, 1655, who died unmarried, on March 3, 1670, and was buried at Derby: alſo one daughter, Anne, firſt married to Charles Lord Rich, only ſon to Charles Earl of Warwick; ſecondly, to John Lord Burghley, afterwards Earl of Exeter, with whom ſhe travelled twice to Rome, and attended him at his death, in his laſt return, near Paris. She died three years after him, on June 18, 1703[s], and was buried near him, in a new vault within the church of St. Martin's, near Stamford, under an elegant monument, brought, among other exquiſite works, from Rome.

This Earl of Devon was ſo much a Cavendiſh in the very outward appearance, that Mr. Hobbs called him the Image of his father, being of a comely ſhape and aſpect: and therefore he ended the before-mentioned epiſtle to him, with this prayer, *That it would pleaſe God to give him virtues ſuitable to the fair Dwelling he had prepared for them.* He [t] is ſaid to have been ſeaſoned with the juſt tincture of all private and public virtues, and to have made an early expreſſion of the ſevereſt loyalty, mixed with the nobleſt reſolution, in that famous occaſion of the Earl of Strafford's bill, and many others; being then firm to the true intereſt of his Prince and Country. He followed the King in the North, and at York, in June, 1642 [u], was one of thoſe noble Peers, who ſubſcribed a declaration of their bearing teſtimony of his Majeſty's frequent and earneſt declarations and profeſſions, of his abhorring all deſigns of making war upon his Parliament. When he ſaw a party in the two Houſes too ſtrong to be ſatisfied, he ſupplied the King with money, attended him in his Parliament at Oxford [x], and was one of the Peers who ſigned there, on January 27, 1643-4, his Majeſty's declaration of ſuch means as might probably ſettle the peace of the kingdom. After which he lent him his own brother to take the field; and then retired beyond the ſeas, to wait for peace at home. This receſs could give him no repoſe; he was thruſt into the number of delinquents; his great eſtate was ſequeſtered; and when, by the mediation of his friends, an ordinance was depending for his compoſition, on October 23, 1645 [y], order was given for his return from beyond the ſeas by ſuch a day. We are [z] well informed, that "This noble Lord was fortified againſt "all ſurprizes from mean and miſchievous principles, and that "in all publick concerns, he directed his courſe by the rules of "honour and juſtice; that nothing could tempt him to a diſho-"neſt action, nor to preſerve himſelf, at the expence of his

[s] Le Neve's Mon. Angl. p. 2. [t] Life of the Counteſs, p. 42. [u] Clarendon's Hiſtory, vol. ii. p. 656. [x] Ruſhworth's Hiſt. Collect. part iii. vol. ii. p. 566. [y] Whitelock's Memorials, p. 162. [z] Life of the Counteſs, p. 46, 47.

"reputa-

" reputation. He choſe ſequeſtration, rather than ſwerve in " the leaſt tittle from Chriſtian fortitude and nobleneſs, or to " change his propoſitions according to the neceſſities or advan- " tages of the ſeaſon. Nor would he at laſt have been pre- " vailed with to remove any part of his troubles, or the ſe- " queſtration from his eſtate, but by the importunity, or ra- " ther, the commands of his mother, deteſting in itſelf, what, " in duty to her, he complied with.

" His brother, Charles Cavendiſh [a], was bred to books and " arms, and was, in both, a glory of the latter age: he was " born in London, May the 20th, 1620; the King was his god- " father, and named him Charles. After a ſtrict tuition in his " father's houſe, at eighteen years of age he was ſent to travel " with a Governor. He went firſt to Paris, and hearing much " of the French army then in the field near Luxemburgh, he " was ſo impatient for ſuch a view, that he ſtole away to the " camp, without the knowledge of his Governor, who hear- " ing of the frolick, followed him in great pain, and brought " him back to his ſtudies at Paris. He ſpent the year follow- " ing in Italy, making his chief ſtages at Naples, Rome, and " Venice; from whence, in the next ſpring, he embarked for " Conſtantinople, dropping his Governor and Engliſh ſervants, " as knowing that a traveller may learn moſt from ſtrangers. " After a long circuit by land through Natolia, he went by " ſea to Alexandria, thence to Cairo, and was brought, by way " of Malta, to Spain, and back to Paris; and, after ſome con- " verſation with the Court, returned to England about the end " of May, 1641.

" When he had paid his duty to his mother, he was preſent- " ed to the King and Queen, and was graciouſly received by " them, and much careſſed by the moſt eminent perſons about " the Court; for, ſays the intimate friend and writer of his " life, [b] *The Sun beheld not a Youth of a more manly figure, and* " *more winning preſence.* His inclinations determined him to " arms, and therefore his mother, the Counteſs, deſigned to " have bought for him Colonel Goring's regiment of foot in " Holland: ſo he went over to be trained up there in the Prince " of Orange's army, the moſt eminent ſchool of war. When " he had paſſed one campaign, he came over again to England, " about the end of November, 1641. And when, ſoon after, " the King, by tumults in the ſtreets, and greater diſtractions " in the two Houſes, was forced to retire to York, the Earl of " Devon, and his brother, Mr. Cavendiſh, repaired thither to " offer their duty and ſervice to their diſtreſſed Prince."

[a] Biſhop Kennet's Memoirs, p. 83, & ſeq. [b] Life of Colonel Cavendiſh, MS.

The writer of his mother's life informs us, [e] that "he "was a perſon of ſo much addreſs and valour, that thoſe brave "Gentlemen of the Temple, who offered themſelves as a guard "to the King's perſon, choſe him for their Captain, knowing, "he would thither lead them, where law, honour, and con- "ſcience, would oblige them to follow. At York, Mr. Caven- "diſh put himſelf among the Noblemen and Gentlemen volun- "teers, who deſired to be under command for the King's ſer- "vice; and made it his choice to ride in the King's own troop, "commanded by my Lord Bernard Stuart, his kinſman, bro- "ther to the Duke of Richmond; among ſo many conſiderable "perſons for qualities and fortunes, that the King was heard to "ſay, *The revenues of thoſe in that ſingle troop, would buy the "eſtates of my Lord of Eſſex, and of all the officers in his army.* "He marched in this troop, 'till the battle of Edge-Hill, "October 23, 1642, when the King, in reſpect and tender- "neſs to thoſe gallant men, would not expoſe them to equal "hazard with the reſt of the cavalry, but reſerved them for "a guard to his own perſon. Mr. Cavendiſh ſuppoſing this to "be no poſt of danger, and therefore not of honour, prevailed "with my Lord Bernard Stuart, that they ſhould wait upon "the King, and intreat his leave to be drawn up on the right "hand of the right wing of the horſe, as the moſt open, and "moſt honourable place in the battle; to which his Majeſty, "upon their importunity, conſented. And this, indeed, proved "to be the poſt of hotteſt ſervice, and greateſt ſucceſs: where- "in Mr. Cavendiſh ſo diſtinguiſhed himſelf by a perſonal va- "lour, that the Lord Aubigny (who commanded the Duke of "York's troop) being ſlain, he was preferred to that charge, "before many other pretenders of eminent birth and merit.

"This troop was, ſoon after, put into the Prince of Wales's "regiment, wherein the ſuperior officer put ſomething on "Captain Cavendiſh, which he thought an indignity; and "therefore, he deſired his Majeſty to aſſign him 1000 l. (which "his own brother, the Earl of Devonſhire, had preſented to the "King) promiſing, that if his Majeſty would be pleaſed to let "him have the Duke of York's troop out of the Prince of "Wales's regiment, he would go into the North, and raiſe "the Duke a compleat regiment of horſe, before the army "could take the field; to which the King conſented, aſſuring "him the honour of being Colonel of his new regiment. In "order to compleat it, he accepted of Thomas Markham, "Eſquire, to be his Lieutenant-colonel, and Mr. Tuke for "the Captain of his firſt troop; and took his head-quarters at "Newark, keeping under many of the rebel garriſons at Not- "tingham, and other neighbouring parts; and, by degrees, be-

[e] Page 49.

"came

" came maſter of the whole country; ſo that the King's Com-
" miſſioners for Lincolnſhire, and Nottinghamſhire, deſired his
" leave to petition the King, that he might have the Command
" of all the forces of their two counties, in quality of Colonel-
" general, which he complied with, and the King granted.

" In this Command, he beat the enemy from Grantham, and
" gained a compleat victory near Stamford, and reduced ſeveral
" of their garriſon-towns, by the aſſiſtance of Colonel Welby,
" and other brave officers. After many glorious actions, being
" [d] Lieutenant-general of the Horſe to his kinſman the Mar-
" quis of Newcaſtle, he had the honour to receive the Queen
" in her March to Newark, who immediately took notice, that
" ſhe ſaw him laſt in Holland, and was very glad now to meet
" him again in England. The Counteſs of Derby ſitting at
" the end of the Queen's coach, entertained her Majeſty with
" great commendations of the General; and when the Queen
" was to give the word to Major Tuke, ſhe gave that of
" CAVENDISH." The copy of his life breaks off with his convoying the Queen to Newark; but from thence, with a noble guard [e], he waited on her Majeſty towards Oxford, and in his way, with her conſent, took Burton upon Trent by ſtorm, on July 2, 1643, encouraging his ſoldiers, by his own example, to ſwim over the river, and ſcale the works, and enter under ſhowers of bullets, defying all the moſt dreadful images of death, as if his life had been as immortal, as he hath made his honour. It is further memorable of him [f], that my Lord Clarendon has recorded, that the Earl of Newcaſtle, General in the North, " ſent Charles Cavendiſh, the younger brother of the Earl of
" Devonſhire, with a party volant of horſe and dragoons, into
" Lincolnſhire; where, about the middle of March, he aſſaulted
" Grantham, a new garriſon of the rebels, which he took, and
" in it above 300 priſoners [March 23, 1642-3] with all their
" officers, arms, and ammunition." The Royal Cauſe declining, made him only the more daring and deſperate. In his laſt action [g], he is ſaid to have been murdered in cold blood, after quarter given, by Colonel Bury, who made himſelf dear to Cromwell, by this, and ſome other acts of cruelty. Another writer tells us [h], " That, his horſe ſticking in the mud, he died magnanimouſly,
" refuſing quarter, and throwing the blood that ran from his
" wounds in their faces that ſhed it, with a ſpirit as great as
" his blood. And that his goodneſs was as eminent as his va-
" lour, and was as much beloved by his friends, as feared by
" his enemies." Cromwell was himſelf in this action, and valued himſelf ſo much on the ſucceſs of it, that he gave a par-

[d] Life of Duke of Newcaſtle, p. 34.
[e] Life of the Counteſs, &c. p. 52.
[f] Hiſtory of the Rebel. 8vo. vol. iii. p. 144.
[g] Life of his Mother, p. 53.
[h] Lloyd's Memoirs of the Loyaliſts, p. 673.

ticular account to the Committee for the Aſſociation ſitting at Cambridge, in a letter dated on [i] July 31, 1643. "Gentlemen, "It hath pleaſed the Lord to give your ſervant and ſoldiers a "notable victory now at Gainſborough.——In the laſt reſerve, "unbroken, ſtood General Cavendiſh, who one while faced "me, another while faced four of the Lincoln troops, which "was all of ours that ſtood upon the place, the reſt being en- "gaged in the chaſe; at laſt General Cavendiſh charged the "Lincolners, and routed them. Immediately I fell upon his "rear with my three troops, which did ſo aſtoniſh him, that "he gave over the chaſe, and would fain have delivered himſelf "from me; but I preſſing on, forced him down a hill, having "a good execution of them, and below the hill drove the "General, with ſome of his ſoldiers, into a quagmire, where "my Captain-lieutenant ſlew him, with a *Thruſt under his ſhort* "*Ribs*; the reſt of the body were wholly routed, not one man "ſtaying on the place." He was the more capable of arms by his great knowledge in the mathematical arts; ſome of his papers, that ſhew a profound ſkill in numbers and meaſures, were in the hands of that eminent collector of valuable papers, Dr. John Moor, Lord Biſhop of Ely. He deſerved the character given by the writer of his mother's life: "He was a Gentleman "ſo furniſhed with all the interior and politer parts of learning "(obtained at home and abroad, both by reading books, and "men) as well as courage, that he was prepared to defend his "Prince with his head and hand, by the ſtrongeſt reaſon, and "moſt generous valour." When [k] his body was brought to Newark to be interred, the whole town were ſo fond of it (even dead) that they would not ſuffer it, for ſome days, to be laid into the ground, but wept over it, and admired it, and, not without the greateſt reluctancy, at laſt committed him to his dormitory, covering his hearſe with tears and laurels. And when, about thirty years after, his body was removed to be interred at Derby with his mother, freſh lamentations were made by thoſe who knew, and others that had heard, his fame; and the whole people of Newark expreſſed the moſt ſorrowful unwillingneſs to part with the relicks of ſo dear a perſon, who had been, when alive, the ornament and defence of that place.

It was [l] his mother's expreſs will, that his corpſe ſhould be taken up, and wait upon hers in another hearſe to Derby. Her corpſe paſſing through Leiceſter, due reſpects were paid to her memory, the magiſtrates of that place attending in their formalities, and the Gentry of the country meeting there at the ſame time, waited on it out of town. The ſame honourable reception was paid to both of them at Derby, where they were

[i] Ruſhworth, vol. ii. p. 278.
[k] Life of the Counteſs, p. 53, 54.
[l] Ibid. p. 91.

interred

interred in the burial place of the family, under a ſtately monument ſhe had erected for her *Lord*, *herſelf*, and *Children*. Her funeral ſermon was preached by Mr. Frampton (Chaplain to her brother the Earl of Elgin) afterwards Biſhop of Glouceſter; and his by Mr. Naylor, Chaplain to the Counteſs.

His death is [m] ſaid to come neareſt the heart of the mourning mother, of any affliction God was pleaſed to try her patience with. And, indeed, but for his loſs, and that of her only daughter, the Lady Rich (whoſe memory is celebrated by the wits and orators of her own time, the Lord Falkland, Mr. Waller, Mr. Godolphin, and others) ſhe had an uninterrupted proſperity, abating her great concern for thoſe common calamities which befel herſelf, together with the King and church. She retired to Greenwich towards the latter end of the rebellion, and reflecting on the deplorable condition of the King and church, ſhe endeavoured, with her utmoſt ſkill and diligence, to recover the dignity of the Crown, and the liberties of the people; ſolliciting the Earls of Eſſex, and Holland, to expiate their former engagements, by eſpouſing the Royal Cauſe [n]. They are ſaid both to have been very much encouraged by her earneſt ſollicitations and prudence; and that Eſſex would have given the ſureſt demonſtration of his loyal purpoſes, had not death prevented him [o] (not without ſuſpicion of poiſon) on September 13, anno 1646. When the army had made themſelves maſters of the King's perſon, and were carrying him in their triumph from place to place [p], they let him reſt a night or two at Latimers, a ſeat of this family in Buckinghamſhire, where this noble Lady happened then to be, with her ſon, the Earl of Devonſhire, and his Majeſty had much private conſultation with them, concerning the ſtate of his affairs; and, at the ſame time, expreſſed both to her, and the Earl, the great ſenſe he had of the faithful ſervices they had done him.

After the fatal fight at Worceſter, on September 3, 1651, ſhe was infinitely concerned for the ſafety of the King's perſon, and could not conceal her joy, when ſhe heard of his ſafe arrival in France: ſhe took care of the only remains he left in England, his domeſtic ſervants, many of whom ſhe received into her own family, and retained them with good reſpect and ſupport, till their Royal Maſter's happy return. By three years privacy at her brother's the Earl of Elgin's houſe, at Ampthill, ſhe had lightened her griefs and expences, and became able to renew her hoſpitality and charity, in a ſeat which ſhe purchaſed, for the pleaſant ſituation, Rohampton, in Surry. Here ſhe took opportunity, from ſuch loyal perſons as frequented her houſe, to diſcourſe with, and perſuade them to the moſt active endeavours

[m] Life of the Counteſs, p. 55. [n] Ibid. p. 60. [o] Dugdale's Baronage, vol. ii. p. 182. [p] Life, p. 55.

for the King's reſtoration[q]: and having held a communication in cyphered letters with Duke Hamilton, the Earls of Holland, and Norwich, and other eminent undertakers for the King; in the writing and opening of which, ſhe intruſted none but her nephew, the Lord Bruce (after Earl of Aileſbury) and her Chaplain, Mr. Gale. She nevertheleſs became ſo much ſuſpected, though her actings were not thoroughly diſcovered, that a troop of horſe had been ſent down to fetch her up from Ampthill (about the time the Counteſs of Carliſle was put in the Tower) had not her goldſmith (a confident of the rebels) given a bribe to one of the then Council of State. She at laſt entered into a ſpeedy and ſecret correſpondence with General Monk, who, in the midſt of his dark reſerves, ſent her, by a conſiderable officer, a private ſignal, by which ſhe might know his intentions of reſtoring the King: the General valued her noble friendſhip, and continued it, with the greateſt reſpects, to his death. The King himſelf expreſſed frequently the ſenſe he had of her conſtant zeal in his ſervice, and, as a mark of ſatisfaction and favour, would himſelf, with the Queen, Queen-mother, and Royal Family, often dine with her; and ſometimes break in upon her on a ſudden after hunting. And, that no token of reſpect might be wanting, towards the declining part of her age, when ſhe could not pay her attendance upon the Queen with the uſual and due ſolemnities of Court-addreſs, ſhe was admitted to wait on her Majeſty with more than ordinary eaſe and kindneſs. She lived to the laſt, with all the bounty of old Engliſh hoſpitality, and in vaſt diſtributions of Chriſtian charity, and yet inſpected her own accounts with ſo ſevere a ſcrutiny, that ſhe ſpent her revenues without leſſening or ſquandering any part of them. She bore her ſickneſs with great piety and reſignation, and, being crowned with many years and honours, ſhe went to receive that of Immortality, on January 16, 1674. The noble Lord, her ſon, took care that the ſolemnities of her lying in ſtate, and thoſe alſo of her funeral, ſhould correſpond to the magnificence of her living; and the train, which waited on her to her burial, was Great and Noble. She was carried, by the way of Newark, to Derby, and was interred with her ſon, as before is mentioned.

The Earl, her eldeſt ſon, though he had been a great ſufferer for his loyalty to King Charles I. ſought for no employment at Court, on the reſtoration of King Charles II. But his Majeſty ſhewed his confidence in him[r], by conſtituting him Lord Lieutenant of the county of Derby, on Auguſt 20, 1660. He lived in great plenty and reſpect, a true Engliſh Peer, honoured by his Prince, and beloved by the people; becauſe ſteady in the meaſures of maintaining the juſt prerogatives of the one, and the legal liberties of the other. Many Perſons of honour, his

[q] Life, p. 72, 73, & ſeq.

[r] Bill ſignat. 12 Car. II.

cotem-

cotemporaries, agree in the rememberance of him, That he was a man of as much conſcience and honour, religion and virtue, prudence and goodneſs, as they ever knew in the world. His tenderneſs and good nature, to friends and relations, was very exemplary. He was ſo extremely fond of his grandſon, the late Duke, then a youth, that he could not be eaſy without him; and aſſiduouſly affected to have him as much in company as poſſible. He was virtuous in his whole life, and prudent in all his affairs; he improved his large inheritance, and took care to let it deſcend entire to his ſucceſſor. He died at his ſeat of Rohampton, in Surry, on Tueſday, November 23, 1684, and was interred with his anceſtors at Derby.

It was an honour to his family, and to the conduct of it, that Sir Stephen Fox was here employed and trained up, till he became a fit Miniſter for the King, and his Court abroad. His ſon, the late Duke, had a like happineſs of retaining Henry Lowman, Eſq; before he was preferred to be an active and faithful ſervant to King William, and Queen Anne. The Earl, for his whole life, entertained Mr. Hobbs in his family, as his old tutor, rather than as his friend and confident; he let him live under his roof in eaſe and plenty, and in his own way, without making uſe of him in any public, or ſo much as domeſtic affairs. He would often expreſs an abhorrence of ſome of his principles in policy and religion; and both he and his Lady would frequently put off the mention of his name, and ſay, *He was an humoriſt, and that no body could account for him.*

His ſon William, Duke of Devonſhire, born on January 25, 1640, had all the advantages of education, both by ſtudies and travels, and was a Gentleman of gracefulneſs and gallantry, becoming a Prince's Court. The companion and guide of his travels, was Dr. Killigrew, afterward Maſter of the Savoy, &c. who gave him a juſt and true reliſh in poetry, and all the refinements of ſenſe and wit.

Under the ſtile of William Lord Cavendiſh, ſon to the Earl of Devonſhire, he was one of the four young Noblemen [s], who bore up the King's train at his coronation, on April 23, 1661, and the ſame year [t] was elected one of the Knights for the county of Derby, which was the firſt Parliament called by King Charles II. and ſtiled the Long Parliament. In 1662, he went over to Ireland, and was married at Kilkenny, on October 27 that year, to a noble, beautiful and virtuous Lady, Mary, ſecond daughter of James Duke of Ormond. On his return to England, on September 21, 1663, he was created Maſter of Arts in the Univerſity of Oxford, by the ſpecial

[s] Baker's Chron. 7th edit. p. 738.

[t] Willis's Not. Parliam. p. 222.

command of the Chancellor [u], in company of the Earls of Suffolk, Bath, and others of the greateſt hopes; the King, Queen, and Court, being then at Oxford.

In the year 1665, the Lord Cavendiſh ſhewed his bravery, in going volunteer in the fleet, and was in the midſt of that dangerous ſea-fight, on June 3, in attendance on the Duke of York. Whilſt he lived a Commoner, he was elected to ſerve for the county of Derby, in the Long Parliament [x], as alſo in three others without intermiſſion; and was a very faithful and leading Member, diſtinguiſhing himſelf in every debate, wherein the ſervice of his King and country required his attendance. In the beginning of the year 1669, he accompanied Mr. Montagu (after made Duke of Montagu) then ſent on an embaſſy to France; and whilſt he was at Paris, he was moſt rudely [y] affronted at an Opera, by three officers of the King's guard, who came full of wine upon the ſtage: one of them coming up to him, with a very inſulting queſtion, my Lord gave him a ſevere blow on the face, upon which they all drew, and puſhed hard upon him: he got his back againſt one of the ſcreens, and made a ſtout defence, receiving ſeveral wounds, till a ſturdy Swiſs of my Lord Ambaſſador Montagu's caught him up in his arms, and threw him over the ſtage into the pit: in his fall, one of his arms was caught upon an iron ſpike, which tore out the fleſh, and left a ſcar very viſible to his dying day. The aſſailants were clapped up by the King's command, and not releaſed till my Lord himſelf interceded for them.

The judicious Sir William Temple [z], in a very memorable letter to his Lordſhip, gives ſome account of the diſcourſe at the Hague, on this brave action.

Hague, July 18, N. S. 1669.

MY LORD,

"THOUGH I had much rather make your Lordſhip my "compliments upon ſome better fortunes, and upon your "health, rather than your dangers; yet I could not omit doing "it at this time, upon ſo honourable a part as all men allow "you to have had in your late adventure at Paris; which I do "not only as a private perſon and ſervant of your Lordſhip's, "who wiſhes you all increaſe of honour that may not be bought "too dear; but withal, as a publick Miniſter, who ought ever "to conſider, above all things, the honour of our nation; and "knows that the complexion of it, in times of peace, is very "much either mended or ſpoiled in the eyes of ſtrangers, by "the actions and carriage of particular perſons abroad. I can

[u] Wood's Athen. Oxon. vol. ii. p. 830. [x] Willis, p. 222. [y] Biſhop Kennet's Memoirs, p. 117. [z] Vide his Letters, vol. ii. p. 70.

"aſſure

" aſſure your Lordſhip, all that can be ſaid to your advantage, " upon this occaſion, is the common diſcourſe here; and not " diſputed by the French themſelves; who ſay, you have been " as generous in excuſing your enemies, as brave in defending " yourſelf. The Dutch will have it, That you have been the " firſt in exceſs; and ſay, that ſuch a thing as ſeven or eight " falling upon one, would never have been done in any other " place, but France, nor ſuffered neither by the reſt of the " company. However, I am of opinion, if exceſs may be al- " lowed in any part, it is in that; and therefore, rejoice with " you in the honour of both, and with myſelf, in that of my " being,

" My Lord,
" Your Lordſhip's Moſt Obedient
" Humble ſervant."

In 1677, when his Majeſty was offended with the Commons, for addreſſing him to make a league offenſive and defenſive with the States of Holland, and, for a mark of diſpleaſure, had commanded the Speaker to adjourn the Houſe to Monday, July 16, the Lord Cavendiſh was at the head of thoſe Members [a], who objected againſt that abrupt diſmiſſion of them, and preſſed it upon the Speaker, " That he could not leave the chair, but " by a queſtion, and the vote of the Houſe;" and offered to ſhew a precedent of the Commons ſitting after an unexpected meſſage to adjourn. And when, upon the ſaid July 16, the two Houſes met, only in order to be adjourned by his Majeſty's pleaſure, this Lord was in the report of a Royal Command to that effect; but he moved, " That their laſt order about ad- " journment might be read, to the end they might take notice " of the authority by which they met here now; and this, he " ſaid, was uſual and regular to be done;" which motion was ſeconded, and had probably been carried, if the Speaker, Edward (afterwards Sir Edward) Seymour had not left the chair, and run away from the hard words that followed him. In the ſame ſeſſion, when a vote of great conſequence was depending, and the Houſe divided, and tellers were appointed, and the numbers were returned equal on both ſides, by which means, he and his friends would have loſt their neceſſary point, he charged a miſtake upon the tellers againſt him, and would not ſuffer it to be ſhuffled up, but inſiſted on it, till, with great difficulty, he gained the proof of it, by which he exaſperated a court party to the laſt degree. In the next Parliament, in October, 1678, the Lord Cavendiſh was the third named [b], in the firſt Committee appointed for privileges and elections; was alſo in a ſecond Com-

[a] Biſhop Kennet's Memoirs, p. 120, & ſeq. [b] Copy of the Journal of the Houſe of Commons, printed A. D. 1680. p. 4.

mittee

mittee for drawing up an humble addreſs to be preſented to his Majeſty for removing all popiſh recuſants from within ten miles of the city of London [c]; and in a third, for examining into the murder of Sir Edmund-Bury Godfrey; and in [d] another, for preparing a bill to hinder Papiſts from ſitting in either Houſe of Parliament, which received the Royal Aſſent on November 30.

On October 29, 1678, he was one of the ſelect Committee appointed [e] to go to Newgate, and examine Mr. Coleman, touching the plot and conſpiracy againſt his Majeſty; and in a ſecond, to communicate to the Lords at a conference [f], "That "upon the evidence that has already appeared to the Houſe, they "are of opinion, That there is, and hath been, a damnable "and helliſh plot, contrived and carried on by popiſh recuſants, "for aſſaſſinating and murdering the King, for ſubverting the "Government, and the Proteſtant religion." Alſo on December 2, in [g] another to draw up a repreſentation to be made to the King, "of the danger that may ariſe to his Majeſty and the "kingdom, by the non-obſervance of the laws that have been "made for the preſervation of the peace, and ſafety of the "kingdom." On December 19, he was ſent to attend his Majeſty with the vote of the Houſe, relating to the information given againſt Mr. Montague; [h] and was choſen, the ſame day, one of the Committee to prepare and draw up articles againſt the Earl of Danby; and was particularly appointed to keep the letters delivered by Mr. Montague.

In another Parliament, which met on March 6, 1678-9, this Lord was among the chief Members appointed to attend his Majeſty, with the vote concerning the election of a new Speaker, on March 8, the King having refuſed to approve of Edward Seymour, Eſq; before-mentioned, as having occaſion for him in his own immediate ſervice; and of the Committee, for drawing up a bill to ſecure the King and kingdom againſt the growth and danger of Popery, on April 16, 1679; alſo, on May 14, was diſtinguiſhed in carrying up the addreſs for declaring to revenge upon the Papiſts any violence offered by them to the King's perſon. Upon theſe occaſions, he ſpoke often with that weight and freedom, that ſome of his ſpeeches got abroad, in imperfect copies, and were much applauded. One of them had ſuch ſevere things in it, that it wiſely produced this order of the Houſe: *The Houſe being informed, that there is a falſe and ſcandalous pamphlet diſperſed abroad, under the name of* The Speech of the Lord Cavendiſh; *Reſolved, it be referred to a Committee, to enquire into the authors and publiſhers of that pamphlet.* During this ſeſſion, the King, finding his Miniſtry not able to ſupport them-

[c] Copy of the Journal of the Houſe of Commons, printed A. D. 1680, p. 9, 10.
[d] Ibid. p. 18. [e] Ibid. p. 34. [f] Ibid. p. 63. [g] Ibid. p. 159.
[h] Ibid. p. 189, 195, 196.

ſelves,

ſelves, choſe, on April 21, 1679, a new Privy-Council, conſiſting of a number not exceeding thirty; of which fifteen to be of the chief officers, Privy-Counſellors by their places; and ten out of the ſeveral houſes of the Nobility; and five Commoners of the realm, [i] *whoſe known abilities, intereſt and eſteem in the nation, ſhould render them without all ſuſpicion of either miſtaking or betraying the true intereſt of the kingdom.* In this honourable liſt [k] was William Lord Cavendiſh, with his inſeparable friend, William Lord Ruſſel. On the next day, [l] the King told his two Houſes, That he had eſtabliſhed a new Privy-Council, *and had made choice of ſuch perſons as were worthy and able to adviſe him; and was reſolved, in all his weighty and important affairs, to be adviſed by them.* But in May, a bill was brought in, *To diſable the Duke of York from inheriting the imperial Crown of England.* This, and other proceedings againſt Popery, brought the ſeſſion to a quick period, on May 27, when they were prorogued to Auguſt 14, and in the mean time diſſolved. Then the Duke returned from Flanders, and before the new Parliament, ſummoned to meet on October 17, he choſe to withdraw into Scotland; and that in his abſence no proceedings might affect him, the Parliament was put off by ſeveral prorogations, and the petitions for their ſitting were declared to be libellous, and puniſhed as ſuch. On January 28, 1679-80, the King declared in Council, That he had ſent for his Royal Highneſs out of Scotland, and would anſwer, that his return ſhould have no ill *Influence upon the Public.* Theſe meaſures ſo much diſconcerted the views of the Anti-courtiers, that ſome of them reſolved to withdraw. Accordingly, it was publiſhed in the Gazette, Whitehall, January 31: This evening the Lord Ruſſel, the Lord Cavendiſh, Sir Henry Capel, and Mr. Powle, prayed his Majeſty to give them leave to withdraw from the Council-board. [m] To which his Majeſty was pleaſed to anſwer, *With all my Heart:* A frank intimation, that ſince they oppoſed his new ſcheme of adminſtration, he had rather be without them; and which he thought fit to make known to his people.

The Lord Cavendiſh was again choſen for the county of Derby in the next Parliament, which, after ſo many prorogations, met on October 21, 1680; and was in the boſom of the Lord Ruſſel, when he ſtood up to declare his opinion, [n] *That the life of our King, the ſafety of our country, and proteſtant religion, were in great danger from Popery; and that either the Parliament muſt ſuppreſs the power and growth of Popery, or elſe Popery would ſoon deſtroy all that was near and dear to us:* and therefore moved,

[i] King's Speech to his Privy-Council, April 20, 1679. [k] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 362. [l] King's Speech in the Houſe of Lords, April 21, 1679. [m] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 368. [n] Collect. of Debates in the Houſe of Commons, 1680, p. 1.

That,

That, in the firſt place, they might take into conſideration how to ſuppreſs Popery, and prevent a popiſh ſucceſſor. The Lord Cavendiſh [o] carried up the articles of impeachment to the Lords againſt Sir William Scroggs, Knt. Chief Juſtice of the Court of King's Bench, for his arbitrary and illegal practices. Alſo when the King had declared his reſolution of not conſenting to a bill of excluſion, and the great point was, to ſecure the kingdom againſt Popery, his Lordſhip was a warm ſtickler for the excluſion, as appears by his ſpeech on that occaſion, printed in the Debates of the Houſe.

In fine, he was one of thoſe who openly oppoſed the King's chief Counſellors, and promoted the addreſs to his Majeſty, to remove them from all offices of honour and profits, and from his Majeſty's Councils and preſence for ever. Upon which his Majeſty prorogued the Parliament, on January 10, 1680-1, and diſſolved them by proclamation, on the 18th; and called another to meet at Oxford, on March 21, wherein Lord Cavendiſh began again to ſtem the tide: but his undaunted efforts were again ſtopped, by diſſolution, in a week's time. It is, however, obſervable, that the zeal of Lord Cavendiſh was, in the warmeſt debates, tempered with candour and great civility. When Mr. Secretary Jenkins refuſed to carry a meſſage to the Lords, and the Houſe ſo far reſented it, as to be for calling him to the bar, my [p] Lord Cavendiſh concluded, "That the Gen-"tleman's fault was a great one; but that, after his begging the "pardon of the Houſe, he ſhould be willing to paſs it over; for "though it was a great fault, yet it was too little to give oc-"caſion of a breach at this time." Upon which the Secretary was ſoftened, and ſaid, "He was ready to obey the order of "the Houſe, and was ſorry his words had given offence;" and ſo went on the meſſage. After this the King and his Miniſters governed without a Parliament, and, under ſome pretence or other, called the chief Members of the late Houſes into queſtion for their liberties, and very lives; Duke of Monmouth, Earls of Shaftſbury and Eſſex, Lord Ruſſel, Colonel Sidney, and others. The Lord Cavendiſh was thought as obnoxious as any, and did not decline the meeting with thoſe perſons, while nothing was propoſed, but what was honourable and juſt. But in ſome one aſſignation, he is ſaid to have condemned a bold overture that was then made, and to have declared, with great earneſtneſs, when he came back, *That he would never more go among ſt them:* not that he deſerted what he thought the public cauſe, or any in it, whom he eſteemed his friends; for at the trial of Lord Ruſſel, his Lordſhip appeared, with the Earl of Angleſey, Mr. Howard, Dr. Tillotſon, Dr. Burnet, &c. to vindicate him in the face of the Court, giving his teſtimony to

[o] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 379.

[p] Debates, præd. p. 316.

the

the good life and converſation of the priſoner [q], ſaying,——*He had the honour to be acquainted with my Lord Ruſſel a long time, and always thought him a man of great honour, and too prudent and wary a man to be concerned in ſo vile and deſperate a deſign as this, and from which he would receive ſo little advantage. And that two or three days ſince the diſcovery of this plot, upon diſcourſe about Colonel Romſey, my Lord Ruſſel did expreſs ſomething, as if he had a very ill opinion of the man, and therefore it was not likely he would intruſt him with ſuch a ſecret.*

When, by force of the ſtream, he ſaw that great man ſubmitting to the hard ſentence of death, he did not forſake him, nor would he altogether deſpair of his ſafety. He ſent him a meſſage by Sir James Forbes, that he would come and change cloaths with him in the priſon, and ſtay there to repreſent him, if, in ſuch diſguiſe, he could make his eſcape [r]. When the Lord Ruſſel was too generous to accept of this propoſal, the Lord Cavendiſh attended on him in his extremes, waited on his diſconſolate Lady, and took leave of him, in the moſt endearing paſſions, the morning he ſuffered; and evidenced his reſpect to the family, by matching his eldeſt ſon with a daughter of it.

There is one other inſtance of his gallantry and courage, that is to be admired, ſo far as it proceeded from his love to a friend, and his zeal for juſtice. He had contracted a firm intimacy with Thomas Thynne, Eſq; and, after his barbarous aſſaſſination, he purſued a legal vengeance on the murderers, and brought the immediate actors to condign puniſhment, and the great abettor of it to his trial, who happened to be acquitted by a jury poſſeſſed, or rather prepared, in favour of him. This Lord had great indignation at his diſcharge, which he thought owing to corruption; and knowing, that an appeal to ſingle combat was, of old, the laſt reſort in law, for convicting a murder, he obtained the favour of a noble Peer to go in his name to Count Coningſmark, to charge the guilt of blood upon him, and to offer to prove it in the open field: but it may be preſumed, the meſſage, or the anſwer, was dropped, becauſe the Count was in haſte to fly from a ſecond trial.

By the death of the old Earl, in 1684, Lord Cavendiſh was third Earl of Devonſhire; and in the reign of King James, he was the ſame man, in his principles, as formerly. He had been very rudely inſulted within the verge of the Court by Colonel Culpeper, for which he contained himſelf, and only worked out the ſatisfaction of giving him his pardon, upon condition he ſhould never more appear at Whitehall; but, immediately after the defeat of the Duke of Monmouth, the Colonel was encouraged to ſhew himſelf at Court, and was riſing into a creature

[q] Trial of my Lord Ruſſel, p. 53. [r] Biſhop Burnet's Hiſtory, p. 560.

of

of it. The Earl of Devonſhire meeting him in the King's Preſence-chamber, and receiving from him, as he thought, an inſulting look, he took him by the noſe, led him out of the room, and gave him ſome deſpiſing blow with the head of his cane. For this bold act, the Earl was proſecuted in the King's Bench, upon an information, and had a fine of 30,000 l. impoſed upon him, and was committed, though a Peer, to the King's Bench priſon, till he ſhould make payment of it. He was never able to bear any confinement that he could break from, and therefore he eſcaped only to go home to his ſeat at Chatſworth. Upon the news of his being there, the Sheriff of Derbyſhire had a precept to apprehend him, and bring him with his Poſſe to town. But he invited the Sheriff, and kept him a priſoner of honour, till he had compounded for his own liberty, by giving bond to pay the full ſum of 30,000 l. which bond had this providential diſcharge, *That it was found among the papers of King James, and given up by King William.* We are told, That the Counteſs Dowager, his mother, being uneaſy to ſee him under ſo great a hardſhip, waited on the King, to beg her ſon's pardon, and, for diſcharge of the fine, did humbly deſire, That his Majeſty would accept of her delivering up bonds, and other acknowledgements, for above 60,000 l. lent by her huſband, and his mother, to his Royal Father and Brother, in their greateſt extremities. But it ſeems the popiſh party then thought, the Earl had forfeited all title to gratitude and equity. It was under this load of difficulties, that he firſt projected the new glorious pile at Chatſworth, as if his mind roſe upon the depreſſions of his fortunes: for he now contracted with workmen to pull down the ſouth ſide of that good old ſeat, and to rebuild it in a plan he gave to them, for a front to his gardens, ſo fair and auguſt, that it looked like a model of what might be done in after ages. When he had finiſhed this part, he meant to go no farther, till, ſeeing public affairs in a happier ſettlement, for a teſtimony of eaſe and joy, he undertook the eaſt ſide of the quadrangle, and raiſed it intirely new, in conformity to the ſouth, and ſeemed then content to ſay, *That he had gone half way through, and would leave the reſt for his heir.* In this reſolution he ſtopped about ſeven years, and then began to lay the foundation for two other ſides, to compleat the noble ſquare; and theſe laſt, as far as uniformity admits, do exceed the others by a weſt front, of moſt excellent ſtrength and elegance, and a capitol on the north ſide, that is of ſingular ornament and ſervice. And though ſuch a vaſt pile (of materials entirely new) required a prodigious expence, yet the building was his leaſt charge, if regard be had to his gardens, water-works, ſtatues, pictures, and other the fineſt pieces of art, and of nature, that could be obtained abroad, or at home.

One

One of the firſt rooms he finiſhed, was the chapel, which he made not only as decent, but as ſplendid, as any in a proteſtant country. This, with the apartments, and all the other glories of the houſe, are a ſubject of ſurprize and admiration. It will bear the report, That when the Marſhal Tallard came hither, with ſome of his fellow priſoners, by invitation of the Duke, and was nobly entertained for ſeveral days, he is ſaid to have parted with this compliment: *My Lord, when I come hereafter to compute the time of my captivity in England, I ſhall leave out the days of my enjoyment at Chatſworth.*

At this place the Earl kept himſelf retired for the moſt part of the few years of King James, thinking the fartheſt retreat from the Court to be, at that time, the fitteſt place for a good ſubject. Here was his refuge from Weſtminſter and Hounſlow, from a ſet of Judges, and a ſtanding army. He heard, with indignation, of the proceedings above, and the great advances made toward a French Monarchy, and a Roman Religion. He was ſatisfied in his judgment, that a Prince, governing by law, deſerved allegiance, and the utmoſt aſſiſtance of his people; but he could never digeſt the hard notions of a paſſive obedience to tyrants, *i. e.* to any Monarchs, or their Miniſters, who ſhould bend a legal conſtitution to their own will and pleaſure, till they broke up, and changed the foundations of it. His care was, if poſſible, to preſerve a legal Monarchy in the proteſtant line, upon the true eſtabliſhment of laws and fundamental conſtitution. He had no other view of ſafety, but from the Prince of Orange; and therefore he helped to draw the eyes of the Nobility and Gentry the ſame way. He writ his mind freely to an Engliſh friend in the Court at the Hague, that their laſt and only hopes were from thence; and therefore he was very much in thoſe deep and ſecret meaſures, which were taken to invite over that Prince. But while he was waiting, with impatience, the effects of it, he found dangers and difficulties big enough to try a noble ſpirit.

The King, upon the firſt alarm from Holland, or rather from France, had a jealouſy of this Earl, above any other Peer, and ſent for him to Court, that he might have the ſtricter guard upon him. His Lordſhip excuſed his attendance, becauſe he knew the meaning of it. After this, his kinſman, the Duke of Newcaſtle, was deſired to go down to Chatſworth, to invite the Earl into the King's ſervice: but his Lordſhip heard the Duke's diſcourſe of the fatality of Civil War, and of the loyalty of their family the Cavendiſhes, and ſome other ſuggeſtions of intereſt and honour, with ſeeming attention, and all civilities, without making any return or anſwer, but in general expreſſions. When his noble gueſt was gone, he concerted other meaſures with the Earl of Danby, the Lord Delamere, Sir Scroop How, and ſome

few others of greateſt quality and intereſt in thoſe parts. They had, at firſt, an eye upon the Prince's landing in the North, and, when diſappointed of thoſe hopes, they ſtill continued their preparations, and waited for him, with impatience. In the mean time, the Earl treated with many of his friends and neighbours; but he found them reflecting on the Duke of Monmouth's attempt, and bearing in mind the weſtern inquiſition. He had the hearts and wiſhes of many who dared not to ſtir their hands. Some expectances were not anſwered, and even ſome promiſes were evaded. When the Prince was driven back by a ſtorm, and the King was doing ſome fair things to pleaſe the people, his Lordſhip was then in danger of being delivered up, or, at leaſt, of being left alone. He did, however, keep himſelf and ſervants, and ſome few of his faſteſt friends, in a readineſs and ſilent preparation. They talked over the ſcene they had laid in feigned words and phraſes; and when any ſuſpected company ſeemed to underſtand them, they fell into other inventions of ſecrecy and reſerve.

As ſoon as he heard of the Prince's landing in the Weſt, he began to prove, and reſolved to run the utmoſt hazards for his cauſe. He marched firſt, with a ſmall retinue, to the county town of Derby, and invited many of the Gentry, and entertained thoſe who adventured to come, at his open table, with freedom of diſcourſe. He called out the Mayor and Commonalty, and read to them the Prince's declaration, and made a favourable comment on it; and delivered to them a copy of the declaration made by himſelf, and the Nobility and Gentry with him: *That they would, to their utmoſt, defend the Proteſtant Religion, the Laws of the Kingdom, and the Rights and Liberties of the Subject.*

While his Lordſhip was in town, a meſſenger came from London, with a letter in the heel of his boot, ſo much ſoaked in water and dirt, that it could hardly be made legible: the contents were to ſignify the return of King James from Saliſbury, and the advance of the Prince's army towards London. This occaſioned great joy; but, in the midſt of it, another courier arrived, with an account directly contrary, and left the wiſeſt of them in ſuſpence, and the reſt in conſternation. The King's party made their advantage of it, and began to form a plot of ſecuring the Earl and his company, if they had not left the place with greater expedition.

From thence his Lordſhip marched to Nottingham, where the people were well-affected; and the Nobility and Gentry ſoon made a number and figure very conſiderable. The Earl, at the head of them, thought fit to unite them in a declaration of their ſenſe and reſolution; which was accordingly made, and (on November 22, 1688) unanimouſly ſubſcribed on this profeſſed principle; *We own it rebellion to reſiſt a King that governs by law;*

but

but he was always accounted a tyrant that made his will the law; and, to reſiſt ſuch a one, we juſtly eſteem no rebellion, but a neceſſary, and juſt defence. This declaration was thought to be ſo equitable and honourable, that many others came daily into it, and were formed into regular troops, and made the appearance of a confederate army. A regiment of horſe (the fourth) was formed, whereof his Lordſhip was Colonel, and was one of the firſt that went to Ireland, in 1689. When her Royal Highneſs the Princeſs Anne was perſuaded to forſake her father's palace, ſhe went from London with the Lord Biſhop, the Earl of Dorſet, and a ſmall train of Ladies, on Sundy night, November 25, determining to go directly to Nottingham. In her journey a rumour was induſtriouſly ſpread, *That a party of the enemies would intercept her*; upon which the Earl marched out, with a good body of horſe, and, at ſome miles diſtance from the town, met her Royal Highneſs, with great reſpect and joy, and conducted her to the Caſtle (from whence the noble owner, the Duke of Newcaſtle, had withdrawn) and kept tables at his own expence, and provided all the other accommodations of a Court, and a ſtanding Council. When his ſtock failed, he accepted of ſome contributions, and, at laſt, borrowed the public money in ſuch a manner, as to ſatisfy the collectors, and pleaſe the country. When a copy of the aſſociation came, he readily went into it, and was followed by thoſe who were moſt hearty in the cauſe. When ſome were ſo cautious as to decline it, he waved their refuſal with great temper: but when they afterwards, on a nearer proſpect of ſucceſs, offered to ſubſcribe, he then checked them for their former warineſs, and ſaid, There was *now* no need of their doing it.

The Princeſs was extremely ſatisfied with her reception; but deſiring to be nearer to his Royal Highneſs Prince George, propoſed to go toward Oxford: whereupon the Earl of Devonſhire, and his Noble Train, were a guard to her Royal Highneſs, and, by eaſy and moſt convenient ſtages, conducted her ſafe to Oxford, where ſhe was ſoon after met by her moſt affectionate conſort, the Prince. When the Earl of Devon had delivered up his Royal Truſt at Chriſtchurch, he was ſolicitous to do more, that the important work might be finiſhed, and the fruits of it remain to poſterity: ſo, with a private friend or two, he haſted early next day to London; and hearing the Prince of Orange was come as far as Sion-Houſe, he reſolved to meet him the next morning, and came thither to the Prince, as he was taking coach, and was received by him with all the marks of affection and eſteem.

He was among the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, aſſembled in their Houſe at Weſtminſter, on December 25, and was forward and leading in the addreſs to the Prince, to take upon him

the adminiſtration, till the meeting of a convention then ſummoned. At the opening of that convention, on January 22, 1688-9, he was one of the firſt Peers in the order, for *a Day of Public Thankſgiving to Almighty God, for having made his Highneſs, the Prince of Orange, the glorious inſtrument of the great deliverance of this Kingdom from Popery and Arbitrary Power.* And again, in the Addreſs of the Lords and Commons, *To deſire the Prince to continue in the adminiſtration of public affairs, civil and military, and the diſpoſal of the public revenue, for the preſervation of our religion, rights, laws, liberties, and properties.* In the following debates, he was for compleating and ſecuring the wonderful revolution. He argued boldly for the ſenſe of the Commons of England, *That King James had not only endeavoured to ſubvert the Conſtitution of the Kingdom, by breaking the Original Contract between King and People; but, having violated the fundamental laws, and withdrawn himſelf out of the Kingdom, had ABDICATED the Government; and the THRONE was thereby vacant.* When a majority of Lords were at firſt againſt this vote, he entered his proteſtation with about forty other Peers; and, after a free conference, he encouraged the leading Commons, and helped to convince ſome Lords, how reaſonable it was to agree with them. When this point was at laſt carried, he had the pleaſure to ſee a greater majority with him in the final reſolution, *That the Prince and Princeſs of Orange ſhould be declared King and Queen of England, &c.* He was zealous in the declaration of the Lords and Commons, for vindicating their antient rights and liberties; and diſtinguiſhed himſelf in every vote to fix the Throne, and prevent a relapſe into ſlavery.

For theſe eminent and faithful ſervices, he was admitted one of the Privy-Council, on February 14, and, on March 16, 1688-9, was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant of Derbyſhire. Alſo, for a nearer relation to the Court, was made Lord Steward of their Majeſties Houſhold: and it muſt be remembered to his honour, that, when a perſon offered him a very large ſum for the liberty of filling up the places in his gift, and would have brought a liſt of three names for each place, that his Lordſhip might chooſe any one, he rejected the offer with an air of ſcorning a bribe, and hating the tempter. He was, indeed, averſe to any act that had the leaſt appearance of diſhonour, and had ſo nice a regard to every thing that was juſt, that when, for the entertainment of his friends, he had an aſſembly at his houſe, he ſent for the Groom Porter, and his ſervants, that thoſe who were diſpoſed to play, might have no ſuſpicion of being ill-treated. On April 3, 1689, he was elected a Knight Companion of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, with Frederick Mareſchal de Schomberg; and, having been firſt knighted by the Sovereign, was inveſted, and, on May 14 following, inſtalled, with great ſplendor. At

At the Coronation, on April 11, 1689, he was made Lord High-Steward of England for that day, and carried the Regal Crown next to the Bible and the King's Perſon; his daughter aſſiſting in bearing up her Majeſty's Train. In this ſolemnity, his perſon, and port, and habit, were ſo very graceful, that they really adorned the proceſſion, and made the Regalia more illuſtrious.

In the following Parliament, his Lordſhip complained of his grievance, and had it referred to a Committee, who, on April 22, came to this report[a], *Their Lordſhips are of opinion, That the proceedings againſt the Earl of Devonſhire, in the Court of King's Bench, in Eaſter Term, in the 3d of King James II. upon an information for an aſſault upon Mr. Culpeper, wherein his Lordſhip's plea of privilege of Parliament was over-ruled, and he was fined* 30,000 *l. and thereupon committed to the King's Bench in execution, was a great violation of the privileges of the Peers of this realm. Their Lordſhips are likewiſe of opinion, That thoſe Judges who ſat in the ſaid Court, when the ſaid judgments were given, and the ſaid commitment made, ſhould be required to attend at the Bar of this Houſe, to anſwer for the great offence which they have committed thereby.* Hereupon the Houſe ordered, *That the Clerk of the Crown-Office, in the King's Bench, ſhould bring into this Houſe the Records of that office, wherein the proceedings againſt the Earl of Devonſhire were entered; and that the Keeper of Newgate ſhould bring, in ſafe cuſtody, to the Bar of this Houſe, Sir Robert Wright; and that Sir Richard Holloway, and Mr. Juſtice Powel, ſhould attend the Houſe on the day appointed.*

Accordingly, on Monday, May 6, they ſeverally attended, and acknowledging their crime, and begging the Earl of Devonſhire's pardon, the Houſe came to this reſolutinn, *That the Court of King's Bench, in over-ruling the Earl of Devonſhire's plea of privilege of Parliament, and forcing him to plead over in chief, it being the uſual time of privilege, did thereby commit a manifeſt breach of the privilege of Parliament; and that the fine of* 30,000 *l. impoſed, by the Court of King's Bench, upon the Earl of Devonſhire, was exceſſive and exorbitant, againſt Magna Charta, the common right of the ſubject, and the law of the land.* And on May 7, the Houſe heard the Judges, what caſes and precedents there were in the laws, for the commitment of a Peer of this realm, in execution for a fine. And on May 15, their Lordſhips heard the perſons who had given judgment againſt the Earl, what they could ſay for themſelves, to juſtify their proceedings; and the King's Council, upon a week's notice, did give their attendance, but did offer nothing therein. Whereupon, after full conſideration, their Lordſhips did affirm their former judgment; and did further declare and adjudge, *That*

[a] Journal of the Houſe of Lords.

no Peer of this realm, at any time, ought to be committed for the non-payment of a fine to the King.

When he had obtained this right and honour to be done unto himſelf, and his fellow Peers, and to his and their poſterity, he was as much concerned for redreſſing the injuries done unto the Commons, and to the particular ſufferers among them. He promoted the repeal of ſeveral attainders, and helped to prevail in the *Houſe of Lords*, to appoint a Committee to examine who were the adviſers and proſecutors of the murders of the Lord Ruſſel, Colonel Sidney, Sir Thomas Armſtrong, Mr. Corniſh, and others. He was ſo averſe to all manner of injuſtice and oppreſſion, that he was always ready to protect and deliver the very enemies of the government from any illegal hardſhip. He remembered his Maſter, King William's ſaying, *That he came over to defend the Proteſtants, and not to perſecute the Papiſts.* Thoſe Roman Catholic Gentlemen who lived near him in the country peaceably and quietly, he treated as neighbours and friends, and they bore a great reſpect to him, and ſhewed it by attending his funeral in a very decent manner. Yet, in all public debates and conſults, the Duke was a ſteady and magnanimous oppoſer of Popery and French power: he hated the very name of a tyrant; his pen was never ſharp, but on that ſubject, as may be ſeen in his poem, intitled, *An alluſion to the Biſhop of Cambray's Supplement of Homer.*

On January 18, 1690-1, with his Majeſty he embarked at Graveſend, who appointed a ſplendid congreſs at the Hague, where his Grace outſhined moſt of the Princes there. His plate and furniture were ſo magnificent, that the ſight of them drew a greater concourſe of people to his houſe, than to any other palace [r]. He invited ſeveral of the Sovereign Princes to dinner, and the King to be incognito among them. In our Gazette, N° 2642, is the following relation:

Hague, March 9. "On Monday laſt my Lord Steward treated the Elector of Brandenburg, the Landgrave of Heſſe, the Prince de Commercy, &c. with great magnificence, and the King was pleaſed unexpected to do his Lordſhip the honour to be one of the company. The Elector of Bavaria was not there, but has invited himſelf ſome other day."

At the ſiege of Mons, in March, 1691, he waited upon his Majeſty to the Camp, and returned to England, without any complaint of the trouble or expence, landing with his Majeſty at Whitehall, on April 13, N. S. following, Mons having ſurrendered to the French on the 10th.

On May 12, 1694, he was created Marquis of Hartington, and Duke of Devonſhire; the preamble to his patent ſetting forth, *That the King and Queen could do no leſs for one who had*

[r] Exact Relation of the Entertainment of King William at the Hague.

deſerved

deſerved the beſt of them: one who, in a corrupted age, and ſinking into the baſeſt flattery, had conſtantly retained the manners of the antients, and would never ſuffer himſelf to be moved, either by the inſinuations, or the threats, of a deceitful Court: but, equally deſpiſing both, like a true aſſerter of liberties, ſtood always for the laws; and when he ſaw them violated paſt all other redreſs, he appealed to Us; and we adviſing with him how to ſhake off that tyranny, he, with many other Peers, drawn over to us by his example and advice, gave us the greateſt aſſiſtance towards gaining a moſt abſolute victory without blood; and ſo reſtoring the antient rights and religion, &c. This dignity, with his Garter and White-Staff, and Juſticeſhip in Eyre, and Lieutenancy, was as much honour as an Engliſh ſubject could well enjoy.

He was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Derbyſhire, on King William's acceſſion, having, on the death of his father, been left out of the Commiſſion, for not approving of the meaſures of the Court. King Charles conſtituted Robert Earl of Scarſdale Lord Lieutenant; and King James appointed Theophilus Earl of Huntingdon.

At the death of Queen Mary, on December 28, 1694, the Duke expreſſed his own grief, and the public loſs, in an Ode compoſed by him, with great paſſion and judgment; which Mr. Dryden is ſaid to have preferred above all that was written on that occaſion; and which is to be found among his other works.

His Grace was a poet, not by genius only, but by learning and judgment. The Lord Roſcommon made him a conſtant reviſer of his immortal lines. He was a maſter of Horace, and would talk of the other antients with great reliſh and knowledge. He had nothing profane or indecent in any line: between the Wit, and the Gentleman, he knew the difference, and nicely obſerved it. He was choſen, in 1697, Recorder of the town of Nottingham.

When, after the Queen's death, the adminiſtration of the government, in the King's abſence, was to be intruſted in the hands of his ſubjects, the Duke was one of thoſe Lords Juſtices of England for ſeven ſucceſſive years, a continual honour that happened to no one other Peer, ſave to him and Dr. Thomas Teniſon, Archbiſhop of Canterbury.

In the caſe of Sir John Fenwick, he had a conviction of his guilt, and therefore an abhorrence of his perſon; and yet ſo tender was he of the forms of law, and ſo averſe to any extraordinary judicial proceeding, that, for fear of leaving a precedent that might hereafter be miſunderſtood, or miſapplied, he could not come into that bill: for, without regard to the authority of others, he always followed his own judgment; as he did eminently in another bill, *for the reſumption of eſtates in*

Ireland, which he oppoſed with great reſolution, declaring, upon honour, *That he would never recede from a report in that matter.* At the funeral of King William, on April 12, 1702, his Grace, and the Duke of Somerſet, were the two ſupporters to his Royal Highneſs George Prince of Denmark, the chief mourner.

Upon the acceſſion of Queen Anne to the Throne, on March 8, 1701-2, he was continued in his high office, and other ſtations; and ſerved the Queen with a grateful reverence to the memory of the King. A report was induſtriouſly ſpread, *That a project had been formed in prejudice to her ſucceſſion to the Crown, and was to be found among the papers of the late King*; whereupon, at the deſire of the *Houſe of Lords*, the Duke was one of the Prime Miniſters appointed by her Majeſty to inſpect the ſaid papers; and, ſoon after, they did ſeverally declare in the Houſe, *That they did not ſee, or find, any paper, or papers, tending to the prejudice of her Majeſty, or her ſucceſſion to the Crown, in any reſpect whatſoever; or which might give any ground or colour for ſuch report.* Upon which it was reſolved upon by the Lords, *That the ſaid report was groundleſs, falſe, villainous, and ſcandalous, to the diſhonour of the King's memory, and tending to the diſſervice of her Majeſty.*

At the ſplendid coronation of the Queen, on April 23, 1702, he was a ſecond time Lord High-Steward of England for that ſolemn day, and bore the Crown between the Dukes of Richmond and Somerſet, till he preſented it at the altar.

In Parliament he was active for ſecuring the Proteſtant Succeſſion, for declaring war againſt France and Spain, and ſupporting her Majeſty in her alliances, to carry on the common cauſe of Europe. He was one of the Commiſſioners, on the part of England, to treat of an union between the two nations. In April, 1705, he waited on the Queen to Cambridge, and was there created Doctor in Law, with his own ſon, the ſecond Duke, and many others of the Nobility and Gentry. He (as is before recited) received a title, which he eſteemed an honour, at Oxford: he had a great reſpect for the Univerſities, and diſliked no part of the education in them, only that he thought the young men were many of them warmed with politics, before they underſtood the conſtitution of their country.

After a ſevere indiſpoſition, that would not yield to the art of the beſt phyſicians, he ſunk extremely in his body, without any alteration in his mind and ſenſes; and, with a full proſpect of death, and a Chriſtian preparation for it, he departed, about nine in the morning, on Monday, Auguſt 18, 1707, in Devonſhire-houſe, Piccadilly, in the ſixty-ſeventh year of his age, and was buried in the church of Allhallows in Derby, on Friday, September 1. In the time of his ſickneſs, he ſent for an eminent Prelate,

Prelate, to viſit and aſſiſt him; who *found him in full diſpoſition to make his peace with God: he confeſſed his being troubled, being very much troubled, for the lateneſs of his repentance, which he hoped was* ſincere, *and deſired the* Biſhop *to pray heartily with him to God, that he would be graciouſly pleaſed to accept it. He profeſſed himſelf to be truly ſorrowful for all the many great ſins and errors of his life, and did humbly and earneſtly beg forgiveneſs of God for them. He was truly ſenſible of the injuries he had done to others, and in a great readineſs, not only to aſk their pardon, but alſo to forgive others all the offences and injuries they had done to him. He profeſſed his belief of both the truth and excellency of the Chriſtian Religion, and particularly did declare,* That he firmly believed all the articles of the Apoſtles Creed. *He was very deſirous to receive the Holy Sacrament, and ſeemed well to underſtand the nature and ends of it; and ſhewed great devotion when he did receive it.* His reaſon was ſound and clear to the laſt. He made his will ſedately and prudently. He took care for doing juſtice, and then for doing charity. And every time the *Biſhop* attended him, he declared again, *That he did unfeignedly repent of his ſins,* and requeſted his Lordſhip, *That he would not only with him, but in his retirements, pray to God heartily for the pardon of them. In the abſence of the Biſhop he would not bear any intimations of profaneneſs. He exhorted others to repent and live better in time of health; and told them, they would have a different view of things, when they came to die.* He ſeemed, at laſt, to have obtained his deſire, of being in peace with God; for he bore his pains and weakneſs with invincible patience and contempt of death: he aſked how to obtain the eaſieſt way of dying. He ſet himſelf, as it were, an hour of departure; and, when that came, he fell aſleep; not merely like an antient Roman, but, rather, like a good Chriſtian.

The following Inſcription, which he ordered to be put on his monument, ſhews his political principles:

WILLIELMUS Dux DEVON.
Bonorum Principum Fidelis Subditus;
Inimicus & Inviſus Tyrannis.

He valued no other political character.

His bearing a relation to moſt of the noble families in England, gave him, as he thought, a larger ſhare in the common care and concern for the privileges of the Peers, and the rights of the people. His frequent diſcourſe was to commend the conſtitution and laws of this kingdom; and to affirm, *That as he always had, ſo he ever would endeavour to defend and preſerve them.* He ſeemed to be made for a *Patriot:* his mien and aſpect were engaging and commanding: his addreſs and converſation were civil and courteous in the higheſt manner. His ſpeeches on any important affair were ſmooth and weighty. As a ſtateſman,

his whole deportment came up to his noble birth, and his eminent ſtations: nor did he want any of what the world calls accompliſhments. He had great ſkill in languages, was a true judge in hiſtory, a critic in poetry, and had a fine hand in muſic. He had an elegant taſte in painting, and all politer arts, with a ſpirit that was continually improving his judgment in them; and in architecture, had a genius, ſkill, and experience, beyond any one perſon of any one age; his houſe at Chatſworth being a monument of beauty and magnificence, that perhaps is not exceeded by any palace in Europe.

By the Lady Mary, his wife, daughter of the Duke of Ormond, before-mentioned (who died on July 31, 1710, aged ſixty-eight, and was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey) his Grace had three ſons and a daughter, Lady Elizabeth, married to Sir John Wentworth of Broadſworth in com. Ebor. Bart. His three ſons were,

1. William, ſecond Duke of Devonſhire.

2. Lord Henry Cavendiſh, a Gentleman diſtinguiſhed for his great merits, who was elected [u] for the town of Derby, in 1695 and 1698; and died, very much lamented, on Friday, May 10, 1700, in the twenty-ſeventh year of his age, leaving by his wife Rhoda, only ſurviving daughter of William Cartwright, of Aynho in com. Northamp. Eſq; (by Urſula his ſecond wife, daughter of Ferdinando Lord Fairfax, of Cameron) one daughter, Mary, married to John, late Earl of Weſtmoreland. The ſaid Rhoda, ſurviving, died on January 24, 1729-30.

3. Lord James Cavendiſh, of Stayley-park in Devonſhire, who was elected [x] to Parliament for the town of Derby, in the 12th year of King William; as alſo in another Parliament the year following, and in two other Parliaments, in the reign of Queen Anne: he was likewiſe choſen for the ſaid borough in the firſt year of King George I. and in all the following Parliaments, till he was made Auditor of the Revenue in Ireland, in February 1741-2, whereby he vacated his ſeat in Parliament. His Lordſhip married Anne, daughter of Elihu Yale, Eſq; Governor of Fort St. George in the Eaſt-Indies, who died on July 8, 1721. By her Ladyſhip (who died on June 27, 1734) he had iſſue one ſon, William, and a daughter Elizabeth, married, in February 1732, to Richard Chandler, Eſq; ſon and heir apparent to Edward Chandler, Lord Biſhop of Durham. And the ſaid William alſo married Barbara, daughter of the before-mentioned Edward, Lord Biſhop of Durham, and died on June 30, 1751, without iſſue; and Lord James Cavendiſh, his father, deceaſing on December 14, 1751, the ſaid Richard Chandler, Eſq; by act of Parliament in 1752, changed his name to Cavendiſh, and is Member of

[u] Not. Parliament. p. 236. [x] Ibid.

Parlia-

Parliament for Wendover, Bucks, and Chancellor of the dioceſe of Durham.

His Grace's eldeſt ſon and heir, William, ſecond Duke of Devonſhire, was trained to the public ſervice from his youth. In 1692, he ſerved, as a volunteer, under King William, in Flanders.

As ſoon as he came of age, he was returned a Member of the Houſe of Commons; and on the peace concluded at Ryſwick, he made a tour to France. He was elected one of the Knights for the county of Derby, in 1695, the 7th year of King William; as alſo in two other Parliaments in that reign, in 1698 and 1700; and one of the Knights for Yorkſhire, in the three firſt Parliaments of Queen Anne, in 1702, 1705, and 1707, when he ſucceeded to the peerage. While he was Marquis of Hartington, her Majeſty conſtituted him Captain of the Yeomen of her Guard; and ſucceeding his father in his honours, the Queen likewiſe conferred on him his places of dignity and truſt, with this moſt gracious expreſſion, *That ſhe had loſt a loyal ſubject and good friend in his father, but did not doubt to find them both again in him.*

His Grace was declared Lord Steward of the Houſhold, on September 6, and ſworn of the Privy-Council, on September 8, 1707. On October 29 following, he was appointed Lord Warden and Chief Juſtice in Eyre, of all the Foreſts, Parks and Chaces, &c. beyond Trent; as alſo Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Derby. On May 10, 1708, he was again ſworn of the Privy-Council, according to an act of Parliament on the Union with Scotland, which his Grace induſtriouſly promoted, when he was one of the Commiſſioners for that purpoſe.

On the change of the Miniſtry, in 1710, he reſigned his places; but having been elected a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, he was inſtalled at Windſor, on December 22 the ſame year, when our late Sovereign, George II. then Electoral Prince of Hanover, was likewiſe inſtalled with him by his proxy, Charles Lord Halifax.

At the demiſe of the Queen, on Auguſt 1, 1714, his Grace was in the ſame power and truſt with her ſucceſſor, being one of the Regents of the Kingdom, nominated by his Majeſty, purſuant to an act of Parliament for the better ſecuring the Proteſtant Succeſſion; and was declared Lord Steward of the King's Houſhold, and ſworn of the Privy-Council.

On July 5, 1716, he reſigned his office of Lord Steward of the Houſhold, and the next day was declared Lord Preſident of the Council; from which high office he retired in April, 1717, when ſeveral of the Nobility and other perſons voluntarily quitted their places. On June 11, 1720, his Majeſty deſigning

deſigning to viſit his dominions in Germany, he declared his Grace one of the Juſtices of the Kingdom, during his abſence, in which moſt honourable truſt he was continued when his Majeſty's affairs called him abroad; and on March 27, 1725, was again declared Lord Preſident of the Council. Likewiſe, on May 31, 1727, he was a fifth time declared one of the Lords Juſtices of the Kingdom.

At the acceſſion of his late Majeſty, on June 11, 1727, his Grace, on October 4 enſuing, was again made Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Derby, and declared Lord Preſident of the Council; alſo, in June following, again appointed one of the Lords Juſtices, during his Majeſty's abſence; and, on November 17 following, choſe one of the Governors of the Charter-Houſe, in the room of the Viſcount Harcourt deceaſed.

His Grace married the Lady Rachel, daughter of William Lord Ruſſel, and ſiſter to Wriotheſley Duke of Bedford; and by her (who died on December 28, 1725) had iſſue,

1. William, third Duke of Devonſhire.

2. Lord James Cavendiſh, who, in 1730, was conſtituted Colonel and Captain of a company in the third regiment of foot-guards; alſo, in 1738, Colonel of the thirty-fourth regiment of foot, and died Member of Parliament for Malton, on December 14, 1741.

3. Lord Charles Cavendiſh, who, on the deceaſe of Pierce Acourt, Eſq; was elected Member for Heyteſbury, in Wiltſhire, April 15, 1725. In 1727, he was choſe for the city of Weſtminſter, and the year after, appointed one of the Gentlemen of the Bedchamber to the Prince of Wales. In 1734, he was choſe for the county of Derby. He married, on January 9, 1727, the Lady Anne Grey, third daughter of Henry Duke of Kent, and by her (who died at Puckeridge in Hertfordſhire, on September 20, 1733) hath iſſue two ſons, Frederick and Henry. His Lordſhip is one of the Truſtees of the Britiſh Muſeum, one of the Council of the Free Britiſh Fiſhery, and F. R. S.

4. Lord John Cavendiſh, who died on May 10, 1728.

Lady Mary Cavendiſh, eldeſt daughter, died on June 15, 1719, unmarried. Lady Rachel, married to Sir William Morgan, of Tredegar in com. Monmouth, Knight of the Bath. Lady Elizabeth, married to Sir Thomas Lowther, of Holker in com. Pal. Lanc. Bart. Lady Catherine, and Lady Anne, died unmarried; as did Lady Diana, on February 12, 1721-2.

His Grace departed this life in Devonſhire-houſe, in Piccadilly, on June 4, 1729, and was buried in Allhallows church in Derby.

His eldeſt ſon William, third Duke of Devonſhire, ſerved in Parliament, whilſt he was a Commoner, for the boroughs of Leſtwithiel

Leſtwithiel and Grampound in Cornwall, and for the county of Huntingdon.

On May 23, 1726, he was conſtituted Captain of the Band of Gentlemen Penſioners, and attended, on October 11, 1727, in that character at the coronation of his late Majeſty, who, on his acceſſion to the Crown, continued him in the ſame poſt. Succeeding his father in his honours, he was conſtituted Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the county of Derby, on November 2, 1727, and was ſworn of his Majeſty's Privy-Council. And on June 12, 1731, was declared Lord Keeper of the Privy-Seal, and ſworn of the Privy-Council, the 15th following, and took his place at the Board as Keeper of the Privy-Seal.

In April, 1733, his Grace was conſtituted Lord Steward of his Majeſty's Houſhold. And having been elected one of the Knights Companions of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, was inſtalled at Windſor, on Auguſt 22, the ſame year.

On March 31, 1737, his Grace was declared in Council, Lord Lieutenant-general, and General-governor of the Kingdom of Ireland. He landed there on September 7 following; and returned to his houſe in Piccadilly, on April 2, 1738, and was graciouſly received by his Majeſty.

His Grace's preſence being again neceſſary in Ireland, he arrived at Dublin, on September 29, 1739, and was received at his landing by their Excellencies the Lords Juſtices, the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Sheriffs of Dublin, and a great concourſe of people, who joyfully expreſſed their ſatisfaction on his coming among them.

His Grace, after receiving the compliments of the Nobility, &c. on Monday, May 12, 1740, embarked for England, and on his arrival was moſt graciouſly received by his Majeſty, who had, on the ſaid May 12, appointed him one of the Lords Juſtices for the adminiſtration of this kingdom, during his ſtay beyond the ſea.

In 1741, his Grace went again to Ireland, and landing at Dublin, on September 23, there was a very numerous appearance at the Caſtle to compliment him on his ſafe arrival.

On February 16, 1741-2, his Grace left Dublin, and was accompanied by a great number of the Nobility and perſons of diſtinction to the water-ſide, where he embarked for England; and on his arrival at St. James's, was moſt graciouſly received by his Majeſty.

His Grace, by his juſt adminiſtration, had ſo ſettled their affections, that his preſence being not required in Ireland, he did not ſet out for that kingdom, till 1743, when his Grace landed at Dublin, on September 29, and there was a numerous appearance at the Caſtle to compliment him on his ſafe arrival.

On

On his return to England, the Nobility, and all denominations of men, were ſenſibly affected at his departure. His Grace continued Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, till January 3, 1744, when the place of Lord Steward of his Majeſty's Houſhold was again conferred on him. I have before mentioned, that his Grace was one of the Lords Juſtices for the adminiſtration of the government, during his Majeſty's abſence, to 1741; and he was in the ſame truſt, in 1743, 1745, and 1748; continuing Lord Steward of his Majeſty's Houſhold, till June 1749; when chooſing to retire to his noble ſeat at Chatſworth, he did there, for the moſt part, reſide, and departed this life on December 5, 1755.

On March 27, 1718, his Grace married Catherine, daughter and ſole heir of John Hoſkins, of the county of Middleſex, Eſq; by whom he had iſſue four ſons, and three daughters.

1. William, late Duke of Devonſhire.

2. Lord George Cavendiſh, to whom his late Majeſty was godfather, and who was elected, in 1751, for Weymouth; and in the laſt and preſent Parliaments was choſen for the county of Derby. In October, 1761, he was appointed Comptroller of the Houſhold, and ſworn of the Privy-Council, on February 15, 1762, but did not long enjoy the office of Comptroller.

3. Lord Frederick Cavendiſh (to whom his Royal Highneſs the late Prince of Wales was godfather) who, taking to a military life, was, on March 21, 1752, appointed Lieutenant, with the rank of Captain, in the ſecond regiment of foot-guards. In May, 1758, his Lordſhip was nominated Aid de Camp to his late Majeſty; in November, 1760, conſtituted Colonel of the thirty-fourth regiment of foot; and promoted to the rank of Major-general, on March 7, 1761. On his brother being called up to the Houſe of Peers, he was elected in his place one of the Knights for the county of Derby; alſo to the laſt and preſent Parliaments for the town of Derby. He is one of the Lords of the Bedchamber to the Duke of Cumberland.

4. Lord John Cavendiſh, Member for Weymouth, in the laſt Parliament, and for Knareſborough in the preſent.

Lady Carolina, to whom his late Majeſty was godfather, married to William Ponſonby, Lord Viſcount Duncannon, ſon and heir of Brabazon, Earl of Beſsborough, of the Kingdom of Ireland, of whom under the title of Lord Ponſonby.

Lady Elizabeth, married, in September, 1742, to the Honourable John Ponſonby, Eſq; ſecond ſon of the ſaid Earl of Beſsborough; and Lady Rachel, married, on May 12, 1748, to Horatio Walpole, Eſq; ſon and heir to the Right Honourable Horatio Walpole, Baron of Woolterton in Norfolk.

The eldeſt ſon, William, fourth Duke and ſeventh Earl of Devonſhire, of his family, was at the general election, in 1747, returned

returned one of the Knights for Derbyſhire; and called up to the Houſe of Peers, on June 13, 1751, with precedency, according to the patent granted his anceſtor, on May 4, 1605, being the fifteenth Baron, when he took his ſeat among the Lords. On July 9, 1751, he was appointed Maſter of the Horſe, and three days after ſworn of the Privy-Council. On March 30, next year, he was nominated one of the Lords of the Regency, during his Majeſty's abſence: and in January, 1754, was conſtituted Governor of the county of Cork in Ireland, and alſo, in February following, Lord High-Treaſurer of that kingdom, in the room of the laſt Earl of Burlington. On March 27, 1755, he was declared Lord Lieutenant and Governor-general of Ireland; firſt Commiſſioner of the Treaſury, in place of the Duke of Newcaſtle, on November 16, 1756; and Lord Lieutenant of the county of Derby, on December 15, that year. His Grace was inſtalled Knight of the Garter, on March 27, 1757; and having, in May that year, been appointed Chamberlain of the Houſhold, in the room of the Duke of Grafton deceaſed, he reſigned his place in the Treaſury. Being continued in the Chamberlain's office, at the acceſſion of the preſent King, he handed Queen Charlotte from her coach at her arrival at St. James's palace, on September 8, 1761; and in that quality aſſiſted at the royal nuptials, that day, and on the 22d at the coronation. On Wedneſday, September 8, 1762, he was proxy for the Duke of Mecklenburgh-Strelitz, one of the godfathers at the chriſtening of George Prince of Wales. He ſoon after reſigned all his employments in England depending on the Crown; but retained thoſe of Lord High-Treaſurer of Ireland, and Governor of the County of Cork in that kingdom, to the time of his deceaſe, which happened on October 3, 1764, in the forty-fourth year of his age, at the German Spa, whither he had gone about a month before for the benefit of his health. His Grace was alſo Fellow of the Royal Society, one of the Governors of the Charter-Houſe, Preſident of the London Hoſpital in Whitechapel Road, and one of the Governors of St. Bartholomew's Hoſpital. He married, in March, 1748, Lady Charlotte, the third and youngeſt, but only ſurviving, daughter and heir of Richard Boyle, Earl of Burlington and Cork, and by her Ladyſhip (who died on December 8, 1754) had iſſue three ſons, and one daughter; viz. William, now Duke of Devonſhire; Lord Richard Cavendiſh, born on June 19, 1751; Lord George-Henry, born on February 27, 1754; and Lady Dorothy Cavendiſh, born on Auguſt 27, 1750.

William, the preſent and fifth Duke, and eighth Earl, of Devonſhire, was born on December 14, 1748; and was one of the ſix Lords (eldeſt ſons of Peers) who ſupported his Majeſty's train at his coronation, on Sept. 22, 1761. TITLES.]

TITLES.] William Cavendiſh, Duke of Devonſhire, Marquis of Hartington, Earl of Devonſhire, and Baron Cavendiſh of Hardwick.

CREATIONS.] Baron Cavendiſh of Hardwick, in com. Derb. by letters patent, May 4, 1605, 3 Jac. I. Earl of Devonſhire, Auguſt 7, 1618, 16 Jac. I. Marquis of Hartington, and Duke of Devonſhire, May 12, 1694, 6 William and Mary.

ARMS.] Sable, three Harts heads caboſhed, Argent, attired, Or.

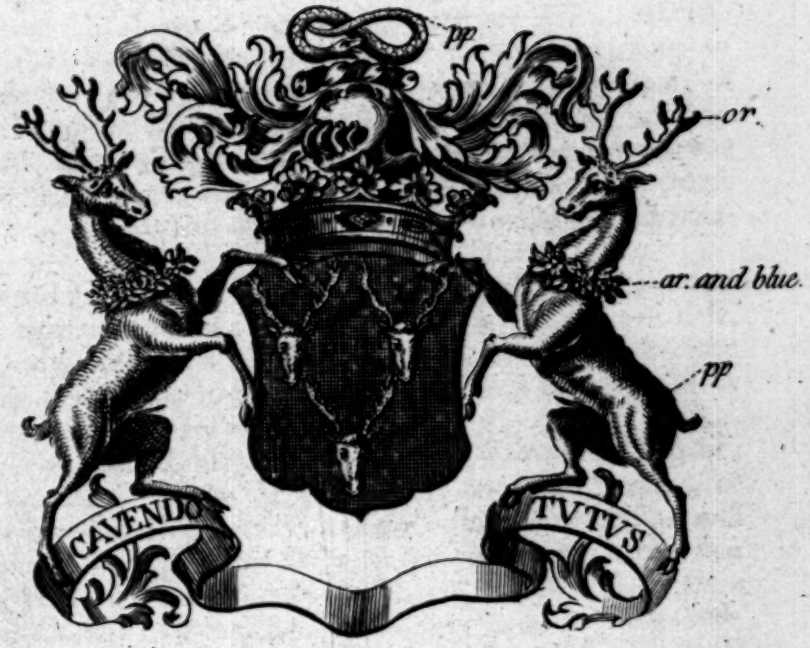
CREST.] On a Wreath, a Snake noue, proper.

SUPPORTERS.] Two Harts, proper, each gorged with a Garland or Sprig of Roſes, Argent and Azure, attired, Or.

MOTTO.] CAVENDO TUTUS.

CHIEF SEATS.] At Chatſworth, in the county of Derby, ſix miles from Cheſterfield, and 114 from London; and at Hardwick, in the ſame county, ten miles from Derby, and 108 from London; and Devonſhire-houſe in Piccadilly.

SPENCER,



Cavendish Duke of Devonshire. 15

SPENCER, Duke of Marlborough.

HIS Grace the Duke of Marlborough has his ſurname from his paternal anceſtors: but as he quarters the arms of Churchill, as deſcended from a daughter of John Duke of Marlborough, and inherits the titles and eſtate of that renowned General, I ſhall give an account of the pedigree of that great man, from Dr. James Anderſon's *Genealogical Tables*, edit. 2. p. 580-1.——The patriarch of the family, according to that reverend and illuſtrious antiquary, was Gitto de Leon, of a noble family in Normandy, who lived A. D. 1055, and had two ſons, Richard and Wandril. Richard, the eldeſt, was Lord of Montalban, and progenitor of the preſent noble houſe of Leon in France, by his wife Yoland, Counteſs of Luxemburg.

Wandril de Leon, the ſecond ſon, was Lord of Courcil, and by marriage with Iſabella de Tuya, was alſo father of two ſons, Roger de Courcil, and Rouland de Courcil, anceſtor of the Courcils of Poictou, from whom thoſe of that name, in Normandy and Anjou, are deſcended.

Roger de Courcil, eldeſt ſon of Wandril, came into England, in 1066, with William the Conqueror, and was rewarded for his ſervices with divers lands in Somerſetſhire, Dorſetſhire, and Devonſhire (as appears by Doomſday-book) part whereof was the Lordſhip of Churchill in Somerſetſhire, which was antiently written Curichil, Cheuchil, Chirchil, &c. and was ſo denominated from being the habitation of his family. This Roger de Courcil wedded Gertruda, daughter of Sir Guy de Torbay, and by her had three ſons; 1. John de Curichil; 2. Hugh Fitz-Roger, Lord of Corfeton in Dorſetſhire, who marrying the ſiſter and heir of —— Bond of Fiſherton, his offspring aſſumed that ſurname, and bore the arms of that family, viz. Sable, a Feſs, Or; and, 3. Roger Fitz-Roger, whoſe ſon, by Mabel, heireſs of the family of Solerys, or Solers, taking that ſurname, from him are ſprung thoſe of the name of Solers.

John de Curichil eſpouſed Joan de Kilrington, and by her was father of

Sir Bartholomew de Chirchil, a great warrior, and celebrated in antient ſongs, who held the caſtle of Briſtol for King Stephen (whoſe ſway laſted from December 2, 1135, to October 25, 1154) and died fighting in his cauſe. This Sir Bartholomew wedded Agnes, daughter of Ralph Fitz-Ralph, Lord of Tiverton; and by her had a ſon, Pagan

Pagan de Cherchile, who by —— his wife was father of Roger de Cherchile, who had free warren in his lands of Cherchile, in the reign of Edward I. and by his wife —— left a ſon, Elias de Churchile. Cotemporary with this Roger de Churchile, was Richard de Churchile, who in 1286, 14 Edward I. was witneſs to an agreement between the brethren of the hoſpital of St. John Baptiſt, at Bath, and Thomas de Hereford, one of the Burgeſſes of Briſtol, about a houſe in Reedclive in Briſtol.

Elias de Churchile, ſon of Roger de Churchile, aforeſaid, granted in 8 Edward II. to John Bampfield, his meadow, called Pleynfold, in Clifton. [See Sir William Pole's MS. of charters.] He married Dorothy, a daughter of the antient family of Columbers, and by her had three ſons, John Churchile, Giles Churchile, and William Churchile. John, the eldeſt, was witneſs to a charter of Thomas Bampfield, 5 Richard II. and is mentioned in another charter, 11 Henry IV. He wedded Jane, daughter and coheir of Roger Dawney of Norton, by Juliana his wife, daughter and coheir of William de Widdehere, and by her was father of two daughters, Margaret, wife of Andrew Hillerſdon of Devonſhire; and Agnes, married to Thomas Giffard, of Theuborough in Cornwall, who had with her the lordſhip of Churchill, and other lands. Giles, the ſecond ſon, had the lordſhip of Yampton and Lineham in Devonſhire, which went at laſt, by an heireſs, to the family of the Crokers.

William Churchile, the third and youngeſt ſon of the abovementioned Elias de Churchile, was ſeated at Rockbear, in Devonſhire, and had a ſon,

Giles Churchill, Eſq; who was father of

Charles Churchill, Eſq; who was engaged by Thomas Courtenay, Earl of Devonſhire, in the cauſe of Edward IV. and adhering to that Monarch, when the Earl deſerted his party, by his Majeſty's intereſt obtained, in marriage, Margaret, daughter and heir of Sir William Widville. By that Lady, who was a near relation of Edward's Queen, he left

Thomas Churchill, Eſq; his heir, who, by his wife Grace, daughter and coheir of Thomas Tylle, of Tylle-houſe in Cornwall, Eſq; was father of

William Churchill, Eſq; who eſpouſed Mary, eldeſt daughter of Richard Creuſe, of Wicroft-caſtle in Devonſhire, Eſq; and by her had three ſons, Roger Churchill, his heir; William, who was of Corton in Dorſetſhire; and John Churchill, Eſq; who was ſeated at Muſton, in the ſame county, and left a ſon, William Churchill, Eſq; his heir, who by his laſt will, dated March 12, 1599, ordered his body to be buried in St. Peter's church at Dorcheſter, and conſtituted John Churchill, Eſq; his ſon and heir, ſole executor, who having wedded Eleanor,

daughter of John Meller, of Kyme in Dorſetſhire, had by her nine ſons and four daughters, from whom a numerous progeny.

Roger Churchill, Eſq; eldeſt ſon and heir of William Churchill, above-mentioned, was of Catherſton in Dorſetſhire, and by his connubial conſort Jane, daughter of William Peverell of Bradford, Eſq; and relict of Nicholas Meggs, Eſq; had a ſon,

Matthew Churchill, of Bradford, Eſq; who took to wife Alice (daughter of James Gold, of Dorcheſter) by whom he was father of a ſon,

Jaſper Churchill, of Bradford, Eſq; who married Elizabeth, daughter of John Chaplet, of Harringſton in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; and by her left two ſons, John Churchill, of Mintern in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; and Jaſper Churchill, Eſq; father of Sir John Churchill (an eminent counſel in the reign of Charles II.) who, by Suſan his wife, daughter of Edmund Prideaux, Eſq; left four daughters, his coheirs.

John Churchill, of Mintern in Devonſhire, Eſq; eldeſt ſon of Jaſper Churchill, of Bradford, Eſq; was of the ſociety of the Middle Temple, and by his knowledge in the law, increaſed his fortune very conſiderably, as well as by his marriage with Sarah, one of the daughters and coheirs of Sir Henry Winſtan, of Standon, in Lincolnſhire. By that Lady he had a ſon,

Sir Winſtan Churchill, who was born in 1620, and, at the age of ſixteen, was ſent to St. John's College in Oxford; but took no degree, as his private affairs did not permit him to ſtay long there: and ſoon after he left the univerſity, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Drake, of Aſhe in Devonſhire, Bart. and of Eleanor his wife, daughter and coheir of John Lord Boteler, of Bramfield in Hertfordſhire, by his wife Elizabeth, ſiſter of George Villiers, the great Duke of Buckingham. Having been a ſtrenuous partizan of the royal cauſe, during the civil wars, he ſuffered by ſequeſtration, &c. with other loyaliſts: and his Lady was obliged to take ſhelter at her father's houſe of Aſhe, where ſhe bore all her children. Sir Winſtan was returned to the firſt Parliament after the Reſtoration, and received the honour of knighthood, A. D. 1663. He was one of the firſt Fellows of the Royal Society; one of the Commiſſioners of the Court of Claims in Ireland, 1664; eldeſt Clerk Comptroller of the Board of Green Cloth, at the death of Charles II. in which office he alſo continued under James II. in whoſe reign he ſerved in Parliament for Lyme Regis; and departing this life, on March 26, 1688, was interred in the church of St. Martin in the Fields, Weſtminſter; having had, by his wife aforeſaid, four daughters and ſeven ſons, whereof Winſtan, the eldeſt; Montjoy, the fifth; Jaſper, the ſixth, died young; Theobald, the ſeventh, having his education at Queen's College in Oxford, and commencing M. A. on June 13, 1683,

was a parſon, and dying on December 3, 1685, was buried in St. Martin's. Of the daughters, Dorothy, Mary, and Barbara, died in their infancy: and Arabella, the eldeſt, born on March 16, 1648, was miſtreſs to James II. when Duke of York, by whom ſhe had James Fitz-James, Duke of Berwick, one of the moſt celebrated warriors of his time; Henry Fitz-James, commonly called the Grand Prior, on whom his father, in France, conferred the title of Duke of Albemarle; Henrietta, wife of Henry Lord Waldegrave; and ———, a nun. The ſaid Arabella was afterwards the wife of Colonel Charles Godfrey, Maſter of the Jewel-office, &c. George Churchill, third ſon of Sir Winſtan, was born on February 29, 1653-4, and having choſe a maritime life, commanded a ſquadron, A. D. 1689, in the ſervice of King William, and diſtinguiſhed himſelf, under Admiral Ruſſel, in the naval engagement which began off La Hogue, on May 19, 1692. In 1702, the firſt of Queen Anne, he was appointed one of the Council, in naval affairs, to Prince George of Denmark, Lord High-Admiral; to whom he was one of the Lords of the Bedchamber for twenty years; and in that reign was made Admiral of the Blue. He ſerved in Parliament for St. Alban's, in 1685, 1 James II. and was one of the Repreſentatives for that borough in every ſucceeding Parliament, till 1710, when he departed this life, unmarried, on May 8, and was buried in Weſtminſter-abbey. Charles Churchill, fourth ſon of Sir Winſtan, was born on February 2, 1656, and at thirteen years of age was Page of Honour to Chriſtian V. King of Denmark. At the revolution, he was made Colonel of the third regiment of foot, in the room of Sir Theophilus Oglethorpe, and on Auguſt 3, 1692, acted as Brigadier-general at the battle of Steinkirk. He likewiſe aſſiſted at the battle of Landen, on July 29, 1693, where he took his nephew, the Duke of Berwick, priſoner, and by King William was made a Major-general of foot, and afterwards Lieutenant-general. He was alſo, by that Prince, made Governor of Kinſale in Ireland. He was conſtituted Lieutenant-governor of the Tower, on May 27, 1702, and had a ſhare of the laurels gained at Blenheim, or Hockſtet, on Auguſt 2, 1704. He was likewiſe Governor of Bruſſels, and Guernſey; and in 1707, got the command of the ſecond regiment of foot-guards, being then General of Foot. In 1702, he married Mary, daughter and ſole heir of James Goulde, of Dorcheſter, Eſq; and dying on December 29, 1714, had ſepulture in Mintern church, in Dorſetſhire; but left no iſſue by his wife, who took Montagu Earl of Abingdon for her ſecond huſband.

John Churchill, the ſecond but eldeſt ſurviving ſon of Sir Winſtan Churchill, is ſaid to have been born, at ſeventeen minutes after noon, on May 24, 1650. In his youth, he was

Page

Page of Honour to James Duke of York, by whoſe favour his father got him an Enſign's commiſſion in the guards. In 1671, he ſerved at Tangier againſt the Moors; and being in the army ſent next year, under the Duke of Monmouth, to the aſſiſtance of Lewis XIV. of France againſt the Dutch, ſignalized himſelf at the ſiege of Maeſtricht. In 1679, he attended the Duke of York into Flanders, and next year into Scotland. He likewiſe, in 1682, accompanied that Prince in the voyage to that kingdom, when the Glouceſter frigate, on May 5, ſtruck on the Lemon and Oar Sand; and was one of thoſe perſons for whoſe preſervation his Royal Highneſs was particularly ſolicitous. On December 21 following, he was, by the intereſt of the Duke of York, dignified with the title of Lord Churchill, of Eymouth in the county of Berwick, in Scotland; and next year, being then a General Officer, he got the command of the firſt regiment of dragoons, at that time newly raiſed. The Duke of York ſucceeding to the Crown, on February 6, 1684-5, nominated him Ambaſſador to the Court of France, on March 5 following; and conſtituted him one of the Lords of the Bedchamber, in which quality he walked at his Majeſty's coronation, on April 23, 1685. On May 14 enſuing, he was created a Peer of England, by the title of Baron Churchill, of Sandridge in Hertfordſhire; aſſiſted in defeating the Duke of Monmouth at Sedgemore, on July 6 following, being next in command to Lewis Duras, Earl of Feverſham; and the ſame year was appointed Colonel of the third troop of Life-guards. When the Prince of Orange landed, in 1685, he was amongſt the firſt who went over to his Highneſs; and in the convention, voted for the vacancy of the Throne, and for filling it with the Prince and Princeſs of Orange. After their being declared King and Queen, on Aſh-Wedneſday, Feb. 13, 1688-9, Lord Churchill was called to the Council-table, and appointed one of the Lords of the Bedchamber to King William. On April 9, 1689, two days before the coronation, he was advanced to the rank of Earl of Marlborough, and ſent that year to command the Engliſh forces in the Netherlands, under Prince Waldeck, General of the Dutch troops. Being employed in Ireland, A. D. 1690, in conjunction with the Duke of Wurtemberg, he reduced Cork and Kinſale; and, in 1691, ſerved the campaign in Flanders under King William. In 1692, he was excepted from the benefit of the pardon offered by King James, in his declaration publiſhed before the affair of La Hogue, when that unfortunate Monarch had a proſpect of being reſtored; and ſoon after falling under King William's diſpleaſure alſo, was diveſted of all his employments, and for a ſhort time kept priſoner in the Tower. However, in June, 1698, being again received into William's favour, he was re-admitted of the

Privy-Council, and appointed Governor to William Duke of Glouceſter. His Grace was alſo, that year, nominated one of the Lords Juſtices, during his Majeſty's viſit to Holland; as he was likewiſe in 1699, and 1700. When King William was forming the grand alliance, he declared the Earl of Marlborough, on June 1, 1701, General of Foot, and Commander in Chief of all his Forces in Holland; and alſo, on the 28th of that month, conſtituted him Ambaſſador and Plenipotentiary for the negotiations carrying on at the Hague. Queen Anne ſucceeding King William, on March 8, 1701-2, appointed his Grace, on the 15th, Captain-general of all her forces in England, and of thoſe employed abroad in conjunction with her allies, and on the 28th, ſent him Ambaſſador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to the States-General. But the following inſcription on the monumental pillar erected at Blenheim, near Woodſtock, in the county of Oxford, ſets forth his Grace's political tranſactions and military atchievements, in the end of King William's reign, and while employed in Queen Anne's: and for illuſtrating the dates, &c. according to old ſtyle (which is that uſed in the inſcription) notes are ſubjoined in this edition.

The Caſtle of Blenheim was founded by Q. ANNE,
In the fourth Year of her Reign,
In the Year of the chriſtian Æra 1705;
A Monument deſign'd to perpetuate the Memory of the
ſignal Victory
Obtained over the French and Bavarians,
Near the Village of Blenheim,
On the Banks of the Danube,
By JOHN Duke of MARLBOROUGH:
The Hero not only of his Nation, but his age;
Whoſe Glory was equal in the Council and in the Field:
Who by Wiſdom, Juſtice, Candour and Addreſs,
Reconciled various, and even oppoſite Intereſts;
Acquired an Influence, which no Rank, no Authority can give,
Nor any Force but That of ſuperior Virtue.
Became the fixed important Center,
Which united in one common Cauſe
The principal States of Europe;
Who by military Knowledge, and irreſiſtible Valour,
In a long Series of uninterrupted Triumphs,
Broke the Power of France,
When raiſed the higheſt, when exerted the moſt;
Reſcued the Empire from Deſolation;
Aſſerted, and confirmed the Liberties of Europe.

Philip, a grandſon of the Houſe of France, united to the intereſts, directed by the policy, ſupported by the arms, of that

that Crown, was placed on the Throne of Spain. King WILLIAM the Third beheld this formidable union of two great, and once rival, Monarchies. At the end of a life ſpent in defending the liberties of Europe, he ſaw them in their greateſt danger. He provided for their ſecurity in the moſt effectual manner. He took the Duke of MARLBOROUGH into his ſervice;

Ambaſſador extraordinary and Plenipotentiary,
To the STATES-GENERAL of the United Provinces.

The Duke contracted ſeveral alliances before the Death of King WILLIAM. He confirmed and improved Theſe. He contracted Others, after the acceſſion of Queen ANNE; and re-united the confederacy, which had been diſſolved at the end of a former war, in a ſtricter and firmer league.

Captain General and Commander in Chief
Of the Forces of GREAT-BRITAIN,

The Duke led to the field the army of the allies. He took with ſurprizing rapidity, Venlo [a], Ruremonde [b], Stevenſwaert [c], Liege. He extended and ſecured the frontiers of the Dutch. The enemies, whom he found inſulting at the Gates of Nimeghen, were driven to ſeek for ſhelter behind their lines. He forced Bonne, Huy, Limbourg in another [d] campaign. He opened the communication of the Rhine, as well as the Maes. He added all the country between theſe rivers to his former conqueſt. The arms of France, favoured by the defection of the Elector of Bavaria, had penetrated into the Heart of the Empire. This mighty Body lay expoſed to immediate ruin. In that memorable criſis, the Duke of MARLBOROUGH led his troops with unexampled celerity, ſecreſy, and order, from the Ocean to the Danube. He ſaw; he attacked; nor ſtopped, but to conquer the Enemy. He forced the Bavarians, ſuſtained by the French, in their ſtrong intrenchments at [e] Schellenberg. He paſſed the Danube. A ſecond royal army, compoſed of the beſt troops of France, was ſent to re-inforce the firſt. That of the confederates was divided. With one part of it the ſiege of Ingolſtadt was carried on. With the other the Duke gave battle to the united ſtrength of France and Bavaria. On the ſecond day of Auguſt, 1704, he gained a more glorious victory [f] than the hiſtories of any age can boaſt. The heaps of ſlain were dreadful proofs of his valour. A Marſhal of France, whole legions of French, his priſoners, proclaimed his mercy. Bavaria was ſubdued. Ratiſbon, Augſbourg, Ulm, Meminghen, all the uſurpations of the enemy, were recovered. The li-

[a] September 25, 1702. [b] October 6. [c] Ibid. [d] in May, Auguſt and September, 1703. [e] July 2, 1704. [f] at Blenheim, or Hockſtet.

berty of the Diet, the peace of the Empire, were reſtored. From the Danube the Duke turned his victorious arms towards the Rhine and the Moſelle. Landau, Treves, Traerbach, were taken. In the courſe of one campaign the very nature of the war was changed. The invaders of other States were reduced to defend their own. The frontier of France was expoſed in its weakeſt part to the efforts of the allies.

That he might improve this advantage; that he might puſh the ſum of things to a ſpeedy deciſion, the Duke of MARLBOROUGH led his troops early in the following year once more to the Moſelle. They, whom he had ſaved a few months before [g], neglected to ſecond him now. They, who might have been his companions in conqueſt [g], refuſed to join him. When he ſaw the generous deſigns he had formed fruſtrated by private intereſt, by pique, by jealouſy, he returned with ſpeed to the Maes. He returned; and Fortune and Victory returned with him. Liege was relieved; Huy re-taken; the French, who had preſſed the army of the States-General with ſuperior numbers, retired behind intrenchments [h], which they deemed impregnable. The Duke forced theſe intrenchments, with inconſiderable loſs, on the ſeventh day of July, 1705. He defeated a great part of the army, which defended them. The reſt eſcaped by a precipitate retreat. If advantages proportionable to this ſucceſs were not immediately obtained; let the failure be aſcribed to that misfortune, which attends moſt confederacies; a diviſion of opinions, where one alone ſhould judge [i]; a diviſion of powers, where one alone ſhould command. The diſappointment itſelf did honour to the Duke. It became the wonder of mankind, how he could do ſo much under thoſe reſtraints, which had hindered him from doing more.

Powers more abſolute were given him afterwards. The increaſe of his powers multiplied his victories. At the opening of the next campaign, when all his army was not yet aſſembled; when it was hardly known that he had taken the field, the noiſe of his triumphs was heard over Europe. On the 12th of May, 1706, he attacked the French at Ramillies, In the ſpace of two hours their whole army was put to flight. The vigour and conduct, with which he improved this ſucceſs, were equal to thoſe, with which he gained it. Louvain, Bruſſels, Malines, Liere, Ghent, Oudenard, Antwerp, Damme, Bruges, Courtray, ſurrendered. Oſtend, Menin,

[g] the Dutch, who inſiſted upon returning to their own frontiers. [h] at Tirlemont. [i] When his Grace was about to attack the French at Overyſche, on Auguſt 7, 1705, the Dutch Deputies, who accompanied the army, oppoſed his deſign, and would not let their troops engage: which the Duke highly reſented; but was afterwards pacified, upon M. Buys, the Penſionary of Amſterdam, being ſent to apologize for the Deputies conduct.

Dendermond,

Dendermond, Aeth, were taken. Brabant and Flanders were recovered. Places, which had reſiſted the greateſt Generals for months, for years; provinces, diſputed for ages, were the conqueſts of a ſummer. Nor was the Duke content to triumph alone. Solicitous for the general intereſt, his care extended to the remoteſt ſcenes of the war. He choſe to leſſen his own army, that he might enable the leaders of other armies to conquer. To this it muſt be aſcribed that Turin was relieved; the Duke of Savoy re-inſtated; the French driven with confuſion out of Italy.

Theſe victories gave the confederates an opportunity of carrying the war, on every ſide, into the dominions of France. But ſhe continued to enjoy a kind of peaceful neutrality in Germany. From Italy ſhe was once alarmed, and had no more to fear. The entire reduction of this power, whoſe ambition had cauſed, whoſe ſtrength ſupported, the war, ſeemed reſerved for Him alone, who had ſo triumphantly begun the glorious work.

The barrier of France, on the ſide of the Low-Countries, had been forming for more than half a century. What art, power, expence could do, had been done to render it impenetrable. Yet here ſhe was moſt expoſed; for here the Duke of MARLBOROUGH threatened to attack her.

To cover what they had gained by ſurprize, or had been yielded to them by treachery, the French marched to the banks of the Schelde. At their head were the Princes of the blood, and their moſt fortunate general, the Duke of Vendoſme. Thus commanded, thus poſted, they hoped to check the victor in his courſe. Vain were their hopes. The Duke of MARLBOROUGH paſſed the river in their ſight. He defeated their whole army[k]. The approach of night concealed; the proximity of Ghent favoured their flight. They neglected nothing to repair their loſs, to defend their frontier. New generals, new armies appeared in the Netherlands. All contributed to enhance the glory; none were able to retard the progreſs of the confederate arms.

Liſle, the bulwark of this barrier, was beſieged. A numerous garriſon, and a Marſhal of France, defended the place. Prince Eugene of Savoy commanded, the Duke of MARLBOROUGH covered and ſuſtained the ſiege. The rivers were ſeized, and the communication with Holland interrupted. The Duke opened new communications, with great labour, and much greater art. Through countries, over-run by the enemy, the neceſſary convoys arrived in ſafety. One alone was attacked. The troops, which at-

[k] at Oudenarde, on July 11, 1708.

tacked it, were beat [l]. The defence of Liſle was animated by aſſurances of relief. The French aſſembled all their force. They marched towards the town. The Duke of MARLBOROUGH offered them battle, without ſuſpending the ſiege. They abandoned the enterprize. They came to ſave the town. They were ſpectators of its fall.

From this conqueſt, the Duke haſtened to others. The poſts taken by the enemy on the Schelde were ſurprized. That river was paſſed the ſecond time; and, notwithſtanding the great preparations made to prevent it, without oppoſition.

Bruſſels, beſieged by the Elector of Bavaria, was relieved. Ghent ſurrendered [m] to the Duke in the middle of a winter remarkably ſevere. An army, little inferior to his own, marched out of the place.

As ſoon as the ſeaſon of the year permitted him to open another campaign, the Duke beſieged and took [n] Tournay. He inveſted Mons. Near this city the French army, covered by thick woods, defended by treble intrenchments, waited to moleſt, nor preſumed to offer battle. Even this was not attempted by them with impunity. On the laſt day of Auguſt, 1709, the Duke attacked them in their camp [o]. All was employed, nothing availed againſt the reſolution of ſuch a general, againſt the fury of ſuch troops. The battle was bloody. The event deciſive. The woods were pierced. The fortifications trampled down. The enemy fled. The town was taken [p]. Doway, Bethune, Aire, St. Venant, Bouchain, underwent the ſame fate, in two ſucceeding years. Their vigorous reſiſtance could not ſave them. The army of France durſt not attempt to relieve them. It ſeemed preſerved to defend the capital of the monarchy.

The proſpect of this extreme diſtreſs was neither diſtant, nor dubious. The French acknowledged their conqueror, and ſued for peace.

Theſe are the actions of the D. of MARLBOROUGH,
Performed in the Compaſs of few Years;
Sufficient to adorn the Annals of Ages,
The Admiration of other Nations,
Will be conveyed to the lateſt poſterity,
In the Hiſtories even of the Enemies of BRITAIN.
The Senſe, which the BRITISH Nation had,
Of his tranſcendent Merit,
Was expreſſed
In the moſt ſolemn, moſt effectual, moſt durable Manner.

[l] at Winnendale, on September 28, 1708, by Major general Webb, who conducted the convoy. [m] December 19. [n] inveſted on June 16, and ſurrendered on July 30, and its citadel on September 3. [o] at Malplaquet, or Blaregnies. [p] September 21.

The

The ACTS of PARLIAMENT, inſcribed on this Pillar,
Shall ſtand
As long as the BRITISH Name and Language laſt,
Illuſtrious Monuments,
Of MARLBOROUGH's Glory
And
Of BRITAIN's Gratitude.

On December 14, 1702, he was created Marquis of Blandford and Duke of Marlborough, ſoon after his return from the Low Countries, in which he was, on November 5, ſurprized by a French party from Guelder; but not being known, and producing an old French paſs, granted on a former occaſion to his brother, the General, and which the enemy not ſtrictly examining, he was permitted to proceed on his voyage to the Hague, where he arrived on the 7th, a little after the report of his being taken had reached that place, and was congratulated on his eſcape, by the States, and the Miniſters of thoſe powers in amity with them. In conſequence of an addreſs of the Houſe of Commons, on January 10, 1704-5, to the Queen, to conſider of ſome proper means to perpetuate the memory of his ſervices, her Majeſty granted to him, and his heirs, the royal manor of Woodſtock, and hundred of Wotton, in Oxfordſhire, and, on the 28th, gave her aſſent to an act corroborating that grant. His Grace having no proſpect of heirs male, after the death of his only ſon, and being deſirous of having his honours and dignities, together with the manor of Woodſtock and houſe of Blenheim, ſettled on his poſterity, an act for that purpoſe obtained the royal aſſent, on December 21, 1706: and, on Jan. 28 enſuing, the like ſanction was given to another act, for ſettling on him, and his poſterity, a penſion of 5,000 l. a year; although, when the Queen, on December 10, 1702, intimated, to the Houſe of Commons, her intention of granting the title of Duke, together with a yearly penſion of 5,000 l. out of the Poſt-office, to him and his heirs male, and deſired the concurrence of that aſſembly, ſuch heats aroſe, that the propoſal was then dropt. The Emperor Leopold, in conſideration of the eminent ſervices performed by the Duke of Marlborough to the Germanic body, created him a Prince of the Empire, in 1704; and his ſon, the Emperor Joſeph, on November 12, 1705, N. S. beſtowed on his Grace the principality of Mindelheim in Suabia, of which he got inveſtiture, on May 24, 1706: but that province being reſtored to the Elector of Bavaria, with his other dominions, by the peace of Raſtadt, Charles VI. Emperor, granted his Grace, in exchange, the county of Nellenburgh in Upper Auſtria, and erected it into a principality. On December 30, 1711, his Grace was diveſted of all his offices dependant on the Britiſh Crown,

Crown, as his Dutcheſs had been of hers ſome time before; the profits of their places amounting, at a moderate computation, to the yearly ſum of 62,325 l. beſides the Duke's emoluments by the war. His Grace having obtained leave to go beyond ſea, embarked with his family at Dover, on November 30, 1712, and returning to England, on Auguſt 1, 1714, was, by King George I. on September 24 following, reinſtated Captain-general of his Majeſty's Forces, Maſter of the Ordnance, and Colonel of the firſt regiment of Foot-guards, and appointed one of the Privy-Council. He enjoyed thoſe places, with his Maſter's favour, till his death, which happened at Windſor, on June 16, 1722, having ſome years ſurvived his mental faculties; and on Auguſt 9 enſuing, his corpſe was, with very great magnificence, interred in Weſtminſter-abbey, from whence it was afterwards removed to Woodſtock.

His Grace married Sarah, daughter and one of the coheirs to Richard Jennings, of Sandridge in the county of Hertford, Eſq; by whom he had one ſon, John, born on Jan. 13, 1689-90, and died of the ſmall-pox, at Trinity-college in Cambridge, on February 20, 1702-3; alſo four daughters, viz.

The Lady Henrietta, married to Francis Earl of Godolphin, who by the act of Parliament, before taken notice of, ſucceeded as Dutcheſs of Marlborough. And her Grace departing this life, on October 24, 1733, in the fifty-third year of her age, was interred in Weſtminſter-abbey, on November 9 following, near her father-in-law, the Earl of Godolphin; and leaving no iſſue male, her titles devolved on her nephew, Charles Earl of Sunderland, late Duke of Marlborough.

Lady Anne, ſecond daughter, was married to Charles Spencer, Earl of Sunderland, and died on April 15, 1716, by whom ſhe had iſſue Charles, late Duke of Marlborough, as ſucceſſor to the ſaid Henrietta, Dutcheſs of Marlborough.

Lady Elizabeth, third daughter, was married to Scroop Egerton, late Duke of Bridgewater, and died on March 22, 1713-14. And

The Lady Mary, was the wife of John, late Duke of Montague, of whoſe deſcendants I ſhall treat in their proper place.

Having thus traced the deſcent of the family of Churchill, I ſhall next proceed to that of Spencer, which was of noble degree in Normandy, before the Conqueſt; for Robert Deſpencer was Steward to William the Conqueror, and one of his Barons; as is fully manifeſt from authentic records: alſo that his poſterity were denominated from the ſaid office of Deſpenſer (*i. e.* Steward) is teſtified by the learned Camden, in his diſcourſe on ſurnames [q]; who mentions the Spencers to be deſcended from

[q] Remains, p. 12 and 126.

the

the Deſpencers, the De (when ſurnames were fully introduced) being omitted for brevity, as by innumerable inſtances in other families might be proved.

The ſaid Robert Deſpencer had by gift from the Conqueror the following manors, which he held at the time of the general ſurvey [r]; viz. Merſton, Leth, Filingeli, and Bertanſtone in Warwickſhire; Tozintone, Scrivelſbi, Wilgeſbi, Endrebi, Partenai, Butide, Tadewelle, Tuleſtone, Rocſtune, Cuningeſbie, Meringhe, Herdertoy, Stepinge, Langetone, and Holtham, in Lincolnſhire; Legre, Torp, Redeclive, Cuningeſtone, Odeſtone, Eſmoditone, Chibarde, Norton, Wicote, Stantone, Sucowe, Sacreſtone, Snarchtone, Flechene, Wiſtaneſton, Tiletone, and Sumerdeberie, in Leiceſterſhire; and Wicvene in Greleſtain Hundred, in Glouceſterſhire.

He was brother to [s] the Earl of Montgomery, and to Urſo de Abetot [t], hereditary Sheriff of Worceſterſhire, ſoon after the Conqueſt; who, in ſome Records, is called Urſo de Worceſtre, as being Conſtable of the Caſtle of Worceſter; and held, at the time of the general ſurvey, twenty lordſhips, which deſcended to Walter de Beauchamp (a great Baron) who married [u] Emeline his only child.

The aforeſaid Robert Deſpencer is mentioned among the Biſhops and Barons, aſſembled in Council with [x] William the Conqueror, in London, A. D. 1082, in the 17th year of his reign; at which time they ſet their hands and ſeals to the charter of William de Carilepho, Biſhop of Durham; which ſets forth, that the church of Durham being neglected, and by the barbarity of ſacrilegious perſons, neither monks or canons left therein; he does thereupon determine to bring the monks from Weremuth, and Girwe (now Jarro or Yarro); alſo, that the liberties of the church of Durham, with the lands (therein particularly mentioned) ſhould be preſerved inviolable for ever; laying this anathema on the violators: That all or any perſons, who ſhall preſume to prophane this charter, or change any thing therein, unleſs for the better, "By the authority of the "Prince of the Apoſtles, I deprive them of the ſociety of the "Lord, the aforeſaid Pope Gregory, and the Church; and re- "ſerve them, by the judgment of God, to be puniſhed by ever- "laſting fire, with the devil and his angels. Amen."

In the next year he was witneſs to a charter of the [y] King, dated at Weſtminſter, in Council, for removing the ſecular canons out of the ſame church, and placing monks in their ſtead; to which act the Biſhops and Barons at that time likewiſe ſet their hands and ſeals. He was afterwards witneſs to a grant of the

[r] Doomſday, lib. in iiſdem Com. [s] Atkins's Hiſt. of Glouceſter, p. 717. [t] Regiſt. Wigorn. Bibl. Cotton. [u] Dugdale's Baronage, vol. i. [x] Monaſt. Angl. vol. i. p. 43, b. [y] Ibid. p. 44. a.

ſame

ſame [z] King, of the whole city of Bath, with the coinage and toll thereto belonging, to John Biſhop of Bath, and his ſucceſſors, for the better ſupport of his ſee.

The monks of Worceſter have recorded this [a] Robert Deſpencer for a very powerful man; and that he took the lordſhip of Elmeliegh from them, which they could never after regain. He was ſucceeded by

William le Deſpencer (or Steward) to King Henry I. poſſeſſor [b] of the manor of Elington.

After him was Thurſtan le Deſpencer, Steward to the ſame King; of which Thurſtan, Mr. Camden [c] gives an account from the old hiſtorian [Gualterus Mapes de Nugis Curialium] That Thurſtan, the King's Steward, or Le Deſpencer (as he was then called) exhibiting to the King a complaint againſt Adam of Yarmouth, Clerk of the ſignet, for that he refuſed to ſign, without fee, a bill paſſed for him: that Prince thereupon hearing the difference, reconciled them; making this ſpeech, *Officers of the court muſt gratify and ſhew a caſt of their office, not only one to another, but alſo to all ſtrangers, whenſoever need ſhall require.* This Thurſtan had, as I take it from records, four ſons, Walter, Lord of Stanley, who was Uſher of the Chamber to King Henry II. (whoſe reign ended on July 6, 1189) and died without iſſue; Almaric, of whom hereafter; Hugh; and Geffrey, who was founder of Marlow-abbey in Buckinghamſhire; and in 1173, 19 Hen. II. witneſſed that King's confirmation of lands to Bungay-abbey in Suffolk [d]: which Prince, among other grants, ratifies, by Geoffrey le Deſpencer, the church of Boynton [e], to Bridlington priory. The ſaid Hugh le Deſpencer went with Richard I. to the Holy Land, A. D. 1190 [f], and was with him at the Siege of Acon; and in 1224, 8 Henry III. was conſtituted Sheriff of Shropſhire and Staffordſhire [g], and Governor of the Caſtles of Shrewſbury and Bruges, now called Bridgnorth. He was alſo, in the 10th of that reign [h], Sheriff of Berkſhire for one half of that year [i], and Governor of Wallingford-caſtle; having, the year following, a grant, from the King, of the manor of [k] Ryhall in Rutlandſhire. He was, moreover, appointed Governor of Belſover-caſtle in Derbyſhire, 17 Henry III. and in 21 Henry III. was ſent, with Stephen de Segrave and Henry de Aldithley, to take charge of the caſtles of Cheſter and Beeſton. He is ſaid to have been ſucceeded by another

[z] Monaſt. Angl. vol. i. p. 185. b. [a] Regiſt. Wigorn. præd. [b] Leland. Collect. vol. i. p. 840. in Bibl. Bodl. [c] Remains, p. 247. [d] Monaſt. vol. i. p. 445, 516. [e] Ibid. vol. ii. p. 163. [f] Cod. MSS. Aſhmol. N° 1120 in Muſæo Oxon. [g] Pat. 8 Henry III. m. 12. [h] Rot. Pip. A. 10 Henry III. m. 3. [i] Cart. A. 11 Henry III. m. 3. [k] Pat. 17 Henry III. m. 3.

Hugh

Hugh le Deſpenſer, concerning whoſe parentage antiquaries differ: ſome making him the ſon [l] of Geffrey, fourth ſon of Thurſtan, aforeſaid; whilſt others will have him the ſon of [m] Thomas le Deſpencer, a witneſs to the confirmation-charter of Ranulph [n] Earl of Cheſter, to Rowceſtre priory in Staffordſhire. However, in 1211, 13 Joh. Hugh is found with his wife, the daughter of Hugh de L'Iſle [o], to hold lands in the counties of Nottingham and Derby, by Knights ſervice; and perhaps died that year: for then Hugh de L'Iſle [p] gave 200 marks, and an horſe of Price, for the marriage of Catherine his daughter and heir; [q] and in the 15th of the ſame reign, William de Cantilupe paid 200 marks for her, to be a wife to his ſon.

Almaric, the ſecond ſon of Thurſtan, aforeſaid, was Sheriff of Rutlandſhire [r] anno 34 Henry II. and 1 Richard I. and being Steward to the latter, enjoyed of his gift [s] the manor of King's Stanley in Glouceſterſhire, which had been his ſaid brother's. In 8 Richard I. he was [t] acquitted of the third ſcutage of Normandy; and in the 5th of King John, he had a [u] confirmation in fee of the lordſhips of Wurdie and Stanley, in the vale of Glouceſter (being ſtiled in the record, ſon of Thurſtan, brother and heir of Walter, ſon of Thurſtan); which lordſhip of Wurdie, King Henry II. formerly gave to [x] Walter aforeſaid, brother to this Almaric, for his homage and ſervice, paying for the ſame a pair of gilt ſpurs, or twelve pence yearly, into the Exchequer, at the feaſt of St. Michael the Archangel; and to hold by the ſervice of half a Knight's fee. And the year after, he gave a fine of one hundred and twenty marks, and one palfry, to be exempted from attending the King in his purpoſed expedition beyond ſea. By his charter, without date, he beſtowed the lands which [y] William Delaman held of his Father Thurſtan, on the monks of Bruern, com. Oxon. He took to wife Amabil, daughter to Walter de Cheſnei (or Chenei) by whom he had iſſue three ſons [z], Thurſtan, his heir; Almaric, who married Elizabeth, daughter to Sir Rowland Blewit; and Philip le Deſpencer, who by his wife, Sibel, daughter and heir of Richard Ewyas, had a ſon Richard, who took the ſurname of Ewyas. Almeric had likewiſe a daughter, married to [a] William Bardolph.

The ſaid Thurſtan le Deſpencer, with his brother Almaric, with Thomas le Deſpencer, and other Barons, took up arms againſt King John; for which the King ſeized the lands of

[l] Viſit. Comit. Northampt. anno 1617. [m] E Coll. R. Glover, Somerſet Herald. [n] Monaſt. Angl. vol. ii. p. 268. b. [o] Lib. Rub. in Sacc. [p] Rot. Pip. anno 13 Joh. Northamp. [q] Rot. Fin. anno 15 Joh. m. 2. [r] Rot. Pip. de iiſd. ann. [s] Atkins's Glouc. p. 717. [t] Rot. Pip. 8 Ric. I. Salop. [u] Cart. an. 5 Joh. N° 52. [x] Cart. Antiq. D. D. N° 8. [y] Geneal. Nobil. Antiq. per Cook, Clar. MS. Not. B. 15 in Bibl. John Anſtis, Ar. Garter Reg. Armor. [z] Ibid. [a] Rot. Pip. 8 Ric. I. Northampt.

Almaric,

[b] Almaric, and gave them, in the 18th year of his reign, to Oſbert Giffard, his own natural ſon; having the year before committed the cuſtody of Thurſtan [c] to Sir Rowland Blewit.

This Thurſtan, in the [d] 19th, 20th, and [e] 22d of Henry III. was Sheriff of Glouceſterſhire; ſo likewiſe for the firſt quarter of the 23d year; and in the 26th of Henry III. when he was commanded to attend the King with horſe and arms at [f] Xancton, to vindicate the injuries he had received from Lewis IX. King of France, who had invaded Poictiers. He died before 1249, the 33d of Henry III. for then the wardſhip of his lands lying in the counties of Wilts, Surry, Glouceſter, Oxon and Worceſter [g], during the minority of his heir, was committed to Adomare de Lezignian, and the manor of [h] Ewelme in com. Oxon. aſſigned to Lucia his widow, for her maintenance, till her dowry ſhould be ſet forth. By the ſaid Lucia, he was father of

Sir Geffrey le Deſpenſer, who departed this life about 1251; leaving two ſons, Hugh his heir; and Geffrey le Deſpencer, Lord of Marchly in Worceſterſhire, of whom more fully, afterwards, as direct anceſtor of the preſent Duke of Marlborough.

Hugh, the eldeſt ſon, was one of the greateſt Barons of that time, and taking arms with other Nobles, in defence of their antient privileges, was by them, in 1258, the [i] 42d of Hen. III. choſen one of the twelve, who with twelve other Barons, nominated by the King, were to amend and reform what they ſhould think amiſs in the kingdom. Likewiſe, in the 44th of Henry III. he was advanced to that great [k] office, of Chief Juſticiary of England (which in thoſe days comprehended the juriſdiction of all the preſent law courts); and in 1264, the 48th of Henry III. appeared in arms againſt the King at Northampton. At the battle of Lewes, on May 14 the ſame year, he behaved himſelf very bravely, taking priſoner [l] Marmaduke de Twenge, who compounded to pay a ranſom of ſeven hundred marks for his liberty. After this battle (wherein the King was taken Priſoner) the Barons made him Governor of [m] Orefordcaſtle in com. Suffolk; as alſo of the Caſtles of Deviſes in Wiltſhire, Bernard-caſtle in the biſhopric of Durham, Oxford, and Nottingham; and on June 8 following, the King ſends his writ [n] for all the cities, burghs and towns on the coaſts of Norfolk and Suffolk, to be obedient to the directions of Hugh Deſpencer, his Juſticiary: alſo, on September 8 follow-

[b] Clauſ. 18 Joh. m. 7. [c] Ibid. anno 17 Joh. m. 16. [d] Atkins's Glouc. p. 73. [e] Rot. Pip. Henry III. [f] Rymer's Fœder. vol. i. p. 405. [g] Clauſ. 33 Henry III. m. 3. [h] Ibid. [i] Brady's Hiſt. of England, vol. i. p. 625. [k] Matt. Weſtm. in anno 1260, and Matt. Paris. [l] Clauſ. anno 48 Henry III. m. 8. [m] Pat. anno 48 Henry III. m. 7. [n] Ibid. N° 11.

ing, he was conſtituted one of the ſix Procurators, and [o] Commiſſioners, to treat, in the preſence of Lewis IX. King of France, and G. Biſhop of La Sabina, Legate of the apoſtolic ſee, or either of them, about the reformation of the ſtate of the kingdom, with power to do whatever they thought fit in the matter. He was likewiſe one of the [p] three, that they confided in, to be always about the King. Nevertheleſs, he afterwards fell from the Barons [q], being diſguſted at the haughty behaviour of Simon Mountfort, Earl of Leiceſter, who [r] took all the profits and revenues of the kingdom, and ranſom of priſoners, to his own uſe, which by agreemant was to have been divided; and the ſaid Earl was thereupon conſtituted Juſticiary by patent, on December 14, 1264, the 49th of Henry III. and ſummoned to Parliament as a Baron. However, he put himſelf in arms again with them, and fighting with great courage at the battle of Eveſham, which happened on Auguſt 5, next year, 1265 [s] (49 Henry III.) he there loſt his life.

This Hugh (by [t] Oliva his wife, daughter of Philip Lord Baſſet, of Wicombe in com. Bucks, and widow of Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk) was father to [u] Hugh le Deſpencer, of full age, anno 10 Edward I. who with [x] Hugh le Deſpencer, his ſon, are thoſe whom our hiſtorians ſo largely treat of; differencing them, by Hugh Deſpencer, ſenior, and Hugh Deſpencer, junior; the one, Earl of Wincheſter, anno 15 Edward II. and the other (in right of his wife [y] Eleanor, eldeſt daughter of Gilbert Earl of Clare, Glouceſter, and Hertford, and of Joan his wife, one of the daughters of Edward I.) ſtiled Earl of Glouceſter; both of them the moſt powerful perſons of their time, and poſſeſſors of the greateſt eſtates, and the unhappy favourites of Edward II. By the ſaid Oliva, he was alſo father of a daughter, Eleanor, married to Hugh de Courtenay, father of Hugh, firſt Earl of Devon.

Hugh le Deſpencer, ſenior [z], had honourably diſtinguiſhed himſelf under Edward I. in his wars in Wales; alſo in France, Flanders, and Scotland; being likewiſe employed in ſeveral great embaſſies. He was Governor of Odiham-caſtle in Hampſhire, A. D. 1293, 22 Edw. I. ſummoned to Parliament as Baron Le Deſpencer, on June 23, 1295, 23 Edw. I. and appointed Governor of Marlborough-caſtle, 2 Edward II. He was further promoted to the dignity of Earl of Wincheſter, on May 10, 1322, 15 Edward II. who moreover conſtituted him Warden of the Foreſts ſouth of Trent, in the 17th year of his reign. This Nobleman's conduct being diſagreeable to many of the

[o] Brady's Hiſt. of England, vol. i. p. 645. [p] Ibid. p. 649. [q] Lel. Col. vol. ii. p. 378. [r] Brady, ut antea, p. 650. [s] Ibid. p. 652. [t] Pat. 49 Henry III. m. 5. [u] Ex ſtemmate, penes Joh. Anſtis, Ar. præd. [x] Ibid. [y] Ibid. [z] Dugdale's Baronage, Brady's Hiſt. &c.

Barons,

Barons, he was baniſhed the realm, in 1320; but returning next year, and adhering firmly to the cauſe of his oppreſſed Sovereign, was, after the landing of Queen Iſabel with the Prince of Wales, in September, 1326, 20 Edward II. put to death next month, without being brought to a trial. His Lordſhip married Iſabel, daughter of William de Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, and widow of Sir Patrick Chaworth; and by her had one ſon, Sir Hugh, his heir; and five daughters, 1. Ada, married to Sir Ralph Camois, Knt. 2. Joane, to John de St. Amand; 3. Oliva, to Edward Lord Burnel; 4. Eleanor, a nun at Sempringham in Lincolnſhire; and, 5. Iſabel, firſt wedded to John Haſtings, Lord Bergavenny, and ſecondly to Richard Mounthermer.

Sir Hugh le Deſpencer, the only ſon of Hugh Earl of Wincheſter, aforeſaid, was knighted, in 34 Edward I. had ſummons to Parliament as a Baron, 3 Edward II. and was one of the godfathers to King Edward III. A. D. 1312, 6 Edward II. In the 12th of that reign, he was Governor of the Caſtles of Droſſeland and Dyniver, and alſo of thoſe of Odiham, Hamley, and Kaerfili, in the 12th year of Edward II. He was nominated Lord Chamberlain, in the 13th; ſoon after which, he was, with his father, obliged to leave the kingdom; but being recalled with him, was, in the 16th of Edward II. conſtituted Governor of the Caſtle and Barton (*i. e.* demeſne lands) of Glouceſter, and Warden of the foreſt of Dean. King Edw. II. moreover appointed him Governor of the Caſtles of Bergheaven, Cantretcliff, Talgarth, Blenlevenly, and Penkethley, that ſame year; and of Briſtol-caſtle, in the 18th year of his reign: but the favours of his Royal Maſter (to whom he faithfully adhered in all his viciſſitudes of fortune) procuring him the malevolence of the Barons, he was executed at Hereford, on November 28, 1326, although, when he ſtoutly defended the caſtle of Kaerfili, he had, by capitulation, ſafety as to life and limbs. This eminent Nobleman, commonly called Earl of Glouceſter, on a ſuppoſition that that Earldom came to him by Eleanor, his wife, aforeſaid, who was coheir to her brother, Earl Gilbert, had by the ſaid Lady (who married ſecondly William la Zouch of Mortimer, and died on June 30, 1337) four ſons, 1. Hugh; 2. Edward, the continuator of the line; 3. Gilbert le Deſpencer, of Melton-Mowbray in Leiceſterſhire; and, 4. Philip le Deſpencer, who by Margaret his wife, daughter and heir of Ralph Gouſell, had a ſon Philip, who took the arms of Gouſell, viz. Barry of ſix, Or and Azure, a Canton Ermine. This laſt-mentioned Philip, was ſucceeded by another Philip, whoſe daughter and heir, Margery, was married to Sir Roger Wentworth, of Nettleſted in Suffolk, anceſtor to the preſent Viſcount Wentworth, and of Thomas late Earl of Cleveland, &c.

Beſides

Beſides theſe four ſons, Sir Hugh had alſo a daughter, ——, the wife of Richard Fitz-Alan, Earl of Arundel.

Hugh, the eldeſt, commonly called Lord Glamorgan, in 2 Edward III. being in priſon [a], under the cuſtody of Roger Mortimer, Earl of March, was removed to the Caſtle of Briſtol, there to be detained; but ſome time after, the King ordered his releaſe, and ſhewing him favour, he betook himſelf to his ſervice in the wars; being in that expedition into Gaſcoigne, 7 Edward III. and in that to Scotland, in 9 of Edward III. enjoyed the lands of his mother's inheritance [b], anno 11 Edw. III. and ſerving in ſeveral expeditions againſt France, and Scotland, was made a Knight Banneret, and ſummoned to Parliament, among the Barons, in the 12th of that reign. He married Elizabeth, daughter of William Montacute, Earl of Saliſbury, and widow of Gyles Badleſmere, and thirdly the wife of Guy de Brien; but died without iſſue, on February 8, 1349, the 23d of Edward III. leaving Sir Edward, ſon of his brother Edward, his next heir.

The ſaid Edward, brother of Hugh, and ſecond ſon of Hugh and Eleanor, died in 1342, leaving by Anne his wife, daughter of Henry Lord Ferrers of Groby, three ſons, viz. Edward, aforeſaid, heir to his uncle; Thomas le Deſpencer; and Henry, the warlike biſhop of Norwich, who died about 1408.

Sir Edward, the eldeſt ſon, was made Knight of the Garter, temp. Edward III. and ſummoned to Parliament [c] among the Barons, 31 Edward III. He wedded Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Sir Bartholomew Burgherſh, Knt. and departing this life on November 11, 1375, at the caſtle of Caerdiff, was buried at Tewkeſbury. By his ſaid Lady, who died in July 1409, he had two ſons, and five daughters, viz. Thomas, his heir; Hugh le Deſpencer; Cicely, who died young; Elizabeth, ſucceſſively the wife of John Arundel, Eſq; and —— Lord Zouch; Anne, married firſt to Hugh Haſtings, Eſq; and ſecondly to Thomas Morley, Eſq; Margaret, the wife of Robert Lord Ferrers of Chartley; and Philippa.

Thomas le Deſpencer, the eldeſt ſon, commonly called Deſpencer of Glamorgan, who was two years of age at his father's death, made a conſiderable figure in the reign of Richard II. in the 21ſt of which, 1398, he was created Earl of Glouceſter, and had his great grandfather's ſentence of exile reverſed [d] in Parliament. On the acceſſion of Henry IV. to the Throne, he was diveſted of the title of Earl, and engaging, in 1400, with other Noblemen to reſtore King Richard II. ſuffered decapitation at Briſtol, from whence his body was conveyed to Tewkeſbury for interment. In his petition to the Parliament for an-

[a] Clauſ. 20 Edward III. m. 3.
[b] Rot. Fin. 11 Edward III. m. 27.
[c] Dugdale's Summons to Parliament.
[d] Rot. Parl. 21 Richard II. N° 35.

nulling the ſentence of Hugh, his great grandfather [e], it appears, that the ſaid Hugh was then poſſeſſed of no leſs than fifty-nine lordſhips in ſundry counties, twenty-eight thouſand ſheep, one thouſand oxen and ſteers, twelve hundred kine with their calves, forty mares with their colts of two years, a hundred and ſixty drawing horſes, two thouſand hogs, three thouſand bullocks, forty tuns of wine, ſix hundred bacons, fourſcore carcaſſes of Martinmas beef, ſix hundred muttons; in his lardere, ten tuns of cyder, armour, plate, jewels, and ready money, better than ten thouſand pounds; thirty-ſix ſacks of wool, and a library of books.

This Thomas, Earl of Glouceſter, took to wife [f] Conſtance, daughter of Edmund of Langley, Duke of York, fifth ſon to Edward III. by whom he left one ſon, [g] Richard, Earl of Glouceſter, who wedded Elizabeth, daughter of Ralph Nevil, Earl of Weſtmoreland; but died on October 7, 1414, 2 Hen. V. without iſſue, and was buried at Tewkeſbury. Earl Thomas had alſo two daughters, viz. Elizabeth, who died an infant; and Iſabel, a poſthumous child, who was wife, firſt to Richard Beauchamp, Lord Bergavenny, and Earl of Worceſter, by whom ſhe was mother of Elizabeth, the firſt wife of Edward Nevill, Lord Bergavenny, whoſe great grandſon, Henry Nevill, Lord Abergavenny, dying without heirs male, the barony of Le Deſpencer was adjudged, on May 25, 1604, 2 Jac. I. to his only child and heir, Mary, wedded to Sir Thomas Fane, father by her of Francis, firſt Earl of Weſtmoreland, in whoſe family it continued till the death of John Earl of Weſtmoreland, on Auguſt 26, 1762, when it devolved on Sir Francis Daſhwood, of Weſt-Wycomb in Buckinghamſhire, Bart. in right of his mother, Lady Mary, ſiſter to the ſaid John Earl of Weſtmoreland. Elizabeth, aforeſaid, was wedded ſecondly to Richard Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, by whom ſhe had iſſue.

Having thus far traced the principal branch, I now return to Geffrey le Deſpencer, Lord of Marchly in Worceſterſhire, brother of Hugh, and ſecond ſon of Geffrey le Deſpencer, only ſon of Thurſtan by Emma, as before recited. This Geffrey, Lord of Marchly, died in 1242 [h], 26 Henry III. leaving iſſue, Sir John, his ſon and heir, under age, whoſe guardianſhip was granted to Emma his mother.

Which Sir John was of full age, anno 40 Henry III. at which time being ſtiled ſon of Geffrey, and holding 60 l. *per annum*, land, in com. Leiceſter, and 15 l. in com. Southampton, he [i] was called to receive the honour of knighthood. In 41 of Henry III. 1256, Pope Alexander IV. directs his bull to the

[e] Rot. Parl. 21 Ric. II. N° 60, 64, and 65. [f] Ex Stemmate. [g] Ibid.
[h] Viſitat. Com. Northampton. in Coll. Arm. anno 1617. [i] Lib. MS. in Bibl. Cotton. Claud. c. 2.

Biſhop of [k] Saliſbury; wherein he ſets forth, that John Deſpencer, by petition, prays, that he may build a chapel, and have a chaplain, in his manor of Swalefield, which he is ready to endow; his ſaid manor lying in a foreſt, in which he lived, and that it was unſafe for him and his family to go to the mother church, by reaſon many thieves harboured in the ſaid foreſt, and for inundations in winter; which matter the Pope refers to the ſaid Biſhop to determine.

This [l] Sir John, Adam Deſpencer, and others of this family, took part with the Barons in their wars againſt Henry III. and were both taken priſoners at the battle of Northampton; on which account the [m] manors of the ſaid John, viz. Caſtle-Carlton, and Cavenby, in com. Linc. which he held in right of his wife, were extended by the King; but when the Barons had taken that Prince priſoner, at the battle of Lewes, on May 14, 1264, the ſaid John, and Adam, by mutual [n] agreement, were releaſed; for by the King's writ to Roger de Mortimer, dated on June 4, 1264, he was ordered to bring them, among other priſoners (taken in April laſt, at Northampton fight) to [o] London, in order to their being ſet at liberty. He died in 1274, 2d of Edward I. and by [p] inquiſition taken next year, at Gertre, in com. Leiceſter, he is found to die poſſeſſed of the manor of Beranſby, and the moiety of Wigan de la Mare, with ſeveral other lands; as alſo the hundred of Beaumaner, held of Hugh Deſpencer in ſoccage, paying annually a pair of gilt ſpurs, price 6d. and of the houſe and park there, worth yearly 6s. 8d. Likewiſe by another inquiſition, dated the ſame year, taken at his manor of Marteley, in com. Wigorn, he is ſaid to die poſſeſſed of that manor, with the advowſon of the church held in chief of the King, which his father had by gift of King Henry. He had alſo reſtitution of his manors of Caſtle-Carlton, and Cavenby; for by two ſeveral inquiſitions the ſame year, he is ſaid to die poſſeſſed of them, in right of his wife Joan; but having no iſſue of her body alive, he held them only by the courteſy of England; and John de Merieth entered on the ſame as his right, by the death of Joan, daughter of Robert le Lou, late wife of the ſaid John Deſpencer, couſin of the aforeſaid John de Merieth, whoſe heir he is, and at that time thirty years old.

This Sir [q] John Deſpencer, by ——, his ſecond wife, had two ſons, viz. Adam, who died young, and William le Deſpencer, his heir, ſtiled of Belton, and one of the jury at an [r] inquiſition taken at Bredon, on June 8, 1306, 34 Edward I.

[k] Rymer's Fœd. tom. i. p. 610. [l] Brady's Hiſt. of England, p. 643. [m] Eſch. incerti temp. R. Hen. III. N° 190. in Turr. Lond. [n] Brady, ut ſurpra. [o] Rymer's Fœd. vol. i. p. 791. [p] Eſch. 3 Edw. I. N° 2. [q] Vincent's Baronage, in Offic. Arm. N° 20. Viſit. Com. Northampton. in dict. Offic. anno 1617. [r] Monaſt. Angl. vol. i. p. 481. b.

concerning the right of electing a Prioreſs of Langley, in com. Leiceſter. He reſided at Defford, in com. Wigorn, and died poſſeſſed thereof about 1228, 2 Edward III. [s] as appears by an inquiſition taken at Perſhore, which likewiſe ſhews that John was his ſon and heir, and of full age.

Which John was in the retinue of John of Gaunt, nominal [t] King of Caſtile, in his voyage to Spain, and on that account had the King's letters of protection for one year, bearing date March 6, 1386 (9 Richard II.) He was afterwards Eſquire of the body to Henry V. alſo [u] Keeper of his great Wardrobe, and, attending him in his warlike expeditions, was with him at the ſiege of [x] Roan. He had iſſue by [y] Alice his wife (daughter and heir of —— Deverell) Nicholas his ſon and heir:

Who by [z] Joan his wife, daughter of —— Polard, had iſſue two ſons, Thomas; and William, who, by his wife ———, daughter of——— Clare, had one ſon John, who died without iſſue, in the year 1456.

Thomas, the eldeſt ſon and heir of Nicholas, was father of Henry Spencer, of Badby in com. Northampton, Eſq; as appears by a [a] receipt, dated 13 Henry VI. for ſubſidies then paid to that King.

Which Henry took to wife Iſabel, daughter and coheir of —— Lincoln, from whom proceeded four ſons, John, Thomas, William, and Nicholas; and died about [b] 16 Edward IV. his laſt will and teſtament bearing date 1476, wherein he appoints his ſons, John and Thomas, executors, and Iſabel his wife overſeer. The ſeal affixt were the arms the family now bear, viz. *Quarterly in the firſt and third a Fret, over all, on a bend, three Eſcallops.* He was ſucceeded by his eldeſt ſon,

John Spencer, of Hodnell, Eſq; who is mentioned in ſeveral deeds of feoffment with Sir Edward Rawleigh, of Farneborough, Knight, and others; particularly in 13 and 19 Edward IV. when he ſealed with the arms of his mother and wife together, being both heireſſes; viz. *On a Croſs, five Stars of ſix Points* (his mother's); and *a Cheveron between three Cinqfoils*, his wife's, who was daughter and heir of ——— Warſted; by whom he had two ſons; 1. William, hereafter mentioned; 2. John Spencer, of Hodnell in com. Warwick, Eſq; who died [c] anno 12 Henry VII. and held lands in eighteen ſeveral lordſhips; as appears by his laſt will and teſtament, dated on September 15, 1486; by which he appoints his body to be buried in the chancel of the pariſh church of Hodenhull,

[s] Eſch. anno 3 Edw. III. [t] Rymer's Fœd. tom. vii. p. 500. [u] Ibid. vol. ix. p. 271. [x] Lib. MS. in Muſæo, Aſhmol. N° 1120. [y] Viſit. Com. Northampton. præd. [z] Ibid. & Vincent's Baron. præd. [a] Viſit. Com. Northampton. præd. [b] Ibid. [c] Reg. Horn, in Cur. Prærog. Cant. Qu. 4.

and

and conſtitutes his nephew, John Spencer, of Snitterfeild, Eſq; ſon of his brother William, one of his executors; entailing his lands on him in default of iſſue male of his own ſon Thomas (from whom the Spencers of Hodnell) and in default of iſſue of him, the ſaid John, to the heirs male of Thomas, the ſaid John's late brother, of whom hereafter.

William Spencer, Eſq; (eldeſt ſon and heir of John) was, in 1 Henry VII. ſeated at Rodburne (an eſtate [d] forfeited to the Crown by the attainder of William Cateſby, Eſq;) in Warwickſhire, and having married Elizabeth, ſiſter to Sir Richard Empſon, Knt. one of Henry VII's agents, had iſſue a daughter, Jane, and two ſons, Sir John (of whom hereafter, as heir) and Thomas.

The ſaid Thomas had iſſue, William, who had the eſtate at Badby [e] in Northamptonſhire, whoſe ſon, Thomas Spencer [f], was of Everton in the ſame county, and dying on Auguſt 17, 1576, had ſepulture there. He married his couſin Dorothy, third daughter of Sir William Spencer of Althorpe (the Duke of Marlborough's predeceſſor) and by her was father of William Spencer, and four daughters [g], coheirs to the ſaid William, their brother, viz. Dorothy, wedded to George Cope, Eſq; ſecond ſon of Sir John Cope, of Canons-Aſhby in Northamptonſhire, and after his deceaſe to Gabriel Poulteney, of Poulteney in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; Suſan, married to John Temple, Eſq; Mary, the wife of Richard Wanap, of Byobroke in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; and Catherine, married to Thomas Browne, Eſq;

Sir John Spencer, eldeſt ſon, was denominated of [h] Snitterfeild, in com Warwick; having acquired that eſtate in right of his wife Iſabel, one of the daughters and coheirs of Walter Graunt, Eſq; and in 12 Henry VI. being wrote of that place, was one of the executors to his couſin, John Spencer, of Hodenhull. On September 3, 1506, 22 Henry VII. he purchaſed the great lordſhip of [i] Wormleighton, in com. Warwick, and ſoon after began the ſtructure of a fair manor-houſe there; in which (when [k] inquiſitions were taken concerning waſtes and incloſures of lands in 9 and 10 Henry VIII.) he was certified to have his reſidence therein with ſixty perſons of his family; being a good benefactor to the church in ornaments and other things.

He was knighted by Henry VIII. and by his laſt will and teſtament [l] it appears, that he was poſſeſſed of a very great eſtate; was a noble houſe-keeper; had a great reverence for

[d] Dugdale's Warwickſhire, p. 220. [e] Ex Stemmate, præd. [f] Ibid.
[g] Ibid. and Bridges's Hiſt. Northampt. [h] Reg. Horn. præd. [i] Dugdale's Warwickſhire, p. 405. [k] Ibid. [l] Ex Reg. vocat. Manwaring in Cur. Prærog. Cant. Qu. 24.

the clergy; was very liberal to his poor neighbours, as alſo bountiful to his tenants and ſervants. He in a manner rebuilt the churches of Wormleighton, in com. Warwick, and Brington, and Stanton, in com. Northampton, and gave thereto veſtments and chalices: and his other bequeſts to religious houſes, and for reparations of churches, are very numerous; as are alſo his charities to his ſervants, and others; whereby it is evident that he had a noble ſpirit, tempered with the greateſt humanity. He was likewiſe ſo honeſt and juſt, and of ſo pious a diſpoſition, "That he requires his Executors to recompenſe "every one that can lawfully prove, or will make oath, that he "has hurt him in any wiſe, ſo that they make their claim within "two years, though (as is recited) he has none in his remem-"brance; but he had rather charge their ſouls, than his own "ſhould be in danger: and requires his executors to cauſe pro-"clamation thereof to be made once a month, during the firſt "year after his deceaſe, at Warwick, Southampton, Coventry, "Banbury, Daventry, and Northampton."

By this teſtament, which is dated April 12, 1522, 13 Henry VIII. "[m] he bequeathes his body to be buried in the chancel "of Brington church, in com. Northampton, before the image "of our bleſſed Lady; and that his executors cauſe a tomb to "be made as nigh the wall as they can behind the place of ſe-"pulture."

He lies buried, according to his appointment, in the church of Brington, in com. Northampton, as appears by a monument, now remaining on the north ſide of the ſouth chancel, ſhewing the figures of a Knight in armour, and his Lady in the dreſs of the times, lying on their backs, under an arch of free-ſtone, curiouſly adorned with carvings. At his feet, againſt the wall, is this inſcription in capitals, ſetting forth his marriage and iſſue:

HERE LIETH THE BODIES OF SIR IOHN
SPENCER KNIGHT, AND DAME ISABEL HIS
WIFE, ONE OF THE DAVGHTERS AND COHEIERS
OF WALTER GRAVNT OF SNITTERFEILD
IN THE COUNTIE OF WAR. ESQVIER. HER
MOTHER WAS THE DAVGHTER AND HEIRE
OF HUMPHRIE RUDINGE OF THE WICH
IN THE COVN: OF WORCESTER ESQ: WHICH
IOHN AND ISABEL HAD ISSU SIR WILLM
SPENCER KNIGHT. 1. ANTHONY SPENCER
WHO DIED WITHOUT ISSU. 2. IANE, WIFE
TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY ESQUIER, SONE &
HEIRE OF SIR RICHARD KNIGHTLEY OF

[m] Ex Regiſt. vocat. Manwaring in Cur. Prærog. Cant. Qu. 24.

FAWSLEY

FAWSLEY IN THE COVNTIE OF NORTH: KNIGHT, ISABELL MARRIED TO SIR NICS STRELLY OF STRELLY IN THE COVTIE OF NOT: KNIGHT, DOROTHYE MARRIED TO SIR RICH: CATESBIE OF LEGERS ASHBIE IN THE COVN: OF NORTH: KNI: WHICH SIR IOHN SPENC: DEPARTED THIS LIFE THE 14. OF APR. A° DNI. 1552.

The ſaid Sir William Spencer, mentioned in the above inſcription, received the honour of [n] knighthood from Hen. VIII. at York-place (now called Whitehall) A. D. 1529, the Parliament then ſitting; and two years after, viz. in 23 and 24 Henry VIII. was [o] Sheriff of Northamptonſhire, during which he died. His laſt will bears date June 17, 1532, 24 Hen. VIII. whereby he bequeaths his body to be [p] buried at Brington, in ſuch manner as his executors ſhould think fit: orders his father's will to be complied with in every article, not then performed: appoints Dame Suſan, his wife, Sir Nicholas Strelley, Knt. Anthony Cope, Eſq; Walter Smith, Eſq; and two others, his executors, and that they take care of John, his only ſon, then very young; and dying five days after, viz. on June 22, lies buried according to his deſire; and a fine altar tomb, erected to his memory, is now ſtanding againſt the north-eaſt wall of the north [q] chancel, or burial-place of this family, round the verge whereof is this inſcription in old characters:

Hic Jacent Dominus Will'us Spencer Miles, & D'na Suzanna uxor ejus qui obiit xxii° Die me's Junij Anno D'ni Milli'mo CCCCCXXXII. quorum Aiabus propitietur Deus. Amen.

Over the ſaid tomb, on a tablet under an arch, is likewiſe this inſcription, which ſhews his marriage and children:

HERE LIETH THE BODIES OF SIR WILLIAM SPENCER KNIGHT, AND DAME SVSAN HIS WYFE, DAVGHTER OF SIR RICH: KNIGHTLEY OF FAVSLEY IN COMIT. NORTHAMP. KNT. & HAD ISSV BY HER SIR IOHN SPENCER KNT. THERE ONLIE SONNE, ISABEL MARIED TO SIR IOHN COTTON OF LANWARDE, IN CO: CAM: KIGHT

[n] Nomin. Equit. in Bibl. Cotton. Claud. c. 3. [o] Fuller's Worthies in Com. Northamp. [p] Ex Reg. Thorne, in Cur. Prærog. præd. [q] Ex Autog.

IANE WIFE [r] TO SIR RICH. BRVGIS OF SHEFFORD IN CO. BERK: KNIGHT, DOROTHY MARIED TO THO: SPENCER OF EVERTON IN CO: NORTHAMP. ESQVIRE, ANNE WYFE TO SIR IOHN GOODWIN OF WINCHINGTON IN CO: NORTHAMP. KNIGHT. WHICH ANNE DIED WITHOUT ISSV. MARIE WYFE TO THO. BOLES OF WALINGTON IN CO. HERTFORDE ESQVIER. WHICH SIR WILLIAM DIED THE XXII. DAYE OF IVNE ANNO DOMINI 1532.

Sir John Spencer, the only ſon of Sir William aforeſaid, was [s] Sheriff of Northamptonſhire, in 5 Edward VI. and elected one of the Knights of the Shire in Parliament for that county in the [t] 1ſt of Queen Mary, before which time he had received the honour of knighthood. He alſo ſerved in the 4th and 5th of Philip and Mary, and the year following was again Sheriff of that county, as alſo in 13 Elizabeth; and, in the 15th year of the reign of that Queen, was by writ appointed (with other Juſtices of prime quality in the county of Northampton) a [u] Commiſſioner to enquire after ſuch perſons as acted contrary to an act of Parliament, 1 Elizabeth, *entitled, An Act for the uniformity of the common prayer, and ſervice of the church, and adminiſtration of the ſacraments.* He was a great œconomiſt, yet kept a plentiful table, according to the old Engliſh way, as is manifeſt from his laſt [x] will and teſtament, bearing date January 4, 1585; wherein he orders hoſpitality to be kept in houſes at Althorp and Wormleighton, by his heir, after his deceaſe, according as he had done; beſtowing likewiſe ſeveral legacies on his ſervants. It alſo appears, that he delighted in retiredneſs; was an encourager of induſtry; and ſo much averſe to an unactive life, that though he was poſſeſſed of a great eſtate, he employed his thoughts on huſbandry, as of moſt profit and advantage to his country; for at his death he had numerous flocks of ſheep and other cattle in his grounds and parks of Althorp and Wormleighton.

This Sir John Spencer, in his laſt will aforeſaid, requires his executors to bury him in a decent manner without pomp (after the worldly faſhion) in the church of Brington, where his late wife, Dame Catherine Spencer, lieth buried. Alſo, that they give, before his burial, 40 l. in alms, and cauſe a tomb, ſuch as they think fit, to be placed where he and his ſaid wife lie buried.

[r] She was, after Sir Richard's deceaſe, the third wife of Sir Simon Harcourt of Stanton Harcourt, the preſent Earl Harcourt's anceſtor, but without iſſue.
[s] Fuller's Worthies, in Com. Northampt. [t] MS. penes Browne Willis, Ar.
[u] Rymer's Fœder. tom. x. p. 724, 725. [x] Reg. Spenſer, p. 1. Qu. 1. in Cur. Præreg. præd.

Accordingly I find one erected to his memory, neatly painted, gilt and adorned with arms (in the middle of two others) in the burial-place of this family, between the [y] ſouth chancel and north chancel, repreſenting, under an arch of elegant workmanſhip, embelliſhed with roſes, lozenges, &c. of different colours, the proportions of a Knight in armour, with his Lady, in the habit of the times, lying on their backs, and their hands elevated; over them the atchievement of the arms of the family; and at their feet, againſt the wall, is the following inſcription, ſhewing his marriage and iſſue:

HERE LIETH THE BODIE OF SIR
IOHN SPENCER KNIGHT WHO
MARIED KATHERINE, ONE
OF THE DAUGHTERS OF SIR THO.
KITSON, OF HENGRAVE IN THE
CO. OF SVFF. KNIGHT, WHICH
IOHN AND KATH. HAD ISSV SIR
IO: SPENCER KNIGHT. 2. THOMAS
SPENCER OF CLAREDON IN THE
CO. OF WAR. ESQ. 3. SIR WILLIAM
SPENCER OF YARNTON IN THE CO.
OF OXF. KNT. 4. RICHARD SPENCER
OF OFFLEY IN THE CO. OF HAR.
ESQUIRE. 5. EDW. SPENCER WHO
DIED WITHOUT ISSU. 6. MAR-
GARET MARIED TO GILES
ALLINGTON OF HORSETH
IN THE COUN. OF CAMB. ESQUIRE
AFTER MARIED TO EDWARD
ELDRINGTON, ESQUIRE, ELIZABETH
MARIED TO GEORGE LORD
HVNSDON, KATHERINE MARIED
TO SIR THOMAS LEIGH OF
STONLIE IN THE COUNTIE
OF WAR: KNIG. MARIE WIFE
TO SIR EDWARD ASTON OF
TIXALL, IN THE COUNTIE OF
STAFFORDE, KNIGHT, WHICH
DIED WITHOUT ISSU. ANN MARIED
TO WILLIAM, LORD MOVNTEGLE,
WHO HAD NOE ISSVE BY HIM,
AFTER MARIED TO HENRYE
LORD COMPTON, NOW WIFE
OF ROBERT SACKVILLE, ESQUIRE,
SONNE AND HEIRE OF THOMAS

[y] Ex Autog.

LORD

LORD BVCKHVRST HIGH
TREASVRER OF ENGLAND, ALICE
MARIED TO FERDINANDO, EARLE
OF DERBIE, NOW WIFE OF SIR
THO. EGERTON, KNIGHT, LORD
KEPER OF THE GREAT SELE OF
ENGLAND, WHICH SIR IOHN
SPENCER DEPARTED THIS
LIFE THE 8. DAIE OF NOVEMB.
ANNO DOMINI 1586

Thomas Spencer, the ſecond ſon, mentioned in the preceding monumental inſcription, built a fine houſe on his eſtate of Claverdon (or Claredon) and for his hoſpitality was the mirrour of the county [z]. He lies buried in Claverdon church, where there is a ſtately monument erected to his memory. By his wife Mary, daughter of John Cheek, Eſq; he had Alice, his only child and heir, who was married to Sir Thomas Lucy, of Charlcote in Warwickſhire, Knt. The third ſon, Sir William, of Yarnton, was, by his wife Margaret, daughter of Francis Bowyer, Eſq; anceſtor of the Baronets of the ſurname of Spencer, ſeated there. Sir Richard Spencer, of Offley in Hertfordſhire, Knt. fourth ſon, married Helen, daughter and coheir of Sir John Brocket, of Brocket-hall, Knt. by Helen his wife, daughter and coheir of Sir Robert Lytton, of Knetworth-place in Hertfordſhire, Knt. and from this Sir Richard Spencer thoſe of his name, in that county, are deſcended.

Sir John Spencer (eldeſt ſon and heir of Sir John) was [a] knighted by Queen Elizabeth in the year 1588, the memorable year of the Spaniſh invaſion. He died on January 9, 1599, and a fine [b] tomb is likewiſe erected at Brington in memory of him, curiouſly embelliſhed with painting and gilding; the figures of him and his Lady lying in the ſame manner as his father and mother; and over them an arch (curiouſly adorned with roſes) ſupported by eight pillars, viz. two at each corner, four of which are pyramidical, and painted, the other four black marble, and of the Corinthian order. At the head againſt the north wall, is the following inſcription:

THIS IS THE MONUMENT OF SIR IOHN SPENCER
KNIGHT, AND DAME MARIE HIS WIFE, SOLE
DAVGHTER AND HEIRE OF SIR ROBERT CATELIN
KNIGHT, LORD CHEIF IVSTICE OF THE KINGS
BENCH, WHO HAD ISSU ONLY SIR ROBERT
SPENCER KNT. WHO MARIED MARGARET,

[z] Dugdale's Antiq. of Warwickſhire, p. 497, 498. [a] Catal. MS. Milit.
[b] Ex Autog.

ONE

ONE OF THE DAVGHTERS AND COHEIRS OF SIR FRANCIS WILLVGHBY, OF WOLLATON IN THE COUNTIE OF NOTTINGHAM, KNIGHT, WHICH SIR IOHN SPENCER DEPARTED THIS LIFE THE IX DAYE OF IANVARIE 1599.

Sir Robert Spencer, the said Sir John's only son, was [c] Sheriff of Northamptonshire in the 43d of Elizabeth; before which time he had received the honour of knighthood; and, when King James ascended the Throne, was reputed to have by him the most [d] money of any person in the kingdom; which, together with his great estate, noble descent, and many excellent accomplishments, rendered him so conspicuous, that he was promoted by that Prince, before his [e] coronation, by letters patent, bearing date July 21, 1603, to the dignity of a Baron of this realm, by the title of Lord Spencer, of Wormleighton, the ceremony of his [f] creation being performed at Hampton-Court. Soon after which, the learned Camden, writing his Britannia, makes this honourable mention of him, viz. [g] "Althorp, *the seat of the noted family of* Spencer, *Knights, allied to very many houses of great worth and honour, out of which Sir* Robert Spencer, *the 5th Knight in a continued succession, a worthy encourager of virtue and learning, was by his most serene Majesty, King* James, *lately advanced to the honour of Baron* Spencer *of* Wormleighton."

And another [h] author, who wrote of those times, gives this account of him: "Spencer (like the old Roman chosen Dictator "from his farm) made the country a virtuous Court, where his "fields and flocks brought him more calm and happy contentment than the various and mutable dispensations of a Court "can contribute: and when he was called to the Senate, was "more vigilant to keep the people's liberties from being a prey "to the encroaching power of monarchy, than his harmless and "tender lambs from foxes and ravenous creatures."

This Lord Spencer, in 1603, the 1st of James I. (by commission bearing date at Woodstock, on September 18) was appointed Ambassador to present [i] Frederick, Duke of Wirtemberg, with the habit and ensigns of the most noble Order of the Garter. He set out in the beginning of October, anno 1603, accompanied with many persons of quality; and on November 2 following, arriving at the city of Stutgard, was received with the highest respect and honour by the Duke, who had made great preparations for his reception. His Highness sent for his

[c] Fuller's Worthies, præd. [d] Lloyd's Memoirs of the Loyalists, p. 431. [e] Pat. Jac. I. p. 14. [f] Camden's Annals of King James. [g] Britan. in Com. Northamp. [h] Wilson's Life of King James, in History of England, vol. ii. [i] Ashmole's Order of the Garter, p. 411, &c.

three

three ſons, with their tutors, from the caſtle of Tubing (where they followed their ſtudies) to be preſent at the inſtallation; likewiſe ordered the Vice-preſident and twelve aſſiſtants of his ducal conſiſtory, with all the principal and moſt noble perſons of his Court, to attend; appointing an Engliſh Lord, with the Lord Benjamin Buningkſhauſin, one of his Privy-Council, to be principal contrivers, directors, and managers of all things that ſhould belong to the ſetting forth the ſolemnity.

The ſtate and magnificence of this inveſtiture is ſet forth by Mr. Aſhmole; who obſerves, that the Lord Ambaſſador Spencer (who repreſented the Sovereign) and the elect Duke, were ſo richly attired, glittering with gold and jewels, that they attracted the admiration of all the ſpectators.

The Duke omitted nothing that might tend to the ſatisfaction of the Lord Ambaſſador and his train. He ſhewed them the principal places of his dukedom, as Waltebuch, the univerſity of Tubing, &c. entertained them with comedies, muſic, and other diverſions; and on their return to England, he accompanied the Lord Spencer as far as Aſperg, taking leave of him with the greateſt demonſtrations and expreſſions of affection and eſteem. On his arrival in England, he was received, by his Prince, with particular marks of diſtinction, for his noble carriage and behaviour in his embaſſy.

I do not find that he bore any employment at Court, but he conſtantly attended his duty in Parliament, and on all proper occaſions, appeared a loyal ſubject to the King, as well as a good patriot and a maintainer of the liberty of the ſubject. He had excellent parts, which were improved and cultivated by a cloſe application to the ſervice of his country, and knowledge of men and buſineſs, whereby he grew into the eſteem of the greateſt men of that age. His quick apprehenſion and readineſs of thought was very remarkable, as will hereafter appear; and in the debates in Parliament, as few ſpoke better, ſo none had a more favourable attention; on which account he was nominated in moſt committees on public affairs and conferences with the Commons, as appears by the [k] Journals of the Houſe of Lords.

Our hiſtorians inform us, that ſome debates ariſing in the Parliament, A. D. 1621, relating to the King's power and prerogative, this [l] Lord Spencer ſtood up boldly for the public liberty (with the Earls of Oxford, Southampton, Eſſex, and Warwick); and ſpeaking ſomething in the Houſe of the actions of their great anceſtors, Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundel, Earl Marſhal of England, a great ſtickler for the prerogative, diſpleaſed with the arguments uſed, replied, *My Lord, when theſe things were doing, your anceſtors were keeping ſheep* (alluding

[k] Journal Procerum in Bibl. Medii Templi.

[l] Echard's Hiſt. of England, vol. i. p. 955.

to

to the numerous flocks kept by his grandfather): to which the Lord Spencer, with a ſpirit and quickneſs of thought peculiar to him, immediately anſwered, *When my anceſtors were keeping ſheep (as you ſay) your anceſtors were plotting treaſon.* This cauſed ſuch a heat, that Arundel, as the aggreſſor, was ſent to the Tower; but ſoon after acknowledging his fault, and offering to make his ſubmiſſion, he was diſcharged.

In the ſame [m] year, he, with thirty-two other Lords, petitioned the King, "For that many of his ſubjects of the realm of Eng-"land had been honoured with titles and dignities in Scotland "and Ireland, by which all the Nobility of this realm, either "in themſelves, their children, or both, find they are preju-"diced; they therefore pray they may challenge and preſerve "their birthrights, and that no more notice may be taken of "thoſe titles than the law of the land doth; and that they may "be excuſed, if in civil courteſy they give them not the reſpect "or place as to noblemen ſtrangers, ſeeing that they being their "countrymen, born and inheritanced under the ſame laws, "their families and abode among them, have yet procured their "tranſlation into foreign names, only to their injury." But this their petition the King took ill, and [n] reprimanded the Lord Spencer, as being a chief promoter of it.

In the Parliament following, that met at Weſtminſter, on Febr. 19, 1623-4 (21 Jac. I.) he only ſtaid a few days, obtaining [o] leave (on March 1) of the Houſe to be abſent; but in the ſucceeding Parliaments, to the time of his death, he was in moſt committees on public affairs, a conſtant maintainer and promoter of the manufactories, trade, and liberties of the realm, an oppoſer of all arbitrary grants, monopolies, or other indirect practices; and, finally, was ſeaſoned with a juſt tincture of all private and public virtues. He lived a widower thirty years (his Lady dying in childbed) and departing this life on October 25, 1627, was buried in great ſplendor with his anceſtors at Brington, under a noble [p] monument at the head of his grandfather, under a like arch equally adorned, but ſupported by four pillars of the Corinthian order. The figures of him and his Lady are likewiſe in the ſame poſture, he in armour, with a helmet on his head; ſhe in the dreſs of the times, veiled to the knees. At their feet, under the arch, on a black marble tablet, is the following Memorial of his marriage and iſſue, in gold letters:

HERE LYE THE BODIES OF SIR ROBERT SPENCER KNIGHT
BARON SPENCER

[m] Wilſon's Life of King James, aforeſaid. [n] Camden's Annals, in Hiſt. of England, p. 658. [o] Journal Procer, præd. [p] Ex Autog.

OF

OF WORMLEIGHTON & MARGARET HIS WIFE ONE OF THE DAUGHTERS & COHEIRES OF SIR FRANCIS WILLOWGHBY OF WOLLATON IN THE CO: OF NOTTING: KNIGHT WHO HAD ISSUE 4 SONNES & 3 DAUGHTERS viz. 1. IOHN SPENCER ESQUIRE WHO DIED AT BLOIS IN FRANCE WITHOUT ISSUE. 2. WILLIAM LORD SPENCER WHO MARRIED THE LADY PENELOPE ELDEST DAVGHTER OF HENRY EARL OF SOVTHAMPT. 3. RICHARD SPENCER ESQUIRE. 4. EDWARD SPENCER OF BOSTON IN THE CO: OF MIDD: KNIGHT (WHO MARRIED DAME MARY, [q] WIDOW OF SIR WILLIAM READE OF AVSTERLEY IN THE SAME CO: KNIGHT) 1. MARY MARRIED TO SIR RICHARD ANDERSON OF PENLY IN THE CO: OF HARTFORD, KNIGHT. 2. ELIZABETH MARRIED TO SIR GEORGE FANE, OF BVSTON IN THE CO: OF KENT, KNT. WHO DIED WITHOVT ISSVE. 3. MARGARET WHO DIED VNMARRIED. WHICH ROBERT LORD SPENCER DEPARTED THIS LIFE THE 25 OF OCTOBER. ANNO DOMINI 1627, AND MARGARET HIS WIFE THE 17. OF AVGVST. 1597. ROBERT LORD SPENCER BVILT THIS MONVMENT IN HIS LIFE, ANNO 1599.

In the foregoing inſcription, notice is taken of the deaths or marriages of all the children of Robert Lord Spencer, except Richard, the third ſon, who was of Orpington in Kent, and married Mary, daughter to Sir Edwyn Sandys, of Northbourn-place in the ſaid county, Knt. Being a ſteady adherent to Charles I. he attended his Majeſty at Oxford, and dying there, on February 28, 1645, was interred, with his wife, and two ſons, Robert and John, in the chapel of Merton-college.

William Lord Spencer, aforeſaid, was Knight of the [r] Bath, at the creation of Prince Charles, on November 4, 1616; and was elected, all the while he was a Commoner, one of the Knights of the [s] Shire for the county of Northampton, in three ſeveral Parliaments in the reign of James I. and in two others called in the firſt year of the reign of Charles I. He inherited his father's excellent conduct, as well as his honour and eſtate,

[q] She was daughter of John Goldſmith, of Welby in Suffolk. [r] Catal. Nobil. &c, per T. W. London, 8°. 1642. [s] MS. B. Willis, præd.

as

as we are fully informed from the inſcription on his monument; which ſets forth, that he was adorned with all virtues, a tender huſband, loving father, faithful friend, a ſincere worſhipper of God, a moſt devoted ſubject to his King, and ſervant to his country. He died in the forty-fifth year of his age, on December 19, and was buried at [t] Brington, the 27th of the ſame month, 1636. Penelope, his Lady (eldeſt daughter of Henry Earl of Southampton) whom he left with child, remained a widow one and thirty years (having ſepulture at Brington, on July 16, 1667) leaving a very ſhining character, for her conſtancy of mind, prudent conduct, unaffected piety, and love to her deceaſed Lord; for whom ſhe erected a noble and ſtately [u] monument of black and white marble, now remaining at Brington, the figures of a Baron and Baroneſs, in their robes of ſtate, lying on a black marble tomb, their hands lifted up in a praying poſture; and over them an arch of black and white marble, ſupported by eight black marble pillars of the Corinthian order, with white capitols. And the following inſcriptions are on four ſeveral black marble tables, viz. at the eaſt end:

[t] Reg. Eccl. paroch. Brington.

[u] Ex Autog.

POSTERITATI

POSTERITATI SACRVM.

CLARISSIMO ET NOBILISSIMO HEROI GVLIELMO SPENCER, PRÆNOBILIS ORDINIS BALNEI MILITI BARONI DE WORMLEIGHTON.
FILIO ET HÆREDI ROBERTI SPENCER, MILITIS BARONIS DE WORMLEIGHTON.

VIRO VIRTVTIBUS ORNATISSIMO, SINCERISSIMO DEI CVLTORI,
MARITO CHARISSIMO
PATRI AMANTISSIMO
AMICO FIDELISSIMO DEVOTISSIMO { REGIS SVBDITO / PATRIÆQ. SERVO.

QVI SEX FILIOS, { HENRICVM MODO BARONEM DE WORMLEIGHTON / ROBERTVM / GVLIELMVM / RICHARDVM / THOMAM ET / IOHANNEM } ET SEPTEM FILIAS, { ELIZABETHAM, NVPTAM IOHANNI CRAVEN ARMIGO, / MARIAM OLIM DEFVNCTAM / ANNAM / KATHERINAM / ALICIAM / RACHAELEM POSTHVMAM NVPER DEFVNCTAM.

DE LECTISSIMA CONSORTE SVA DOMINA PENELOPE SPENCER FILIA NATV MAXIMA HONORATISSIMI DOMINI HENRICI COMITIS SOVTHAMTONIÆ GENVIT IPSAMQVE PREGNANTEM ET LVCTV ET FILIA RELIQVIT DECIMO NONO DIE DECEMBRIS, REDEMPTORIS SVI. 1636°.
ANNO ÆTATIS SVÆ. 45°.
CONIVGII SVI. 22°.
PIE IN IESV SVO OBDORMIVIT

HOC DOLORIS SVI AMORISQVE ÆTERNVM MONVMENTVM VXOR LVGENS, P. & D. NIHIL MAGIS IN VOTIS HABENS QVAM VT CVM MARITO SVO DELECTISSIMO IN HOC DORMITORIO QVIESCAT & AD FÆLICEM ÆTERNITATEM CVM EODEM VNA REQUIESCAT.

At the weſt end,

DEPOSITUM CUSTODIT AD TEMPUS
STATUTUM REDDETQUE INTEGRUM.

On the north ſide,

TUBA PRORUMPENS IN SILENTIUM SEPULCHRI
OSSA GERMINANTIA RESUSCITABIT AD
GLORIAM.

On the ſouth ſide,

EPICÆDIUM.

Junxit Amor teneros Virtute & Sanguine Charos,
Crevit Amor junctis tempore, prole, Deo.
Idem velle fuit, nolle idem; animuſque duobus
Unus erat Vivis, unaque vera fides.
Mors tantum potuit vivos ſuperare Sepulchro
Non poterit tandem, junget & Urna Dies.

Of his ſons, Henry ſucceeded in the honour and eſtate.

Robert, ſecond ſon [x], baptized on February 2, 1628, was created a Peer of Scotland, by the title of Viſcount Teviot, A. D. 1686, by King James VII. and having married Jane, daughter of Sir Thomas Spencer, of Yarnton in com. Oxon. Bart. died without iſſue.

William, third ſon, was ſeated at Aſhton-hall, in com. Lancaſter, and died without iſſue.

Richard, fourth ſon, baptized on October 3, 1631, departing this life unmarried, was buried at Brington, on Febr. 11, 1653.

Thomas and John died young, or unmarried.

Of the daughters, Elizabeth, born on February 16, 1617, was married at Brington, on December 4, 1634, to John Craven, Eſq; who was created Lord Craven, of Ryton in com. Salop; and after his deceaſe, to Henry Howard, third ſon to Thomas Earl of Berkſhire; and laſtly, to William Lord Crofts.

Mary was baptized on February 20, 1621, and died on July 12, 1622.

Anne was married to Sir Robert Townſhend, ſecond ſon of Sir Roger Townſhend, anceſtor to the Viſcount Townſhend.

Katherine was baptized on October 17, 1624, and died unmarried.

Alice, baptized on December 29, 1625, was wedded to Henry Moor, Earl of Drogheda, of the kingdom of Ireland.

Margaret, baptized on July 19, 1627, was the third wife of Anthony-Aſhley Cooper, firſt Earl of Shafteſbury.

Rachel, born after her father's deceaſe, was baptized on July 19, 1627, and died young.

[x] Reg. Eccl. Brington, præd.

A curious antiquary hath evidently made out, that the ſaid Lady Penelope (their mother) eldeſt daughter of Henry Wriotheſly, Earl of Southampton, was in ſundry ways extracted from the Kings of England, Scotland, France, Hieruſalem, Spain, Portugal, and Navarre.

Henry Lord Spencer, the eldeſt ſon of the ſaid Lady Penelope, and William Lord Spencer, was born [y] at Althorp, and chriſtened on November 23, 1620. He had from his youth a [z] forward inclination to learning, and being under an auſtere tutor, the quickneſs of his apprehenſion, and ſolid judgment, far above his years, led him to the exerciſe of all generous recreations. He had univerſity education [a] at Magdalen-college, in Oxford, before he was ſixteen years of age; and in 1636, King Charles and his Queen honouring the Univerſity with their preſence, it was his Majeſty's pleaſure there ſhould be creations in ſeveral faculties. Whereupon the Secretary of State having delivered, to the Chancellor, the names of thoſe nominated by his Majeſty, a convocation was celebrated on Auguſt 31, and the degree of Maſter of Arts was conferred on the Lord Spencer.

At nineteen years of age, the Earl of Southampton, his guardian, and the Lady Penelope, his mother, contracted with Robert Earl of Leiceſter, [b] for the marriage of his daughter, the Lady Dorothy Sidney, with his Lordſhip, who being in his minority, he with his mother, the Lady Penelope, petitioned his Majeſty, to give ſpecial directions for his letters of privy-ſeal, ordering his Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, to admit the Lord Spencer, by his guardian, to ſuffer a common recovery of his manors and lands, that he might be enabled to ſettle a jointure on the ſaid Lady Dorothy [c]. And the King was graciouſly pleaſed to give directions accordingly.

The marriage was conſummated at Penſhurſt, on July 20, 1639, as Robert Earl of Leiceſter writes in his journal (now remaining there) and that in Auguſt following, he returned to his embaſſy in France, and his wife followed him thither, with his new ſon-in-law, and his daughter, his wife, who arrived, before Michaelmas, at his houſe in Paris: whence they all returned to England in October, 1641.

She was a Lady of uncommon beauty, virtue and merit, with all accompliſhments; and, under the name of Sachariſſa, is highly celebrated by the famous Waller in his poems. The Lord, her huſband, had alſo an excellent underſtanding, joined to a fine perſon, and was diſtinguiſhed for his early judgment of men and affairs; and an entire love was between them, mani-

[y] Ex Regiſt. Eccl. de Brington, in Com. Northamp. [z] Lloyd's Memoirs of the Loyaliſts, p. 431. [a] Wood's Faſti Oxonienſes, vol. i. p. 886, 887. [b] Ex Autog. apud Penſhurſt. [c] Ibid.

feſted

ſeſted by letters in the evidence room at Penſhurſt, the reſidence of the Earls of Leiceſter.

He took his ſeat in the Houſe of Peers, A. D. 1641, immediately after his return from beyond the ſeas, the Parliament then ſitting; and his eminent abilities made him courted by both parties to be in their intereſts. But his natural love of the liberties of his country, which his anceſtors had aſſerted, ſoon determined him to fall in with them, who were detecting the indirect practices of thoſe Counſellors that had violated the laws, wherein he ſo far concurred, as to be [d] nominated by them their Lord Lieutenant for the county of Northampton. Yet he had an unqueſtioned duty to the Crown, and reverence for the Government, both in church and ſtate; for when he ſaw they were throwing off all obligations to conſcience, and the laws of the land, he couragiouſly declared in Parliament [e] (the laſt words he ſpoke there) *That they might have been ſatisfied long before, if they had not aſked things that deny themſelves; and if ſome men had not ſhuffled demands into their propoſitions, on purpoſe that they might have no ſatisfaction.*

Being determined to follow his Majeſty, and purſue his meaſures, as far as he found them conſiſtent with the rights of his country, he, though very young, prudently made a diſpoſition of his eſtate, before he ſet out for his ſeat of Althorp with his Lady and family, having then a ſon and a daughter, Robert and Dorothy. On June 30, 1642, 18 Car. I. according to a power given him, for leading the uſes of divers common recoveries, ſuffered before his marriage [f], he demiſes to Thomas Earl of Southampton, Robert Earl of Leiceſter, Philip Lord Liſle, Algernon Sidney, Richard Spencer, Eſquires, and Sir Edward Spencer, the manors of Wormleighton, Priors-Marſton, Priors-Hardwick, and Fenny-Compton, with all his lands, tenements, &c. in Warwickſhire: the manors of Althorp, Great Brington, Stonton, Little Brington, Newbottle, Grove alias Byefield, Over-Bodington, and Nether-Bodington, in the county of Northampton; and all his lands, tenements, &c. there, or elſewhere, in the ſaid county (except both the jointures of his mother and his own Lady, and all leaſes for lives) to hold from the firſt of May, for the term of twenty-one years: yielding and paying to him, the ſaid Henry Lord Spencer, and to ſuch perſon or perſons, to whom the immediate reverſion, or remainder of the premiſes reſpectively ſhall belong, the yearly rent of twelve hundred pounds: upon truſt to employ the profits above that rent, in ſuch manner, as he, the ſaid Lord Spencer, by writing, ſubſcribed in the preſence of two or more witneſſes, or by his will, ſhall appoint.

[d] Clarendon's Hiſt. of the Rebellion, 8°. vol. i. p. 652. [e] Lloyd's Memoirs, p. 431. [f] Ex Evident. apud Penhurſt.

And purſuant thereto, his Lordſhip, by writing [g], bearing date July 11, 1642, under his hand, ſubſcribed, in the preſence of Algernon Sidney, Dr. Henry Hammond, and two other witneſſes, reciting that he had demiſed to his ſaid truſtees, before-mentioned, the ſaid manors, &c. upon truſt, &c. Now he, the ſaid Henry Lord Spencer, deſires and declares, that the ſaid Thomas Earl of Southampton, Robert Earl of Leiceſter, and other his ſaid truſtees, ſhall permit him, or his aſſigns, to take the profits of the ſaid manors, lands, &c. during his life, and if he dies before the ſaid term be expired, that then his truſtees ſhall, out of the profits of the ſaid leaſe made to them, raiſe the ſum of 1,000 l. for a legacy, for the Lady Lucy Sidney; and the ſum of 3,000 l. for a legacy to his dear wife, Dorothy Lady Spencer; and the ſum of 10,000 l. for the portion of his daughter, Dorothy Spencer; to be paid on the day of her marriage, or in caſe ſhe continue unmarried till the age of twenty-one years, that then ſhe receive the full intereſt of her portion; and from the age of ſeventeen, till twenty-one, receive three hundred pounds yearly for her maintenance; and till the age of ſeventeen, fitting maintenance. Alſo that the ſum of ſeven thouſand pounds be raiſed for the portion of the child his Lady is big of, to be paid (if it be a ſon) at the age of eighteen years; if it be a daughter, at the day of her marriage, and if unmarried till twenty-one, then to receive the full intereſt of her portion, &c. as before recited. And if they die unmarried, then the ſaid portions to be divided in three parts, one in their power to diſpoſe of, and the other two to be equally divided amongſt his other children, his ſon Robert Spencer, and his daughter or ſon that ſhall be living. And after the ſaid legacies, &c. raiſed as aforeſaid, that then the ſaid Thomas Earl of Southampton, and his ſaid truſtees, ſhall permit his right heir to take the profits of the premiſes, during the reſt of the ſaid term. In witneſs, &c.

Lloyd, who has given ſome confuſed account of his Lordſhip, relates [h], *That he brought* 15,000 *l. and* 1,200 *men to his Majeſty's relief, and to the Earl of Northampton his countryman's aſſiſtance, adding his council, and perſonal ſervice.* It is certain he followed his Majeſty to York, and from thence to Nottingham, where his ſtandard was erected, on Auguſt 22, 1642. From thence he marched with the King to Shrewſbury [i], where he wrote the following moſt remarkable letter, the greateſt part of it in cypher, and decyphered by his Lady, bearing date at Shrewſbury, September 21, 1642.

[g] Ex Evident. præd.

[h] Memoirs, p. 432.

[i] Sidney's Memorials, vol. ii. p. 657.

"My

" My Deareſt Hart,

" The King's condition is much improved of late; his force " increaſeth daily, which increaſeth the inſolency of the Papiſts. " How much I am unſatisfied with the proceedings here, I " have at large expreſſed in ſeveral letters. Neither is there " wanting handſome occaſion to retire, were it not for grin- " ning honour. For let occaſion be never ſo handſome, unleſs " a man reſolved to fight on the Parliament's ſide, which, for " my part, I had rather be hanged, for it will be ſaid a man is " afraid to fight. If there could be an expedient found to ſalve " the punctilio of honour, I would not continue here an hour. " The diſcontent that I, and many other honeſt men, receive " daily, is beyond expreſſion. People are much divided; the " King is of late very much averſe to peace, by the perſua- " ſions of 202 and 111. It is likewiſe conceived, that the King " has taken a reſolution not to do any thing in that way before " the Queen comes; for people adviſing the King to agree " with the Parliament, was the occaſion of the Queen's return. " Till that time no advice will be received; nevertheleſs, the " honeſt men will take all occaſions to procure an accommoda- " tion; which the King, when he ſent the late meſſages, did " heartily deſire; and would ſtill make offers, but for 202 and " 111, and the expectation of the Queen, and fear of the " Papiſts, who threaten people of 342. I fear the Papiſts threats " have a much greater influence upon 83 [King] than upon " 343. What the King's intentions are to thoſe that I con- " verſe with, are altogether unknown; ſome ſay, he will ha- " zard a battle very quickly; others ſay, he thinks of winter- " ing; which, as it is ſuſpected, ſo if it were generally believed, " 117 [Sunderland] and many others, would make no ſcruple " to retire; for I think it is as far from gallant, either to ſtarve " with the King, or do worſe, as to avoid fighting. It is ſaid " the King goes on Friday towards Cheſter, for a day or two, " leaving his forces here; which are 6,000 foot, 1,500 dra- " goons, and above 2,000 horſe. There are 4,000 foot more " raiſed, they ſay, 2,000 by my Lord Strange, 1,000 by Sir " Thomas Saliſbury, and 1,200 by Sir Edward Stradling; all " which will be here within a few days. This is a lightening " before death.

" I am yours, &c.

" SPENCER."

The Earl of Clarendon relates[k], that ſome carriage horſes and waggons, which were prepared for the ſervice in Ireland, and lay at Cheſter to be tranſported with the Earl of Leiceſter,

[k] Hiſt. of Rebell. 8°. vol. iii. p. 35, 36.

Lieutenant of that kingdom, were brought to Shrewſbury by his Majeſty's order, which increaſed the neceſſity the King was in for money; and that the Papiſts were treated with for a ſupply, which they complied with: whereupon the King with his army [l] marched from Shrewſbury, on October 12, and from thence to Birmingham, where the Lord Spencer wrote another letter to his Lady, on the 14th, and ſent it by a ſervant to her at Althorp; [m] acquainting her, "that he believed he ſhould "not have time nor opportunity to ſend more than another "letter to her, before he came to London, which would be "as ſoon as ſo great an army could march ſo many miles. "And that not only 243 [Papiſts] but moſt men believed, the "King's army would make its way there, though Lord Eſſex's "army was five times as many as they were. And that the "King was ſo awed by 243, that he dares not propoſe peace, "or accept it. But if that be offered by the Parliament, he "and others would ſpeak their opinion, though concerning the "late treaty, they were threatened by 243. That he had above "an hour's diſcourſe with the King about the treaty, which "he would be glad ſhe knew, but it was too long with cy-"phers, and unfit without; elſe he had no commerce with his "Majeſty, ſince they came from Nottingham: thanks her for "her care in ſupplying him with money; and that he gave ſix "ſcore pounds for a horſe; an argument he might want the "ſooner, but if he had been in danger of that, he would have "ventured his body upon a worſe horſe. If he durſt write "freely of all things, ſhe ſhould have more from him, for he "could truly ſay of his writing in characters, as a great man "of this kingdom ſaid of his ſpeaking; *that he never knew* "*what he meant to ſpeak, before he ſpake, nor what he had ſaid,* "*after he had ſpoken, &c.*"

The King, by quick marches, having ſeldom reſted a day in any place [n], came on Saturday, October 22, to Edgecote, a village in Northamptonſhire, within four miles of Banbury; and the next day was the battle of Kineton, or Edgehill, from the King's rendezvous on it, ſo famous in hiſtory; and the Lord Spencer, with other Noblemen, as volunteers, charged in the King's guards of horſe. Lord Clarendon has obſerved [o], "At the entrance into the field, the King's guards of horſe, ei-"ther provoked by ſome unſeaſonable ſcoffs among the ſoldiery, "or out of deſire of glory, or both, beſought the King, *That* "*he would give them leave to be abſent that day from his perſon,* "*and to charge in the front among the horſe, the which his Ma-*"*jeſty conſented to.* They alſo deſired Prince Rupert, *to give* "*them that honour which belonged to them*; who accordingly af-

[l] Hiſt. of Rebell. 8°. vol. iii. p. 41. [m] Sidney's State Papers, ut antea, p. 667, 668. [n] Clarendon, p. 44. [o] Ibid. p. 44, 45.

"ſigned

" ſigned them the firſt place; which (as the noble author recites) " may well be reckoned among the overſights of that day; " though they performed their parts with admirable courage [p]. " For Prince Rupert having routed the enemy's horſe, purſued " them ſo far, that whilſt moſt thought the victory unqueſtion- " able, the King was in danger of the ſame fate, which " Henry the IIId had at the battle of Lewes againſt his Ba- " rons; when his ſon, the Prince, having routed the horſe, " followed the chaſe ſo far, that before his return to the field, " his father was taken priſoner."

Whitelock, in his account of that battle, given by the Parliament Generals, recites [q], " The greateſt body of the King's " horſe was in his right wing, commanded by Prince Rupert, " who furiouſly charged the left wing of the Parliament's horſe, " whom he routed, and purſued to Kineton with great ſlaugh- " ter. Both armies, horſe and foot, performed their parts with " great valour and bravery, till night parted the fight." On both ſides were loſt between 5,000 and 6,000 men; but Lord Clarendon relates, " That on Wedneſday morning, when the " King drew his army to a rendezvous, he found his numbers " greater than he expected; for very many of the common ſol- " diers, who out of cold and hunger had been miſſing, then joined " him, ſo that there were not loſt above three hundred men."

The Lord Spencer marched with his Majeſty to Oxford, and though he had not, or would accept of, any command in the army; yet attending on the King's perſon, without any other obligation than honour, he always engaged with the moſt forward, in every action, or ſiege, where his Majeſty was preſent. His Lordſhip was alſo intimate with Prince Rupert, and was with him at the taking of Briſtol; having a little before, for his approved loyalty, and other his great merits, been [r] advanced to the degree and dignity of an Earl, by the title of Earl of Sunderland, by letters patent, bearing date at Oxford, on June 8, 1643; at which time of his creation [s], he was ſaid to be allied to all the Nobility then at Court, except Duke Hamilton.

By a letter to his Lady, dated at Oxford, on Auguſt 9, at ſunſet, 1643, his Lordſhip informs her, " That the King's ſud- " den reſolution of going before Glouceſter, had extremely diſ- " appointed him, for when he went from Briſtol, on Monday " morning, he reſolved to be at Oxford the 9th of Auguſt; " upon which his Lordſhip, and two or three Gentlemen, a- " greed to meet his Majeſty there, and to take Bath in their " way, which they did accordingly; whereby they miſt his " Majeſty, being gone that morning towards Glouceſter, and " would be before it the next morning, where he intended to

[p] Clarendon, p. 48. [q] Memorials, p. 61. [r] Pat. 19 Car. I.
[s] Lloyd's Memoirs, præd.

" wait on him. That the King's going to Glouceſter was, " in the opinion of moſt, very unadviſed. The Queen unſatis- " fied in it; ſo is all the people of quality. You will receive " two other letters from me by this meſſenger, one of which I " wrote before my going hence, the other at Briſtol, &c."

In another Letter to her Ladyſhip, dated from the camp before Glouceſter, on Auguſt 25, he thus expreſſes himſelf:

" My deareſt Hart,

" Juſt as I was going out of the trenches, on Wedneſday, " I received your letter of the 20th of this inſtant, which gave " me ſo much ſatisfaction, that it put all the inconveniencies " of this ſiege out of my thoughts. At that inſtant, if I had " followed my own inclinations, I had returned an anſwer to " yours; writing to you, and hearing from you, being the " moſt pleaſant entertainment I am capable of receiving in " any place; but eſpecially here, where, but when I am in " the trenches (which place is ſeldom without my company) " I am more ſolitary than ever I was in my life; this country " being very full of private cottages, in one of which I am " quartered, where my Lord Falkland did me the honour to " ſup. Mr. Chillingworth [t] is here with me at Sir Nicholas " Selwin's, who has been this week at Oxford; our little en- " gineer comes not hither ſo much out of kindneſs to me, as " for his own conveniency; my quarters being three or four " miles nearer the leaguer than my Lord of Devonſhire's, with " whom he ſtaid till he was commanded to make ready his " engines, with all poſſible ſpeed. It is not to be imagined, " with what diligence and ſatisfaction (I mean to myſelf) he " executes this command; for my part I think it not unwiſely " done of him to change his profeſſion; and I think you would " have been of my mind, if you had heard him diſpute laſt " night with my Lord Falkland, in favour of Socinianiſm; " wherein he was, by his Lordſhip, ſo often confounded, that " really it appears, he has much more reaſon for his engines, " than for his opinions. I put off my writing till laſt night, " out of hopes that ſomewhat here would have happened " worthy of your knowledge; and you ſee what good com- " pany made me defer it laſt night, at which time I was newly " come from our leaguer, whither I thought to have gone this " morning; but I have got ſuch a kind of ſmall bile, in ſuch " a place, that I cannot ride without pain, ſo I cannot with " modeſty make a more particular deſcription. I find that we " had only an alarum, which they gave to hinder our working, " not daring to ſally any more, being ſo well beaten the laſt " time: our gallery will be finiſht within this day or two, and

[t] A famous divine.

" then

" then we ſhall ſoon diſpatch our mine, and them with it. " Many of the ſoldiers are confident, that we ſhall have the " town within this four days, which I extremely long for; not " that I am weary of the ſiege, for really, though we ſuffer " many inconveniencies, yet I am not ill pleaſed with this va- " riety, ſo directly oppoſite, as the being in the trenches with " ſo much good company, together with the noiſe and tinta- " marre of guns and drums, with the horrid ſpectacles, and " hideous cries, of dead and hurt men, is to the ſolitarineſs of " my quarter: which often brings into my thoughts, how in- " finitely more happy I ſhould eſteem myſelf, quietly to enjoy " your company at Althorp, than to be troubled with the " noiſes, and engaged in the factions of the Court, which I " ſhall ever endeavour to avoid, &c. When we were at Briſtol, " Sir William was there, but I hear he is now lately gone to " Hereford, for which I envy him, and all others, that can go " to their own houſes; but I hope ere long you will let me " have your company, the thought of which is to me moſt " pleaſant, and paſſionately deſired by yours, &c."

In another letter from Oxford, September 16, 1643, but four days before the fight at Newberry, where he was ſlain, his Lordſhip gives his Lady this account:

" Since I wrote to you laſt from Sulbey, we had ſome hopes " of fighting with my Lord of Eſſex's army, having certain in- " telligence of his being in a field convenient enough, called " Ripple Field, towards which we advanced with all poſſible " ſpeed; upon which he retired with his army to Tewxbury, " where, by the advantage of the bridge, he was able to make " good his quarter with 500 men againſt 20,000. So that " though we were ſo near as to have been with him in two " hours, his quarter being ſo ſtrong, it was reſolved on Thurſ- " day, as he would not fight with us, we ſhould endeavour to " force him to it, by cutting off his proviſions; for which pur- " poſe the beſt way was, for the body of our army to go back " to Eveſham, and for our horſe to diſtreſs him. Upon which, " I and others reſolved to come for a few days to Oxford, " where we arrived late on Thurſday night, there being no " probability of fighting very ſuddenly. As ſoon as I came, " I went to your father's, where I found Alibone, with whoſe " face I was better pleaſed, than with any of the Ladies here. " This expreſſion is ſo much a bolder thing than charging " Lord Eſſex, that ſhould this letter miſcarry, and come to " the knowledge of our Dames, I ſhould, by having my eyes " ſcratcht out, be cleared from coming away from the army " for fear; where, if I had ſtayed, its odds if I had loſt more " than one. Laſt night very good news came to Court, that " we yeſterday morning fell upon a horſe quarter of the ene-

" my's,

" my's, and cut off a regiment. And my Lord of Newcaſtle " hath killed and taken priſoners two whole regiments of horſe " and foot, that iſſued out of Hull; which place he hath hopes " to take. By the ſame meſſenger laſt night, the King ſent the " Queen word, he would come hither on Monday or Tueſday; " upon one of which days, if he alter his reſolutions, I ſhall " not fail to return to the army. I am afraid our ſetting down " before Glouceſter, has hindered us from making an end of " the war this year, which nothing could keep us from doing " if we had a month's more time, which we loſt there, for we " never were in a more proſperous condition: and yet the di- " viſions do not at all diminiſh, eſpecially betwen 142 and 412, " by which we receive prejudice. I never ſaw 83 [King] uſe " any body with more neglect than 100 [Earl of Holland] " and we ſay he is not uſed much better by the Queen. Mrs. " Jermyn met my Lord Jermyn (who, notwithſtanding your in- " telligence, is but a Baron) with whom I came to Woodſtock, " who told me ſhe would write to you, which I hope ſhe hath " done; for ſince I came here, I have ſeen no creature but " your father and my uncle; ſo that I am altogether ignorant " of the intrigues of this place. Before I go hence I hope " ſome body will come from you; however, before I go hence, " I ſhall have a letter for you. I take the beſt care I can about " my economical affairs. I am afraid I ſhall not be able to get " you a better houſe, every body thinking me mad for ſpeak- " ing about it. Pray bleſs Poppet for me[u], and tell her I " would have writ to her, but that, upon mature deliberation, " I found it uncivil to return an anſwer to a Lady, in another " character than her own, which I am not yet learned enough " to do. I cannot, by walking about my chamber, call any " thing more to mind to ſet down here; and really I have " made you no ſmall compliment in writing thus much, for " I have ſo great a cold, that I do nothing but ſneeze, and my " eyes do nothing but water, all the while I am in this poſture " of holding down my head. I beſeech you preſent his ſervice " to my Lady, who is moſt paſſionately and perfectly

Yours,

Oxford, September the 16th, 1643. SUNDERLAND.

I have inſerted the aforeſaid letters, as they ſet forth ſome particulars of thoſe times not ſo well known; and as they ſhew his Lordſhip was a perſon of obſervation and addreſs, as alſo a very affectionate and tender Huſband. And his ſentiments were ſo juſt, that the Earl of Clarendon, Whitelock, and others, agree with his Lordſhip, that the undertaking of the ſiege of

[u] His daughter, after Marchioneſs of Halifax.

Glouceſter

Glouceſter was the ruin of the King's army, which might have marched to London without oppoſition.

The march of the Earl of Eſſex, for the relief of Glouceſter, and the means that contributed thereto, are at large related by the Earl of Clarendon, who, throughout his hiſtory, is not particular in reciting the days of many remarkable actions. But [x] Whitelock tells us, that on Sunday and Monday, the 3d and 4th of September, the King drew off his carriages, and removed the ſiege. His Majeſty, on September 5, went over Severn towards Briſtol; and Lord Eſſex the day following entered Glouceſter. It is needleſs to recount the movements of both armies, till the battle of Newberry, which fell [y] out on September 20, and laſted from about ſix in the morning, till ten or eleven at night. It is obſerved by the ſame author, who had his intelligence from the account ſent by the Earl of Eſſex [z], *That the parliament ſoldiers had the pillage of the dead bodies, and that both parties fought with great manhood and animoſity, eſpecially the King's horſe, who yet were worſted, and the Earls of Sunderland, and of Carnarvon, who commanded part of them, were ſlain in the fight.* The Earl of Clarendon [a] gives this account: *The King's horſe, with a kind of contempt of the enemy, charged with wonderful boldneſs, upon all grounds of inequality, and were ſo far too hard for the troops of the other ſide, that they routed them in moſt places, till they had left the greateſt part of their foot without any guard at all of horſe. But then the foot behaved themſelves admirably on the enemies part, and gave their ſcattered horſe time to rally, and were ready to aſſiſt and ſecure them on all occaſions.* "Here fell (ſays the [b] noble author) the "Earl of Sunderland, a Lord of great fortune, tender years "(being not above three and twenty years of age) and an early "judgment; who, having no command in the army, attend-"ed upon the King's perſon, under the obligation of honour; "and putting himſelf that day in the King's troop a volunteer, "before they came to charge, was taken away by a cannon "bullet:" which however, as Lloyd relates [c], did not wholly take his life away; *but through the chinks of a wounded body, expreſſed thoſe holy thoughts, that went as harbingers of his ſoul to Heaven.*

On September 28, 1643 [d], a black box and a deſk, of the Earl of Sunderland's, were opened at the Earl of Leiceſter's lodgings, in Queen's college in Oxford, in the preſence of the Earl of Leiceſter, Mr. John Harvey, Mr. William Aiſbury, Dr. Henry Hammond, Mr. Crook, and Mr. Smyth, and two of Lord Sunderland's chief ſervants, Wingfield Catlin, and

[x] Memorials, p. 69, 8°. vol. iii. p. 347. [y] Ibid. p. 70. [z] Ibid. [a] Hiſt. of Rebell. [b] Ibid. p. 349. [c] Memoirs of Loyaliſts, p. 432. [d] Ex Autog. apud Penſhurſt.

Hugh

Hugh Pennant. At which time Hugh Pennant had delivered to him four pounds, to redeem the Earl's watch, taken from him after his death in battle.

Robert Earl of Leiceſter, his Lordſhip's father-in-law, bemoans his death, in a very remarkable letter, he wrote to his daughter, dated at Oxford, on October 10, 1643, and publiſhed among the *Sidney Memorials*, vol. ii. p. 271, 272. He therein tells her Ladyſhip, "I know it is to no purpoſe to adviſe you not to grieve, that is not my intention; for ſuch a loſs as yours, cannot be received indifferently, by a nature ſo tender, and ſo ſenſible as yours; but though your affection to him whom you loved ſo dearly, and your reaſon in valuing his merit (neither of which you could do too much) did expoſe you to the danger of that ſorrow which now oppreſſeth you; yet if you conſult with that affection, and with reaſon, you will ſee cauſe to moderate that ſorrow; for your affection to that worthy perſon may tell you, that even to it you cannot juſtify yourſelf, if you lament his being raiſed to a degree of happineſs, far beyond any that he could enjoy upon the earth, &c. and your reaſon will aſſure you, that beſides the vanity of bemoaning that which hath no remedy, you offend him whom you loved, if you hurt that perſon whom he loved; remember how apprehenſive he was of your dangers, and how ſorry for any thing that troubled you, &c. I know you lived happily, and ſo as no body but yourſelf could meaſure the contentment of it. I rejoiced at it, and did thank God for making me one of the means to procure it for you, &c."

Lloyd gives this further account [e], that "he was virtuous, becauſe it became him; was above vice, as well as without it; a good patriot, promoting trade, manufactures, and the privileges of his country; a good neighbour, beloved of all; a diſcreet landlord, a noble houſekeeper; a friend to the learned; and an exemplary maſter of a family." From the amiable, and deſerved character, ſo juſtly attributed to his Lordſhip, it may be reckoned, conſidering the few years he lived, that his death was a great loſs to his country.

He left his Lady great with child, who was delivered of a daughter, named Penelope [f], but it died ſoon after its birth. I have before mentioned, that he had a ſon Robert, and a daughter Dorothy, on whom he ſettled 10,000 l. on her marriage. She was, in 1656, married to Sir George Savile, Baronet, afterwards created Marquis of Haliſax. He [g], with the Lady Dorothy, his wife, gave a general releaſe, dated on January 2, 1656-7, to Robert Earl of Leiceſter, Dorothy Counteſs Dowager of Sunderland, and other truſtees, for the ſaid 10,000 l. Which Do-

[e] Memoirs, ut antea. [f] Ex Scrip. apud Penſhurſt. [g] Ibid.

rothy

rothy Counteſs of Sunderland lived to a very great age, and was buried by her Lord at Brington, on February 25, 1683-4. She was but twenty-three years of age [h], when ſhe had the hard fortune to loſe her beloved Lord, and entertained no thoughts of marriage for a conſiderable time, living retired, a rare example of all Chriſtian virtues; her houſe (as Lloyd [i] obſerves) being a ſanctuary to the loyal ſufferers, and learned clergymen, till finding the heavy load of houſe-keeping too troubleſome; ſhe thereupon went to her father at Penſhurſt, and with his conſent took to her a ſecond huſband [k], on July 8, 1652, Robert Smythe, of Sutton at Hone and Bounds in Kent, Eſq; ſon and heir of Sir John Smythe, Knt. (by Iſabella, his wife, daughter of Robert Rich, firſt Earl of Warwick) ſon and heir of Sir Thomas Smythe, uncle of Thomas Smythe, created Lord Viſcount Strangford, who had to wife Barbara, daughter of Robert Sidney, the firſt Earl of Leiceſter. The Counteſs of Sunderland alſo ſurvived her ſecond huſband, by whom ſhe had iſſue, Robert Smythe, Eſq; Governor of Dover-caſtle in the reign of Charles II. whoſe ſon Henry was father of Sir Sidney-Stafford Smythe, one of the Barons of his Majeſty's Court of Exchequer.

Robert Earl of Sunderland, only ſon and heir of the laſt Lord, was from his youth of a manly diſpoſition. Dr. Peirce, who was his tutor, gave him this character [l]: "His choice "endowments of nature, having been happily ſeaſoned and "crowned with grace, gave him at once ſuch a willingneſs and "aptneſs to be taught, that reconciled his greateſt pains with "eaſe and pleaſure; and made the education of his dear Lord, "not ſo much his employment, as his recreation and reward."

On his return into England, after his travels, his bright parts and abilities made him ſoon diſtinguiſhed, and rendered him univerſally beloved and eſteemed. And his Majeſty, King Charles, obſerving his noble and polite behaviour, appointed him his Ambaſſador Extraordinary to the Court of Spain, in 1671. The Earl of Arlington, Secretary of State, writes to Sir William Godolphin, Envoy in Spain, from Euſton-hall, on October 9, 1671 [m]: "We have here my Lord Sunderland, "whoſe preparations are making at London, with all poſſible "ſpeed, for his embaſſy into Spain, whither he goes under "the character of his Majeſty's Extraordinary Ambaſſador. I "will not anticipate any thing on the occaſion of his going, "more than that he will carry overtures, which we think will "be grateful to that Court; and alſo his Majeſty's new decla-"ration of his firm reſolution to maintain the peace of Aix la

[h] Ex Scrip. apud Penſhurſt. [i] Memoirs, p. 433. [k] Ex Regiſt. Eccleſ. de Penſhurſt. [l] Lloyd's Memoirs, ut antea. [m] Arlington's Letters, vol. ii. p. 335.

"Chapelle,

" Chapelle, according to his engagement in the triple alliance, " whatever calumnies our neighbours are pleaſed to throw up- " on us, as if his Majeſty had an intention to depart from it. " Beſides which, it is an uncomfortable obſervation we make " to ourſelves, that whilſt by our temporiſing with France, " we have kept the peace theſe three years paſt, we are only " accuſed of intentions and deſigns to break it."

His Lordſhip [n] ſet out for Dover, on November 22, to paſs from thence to Calais, and to proceed over land for Madrid; and by letter from thence, dated January 24 (O. S.) 1671-2, informs the Earl of Arlington [o], " That he arrived there the " 9th of January, N. S. and, with Sir William Godolphin, " had their firſt audiences of their Catholic Majeſties the 16th; " and, on the 22d, had their firſt conferences with the Conde " de Peneranda, which, he coming to viſit them, began with " many compliments on his own behalf towards the King our " Maſter, &c. We replied all fitting expreſſions of our re- " ſpects to their Catholic Majeſties, and the ſincere deſire we " brought, to do that might yet more firmly unite the two " Crowns together; and alſo our joy that the Queen had named " a Miniſter of ſo much authority and credit in this govern- " ment, and of whom the King our Maſter had ſo great a " value, to confer with us; which we conſidered as a good omen " for the happy ſucceſs of our affairs. He then made a long " diſcourſe of the advantages which England and Spain had in " all times received, &c. Hence we paſſed to our buſineſs, " which we began with the great offence our Maſter had taken " at the Conde de Monterey's obſcure and reſerved manage- " ment of the late treaty at the Hague, and all the fitting ag- " gravations that might juſtify his Majeſty's reſentment of that " negotiation, in a conjuncture, when we had diſputes of ſo " great moment with the States General, who, without doubt, " would be confirmed, and heightened thereupon, in that pride " and inſolence, which had already tranſported them to the " doing us unſufferable injuries. He ſaid, they never heard of " any quarrel the King our Maſter had with the Hollanders, " till ſome weeks ago, &c. And on the 24th, having another " conference, we expoſed to him the King our Maſter's deep " reſentment of the ill behaviour of the Dutch to him, as " well by perſonal indignities, as many contraventions of the " late treaty, which his Majeſty had hitherto diſſembled, not " to diſcompoſe the triple alliance, his reſolution at length to " right himſelf, God willing, by force of arms, in conjunction " with the moſt Chriſtian King, diſſatisfied alſo with the in- " ſolence of their proceedings, who had been induced to aſſiſt

[n] Biſhop Kennet's Life of King Charles II. in Hiſt. of England, vol. iii. p. 309.
[o] Letters and Negotiations in Spain, vol. ii. p. 134, 135.

" our Maſter in this quarrel, &c. We then propoſed, that " this Crown would either join with the two Kings, or declare " a neutrality, with ſuch conveniencies to Spain in either caſe, " as our private inſtructions directed us to offer. He anſwered " little, beſides his ſurprize at ſuch a determination, &c. and " prayed we would give him what we had ſaid in writing, that " he might repreſent the ſame to the Queen and Council, which " we did on the 26th, ſigning it in the Engliſh, but with a " tranſlation in Spaniſh, &c. We think that the matter hath " begotten ſo various opinions among theſe Miniſters, that they " will not come to any reſolution thereon, ſo ſpeedily as we " wiſh for his Majeſty's ſatisfaction."

I ſhall only inſert part of another letter of his Lordſhip's to the Earl of Arlington, whereby the reader may judge of the difficulty of his negotiation, in bringing Spain to join in a declaration of war againſt the Dutch, or keep a neutrality [p].

" Madrid, February 3, O.S. 1671-2.

" My Lord,

" After having given your Lordſhip an account of what I " have done, I would, if I could, tell you what I am like to " do; which indeed is ſo hard to do, that I believe none of the " juncta know their own minds, on which our negotiation " depends; they all deſire extremely to aſſiſt the Dutch, and " would do it without any kind of heſitation, but for fear " of the King, though the French were yet more power- " ful than they are. I hope Mr. Godolphin [q] will be able " to carry more certain news, which he grows very impa- " tient to do; ſo much he envies this courier, as thinking " him the happieſt man in the world. I ſend him now for " what concerns the Duke [of York] having another here " ready, if there ſhould be occaſion. His marriage with the " Arch-Dutcheſs is talked of as publickly, as ſuch things uſed " to be in other places, when a dozen people know them. " Mr. Godolphin is very little ſatisfied with Madrid, though " he has ſeen the fineſt thing which has been here a great " while; a comedy with ſcenes and machines, which the " Prince de Stigliano gave to the King and Queen in the " Retiro; whither all the Ambaſſadors were invited; and to " accommodate the difficulty of precedency, on the pretence of " not meeting with the Nuncio, he and all the reſt were " put in a box, on the right hand of the King's; and we were " alone in one of the other ſide; ſo that the German Ambaſ- " ſador being one of thoſe, though the Nuncio and French " were there, we had reaſon to be ſatisfied. This I write, to

[p] Letters, &c. præd, p. 140, 141.

[q] He was the ſame perſon created Earl of Godolphin.

" let

" let your Lordſhip ſee, how ingenious theſe people are in " ſuch things; which is not ſtrange, for I believe they think " more of them than all the reſt of the world. I did not know " whether I ſhould viſit the Cardinal de Aragon, who is of " the juncta, becauſe he gives the hand to no body in his own " houſe, and finding the not meeting him to be very conve- " nient, to avoid all diſputes, I have not yet ſeen the Cardi- " nal; but if your Lordſhip thinks it proper, it is yet time " enough, and I can turn it into a compliment from the King. " Reading all this ſtuff about precedency, your Lordſhip will " be of Mr. Godolphin's mind, who ſays, *They talk here of* " *other buſineſs, but they have none, but how to get the hand of* " *one another.*

" I am ſtill in Sir William Godolphin's houſe, it being im- " poſſible for me yet to be any where elſe, which I think is not " very eaſy to him, though I do all I can to make it ſo. Mr. " Godolphin helps very much, ſo that though he leaves us, be- " fore my equipage comes, I mean to go to the houſe I have " taken, which was the Baron de Batteville's, one of the beſt " in Madrid, with a very fine garden full of orange trees and " fountains, which I ſhall after wiſh at Euſton with myſelf. I " hope, long before this comes to your Lordſhip's hands, you " will be perfectly free of all remainders of the gout, which is " earneſtly wiſhed by, my Lord,

" Yours, &c."

It appears from his Lordſhip's and Sir William Godolphin's letters, that he left his Counteſs, and the main part of his family, in England, till he ſaw whether his negotiations would ſucceed. And by letter from Madrid, on Febr. 28, O. S. 1671-2, to the Earl of Arlington, concludes[r], " *That in the humour* " *they are here of ſupporting the Dutch, I believe nothing we can* " *offer, will be at all valued by them*; and if the King ſhould " think of making no new propoſitions, it would be a very " unſeaſonable time for my wife to begin a journey in. There- " fore I beg the favour you will pleaſe to direct her." His Lordſhip left Madrid[s] on May 30, O. S. 1672. And on June 22 following, Sir William Godolphin complains[t] " of " the miſery he was reduced to for want of ſupplies, wherein " not only his own reputation loſeth ground, but his Majeſty's " honour and ſervice ſuffereth exceedingly; eſpecially ſince " my Lord Sunderland went hence, without making any pub- " lick entry, which the common ſort of people attribute to " the want and diſtractions of our government at home, as " they think. But the Miniſters complain of it, as an affront " done to their King and Queen, having avowed to me, that

[r] Letters, &c. ut antea, p. 166. [s] Ibid. p. 182. [t] Ibid. p. 170.

" if

" if my Lord Sunderland and I had not promiſed to make a pub-
" lick entry, they would never have admitted us in quality of
" Ambaſſadors to a private audience, againſt the ſtile of this
" Court, and as hath never been practiſed here. And as a
" mark of their reſentment, they have ſince made an order of
" ſtate, *That no future Ambaſſador ſhall have private audience of*
" *their Majeſties, without firſt entering publickly*; and have al-
" ready put the ſame in execution, by denying a private au-
" dience to the new Ambaſſador of Denmark, who after our
" example aſked the ſame, but could not be admitted till he
" had made his publick entry."

The Earl of Sunderland, after leaving Madrid, reſided ſome time at Paris, as Ambaſſador Extraordinary to the French King. And Sir William Godolphin, in his letter on December 7, 1672, complaining of exhauſting his private fortune, ſays [u], " I can-
" not but believe that my caſe is ſingular, and that my Lord
" Sunderland is better ſupplied at Paris; if not, he needeth it
" leſs. That the Ambaſſadors, in the Courts of Vienna,
" Paris, and Madrid, had 100l. per week; from which rule
" they had been pleaſed to depart in my caſe only, as if my
" eſtate were ſo much greater, than either Mr. Montague's, or
" my Lord Sunderland's." And complaining further of his want of equipage, and not making his public entry, he recites [x], " My Lord Sunderland is gone, and free from the
" ways which this Court taketh of revenge, though he ſuffer-
" ed ſufficiently when he was here, moſt of the Grandees re-
" fuſing to pay the viſits he gave them, pretending they could
" not viſit him as Ambaſſador, till he had made his publick
" entry."

In 1673, the Swedes offering their mediation for a general peace [y], his Majeſty appointed the Earl of Sunderland, Sir Lionel Jenkins, and Sir Joſeph Williamſon, his Plenipotentiaries for the treaty; which was of ſhort continuance, for the Emperor ſeizing the Elector of Cologne's Plenipotentiary, the French looked on it as ſuch a violation of the paſſports, that they ſet it up for a preliminary, before they would enter on the treaty.

His Lordſhip continued abroad till the beginning of the year 1674, being followed by Sir Lionel Jenkins, and Sir Joſeph Williamſon, the other Plenipotentiaries at Cologne [z], who arrived from thence at Whitehall, on May 10, 1674. And this account was publiſhed in the Gazette [a]. Windſor, May 27, 1674, " This day Robert Earl of Sunderland was, by his
" Majeſty's favour, admitted into the Privy-Council; and

[u] Letters, &c. ut antea, p. 173. [x] Ibid. p. 174. [y] Biſhop Burnet's Hiſtory of his own Time, 8°. vol. i. p. 495. [z] Pointer's Chron. Hiſt. vol. i. p. 246. [a] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 329.

" having taken the uſual oaths, took his place at the board."

His Lordſhip continued in England, till July, 1678, when he was again ſent Ambaſſador Extraordinary to the French King, on Mr. Montague's coming into England, without his Majeſty's leave [b]; which occaſioned his cabinet to be ſearched, on ſome private intelligence concerning him, given to the King by Olivecrans the Swediſh Secretary. There being a cloſe friendſhip between the Earl of Danby, Lord Treaſurer, and his Lordſhip, his firſt letter was addreſſed to him from Paris, on Auguſt 2 (O S.) 1678. He therein informs him [c], " The courier, your " Lordſhip diſpatched from London the 28th of July, arrived " here on Wedneſday morning. The ſame day I went to St. " Germains, where I repreſented to his moſt Chriſtian Ma- " jeſty, how impoſſible it was for the King, my Maſter, to " accept of any expedient for the peace, without the abſolute " reſtitution of the towns ſo long in queſtion; &c. That he " had ordered me to obtain a ſpeedy and poſitive anſwer, which " I did deſire his Majeſty would pleaſe to give in a day or two. " To this his Majeſty anſwered, that he certainly believed, the " propoſitions he had made at Nimeguen would be accepted, " and that the peace was, perhaps, now ſigned; or if any ſmall " difficulty remained, it might eaſily be removed by the King, " my Maſter, which he doubted not but he would do. I ſaid, " I was very confident, that Spain and Holland neither could, " nor would, conſent to any thing leſs, than the total reſtitu- " tion of the towns; and that though the King my Maſter's " inclinations were for peace, rather than war, he muſt chuſe " the latter, if the expedient he offered was not accepted, and " that I had but a day or two to expect his reſolutions. To " which I was anſwered, that every moment news was expect- " ed from Nimeguen, and till then it was unneceſſary to think " of any thing elſe, &c. I told him, I believed no accommo- " dation could prevail with Spain and Holland, but the abſo- " lute reſtitution of the towns; nor that neither after a certain " time, which either was or would be ſoon expired, &c." In anſwer to the ſaid letter, the Earl of Danby informed him by expreſs, three days after [d], " That he had juſt received his " letter, and that his Majeſty had commanded him to ſend " back the courier (having received the news that the peace " was ſigned between France and the States, but knew not the " particulars) that he might loſe no time in going to his moſt " Chriſtian Majeſty, and letting him know, that the King " hopes he had ſuffered all things to return to the ſame ſtate " they were, when his Majeſty entered with him into the " treaty of the 17th of May." And if he ſhould meet with

[b] Letters to and from the Earl of Danby, p. 106. [c] Ibid. p. 289. [d] Ibid. p. 293.

any

any difficulty in confirming of that treaty, he was to preſs it as a matter wherein the King had not juſtice done, in caſe it ſhould be refuſed, &c.

There are other letters to the Earl of Sunderland from the Earl of Danby, which ſhew the artifices of the French, in prevailing on the States General to ſign a ſeparate peace, and the King's reſentment of it. And his Lordſhip was [e] ordered to convince the Miniſters of that Court (if he could) "That they muſt make "good the aſſurances given for the evacuating of the towns, if "they deſire the continuance of his Majeſty's friendſhip; who "had reſolved to let his troops be with the Prince of Orange, "until there be either a ceſſation of arms, or an aſſurance, that "the towns ſhould be evacuated."

His Lordſhip in anſwer, from Paris, on Aug. 22, 1678, plainly ſhews his opinion of the French, and their ſhuffling dealing with us, and his aſſiduity in his negotiations, as follows [f]:

"To the Lord Treaſurer.

"My Lord, Paris, Auguſt $\frac{12}{22}$, 1678.

"Your Lordſhip had always ſo ill an opinion of my negotiation in this Court, that you will not wonder to find, that "they change juſt as they think we may be uſeful to them, that "being the meaſure they go by. The peace being now agreed "betwixt this Court and the States, I ſuppoſe there will be no "occaſion for my continuing much longer here: but in the "mean time, muſt beg leave to tell your Lordſhip, that ſince "I came hither, I am ſure I have paſſed three quarters of my "time at St. Germains, or on the way to it, and that I was "never there one minute, but upon the King's buſineſs; and "that I do not think I have omitted any thing, that could have "been done by one in my place. But it is certain that the "difficulties were made at Nimeguen, on purpoſe either to obtain, by our Maſter's help, that ſome of the towns might have "remained in the power of France, or elſe to occaſion the lapſe "of the time, and ſo ſave ſo much money; for the peace has "without queſtion been reſolved here a great while.

"The Court is this day gone to Fontainbleau: I intend to "follow in a few days, to be more ready to obey any orders the "King ſhall pleaſe to ſend me. I am entirely, &c.

"Your Lordſhip's moſt faithful

"and moſt humble ſervant,

"SUNDERLAND."

[e] Letters to and from the Earl of Danby, p. 297. [f] Ibid. p. 298, 299.

The Earl of Danby in anſwer ſays[g]: "As you tell me in "that of the $\frac{12}{22}$ that I had always ſo bad an opinion of that "Court, that I will believe no good can come from it; ſo I "doubt not but your Lordſhip muſt be of the ſame opinion, by "the tricks and evaſions you meet with from them every day. "I ſhewed your letters to his Majeſty, as alſo one I received "from you by Lord Dunbarton. But the truth is, his Majeſty "doth now expect ſo little reality from France, that he does "not much buſy his thoughts, how to tranſact with them; be-"ing ſatisfied, that if they can propoſe any thing to us which "may be for their intereſt, they will not fail to do it them-"ſelves: and whatever his Majeſty ſhall propoſe, they will on-"ly make uſe of it (as they have done) either to procure delays "by it, or to talk of, to the creating jealouſies betwixt us and "their enemies. For theſe reaſons his Majeſty commands me "to let your Lordſhip know, that he will propoſe nothing, but "that he would have you give the ſame good words to the French "King, as he did you, &c."

The laſt letter I find of his Lordſhip's, during his abode in France, is to the Lord Treaſurer, dated on October 8, O. S. 1678[h], wherein he acquaints him; "That he had with all the "care imaginable let the French King know, that it is impoſ-"ſible for his Majeſty to make the declaration, which is ſo much "deſired here; and how much he is courted to enter into the "contrary alliance, and have made the propoſitions your Lord-"ſhip's letters directed me to do. To which I can obtain no "anſwer, but that the chief thing towards procuring the ſatis-"faction of Sweden, is the King's declaring himſelf for it, &c. "I ſaid all that was poſſible to let him underſtand, that very "advantageous propoſitions were made to the King: that the "power of the Prince of Orange was as conſiderable as ever: "that the buſineſs of Sweden could never be accommodated, "if the King ſhould join with the confederates; and ſeveral "things to fortify all that, which I am confident he ſees very "plainly, and deſires extremely to ſecure the friendſhip of our "Maſter, &c. After this I told him, that I had aſked leave to "go into England for a ſhort time, which I hoped to obtain. "He ſaid, he ſhould not be ſorry that I made ſuch a journey, "becauſe he hoped it would contribute to the eſtabliſhing a "correſpondence, that might be of advantage to my Maſter and "to him. This being the ſtate of affairs here, I beg of your "Lordſhip to aſk leave of the King that I may go into England "for a month, or leſs, as he ſhall think fit. I am ſure it cannot "prejudice his buſineſs, and I hope it may be ſome advantage "to it; for one cannot write a great many little things, which "are often important to the greateſt, &c."

[g] Earl of Danby's Letters, p. 300, 301. [h] Ibid. p. 203, 204.

Whilſt

Whilſt his Lordſhip remained at the Court of France, it was the critical time of the treaties at Nimeguen, which ended in a ſeparate peace betwixt France and Holland; and at laſt with Spain alſo. Whereby his negotiations required great aſſiduity; and he acquitted himſelf to the ſatisfaction of his own Sovereign, as well as to the King of France; inſomuch, as Sir William Temple recites [i], he was ſent for over from the Hague to come into the place of Secretary of State in Mr. Coventry's room, and to enter on it about the ſame time with Lord Sunderland, who was, on Febr. 9, 1678-9, brought into the place of Sir Joſeph Williamſon, who had, on Nov. 18, 1678, been committed to the Tower by the Houſe of Commons, for ſigning [k] commiſſions to popiſh officers, and warrants for diſpenſations to them to continue in their commands, and to be paſſed in muſter without taking the oaths of allegiance, &c. according to a late act.

As Lord Sunderland came then to be at the head of the adminiſtration, I ſhall briefly recite Sir William Temple's obſervations on that critical time [l]. "On his arrival in England, the "latter end of February, he found the King had diſſolved the "Parliament that had ſet eighteen years, and a new one called; "and that to make way for a calm ſeſſion, the Duke of York "embarqued, the day after his arrival at London, for Holland; "Lord Shafteſbury, Lord Eſſex, and Lord Halifax, had ſtruck "up with the Duke of Monmouth, reſolving to make uſe of his "credit with the King, and ſupport it by theirs in the Par-"liament. He found the Lord Treaſurer [Earl of Danby] "and Lord Chamberlain [Earl of Arlington] two moſt admi-"rable emblems of the true, and ſo much admired, felicity "of Miniſters of State. The laſt grown out of all confidence "and credit with the King; and thereby forced to ſupport "himſelf by intrigues with the moſt diſcontented againſt Lord "Treaſurer's miniſtry, whoſe greatneſs he ſo much envied; and "who was in much worſe condition himſelf, though not ſo "ſenſible of it; for he had been very ill with the late Parlia-"ment, on account of tranſactions with France, which though "he had not approved, yet he durſt not defend himſelf from "the imputation, for fear of expoſing his Maſter. He was in "danger of being purſued by his enemies in Parliament for "having made the peace, and endeavoured to ſtifle the popiſh "plot, and yet ſat very looſe with the King, who told Sir "William ſeveral reaſons of that change, whereof one was, his "bringing the buſineſs of the plot into Parliament, againſt his "abſolute command. And to compleat the envied ſtate of this "chief Miniſter, the Dutcheſs of Portſmouth, and Earl of Sun-

[i] Memoirs, part ii. p. 385, 387.
[l] Memoirs, part ii. p. 388, & ſeq.
[k] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 354.

" derland, were joined with the Duke of Monmouth, and Earl " of Shafteſbury, in the deſign of his ruin."

On February 22, the King acquainted the Parliament [m] with the removal of the Earl of Danby from the office of Lord Treaſurer. He was put out to make way for the Earl of Eſſex, who was brought into the Treaſury by the Duke of Monmouth, and the Earl of Sunderland [n], as recited by Sir William Temple; and that Lord Sunderland, in compliance, was reſolved to bring Lord Shafteſbury again into Court, being his near relation [his wife, then living, being his father's ſiſter] and was in confidence with the Duke of Monmouth, and Lord Eſſex. Sir William Temple did not join with them, though he kept a good underſtanding with the Earl of Sunderland; and refuſed to be Secretary of State (ſo that Sir Lionel Jenkins ſucceeded Mr. Coventry) though often, and earneſtly urged to it by Lord Sunderland [o], as himſelf relates. Sir William projected the King's eſtabliſhing a new Council, of ſuch a conſtitution as might gain credit with the Parliament, and thereby give eaſe and quiet both to the King and his people. " And his Majeſty coming to a " reſolution, firſt to communicate it to three or four, he could " moſt rely on, in point of judgment, ſecrecy, and affection " to his ſervice, ordered Sir William Temple to communicate " the whole ſcheme to the Lord Chancellor Finch, Lord Sun- " derland, and Lord Eſſex; but one after another; and with " charge from him of the laſt ſecrecy; and bring him word of " their opinions on it, and, if they concurred with his, to ap- " point them to attend his Majeſty the next morning. When " they were acquainted with it, they all received it with equal " amazement and pleaſure: and Lord Sunderland approved it " as much as any. The day after they attended his Majeſty, " and had a very long audience, upon which no difficulty aroſe " but two that were wholly perſonal. Sir William had pro- " poſed Lord Halifax to be one of the Council, and thought " his Majeſty had been contented with it; but at this meeting " he raiſed new difficulties, and appeared a great while invin- " cible in them, though all joined in defence of him: and at " laſt told the King, they would fall on their knees to gain a " point, they all thought ſo neceſſary for his ſervice. And " then his Majeſty conſented. The other was concerning Lord " Shafteſbury, whom the King had not thought on before; but " after Lord Halifax had paſſed, the King ſaid there was ano- " ther, who, if he was left out, might do as much miſchief as " any, and named Lord Shafteſbury; to which the three Lords " agreed; and concluded farther, that he would never be con- " tent with a Counſellor's place among thirty, and therefore

[m] Pointer's Chron. Hiſt. vol. i. p. 256 [n] Memoirs, part iii. p. 12.
[o] Ibid. p. 17, 18, 19, 20 to 68.

" propoſed to add one to the number, and make him Lord " Preſident. Sir William deſired his Majeſty to remember, " that he had no part in Lord Shafteſbury's coming into his " Council or his affairs, and that his Majeſty and the Lords had " reſolved it without him, and was ſtill abſolutely againſt it. " The King laughed, and turned his anger into a jeſt, and " went on with the conſtitution intended." And at Whitehall, on April 21, 1679 [p], they met his Majeſty in Council; who the ſame day told his two Houſes, that he had eſtabliſhed a new Privy-Council; *and had made choice of ſuch perſons, as were worthy and able to adviſe him; and was reſolved, in all his weighty and important affairs, to be adviſed by them* [q]. " And it " was received with general applauſe in the country, with " bonefires in the city, and the ſame in Ireland: in Holland " the actions of the Eaſt-India Company roſe upon it very " much, &c."

Lord Sunderland (as ſaid before) was deſirous of having Sir William Temple Secretary of State in Mr. Coventry's place; but the ill opinion Sir William had of the Earl of Shafteſbury's being employed, made him decline it: [r] yet, on his Lordſhip's deſiring, by Mr. Sidney, that they three might join together in perfect confidence, and diſtinct from any others, in the courſe of the King's affairs, he was willing to embrace it. " This " confidence (ſays he) had not run on above a fortnight, when " Lord Sunderland aſked me if I were willing Lord Eſſex ſhould " be received in it, which I conſented to, though with intima- " tion to Lord Sunderland of the opinion I had (for ſome time " of late) of Lord Eſſex. So we met for a while once a day by " turns, at each of our houſes, and conſulted upon the chief " affairs that were then on the anvil, and how they might be " beſt prepared for the Parliament or the Council. But matters " growing very untoward, by the practices of Lord Shafteſbury " and Duke of Monmouth, and the ill humour of the Houſe " of Commons about the buſineſs of religion; I propoſed to " Lords Sunderland and Eſſex to receive Lord Halifax into all " our conſultations, who was unſatisfied by obſerving where the " King's confidence was; and by being admitted, would both " enter him into credit with the King, and give us more eaſe " in the courſe of his affairs. Lord Eſſex received the over- " ture with his uſual dryneſs: Lord Sunderland oppoſed it a " good deal, and ſaid, I ſhould not find Lord Halifax the perſon " I took him for; but one that could draw with no body, and " ſtill climbing up to the top himſelf. However, I continued " reſolute in preſſing it, and at length it was concluded; and

[p] Appendix to Temple's Memoirs, part iii. p. 1. p. 22, 23.

[q] Memoirs, præd.

[r] Ibid. p. 28, 29, 30, 31, & ſeq.

" we fell all four together into the uſual meetings and con-
" ſultations.

" The chief matters before the King, at that time, were firſt
" the ſatisfaction of his people, by falling into meaſures with the
" Parliament, that might enable him to look abroad in ſuch a
" figure as became the Crown of England; and was neceſſary
" for preventing a new invaſion of France, upon Flanders or
" Holland, which looked very deſperate. The ſecond was on
" inſtances made from the States, about a new guaranty to be
" given upon the late general peace by his Majeſty; particu-
" larly to Spain in the buſineſs of Flanders. The third was giv-
" ing ſome eaſe to Scotland, where the humours began to ſwell,
" and we conceived could be done no way ſo eaſily as by re-
" moval of the Duke of Lauderdale, too much hated both here
" and there, to be fit for the temper his Majeſty ſeemed reſolv-
" ed to uſe in his affairs. For this laſt, we could not on any
" terms obtain it of the King, by all the arguments uſed (jointly
" and ſeverally) by us all four; the King ſaying none of us knew
" Scotland ſo well as himſelf.

" For the ſecond, we eaſily agreed on the meaſures that
" ſeemed neceſſary, for the ſatisfaction of the States, and the
" ſafety of Flanders; being all four of the Committee, where
" all foreign affairs were conſulted, &c. For the firſt, which
" was the moſt important, we found it more perplexed than we
" could imagine. Both Houſes of Parliament ſeemed to have
" no eyes, but for the dangers of popery, on the Duke of
" York's ſucceſſion to the Crown; which humour was blown
" up by all the arts and intrigues of the Duke of Monmouth
" and Lord Shafteſbury. The King ſeemed willing to ſecure
" them againſt thoſe fears, without changing the laws in point
" of ſucceſſion. The Council thereupon, with great earneſt-
" neſs and endeavour, agreed on heads to be offered the Parlia-
" ment, commonly enough known; which were agreed to by
" all the Council, except Lord Shafteſbury, and I [Sir William
" Temple] on different grounds. Lord Shafteſbury's was plain,
" *That there could be no ſecurity againſt the Duke, if once in poſ-*
" *ſeſſion of the Crown.* And being well infuſed by his and the
" Duke of Monmouth's friends in the Houſe of Commons, oc-
" caſioned their ſullen rejecting all expedients offered them by
" the King. During all theſe tranſactions (ſaith Sir William
" Temple[s]) Lord Sunderland, Lord Eſſex, Lord Halifax and I,
" continued our conſtant meetings and conſultations, and with
" ſo much union, and ſo diſintereſted endeavours, for the gene-
" ral good of his Majeſty's ſervice, and the kingdom's; that I
" could not but ſay to them at the end of one of our meetings,
" That we four were either the four honeſteſt men in England,

[s] Memoirs, part iii. p. 37, & ſeq.

" or

" or the greateſt knaves; for we made one another at leaſt be-
" lieve, that we were the honeſteſt men in the world.

" But after the Houſes of Parliament rejecting the expedients
" offered by the King and Council, Lord Shafteſbury finding
" himſelf neither in confidence with the King, nor credit in
" the Council, inflamed the Houſe of Commons to that degree,
" as made the Lords [before-mentioned] caſt about which way
" to lay the ſtorm. At length Lord Sunderland told me, that
" Lord Eſſex and Lord Halifax were of opinion, that it was
" neceſſary to take in the Duke of Monmouth, and Lord Shafteſ-
" bury, into the firſt digeſtion of affairs, conſidering the influ-
" ence they had on the Houſe; and for this end to agree with
" them in the baniſhment of the *Duke*, either for a certain term,
" or during the King's life; and deſired to know whether I
" would fall into it with them, and join in bringing it about
" with the King. I told Lord Sunderland, poſitively I would
" not: &c. This was peremptory, and ſo it ended: the three
" Lords fell into meetings and conſultations with the Duke of
" Monmouth, and Lord Shafteſbury."

The Earl of Sunderland being ſo much concerned in all Councils, this brief abſtract, from Sir William Temple, could not properly be omitted, as it ſhews his Lordſhip's diſpoſition and endeavours, both for the King's eaſe and quiet, as well as the ſatisfaction of his people. But ſuch was that conjunction, as Sir William Temple [t] obſerves, that it laſted little more than a fortnight, the Duke of Monmouth and Lord Shafteſbury endeavouring to be at the head of all affairs, by prevailing on the Houſe of Commons to bring the King into neceſſities of yielding all points to them. So that the three Lords agreed on proroguing the Parliament, as the only remedy left in the preſent diſtemper; and communicating their thoughts to Sir William Temple, he was of the ſame opinion; and they were to propoſe it to the King and Council. And in this reſolution (ſays Sir William) we parted, and appointed to meet again two days after, for the fixing it with his Majeſty. And going into the country, and returning the third morning early, he found Lord Sunderland had called or ſent ſeveral times to his houſe the night before, and left word he muſt needs ſpeak with him. As ſoon as he came to town, he ſent immediately to Whitehall, but found his Lordſhip was gone with the King to the Houſe of Peers. Whereupon he went to Lord Eſſex, as neareſt him, and aſked whether any thing new had happened; who told him, that the King had found there were remonſtrances ready prepared in the Houſe of Commons to inflame the city and nation, on the points of plot and popery; and that their three Lordſhips having upon it conſulted with his Majeſty, he had reſolved the Parlia-

[t] Memoirs, part iii. p. 40, 41, & ſeq.

ment

ment ſhould be prorogued that morning, upon the King's coming to the Houſe; and that it could not be allowed time, by a debate of Council. Accordingly the Parliament was prorogued, with great reſentment of both Houſes, and ſuch rage of Lord Shafteſbury, that he ſaid on it aloud in the Houſe, he would have the heads of thoſe who were the adviſers of the prorogation.

On ſtories being raiſed of Sir William Temple's [u] being a man of arbitrary principles, Lord Sunderland, on the knowledge thereof, [x] "thought that he, who had ſuch a part in the King's "affairs, ought to ſtand as well as he could with the Houſe of "Commons (where endeavours being made for impeaching him "there, for making the general peace) preſſed him to ſuffer ſe-"veral things he had formerly written, and of which copies "had run, to be then printed (as they were) under the title of "Miſcellanea. He thought (ſays Sir William) by that publi-"cation, men would ſee I was not a man of the dangerous "principles pretended; and I might aſſure the world, of being "author of no books that had not my name. Lord Halifax, "commending them to me in general, told me as a friend, that "I ſhould take heed of carrying too far the principle of paternal "dominion (which was deduced in the Eſſay of Government) "for fear of deſtroying the rights of the people. So tender was "every body of thoſe points at that time."

After the Earls of Sunderland, Eſſex, and Halifax, had no commerce with the Duke of Monmouth and Lord Shafteſbury, Sir William Temple came again to their meetings and conſultations, wherein they were unanimous, as he obſerves, "and "conſidered how to make way for a better-tempered ſeſſion of "Parliament, after the ſhort prorogation made. They alſo "concluded meaſures with Holland in all points, to the ſatis-"faction of their Ambaſſador; and thought of ſuch acts of "Council, as might expreſs his Majeſty's care for ſuppreſſing "popery, even in the intervals of Parliament."

There had been a perpetual appearance of ill humour, at Council, between Lord Shafteſbury and Lord Halifax, which often broke into ſpightful repartees between them [y]; and the Duke of Monmouth had broken all meaſures with Lord Eſſex. And the term of the prorogation of Parliament being near, all agreed the ſeſſion could not conveniently begin before October, and a day was appointed to conſider of it in Council. "The Duke of "Monmouth (ſays Sir William [z]) was greater than ever: Lord "Shafteſbury reckoned on being ſo too, at the meeting of the "Parliament, and at the coſt of thoſe he took to be the authors of "the prorogation: Lords Eſſex and Halifax looked upon them-

[u] Memoirs, part iii. p. 44. [x] Ibid. p. 46. [y] Ibid. p. 51. [z] Ibid. p. 55, &c.

"ſelves

" ſelves as moſt in danger, and aimed at by Lord Shafteſbury's " threats, and out of all meaſures with the Duke of Monmouth. " This induced a conſultation among us, whether conſidering " the diſtempers of the preſent Parliament, the beſt courſe were " not to diſſolve it, and have another called in October; where- " in the three Lords and I agreed, and the King was perfectly " of the ſame mind. So it was reſolved, his Majeſty ſhould " propoſe, at the next Council, whether it were beſt to prorogue " that Parliament, or diſſolve it, and at the ſame time call ano- " ther; and that, at the ſame time, the Lord Chancellor, and " other chief officers depending on the King, ſhould be ac- " quainted with his mind, either by his Majeſty, or the three " Lords. In our laſt meeting we had calculated how many at " Council could, in any probability, oppoſe diſſolving the Par- " liament, and calling another; and concluded there could not " be above ſix againſt it at the moſt; which we thought a great " ſupport to the King's reſolution, againſt the exclamations " expected from Lord Shafteſbury and his friends: when the " Council-day came, I aſked Lords Sunderland and Halifax, " whether all was prepared; and Lord Chancellor, and other " chief officers had been ſpoke to? They ſaid no, it had been " forgotten or neglected; but the King would do it to each of " them apart, as they came that morning, and before the " Council began. When the Council ſate, the King propoſed " his thoughts, whether it was beſt for his affairs, to prorogue " the Parliament till October, or diſſolve it, and call another " at that time; and deſired their opinions in it.

" I obſerved (ſays Sir William) a general ſurprize at the " board; which made me doubt the King had ſpoke of it to " few or none but the Chancellor before he came in; but it " ſoon appeared he had not done that neither, for after a ſhort " pauſe, he was the firſt that roſe up, and ſpoke long and vio- " lently againſt the diſſolution; was followed by every man " there, except the three Lords, who ſpoke for the diſſolution; " but neither they with half the length or force of argument " they intended to have done; leaving that part, as I ſuppoſed, " to me. I was the laſt but one to ſpeak, and ſaw argument " would ſignify nothing, after ſuch inequality was declared in " number: and ſaid in ſhort, that I thought it was every man's " opinion, that a happy agreement between his Majeſty and " his Parliament was of neceſſity to his affairs, both at home " and abroad. That his Majeſty had ſpoken ſo much of his " deſpairing about any agreement with this Parliament, and " the hopes he had of doing it with another; that for my part I " thought his Majeſty could better judge of it than any body " elſe. So his Majeſty ordered the Chancellor to draw up a " proclamation for diſſolving the Parliament, dated July 12, 1679,

" and

" and calling another to aſſemble in October following." Which Parliament was prorogued to January 26 [a], at which time the King made a ſhort ſpeech to the two Houſes, and them commanded the Lord Chancellor to prorogue them to the 15th of April next, 1680.

But the King, in Auguſt, 1679 [b], fell ſick at Windſor, and with three ſuch fits of a fever [c], as gave much apprehenſion, and a general amazement; people looking on any ill to the King as an end of the world; as obſerved by Sir William Temple, who, after the ſecond fit, waited on his Majeſty; and did not think him in danger. And that he found and left the three Lords very diligent at Court, attending both his perſon and affairs, which he was very glad of, and ſo went home, without entering further into diſcourſes with them, than on his Majeſty's ſickneſs.

The Duke of York returned into England on September 2, to the general ſurprize of the nation; and the ſecret of his coming was not known, till Sir William Temple diſcloſed it. He aſſerts [d], " That on the King's firſt illneſs, the Lords Eſſex and Halifax, " being about him, thought his danger great, and their own ſo " too; and that if any thing happened to the King's life, the " Duke of Monmouth would be at the head of the nation, in " oppoſition to the Duke and popery; and in conjunction with " Lord Shafteſbury, who had threatened to have their heads on " prorogation of the laſt Parliament; which threats Lords " Eſſex and Halifax applied to themſelves; reckoning Lord " Sunderland out of danger, by his relation to Lord Shafteſbury, " and the fair terms between them. This fright had ſo affect- " ed theſe two Lords, that not ſtaying to ſee what the King's " ſecond fit would be, they propoſed to the King, the ſending " immediately for the Duke; which being reſolved, and the " diſpatch made with all the ſecrecy and ſpeed, the Duke came " over; but finding the King recovered, it was agreed to paſs " for a journey of his own, and that it ſhould be received by " his Majeſty, and the three Lords, with all ſigns of ſurprize. " When this was done, they found the Duke of Monmouth " ſo enraged at this Council, as well as Lord Shafteſbury, that " they ſaw no way but to ruin them both, and throw them quite " out of the King's affairs, and joining themſelves wholly with " the Duke's intereſt; which they did for that time, till they " had brought about all his Highneſs deſired for his ſecurity, " againſt the Duke of Monmouth, and Lord Shafteſbury; the " firſt going over to Holland, and the other being turned out of " the Council."

[a] Hiſt. of England, vol. iii. p. 365. [b] Ibid. [c] Temple's Memoirs, p. 67, 68. [d] Ibid. p. 78, 79, 80.

Not

Not long after, Lords Eſſex and Halifax grew diſcontented [e] upon the private examination of that called the *Meal-Tub-Plot*; finding themſelves mentioned in it, and yet left out of the ſecret examination thereof. So that Lord Eſſex [f] reſigned his place of firſt Commiſſioner of the Treaſury, on November 19, 1679; and Lord Halifax retired to his ſeat at Rufford.

On Lord Eſſex's leaving the Treaſury, Mr. Hyde (afterwards Earl of Rocheſter) came of courſe to be firſt Commiſſioner [g], and was ſworn of the Privy-Council; and, on February 4 following, Sidney Godolphin, Eſq; (afterwards Earl of Godolphin) the ſecond Commiſſioner of the Treaſury, was ſworn of the Privy-Council, and took his place at the board. "Theſe "two (ſaith Sir William Temple [h]) had always been my friends, "and agreed with me in all my opinions and meaſures, about "affairs abroad or at home. And joining in confidence with "the Lord Sunderland, were eſteemed to be alone in the ſecret "and management of the King's affairs, and looked upon as "the Miniſtry. October came on, wherein the Parliament "was to meet. The Duke was in Flanders; the Duke of "Monmouth in Holland; and Lord Shafteſbury ſet on foot "petitions, in caſe they did not ſit [i]. The King in Council, "after a little pauſe, told them, that upon many conſidera-"tions, which he could not at preſent acquaint them with, he "found it neceſſary to make a longer prorogation of the Parlia-"ment than he had intended: that he had conſidered all the "conſequences, ſo far as to be abſolutely reſolved, and not to "hear any thing that ſhould be ſaid againſt it; and charged the "Lord Chancellor to prorogue it to that time twelvemonth. "All at Council were ſtunned with this ſurprizing reſolution, "and the way of propoſing it; except thoſe few who were in "the ſecret, and they thought fit to be ſilent, and leave it "wholly on his Majeſty. Several roſe up, and would have en-"tered into the conſequences of it; but the King would not "hear them."

It is related by Biſhop Burnet [k], that about this time, the Prince of Orange had projected an alliance with France; and that the Earl of Sunderland entered into a particular confidence with the Prince, which he managed by his uncle, Mr. Sidney [afterwards Earl of Romney] who was ſent Envoy to Holland.

Sir William Temple recites [l], "Lord Sunderland was ſtruck "with the boldneſs of the Lords preſentment [of the Duke] in "Weſtminſter-hall, and the conſequence of ſuch men being "ſo deſperately engaged in an attempt they were like to be ſe-"conded, by the humour of the nation, on the alarms of po-

[e] Memoirs, p. 85, 86. [f] Hiſt. of England, vol. iii. p. 367. [g] Ibid. and p. 368. [h] Memoirs, p. 87, 88. [i] Ibid. p. 89, 90. [k] Hiſt. of his own Time, 8°. vol. ii. p. 114. [l] Memoirs, p. 114, 115, 116.

"pery;

" pery; which made him conclude the King would not be able " to ſupport the Duke any longer, but be forced to ſeparate " his intereſt from him. And he believed the King was of the " ſame mind. Mr. Godolphin fell into the ſame thoughts " with Lord Sunderland, both of the thing itſelf, and of the " King's mind in it: ſo as upon the debate in Council, con- " cerning the Duke's ſtay, or going back into Scotland be- " fore the Parliament met, they joined abſolutely in the rea- " ſons and advices of his going away: and though the reſt of " the Council were generally of the contrary opinion, yet the " King concluded thereon againſt the Duke's will and his " friends."

The Duke went away [m], and the Parliament met on October 21, 1680. " The Dutcheſs of Portſmouth declared openly " for the excluſion of the Duke [n]; and ſo did Lord Sunderland, " and Mr. Godolphin. Lord Sunderland aſſured all people, that " the King was reſolved to ſettle matters with his Parliament " on any terms, ſince the intereſt of England, and the affairs " of Europe, made a league againſt France indiſpenſably neceſſa- " ry at that time; which could not be done without a good " underſtanding at home. Lord Halifax aſſured me [Biſhop " Burnet] that any limitations whatſoever, leaving the title of " King to the Duke, might be obtained of his Majeſty. But " that he was poſitive and fixed againſt the excluſion, which was " in a great meaſure imputed to his management, and that he " wrought the King up to it."

The bill paſſed the Houſe of Commons, and was brought up to the Lords [o]. The Earls of Eſſex and Shafteſbury argued moſt for it; and the Earl of Halifax againſt it; and in concluſion it was thrown out upon the firſt reading, the whole bench of Biſhops being againſt it. The Commons, inflamed at the fate of their bill, addreſſed the King to remove Lord Halifax from his Councils and preſence for ever. The King was reſolved and declared againſt the bill, which induced ſeveral to form expedients, whereof one was drawn by Biſhop Burnet, to be managed chiefly by Littleton, then in commiſſion of the Admiralty, *That there ſhould be a Protector declared, with whom Regal Power ſhould be lodged, and the Prince of Orange to be named.* Lord Halifax and Seymour liked it; *but*, ſays the Biſhop, *I wondered to find Lord Sunderland did not go into it.*

Sir William Temple recites [p], " The King's quarrels to " Lord Sunderland were chiefly two; firſt his voting in the " Lords Houſe for the bill of excluſion, not only againſt the " King's mind, but his expreſs command. And I remember, " when I ſpoke to him of it, as what the King muſt reſent,

[m] Hiſt. of England, p. 371. [n] Biſhop Burnet, præd. p. 116. [o] Ibid. p. 118, 119. [p] Vide his Memoirs, from p. 140 to 148.

" and

" and what I was confident he would be ſteady in, he told me " it was too late, for his honour was engaged, and he could not " break it. The other was a memorial ſent over by Mr. Sid- " ney, the King's Envoy at the Hague, and given him by " Penſioner Fagel, repreſenting the ſad conſequences abroad of " his Majeſty's not agreeing with his Parliaments; the danger " of his Allies, and of the Proteſtant religion; and thereupon, " ſeeming to wiſh that the King would not break with them, " though it were even upon the point of the bill of excluſion. " This was believed to be directed and adviſed by Lord Sunder- " land to Mr. Sidney, his uncle, as a matter that would be of " weight to induce the King to paſs the bill; and was laid " before the foreign Committee. But Lord Sunderland pro- " teſted to me (ſays Sir William Temple) that he knew no- " thing of it, till he received a copy from Mr. Sidney, who " ſent the original to the other Secretary. I thought he could " not underſtand the King ſo ill, as to believe that would be a " motive to him to paſs the bill, or that it could have any other " effect than to anger him at the Dutch, for meddling in a " matter that was domeſtick, not only to the nation, but to the " Crown. Beſides, I obſerved the ſtile to be of one that un- " derſtood little of our conſtitution, by ſeveral expreſſions, " whereof one was, *why the King ſhould not prevent ſuch conſe-* " *quences, when he might do it by a ſtroke with a pen*; which " ſhewed the author thought our acts of Parliament had been " paſſed by only the King's ſigning them. And the whole " caſt of it made me believe it certainly came from Penſioner " Fagel. However, the King, as well as ſome of the Com- " mittee, believed this was of Lord Sunderland's forge; and " that many of the heats in the Houſe of Commons had been " encouraged and raiſed to ſuch height, by his ſeeming to fa- " vour them, which they might think he would not do, unleſs " he believed the King would at length comply with them."

Sir William Temple alſo relates, " That during the ſeſſion, " there was an outrageous quarrel between Lord Sunderland " and Lord Halifax [who married his ſiſter] not only on their " dividing in buſineſſes of the Parliament and Council; but " likewiſe on Lord Sunderland's entering into new commerce " and meaſures with Lord Shafteſbury; as Lord Halifax told " him. But Lord Sunderland told him another reaſon of their " quarrel, which he ſaid broke out the ſame night a debate aroſe " at Council, concerning the addreſs of the Houſe of Commons " againſt Lord Halifax, wherein Lord Sunderland had been of " opinion, the King ſhould not yield to it: but after Council, " Lord Halifax went to Lord Sunderland's lodgings, where " they fell into diſcourſe of what had paſſed; and Lord Sun- " derland told him, that though he had given his opinion in " Council,

" Council, as he thought became him; yet if ſuch an addreſs " ſhould ever be made againſt himſelf, he would certainly de- " ſire leave of the King to retire, as it would be for his ſervice. " Upon which Lord Halifax fell into ſuch a paſſion, that he " went out of the room, and from that time they hardly lived " in any common civility where they met. The refiners (ſaith " Sir William) thought Lord Halifax, who ſaw himſelf topped " by Lord Sunderland's credit and ſtation at Court, reſolved " to fall in with the King, on the point then in debate about " the bill of excluſion, wherein he found the King ſteady, and " that Lord Sunderland would loſe himſelf; ſo that falling into " confidence with the King upon ſuch a turn, he ſhould be " alone chief in the Miniſtry without competitor. At leaſt " the reaſoners on this matter could find no other ground for " ſuch a change in Lord Halifax's courſe, after what he had ſo " long ſteered, and ſo lately in being the chief promoter of " the Duke's being ſent away to Scotland, juſt before the meet- " ing of the Parliament. Theſe were the reaſons, that Lord " Sunderland, Lord Eſſex's names, and mine, were ſtruck out " of the Council." And on February 2, 1680-1 [q], Edward, Earl of Conway, was ſworn Secretary of State in his Lordſhip's place. The King had diſſolved the Parliament, on January 18, and ordered the Lord Chancellor (Heneage, Lord Finch of Daventry, afterwards Earl of Nottingham) to iſſue writs for the calling of a new Parliament to be holden at Oxford, on March 21 following.

Thereupon the heads of the Univerſity of Cambridge ſent to Sir William Temple [r], to know whether he would ſtand again for their election; who going to the King to know his pleaſure, what anſwer to return, his Majeſty ſaid, *as things ſtood, he thought it as well for him to let it alone*; which he ſaid he would do. " When I left the King (ſays Sir William) I went to " Lord Sunderland, and told him what had paſſed; who took " this as the firſt certain ſign of his Majeſty's having fixed his " reſolution, and left off all thoughts of agreeing with his Par- " liaments, and of his having taken his meaſures another way, " for the ſupply of his treaſures in the ill condition they were " in; and that if there were any thoughts of agreeing with the " next Parliament, the King he was ſure would have been glad " to have had me in the Houſe. He ſaid upon it in ſome paſ- " ſion, that he now gave all for gone, and that he muſt con- " feſs I knew the King better than he had done."

The meeting of the Parliament at Oxford being contrary [s] to the views of the Anti-courtiers, the Duke of Monmouth, the Earl of Shafteſbury, with ſeveral other Lords, petitioned the

[q] Hiſtory of England, vol. iii. p. 380, 381. [r] Vide Memoirs, p. 236, 237, 238. [s] Hiſt. of England, p. 383, 384.

King,

King, that he would be graciouſly pleaſed to order it to ſit at Weſtminſter; and Lord Eſſex delivered the petition; but Lord Sunderland refuſed to ſign it, and his Majeſty perſiſted in his reſolution of holding the Parliament at Oxford. It accordingly convened there, on March 21; but the Lords and Commons diſagreeing on the impeachment of Edward Fitzharris, and the bill for excluding the Duke of York from his ſucceſſion to the Crown being read, in the Houſe of Commons, the firſt time, on the 28th, and ordered a ſecond reading, the King, on notice thereof, coming that day to the Houſe of Peers, diſſolved the Aſſembly, and immediately ſet out for Windſor, to prevent being inſulted by the armed multitude which the diſcontented Members had brought with them. In order to ſatisfy the people concerning the diſſolution of this and the preceding Parliament, his Majeſty, on April 8 that year (1681) publiſhed a declaration, in which he enumerated ſeveral reaſons, viz. their intire neglect of the public, and falling into factions; their iſſuing arbitrary orders for taking his loyal ſubjects into cuſtody, for matters that had no relation to privilege of Parliament; their declaring many eminent perſons enemies to the King and kingdom, without any order or proceſs of law, without any hearing of their defence, or any proof ſo much as offered; their reſolves againſt any perſon that ſhould lend him money, or buy any tally of anticipation, thereby endeavouring to reduce him to a more helpleſs condition than the meaneſt of his ſubjects; their taking upon them to ſuſpend the laws and acts of Parliament, by voting againſt the proſecution of Diſſenters. This declaration was ordered to be read in all churches and chapels: and addreſſes of congratulation, from all ranks of people throughout the kingdom, were preſented to his Majeſty for his deliverance from the deſigns of his enemies, with promiſes to ſtand by him with their lives and fortunes in preſervation of his royal perſon, and in defence of his government in church and ſtate.

King Charles II. after that called no Parliament; and in order to ſtrengthen his adminiſtration, re-admitted the Earl of Sunderland into the Privy-Council, on September 20, 1682, and, on January 31 enſuing, conſtituted him principal Secretary of State, in the place of the Earl of Conway, who had ſucceeded his Lordſhip, as before related. Biſhop Burnet has obſerved [t], That the King had an intire confidence in the Earl of Sunderland, and that he was reconciled to the Duke, by the mediation of Laurence Viſcount Hyde, ſoon afterwards created Earl of Rocheſter: "And that his Majeſty was the more de-
"ſirous to have his Lordſhip again near him, that he might
"have ſome body about him, who underſtood foreign affairs.
"Jenkins underſtood nothing; but had ſo much credit with

[t] Hiſtory of his own Time, p. 183, 184.

" the high-church party, that he was of great uſe to the Court. " Lord Conway was ſo very ignorant of foreign affairs, that his " province being the North, when one of the foreign Miniſters " talked to him of the circles of Germany, it amazed him: " he could not imagine what circles had to do with affairs of " ſtate."

The Earl of Sunderland, on his re-admiſſion, was tender of oppoſing the meaſures of the Duke of York, who [u] was reſtored by the King to his place in the Council, and to his offices of profit and honour, without any ſcruple that it was againſt the law to hold them. Yet Biſhop Burnet recites [x], That the King growing uneaſy with the Earl of Rocheſter in the year 1684, he was glad to ſend him from the Court, and conſented to the Duke's requeſt of making him Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. On which Lord Sunderland repreſented to the King, that though it had been cuſtomary for the Lords Lieutenants to be Generals of the Army, as well as Governors of the Kingdom, it was too much in one perſon, as thereby the giving commiſſions brought the army into their dependance; and therefore he propoſed there ſhould be a General of the army independent on the Lord Lieutenant, and who ſhould be a check upon him. He moreover told the King, That if he thought it was a good maxim for the government of Ireland, he ought to begin it, when a creature of his own was ſent thither, who had not ſuch a right to diſpute points of that kind with him, as antient Noblemen might pretend to: and ſuch was the Earl of Sunderland's aſcendancy, that his Majeſty agreed to the propoſal.

The Biſhop alſo relates [y], That Lord Sunderland, not long before the King died, formed a new ſcheme, *that very probably would have for ever broken the King and the Duke.* Yet how it was laid, was ſo great a ſecret he could never penetrate into it. But it was laid at Lady Portſmouth's, and Lord Godolphin was alſo in it. The Duke of Monmouth came over ſecretly; and though the King did not ſee him, yet he went back very well pleaſed with his journey; but he never told his reaſon to any, that he knew of. Mr. May of the Privy-purſe told the Biſhop, a deſign would break out, with which he himſelf would be well pleaſed. " And told him, he knew by the King's way, things " were not yet quite ripe, nor he thoroughly fixed on the deſign. " That with which they were to begin, was, the ſending the " Duke to Scotland. And it was generally believed (ſays the " Biſhop) that if the two brothers ſhould be once parted, they " would never meet again. The King ſpoke to the Duke con- " cerning his going to Scotland; and he anſwered, that there " was no occaſion for it: upon which the King replied, that

[u] Hiſt. of England, p. 415.
[x] Hiſt. of his own Time, p. 274, 275.
[y] Ibid. p. 278, 279.

" either

" either he muſt go, or that he himſelf would go thither. His " Majeſty was obſerved (ſays the Biſhop) to be colder and more " reſerved to the Duke than ordinary. But what was under " all this was ſtill a deep ſecret [z]. He had, for theſe laſt three " years, directed all our Councils, with ſo abſolute an autho- " rity, that the King ſeemed to have left the government " wholly in his hands: yet it is related by all our hiſtorians, " that had the King lived a few months longer, the Duke " would have been ſent from Court."

On the demiſe of King Charles II. the Earl of Sunderland was one of the Privy-Council, that ſigned the order, dated at Whitehall, on February 6, 1684-5, for proclaiming the Duke of York King of England, by the name of James II. and employments ending with the life of the late King, his ſucceſſor, by proclamation [a], ſignified his pleaſure, that all men ſhould continue in their places till his further order. Biſhop Burnet recites [b], " That the Earl of Sunderland was looked on as a " man loſt at Court; and ſo was Lord Godolphin. But the " Earl of Rocheſter, upon his advancement, became ſo violent " and boiſterous, that the whole Court joined to ſupport the Earl " of Sunderland, as a proper balance to the other. And the " Queen was made to conſider the Earl of Rocheſter, as a per- " ſon that would be in the intereſts of the King's daughters; ſo " ſhe ſaw it was neceſſary to have one in a high poſt, who " ſhould depend wholly on her, and the Earl of Sunderland was " the only perſon capable."

His Lordſhip was one [c] of the Commiſſioners, appointed to hear and determine the claims concerning ſervices to be performed at the King's Coronation. After the rebellion of the Duke of Monmouth was ſuppreſſed, on July 6, 1685, the King in his ſpeech to the Parliament, on November 9 that year [d], tells them, " Let no man take exception, that there are ſome " officers in the army not qualified according to the late Teſts " for their employments, &c. I will deal plainly with you, " that after having had the benefit of their ſervices in ſuch time " of need and danger, I will neither expoſe them to diſgrace, " nor myſelf to the want of them, if there ſhould be another " rebellion." To which the Commons, in their addreſs to the King, repreſent, *That the officers cannot by law be capable of their employments; and the incapacities they bring upon themſelves that way, can no way be taken off but by an act of Parliament*, &c. " And therefore beſeech his Majeſty, that he will give ſuch di- " rections therein, that no apprehenſions, or jealouſies, may " remain in the hearts of his loyal ſubjects."

[z] Hiſt. of his own Time, p. 297.
[b] Hiſt. of his own Time, p. 299.
[d] Hiſt. of England, vol. iii. p. 434, 435.
[a] Hiſt. of England, vol. iii. p. 420.
[c] Hiſtory of King James's Coronation.

On that head, the Earl of Sunderland, in his letter to a friend in London, in his own vindication, licenſed on March 23, 1689, ſays, "The diſpenſing power I never heard ſpoken of, "till the time of Monmouth's rebellion, that the King told "ſome of the Council, of which I was one, that he was re- "ſolved to give employments to Roman Catholicks, it being fit "that all perſons ſhould ſerve that could be uſeful, and on "whom he might depend. I think every body adviſed him "againſt it; but with little effect, as was ſoon ſeen. The "party was ſo well pleaſed with what the King had done, that "they perſuaded him to mention it in his ſpeech at the next "meeting of the Parliament; which he did, after many de- "bates whether it was proper or not; in all which I op- "poſed it."

On December 4, 1685, the King [e] in Council declared the Earl of Sunderland (principal Secretary of State) Lord Preſident of the Council, and his Lordſhip took his place at the board the ſame day. By thoſe titles of Lord Preſident of the Council, and principal Secretary of State, he [f] was, A. D. 1686, in the commiſſion of eccleſiaſtical affairs. But his Lordſhip, in that commiſſion, was ſeldom at their meetings, and did all in his power to ſoften any rigorous proceedings. He declares in his letter, on March 23, 1689 [g], *I can moſt truly ſay, and it is well known, that for a good while I defended Magdalen-college, purely by care and induſtry; and have hundreds of times begged of the King, never to grant mandates, or to change any thing in the regular courſe of eccleſiaſtical affairs, which he often thought reaſonable; and afterwards, by perpetual importunities, was prevailed on againſt his own ſenſe. Which was the very caſe of Magdalen-college; as alſo of ſome others.*

Biſhop Burnet relates [h], "He made the ſtep to popery, "without any previous inſtruction or conference: ſo that the "change looked too like a man, who, having no religion, took "up one rather to ſerve a turn, than that he was truly chang- "ed from one religion to another. He has been ſince accuſed, "as if he had done all this to gain credit, more effectually to "ruin the King. There was a ſuſpicion of another nature, "which ſtuck with ſome in England, who thought that Mr. "Sidney [his mother's brother] who had the ſecret of all the "correſpondence between the Prince of Orange and his "party in England [in order to his coming over] being in par- "ticular friendſhip with the Earl of Sunderland, the Earl had "got into that ſecret: and they fancied he would get into the "Prince's confidence by Mr. Sidney's means. So I was writ "to (ſays the Biſhop) and deſired to put it home to the Prince,

[e] Hiſt. of England, præd. p. 440. [f] Ibid. p. 451. [g] Ibid. p. 501.
[h] Hiſtory of his own Time, vol. ii. p. 483.

" *Whether he was in any confidence or correſpondence with the Earl* " *of Sunderland, or not? For till they were ſatisfied in that matter,* " *they would not go on, ſince they believed he would betray all,* " *when things were ripe for it, and that many were engaged in the* " *deſign.* The Prince upon that did ſay very poſitively, *he was* " *in no ſort of correſpondence with him.* His counſels (ſays the " Biſhop) lay then another way; and if his ſcheme had been " followed, the nation might have been ſo laid aſleep, with " promiſes and a different conduct; as in a ſlow method, they " might have that, they were ſo near loſing, by their violent " proceedings."

However, notwithſtanding what has been ſaid, it may very juſtly be imputed to his Lordſhip's temporiſing, and his arguments with the King, whereby he refuſed the French ſuccours that were offered, and diſſuading his Majeſty from ſecuring the principal perſons he ſuſpected, *that the revolution, in* 1688, *was effected.*

As to how far his Lordſhip was concerned, whilſt he was at the head of affairs, Biſhop Kennet, in his Life of James II. under the year 1686, recites: " The King did not only cloſet " his Judges and Officers, on the queſtion of taking off the " *penal laws and teſt*, but ſolicited his Prime Miniſters to be " reconciled to the church of Rome. He firſt undertook the " Earl of Sunderland, who is ſaid to be obſequious to the " King's deſire, but did not care to be *formally reconciled* (as " the term was) *to the church of Rome.*" What the tenour of the diſcourſe the King had with him was never known; but father Petre is ſaid to have extremely magnified the Earl's obedience at a meeting with the Jeſuits; telling them, *It was neneceſſary for him, as yet, to appear a Proteſtant, for weighty reaſons of ſtate.*

At a chapter of the Garter, held on April 26, 1687, his Lordſhip was elected a Knight Companion of that moſt noble Order; and perſonally inſtalled at Windſor, on May 23 following; being placed the twentieth Knight in ſucceſſion, in the ſixteenth ſtall in the chapel of St. George at Windſor [i].

On July 2 the ſame year, the King diſſolved his Parliament, finding they could not be brought to a compliance, in taking off the *penal laws* and *teſts* [k]. The Earl of Sunderland gives this account thereof, in his letter of March 23, 1689: " The " great trial was to take off the *penal laws* and the *teſts*; ſo " many having promiſed their concurrence towards it, that his " Majeſty thought it feaſible; but he ſoon found it was not to " be done by that Parliament, which made all the Catholicks " deſire it might be diſſolved; which I was ſo much againſt, " that they complained of me to the King, as a man who ruined

[i] Pote's Hiſt. and Antiq. of Windſor, p. 302. [k] Hiſt. of England, p. 495.

" all his deſigns, by oppoſing the only thing that could carry " them on. Yet I hindered the diſſolution ſeveral weeks, &c." And as to Ireland, which was then under Tyrconnel's violent government, his Lordſhip could not prevent it; for in his ſaid letter, he thus expreſſes himſelf [l]:

" Lord Tyrconnel was ſo abſolute in Ireland, that I never " had the credit to make an enſign, or keep one in, nor to " preſerve ſome of my friends, for whom I was much concern- " ed, from the laſt oppreſſion and injuſtice; but yet with care " and diligence, being upon the place, and he abſent, I diverted " the calling a Parliament there, which was deſigned to alter " the *acts of ſettlement*. Chief Juſtice Nugent, and Baron Rice, " were ſent over with the draught of an *act* for that purpoſe, " and was there furniſhed with all the preſſing arguments that " could be thought on to perſuade the King, and I was offered " forty thouſand pounds for my concurrence: which I told to " the King, and ſhewed him, at the ſame time, the injuſtice " of what was propoſed to him, and the prejudice it would be " to that country; with ſo good ſucceſs, as he reſolved not to " think of it that year, and perhaps never. This I was helped " in by ſome friends; particularly my Lord Godolphin, who " knows it to be true, and ſo do the Judges before named, " and ſeveral others." As to his Lordſhip's having any hand in adviſing the reading of the King's declaration, in the churches, of his diſpenſing power, for refuſing of which ſeven Biſhops were tried, he gives this account:

" In the midſt of preparations for a new Parliament, and " whilſt the corporations were regulating, the King thought " fit to order his declarations to be read in all churches; of " which, I moſt ſolemnly proteſt, I never heard one word till " the King directed it in Council." And giving an account of what drew on the petition of the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and the other Lords the Biſhops, and their proſecution, his Lordſhip ſays, " That he was ſo openly againſt it, that by arguing " continually to ſhew the injuſtice and imprudence of it, I " brought the fury of the Roman Catholicks upon me to ſuch a " degree, that I was juſt ſinking, and I wiſh I had then ſunk; " but whatever I did fooliſhly to preſerve myſelf, I continued " ſtill to be the object of their hatred; and I reſolved to ſerve " the publick as well as I could: which I am ſure moſt of the " conſiderable Proteſtants then at Court can teſtify."

When the French advertiſed King James of the Prince of Orange's intended deſcent in England, and offered the aſſiſtance of his forces, his Lordſhip adviſed the King not to accept of them. And on that event, Biſhop Burnet [m] has given this ac-

[l] Hiſtory of England, p. 499.

[m] Hiſtory of his own Time, 8°. vol. ii. p. 499, 500.

count:

count: "The King of France, when he gave advertiſements "of the preparations in Holland, offered King James ſuch a "force as he ſhould call for; twelve or fifteen thouſand were "named, or as many more as he ſhould deſire. It was pro-"poſed they ſhould land at Portſmouth, and ſhould have that "place to keep the communication with France open, and in "their hands. All the prieſts were for this, and moſt of the "popiſh Lords. The Earl of Sunderland was the only man in "credit that oppoſed it. He ſaid, the offer of an army of 40,000 "men might be a real ſtrength; but then it would depend on "the orders that came from France. They might perhaps "[with other ſuccours] maſter England; but they would be-"come the King's maſters at the ſame time: ſo that he muſt "govern under ſuch orders as they ſhould give; and thus he "would quickly become only Vice-Roy to the King of France. "Any army leſs than that would loſe his Majeſty the affections "of his people, and drive his own army to deſertion, if not to "mutiny." The Earl of Sunderland, in his own vindication, ſays, "French ſhips were offered to join with our fleet, and "they were refuſed. Since the noiſe of the Prince's deſign, "more ſhips were offered, and it was agreed how they ſhould "be commanded, if ever deſired. I oppoſed to death the ac-"cepting of them, as well as any aſſiſtance of men: and can "ſay moſt truly, that I was the principal means of hindering "both, by the help of ſome Lords, with whom I conſulted every "day, and they with me; to prevent what we thought would "be of great prejudice, if not ruinous to the nation."

When King James was convinced of the intended invaſion of the Prince of Orange, he began to think of reconciling the hearts of his people to him; and to that purpoſe, declared in Council, on Auguſt 24, 1688, that a Parliament ſhould meet on November 27: and to reconcile the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and other Biſhops, to the King, his Lordſhip wrote the following letter to the Archbiſhop of [n] Canterbury.

"[o] My Lord,

"The King thinking it requiſite to ſpeak with your Grace, "and ſeveral others of the Biſhops, who are within a conve-"nient diſtance of this place; his Majeſty commands me to "acquaint you, that he would have you attend him upon Friday "next, at ten in the morning.

"My Lord,

Whitehall, Sept. 24, 1688. "I am your moſt faithful, &c.

"SUNDERLAND P."

[n] Hiſtory of England, p. 519.

[o] Biſhop of Rocheſter's Letter to the Earl of Dorſet, p. 21.

And to give ſatisfaction to the nation, this was publiſhed in the Gazette: "Whitehall, Sept. 30. Several of my Lords the "Biſhops having attended the King on Friday laſt, his Majeſty "was pleaſed, among other gracious expreſſions, to let them "know, *That he would ſignify his pleaſure for taking off the "ſuſpenſion of the Lord Biſhop of London, which is done accord-"ingly.*" Lord Sunderland, in his letter, gives the following account of that and other ſalutary meaſures from his Lordſhip's advice: "Upon the firſt thought of the Prince of Orange's "coming, I laid hold of the opportunity to preſs the King to "do ſeveral things, which I would have had done ſooner; the "chief of which were, To reſtore *Magdalen-college*, and all "other *eccleſiaſtical preferments*, that had been diverted from "what they were intended for: to take off my Lord Biſhop of "London's ſuſpenſion: to put the counties into the ſame hands "they were in ſome time before: to annul the *eccleſiaſtical* "court: and to reſtore intirely all the corporations of Eng-"land. Theſe things were done effectually, by the help of "ſome about the King; and it was then thought I had deſtroy-"ed myſelf, by enraging again the whole Roman Catholick "party to ſuch a height as had not been ſeen: they diſperſed "libels of me every day; told the King that I betrayed him; "that I ruined him, by perſuading him to make ſuch ſhameful "condeſcenſions: *but moſt of all, by hindering the ſecuring the "chief of the diſaffected Nobility and Gentry, which was propoſed "as a certain way to break all the Prince's meaſures: and by ad-"viſing his Majeſty to call a free Parliament, and to depend upon "that, rather than upon foreign aſſiſtance.*

Biſhop Burnet [q] agrees in the ſame relation. "In England, "the Court ſaw now it was in vain to diſſemble, or diſguiſe "their fears any more. The Earl of Melfort, and all the "Papiſts, propoſed the ſeizing on all ſuſpected perſons, and "ſending them to Portſmouth. The Earl of Sunderland op-"poſed this vehemently. He ſaid, *It would not be poſſible to "ſeize on many at the ſame time; and the ſeizing on a few would "alarm all the reſt: it would drive them in to the Prince, and "furniſh them with a pretence for it: he propoſed rather that the "King would do ſuch popular things, as might give ſome content,* "and lay that fermentation with which the nation was then "diſtracted: this was at that time complied with: but all the "popiſh party continued upon this to charge Lord Sunderland "as one in the King's Councils, only to betray them; that "had before diverted the offer of aſſiſtance from France, and "now the ſecuring thoſe, who were moſt likely to join and "aſſiſt the Prince of Orange. By their importunities, the King "was at laſt prevailed on, that he turned him out of all his

[p] Hiſt. of England, p. 520. [q] Hiſt. of his own Time, p. 522.

"places."

"places." His Lordſhip cloſes his letter in his own vindication, whilſt he was employed under King James, as follows:

"At laſt accuſations of high-treaſon were brought againſt "me, which, with ſome other reaſons relating to affairs abroad, "drew the King's diſpleaſure upon me; ſo as to turn me out "of all without any conſideration: and yet I thought I eſcap-"ed well, expecting nothing leſs than the loſs of my head; "as Lord Middleton can tell, and I believe none about the "Court thought otherwiſe: nor had it been otherwiſe, if my "diſgrace had been deferred a day longer, all things being "prepared for it. I was put out the 27th of October; the "Roman Catholicks having been two months working up the "King to it, without intermiſſion, beſides the ſeveral attacks "they had made on me before; and the unuſual aſſiſtance they "obtained to do what they thought neceſſary for the carrying "on their affairs; of which they never had greater hope than "at that time, as may be remembered by any who were then "in London, &c." And the next day the King conferred his place on Sir Richard Graham (Lord Viſcount Preſton) which was publiſhed in the Gazette as follows:

"Whitehall, October 28, 1688. His Majeſty has been "pleaſed to conſtitute the Right Honourable the Lord Viſcount "Preſton, one of his principal Secretaries of State, upon the "removal of the Right Honourable the Earl of Sunderland from "that office."

Immediately after his Lordſhip's diſmiſſion from King James's ſervice, he thought the ſituation he was in required his withdrawing out of the kingdom for his own ſafety; ſo that about the time of the landing of the Prince of Orange in England, his Lordſhip landed in Holland; where he wrote the letter ſo often quoted, diſcovering the deſigns of the Romiſh party, and others, for the ſubverting of the proteſtant religion, and the laws of the kingdom, licenſed on March 23, 1689. And there he reſided till after the ſettlement of the Crown on King William and Queen Mary; but ſo prejudiced were many againſt his Lordſhip, that he was [r] excepted out of the *act of indemnity and free pardon*, which King William ſigned on May 23, 1690. And in 1692, when King James formed a ſcheme for a deſcent into England, and was come to La Hogue to embarque, he ſent over a formal declaration [s], wherein the Earl of Sunderland was, with other Noblemen, excepted from the offer of pardon.

However, about that time, King William, who knew the great abilities of the Earl of Sunderland, conſulted with him on the meaſures neceſſary to be taken in his government. And before his Majeſty went abroad, in the beginning of the year

[r] Biſhop Kennet's Life of King William, in Hiſt. of England, vol. iii. p. 597.
[s] Ibid. p. 639.

1693,

1693, having made ſome alterations in his offices, by giving the great ſeal to Sir John Somers, making Sir John Trenchard Secretary of State, and Mr. Montague (afterwards Earl of Halifax) Chancellor of the Exchequer; it is aſcribed by Biſhop Burnet[t], *to the great credit the Earl of Sunderland had gained with the King, who had now got into his confidence, and declared openly for the Whigs. Theſe advancements* (ſays the Biſhop) *had a great effect on the whole party; and brought them to a much better opinion of the King. But as the employing of them had a very good effect in the King's affairs, ſo a party came to be formed, that ſtudied to croſs and defeat every thing laid by Seymour and Muſgrave.*

And when the King returned to England, in November following, the Biſhop further relates[u], "that he ſaw the neceſſity of changing both his meaſures and his miniſtry; he expreſſed his diſlike of the whole conduct of the ſea, and named Ruſſel for the command of the fleet next year. He diſmiſſed the Earl of Nottingham, and brought the Earl of Shrewſbury again into the Miniſtry, making him Secretary of State, to the general ſatisfaction of the Whigs. But the perſon, that had the King's confidence to the higheſt degree, was the Earl of Sunderland, who by his long experience, and his knowledge of men and things, had gained an aſcendant over him, and had more credit with him, than any Engliſhman ever had. He had brought the King to his change of Councils, by the proſpect he gave him of the ill condition his affairs were in, if he did not intirely both truſt and ſatisfy thoſe, who, in the preſent conjuncture, were the only party, that both could and would ſupport him. It was ſaid, that the true ſecret of this change of meaſures was, that the Tories ſignified to the King plainly, that they could carry on the war no longer, and that he muſt accept of ſuch a peace as could be had. This was the moſt pernicious thing that could be thought on, and moſt contrary to the King's notions and deſigns; ſo the Whigs were now in favour again, and every thing was done to put them in good humour."

In 1695, the King made a progreſs into the North, and ſtaid ſome days with the Earl of Sunderland at Althorp, which was (ſays Biſhop Burnet[x]) the firſt public mark of the high favour he was in. The Biſhop afterwards gives ſome account of his Lordſhip's endeavours for reconciling the Whigs and Tories in ſupport of his Majeſty's government; but they proved ineffectual, on a difference between Queen Mary and her ſiſter, the Princeſs Anne of Denmark. The Dutcheſs of Marlborough gives the following account of his Lordſhip's intereſt with King Wil-

[t] Hiſt. of his own Time, vol. iii. p. 148, 149. [u] Ibid. p. 170, 171.
[x] Ibid. p. 227.

liam,

liam, and of his good diſpoſition to the Princeſs: "On [y] the "death of the Queen, the Princeſs, by advice of Lord Sun- "derland, wrote a letter to the King, *expreſſing her great af- "fliction in the loſs of the Queen, &c. and her earneſt deſire to "wait upon his Majeſty, &c.* Quickly [z] after this letter, the "Princeſs, with the King's conſent, and at a time when he "appointed, waited on him at Kenſington, and was received "with extraordinary civility. The perſon who wholly ma- "naged the affair between the King and Princeſs, was my Lord "Sunderland. He had, upon all occaſions relating to her, "ſhewed himſelf a man of ſenſe and breeding; and before "there was any thought of the Queen's dying, had deſigned "to uſe his utmoſt endeavours to make up the breach; in "which however, I am perſuaded, he could not have ſucceed- "ed during the Queen's life. Her death made it eaſy to him "to bring the King to a reconcilement; and he alſo perſuaded "his Majeſty to give the Princeſs St. James's houſe. And "ſome other favours were granted to her Royal Highneſs, at "his Lordſhip's requeſt [a]. When the Duke of Glouceſter "was arrived at the age to be put into mens hands, and his "Highneſs's family was ſettled, the King (influenced in this "particular by my Lord Sunderland) ſent the Princeſs word, "that though he intended to put in all the preceptors, he "would leave it to her, to chuſe the reſt of the ſervants, ex- "cept one, who was to be Deputy Governor, and Gentleman "of the Duke's Bedchamber. This meſſage was ſo humane, "and of ſo different an air from any thing the Princeſs had "been uſed to, that it gave her an extreme pleaſure."

In 1697, the King more publickly expreſſed his favour to his Lordſhip, by appointing him, on April 19, Lord Chamberlain, in place of the Earl of Dorſet; and three days after his Lord- ſhip was ſworn at Kenſington of the Privy-Council, and took his place at the board accordingly. Alſo the ſame day, his Majeſty, in Council at Kenſington, declared his Lordſhip one of the Lords Juſtices of England for the adminiſtration of the government during his abſence. And on June 4 following, his Lordſhip, as Lord Chamberlain, ſent an order to prevent the prophaneneſs and immorality of the ſtage.

The major part of the Houſe of Commons, after the peace of Ryſwick, in 1697, were jealous of a ſtanding army, and diſliked the King's offering his opinion in the point. The ma- nagers for the Court in the Houſe of Commons had no orders (ſays Biſhop Burnet [b]) to name any number of men to be kept up, ſo they came to a reſolution of diſbanding all the forces

[y] The Conduct of the Dowager Dutcheſs of Marlborough, p. 108. [z] Ibid. p. 110, 111. [a] Ibid. p. 116, 117. [b] Hiſt. of his own Time, 8°. vol. ii. p. 285.

raiſed ſince 1680, which reduced them to 7,000 men to be kept in pay in England. "The Court was ſtruck with this, "and then tried to raiſe the number to 15,000, horſe and foot. "If this had been propoſed in time, it would probably have "been carried; but the King was ſo long on the reſerve, that "when he thought fit to ſpeak out his mind, he found it was "too late. This gave the King the greateſt diſtaſte of any thing "that had befallen him in his whole reign. During theſe de-"bates [c], the Earl of Sunderland had argued with many on "the neceſſity of keeping a greater force; and he was charged "(ſays the Biſhop) as the author of the council of keeping on "foot a ſtanding army, ſo he was often named in the Houſe of "Commons with ſeveral reflections. The *Tories* preſſed hard "upon him, and the *Whigs* were ſo jealous of him, that he, "apprehending that while the former would attack him, the "others would defend him faintly, reſolved to prevent a pub-"lick affront, and to retire from the Court, and from buſineſs; "not only againſt the intreaties of his friends, but even the "King's earneſt deſire that he would continue about him. "Indeed (ſays the Biſhop) upon this occaſion his Majeſty ex-"preſſed ſuch a concern and value for him, that the jealouſies "were encreaſed by the confidence the Court ſaw the King had "in him. During the time of his credit, things had been car-"ried on with more ſpirit and better ſucceſs than before: he "had gained ſuch an aſcendant over the King, that he brought "him to agree to ſome things, that few expected he would have "yielded to: he managed the publick affairs, in both Houſes, "with ſo much ſteadineſs, and ſo good a conduct, that he had "procured to himſelf a greater meaſure of eſteem, than he had "in any of the former parts of his life: and the feebleneſs, "and disjointed ſtate we fell into after he withdrew, contributed "not a little to eſtabliſh the character, which his adminiſtration "had gained him."

The Biſhop mentions not the time of his Lordſhip's reſigna-tion, but the Gazette, N° 3353, gives the following account of it: "Kenſington, December 26, (1697.) The Right Ho-"nourable the Earl of Sunderland having deſired his Majeſty's "leave to reſign the office of Lord Chamberlain of his Houſe-"hold; his Lordſhip accordingly delivered up the white ſtaff "this evening."

King William was ſo diſſatisfied with the diſbanding of the forces, eſpecially with being obliged to ſend home his Dutch guards, that, on February 1 following, when he paſſed the bill, he made a memorable ſpeech, which did variouſly affect the Commons, who returned no addreſs of thanks; but it was not adviſed by the Earl of Sunderland; for his Lordſhip, after his

[c] Hiſt. of his own Time, 8°. vol. ii. p. 286.

reſignation,

reſignation, went directly to his ſeat at Althorp, and there ſpent the remainder of his life, without coming to Council, or troubling himſelf with public affairs. His Lordſhip married the Lady Anne Digby, ſecond and youngeſt daughter to [d] George Earl of Briſtol, Knight of the Garter, by Anne his wife, daughter of Francis Ruſſel, Earl of Bedford, and ſiſter, and at length heir, to John Digby, Earl of Briſtol, who died in 1698, without iſſue. She was a Lady diſtinguiſhed for her refined ſenſe, ſubtle wit, admirable addreſs, and every ſhining quality. His Lordſhip had iſſue by her three ſons, and four daughters:

1. Robert Lord Spencer, born in 1664, who was, in Auguſt, 1687 [e], ſent to Italy, Envoy Extraordinary to his Highneſs the Duke of Modena, to make the compliments of condolance, in their Majeſties names, on the death of the Dutcheſs of Modena, the Queen's mother; and, on his return [f], died at Paris in France, on September 5, 1688:

2. Charles, third Earl of Sunderland; and, 3. Henry, who died within an hour after he was baptiſed.

Lady Anne, eldeſt daughter, born on June 24, 1666, at Chiſwick in Middleſex, was the firſt wife of James Earl of Arran, of the kingdom of Scotland, afterwards Duke Hamilton, and Duke of Brandon; and died in 1690.

Lady Elizabeth was married [g], on Oct. 30, 1684, to Donagh Maccarty, Earl of Clancarty, of the Kingdom of Ireland.

Lady Iſabella died unmarried, in 1684; and Lady Mary died aged five years.

His Lordſhip departed this life, at his ſeat at Althorp, on September 28, 1702 [h], and, on October 7 following, was buried with his anceſtors at Brington; leaving his Lady ſurviving, who died on April 16, 1715, [i] and on the 26th of the ſame month was buried by him. He was ſucceeded in honour and eſtate by Charles his only ſon and heir.

Which Charles, third Earl of Sunderland, had his education under the learned Dr. T.mnel, who was ſucceſſively Biſhop of Norwich and Wincheſter, from 1708 to 1723: and his Lordſhip, as ſoon as he came of age, was choſen [k] for two ſeveral boroughs, Heydon in Yorkſhire, and Tiverton in com. Devon, in that Parliament called in 1695, the 7th year of King William, and taking his ſeat for the latter, was afterwards elected for the ſame to four ſucceeding Parliaments, whilſt he was a Commoner.

On Saturday, January 12, 1694-5, his Lordſhip married the Lady Arabella, youngeſt daughter and coheir of his Grace Henry Cavendiſh, Duke of Newcaſtle [l]. Her Ladyſhip was

[d] Ex Stemmate de Famil. Digby. [e] Hiſt. of England, vol. iii. p. 496.
[f] Ex Collect. T. Miller, MS. penes meipſ. [g] Ibid. [h] Ex Regiſt. Eccl. de Brington. [i] Ibid. [k] Willis's Notitia Parl. vol. ii. p. 386.
[l] Hiſt. Collect. of the Family of Cavendiſh, &c. p. 47.

born

born on Auguſt 19, 1673, and died on Saturday, June 4, 1698, leaving iſſue, by her Lord, an only daughter, the Lady Frances Spencer, married, on November 27, 1717, to Henry Lord Morpeth, whoſe iſſue may be ſeen in the account of the Earl of Carliſle.

On Tueſday, January 16, 1699 [m], his Lordſhip took, to his ſecond wife, the Lady Anne, ſecond daughter, and one of the coheirs, of John Churchill, Duke of Marlborough.

In the beginning of the year 1705 [n], his Lordſhip attended Queen Anne, and her Royal Conſort, to Newmarket: and her Majeſty, with the Prince, appointing the 16th of April for viſiting the Univerſity of Cambridge, the Earl of Sunderland, with ſeveral other Noblemen then preſent, had the degree of Doctors in law conferred on them.

On June 26, the ſame year [o], his Lordſhip embarked at Greenwich for Holland, being appointed her Majeſty's Envoy Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary, to make the compliments of condolance on the death of the Emperor Leopold, as alſo of congratulation to his ſucceſſor the Emperor Joſeph: and to endeavour, by the Queen's mediation, to compoſe the differences betwen his Imperial Majeſty and his ſubjects in Hungary.

His Lordſhip, after taking a view of the army, and conferring with the Duke of Marlborough [p], arrived at Vienna, on Auguſt 26, N. S. And when the compliments of condolance and congratulation were over, his Lordſhip, with the Dutch Plenipotentiaries, had conferences with the Imperial Miniſters, and the Hungarian Deputies, to remove ſeveral difficulties that retarded the negotiation of peace between them, till October 26, when they ſet out for Tyrnau, the place appointed for the treaty. They intended to have been there the next day, but did not arrive till the 28th, being retarded by the numerous guard, the Hungarians ſent to attend them [q]; and were received there with all the demonſtrations of joy, and marks of reſpect, by Count Berezini, and the chief of the Hungarians. The Imperial Court had appointed Preſburgh for the place of treaty, and with difficulty they brought both parties to agree, that the Imperial Commiſſioners ſhould continue at Preſburgh, and the Hungarians at Tyrnau; and that a place, within an equal diſtance of thoſe towns, ſhould be for their meeting together. After ſeveral conferences, his Lordſhip, with Mr. Stepney the Britiſh Envoy, ſet out from Tyrnau, on November 2, for Preſburgh, where the next day they conferred with the Imperial Commiſſioners, on a propoſal for a ceſſation of arms; and two days after, his Lordſhip ſet out with Mr. Stegney for Vienna, to attend the Duke of Marlborough's arrival, leaving the

[m] MS. Ex Collect. T. Miller. [n] Annals of Queen Anne, year 4th, p. 12.
[o] Ibid. p. 21. [p] Annals, præd. p. 94. [q] Ibid. p. 96, 97.

Dutch

Dutch Miniſters to carry on the mediation. His Grace came to Vienna on November 12; and [r] on the 19th the Earl of Sunderland had his audiences of leave of the Emperor and Empreſs; alſo the next day of the Empreſs Dowager, and the Arch-Dutcheſſes. His Imperial Majeſty preſented his Lordſhip with his picture ſet with diamonds; and the Duke of Marlborough at that time had a grant, from the Emperor, of the lordſhip of Mindelheim in Suabia, which was erected into a principality.

On November 23, his Grace, accompanied by the Earl of Sunderland, left Vienna, and proceeded to the Court of Berlin; where they arrived on the 30th [s], their Imperial and Pruſſian Majeſties having given orders, in their reſpective dominions, that they ſhould be accommodated ſuitably to their high rank in their journey of 532 miles. The Duke went the ſame night to Court, and had a conference with the King of Pruſſia. The next day he preſented the Earl of Sunderland to his Majeſty, the Prince Royal, and the King's two brothers, who received his Lordſhip with all imaginable marks of eſteem. They afterwards ſupped with his Majeſty, the Prince Royal, and the King's brothers; and alſo dined with them the next day at the great Chamberlain's. His Grace renewed the treaty, for 8,000 men to be employed in Italy; and adjuſting ſome difficulties, ſet out with the Earl of Sunderland from Berlin, on December 3, N. S in the evening. The King of Pruſſia preſented his Grace with a ſword, enriched with diamonds; and the Earl of Sunderland with a diamond ring of great value.

The 6th of the ſame month they arrived at Hanover; and waited the ſame evening on his electoral Highneſs (afterwards King George I.) the Electreſs Dowager, &c.; and were received with marks of diſtinction, due to their quality, and extraordinary merits. They preſented his Grace with a fine calaſh, and ſix horſes; and the Earl of Sunderland with a ſet of horſes.

On December 9, they ſet out early from Hanover, and arrived at the Hague on the 14th; and after his Grace had ſettled ſeveral important affairs with the States General, he embarked [t] with the Earl of Sunderland at the Brill, on December 27; and arrived at St. James's on the 30th, at night, about eleven o'clock. His Grace, on the meeting of the Parliament, had the thanks of both Houſes, *For his great ſervices in the laſt campaign, and for his prudent negotiations with her Majeſty's allies*; as he had alſo, at the end of every campaign, during his command, for every ſignal ſucceſs.

The campaign that year was attended with various fortune; the brave Prince Eugene, with an army almoſt wholly unprovided of cloaths, arms, ammunition, or proviſions, had kept the French army, under the Duke of Vendoſme, from compaſſing

[r] Annals, præd. 98. [s] Ibid. p. 101, 102, 103. [t] Ibid. p. 216.

their

their great deſigns. Therefore the Duke of Marlborough, and the Earl of Sunderland, when at Vienna, being ſenſible of his ſervices and wants, had convinced his Imperial Majeſty of the neceſſity of ſupplying him with forces and money: ſo that, on their return, the Imperial Miniſters in England preſented a memorial to the Queen, deſiring a loan of 250,000 l. ſterling, for ſupply of the army in Italy, on ſecurity of all his lands, rents and revenues whatſoever, within the province of Sileſia; as alſo the ſecurity of the ſtates of that province. Whereupon her Majeſty, by her letters patent, bearing date February 26, 1705-6, the 4th year of her reign [u], recommended to her loving ſubjects the ſpeedy making of the ſaid loan, as a matter acceptable, &c. and of the greateſt advantage to the war in general. Accordingly books being opened at Mercers Chapel, on March 7, for taking ſubſcriptions towards lending the ſaid 250,000 l. at 8 *per cent.* purſuant to the ſaid letters patent, his Royal Highneſs Prince George ſent his ſubſcription of 20,000 l. the Duke of Marlborough, 10,000 l. the Earl of Godolphin, Lord High-Treaſurer, 5,000 l. the Earl of Sunderland, 2,500 l. &c. whereby, in five days, the whole ſubſcription was fully compleated.

On April 10, 1706, his Lordſhip [x] was appointed one of the Engliſh Commiſſioners, for treating on an union with Scotland: who, on their meeting, agreed to appoint a Committee of eleven on each ſide, and of them, any ſix to have power to adjuſt the ſeveral points in debate; and his Lordſhip, at a meeting of the Engliſh Commiſſioners [y], on May 1, was nominated one of the Committee of eleven before-mentioned, with power to adjourn themſelves. He alſo [z] ſet his hand and ſeal to the articles agreed on by the Commiſſioners of both kingdoms, for the Union, on July 22, 1706. On December 3, the ſame year, his Lordſhip [a] was ſworn of her Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-Council, and one of her principal Secretaries of State, in the room of Sir Charles Hedges.

In 1708, a new Privy-Council being ſettled, according to an act paſſed for rendering the union of the two kingdoms more entire and compleat, his Lordſhip [b], on May 10, was ſworn thereof; and in 1709-10, at the trial of Dr. Henry Sacheverel, he was [c] one of the ſixty-nine Peers, that pronounced him guilty, when fifty-nine voted him not guilty.

Dr. Sacheverel had ſo favourable a ſentence, as to be at liberty to ſojourn where he pleaſed; and his itinerant proceſſions, through ſeveral parts of the kingdom, cauſing riots and diſorders, the Earl of Bradford, Lord Lieutenant of Shropſhire, laid

[u] Annals, ut antea, p. 126, 127. [x] Annals, year 5th, p. 12. [y] Ibid. p. 20. [z] Appendix in Annals, year 5th, p. 25. [a] Annals, p. 491. [b] Pointer's Chron. Hiſt. vol. ii. p. 592, 593. [c] Ibid. p. 630.

before

before the Earl of Sunderland a repreſentation of ſeveral Gentlemen of the ſaid county, concerning the tumults, ſeditions, &c. on that occaſion.

His Lordſhip laying it before the Queen and Council, he was ordered to return an anſwer; and, in conſequence thereof, on April 10, 1710, wrote to the Earl of Bradford, "That "her Majeſty expreſſed her diſlike to thoſe riotous and ſedi- "tious proceedings, &c. by which the publick peace is broken: "and that it was her Majeſty's pleaſure, that his Lordſhip, and "the Gentlemen of the county, ſhould effectually proſecute "the offenders, with the utmoſt ſeverity of the law." Which letter of the Earl of Bradford's, with his repreſentation, and the anſwer thereto, being publiſhed in the Gazette [d], it gave ſuch offence to the *high-church* party, that they uſed all endeavours to get his Lordſhip removed from his place of Secretary of State.

The Dowager Dutcheſs of Marlborough, *in the Account of her own Conduct* [e], gives the following relation of their inveteracy: "About the beginning of June, the deſign of turning out Lord "Sunderland began to be talked of. Lord Marlborough was "now abroad, at the head of the army. As ſoon as the news "reached him, he wrote a very moving letter to the Queen, "repreſenting the very ill conſequences it would neceſſarily "have upon all affairs abroad, to have his ſon-in-law, againſt "whoſe fidelity nothing could be objected, and in whom the "Allies had ſo entire a confidence, turned out of her ſervice "in the middle of a campaign: and begging it, as a reward "of all his paſt ſervices, that ſhe would at leaſt delay her reſo- "lution, till the campaign was ended. I was likewiſe (ſays "the Dutcheſs) urged by ſome friends, to try to ſay ſomething "to divert, if poſſible, ſuch a ſtroke; becauſe it was given out, "that the Queen would do this chiefly on my account, that I "might feel the effects of her diſpleaſure, in ſo ſenſible and "tender a point. No conſideration, proper to myſelf, could "have induced me to trouble the Queen again, after our laſt "converſation: but I was overcome by the conſideration of "Lord Marlborough, Lord Sunderland, and the publick in- "tereſt, and wrote in the beſt manner I could to the Queen, "June 7, 1710; begging, for Lord Marlborough's ſake, that "ſhe would not give him ſuch a blow, of which I dreaded "the conſequence; putting her in mind of her letter about "the Duke upon the victory at Blenheim, &c." Her Grace likewiſe wrote [f] a ſecond letter to her Majeſty, concluding, *that ſhe begged it on her knees, &c.* And gives [g] this further account: "Whether my interfering in this matter, haſtened the

[d] Annals, year 9th, p. 187, 188, 189. [e] Page 253, 254. [f] Vide her Conduct, p. 255, 256. [g] Ibid. p. 257.

" execution of the deſign, I cannot ſay. Certain it is, that " it did not retard it, for Lord Sunderland was preſently after " diſmiſſed from his office. On which occaſion ſeveral great " men, who wiſhed well to their country, and who feared " Lord Marlborough might in diſguſt quit the ſervice, wrote " him a joint letter, &c." Which letter runs thus[h]:

" My Lord, June 14, 1710.

" We ſhould not have given your Grace the trouble of this " joint letter, but for the great concern and uneaſineſs in " which we find you, on account of my Lord Sunderland, by " your letter of the 20th to my Lord Treaſurer, which he has " communicated to us. That letter, as moving and as rea- " ſonable as it was, has not hindered the *ſeals* from being taken " this morning from my Lord Sunderland. No wonder then " if the utmoſt endeavours which could be uſed to prevent it, " and the ſtrong arguments which have been made of the ill " conſequences that muſt attend ſuch ſteps, both at home and " abroad, have met with little ſucceſs. We find ourſelves ſo " much afflicted with this misfortune, that we cannot but be " extremely ſenſible of the great mortification this muſt give " you at this critical juncture, when you are every moment " hazarding your life in the ſervice of your country; and whilſt " the fate of Europe depends, in ſo great a degree, on your con- " duct, and good ſucceſs: but we are alſo as fully convinced, " that it is impoſſible for your Grace to quit the ſervice at this " time, without the utmoſt hazard to the whole alliance. And " we muſt therefore conjure you, by the glory you have already " obtained, by the many ſervices you have done your Queen " and Country, by the expectation you have juſtly raiſed in " all Europe, and by all that is dear and tender to you at " home, whoſe chief dependance is upon your ſucceſs, that " you would not leave this great work unfiniſhed, but con- " tinue at the head of the army. This we look upon as the " moſt neceſſary ſtep that can be taken to prevent the diſſolu- " tion of this Parliament. Your Grace's compliance with this " our earneſt requeſt, would be the greateſt obligation to us, " and all that wiſh well to our country. And you may de- " pend upon it, that the contrary will be the greateſt ſatisfac- " tion to your enemies. We are, my Lord, your Grace's moſt " humble and obedient ſervants,

" Cowper, C. Devonſhire. Godolphin. Orford. Somers.
" Halifax. Newcaſtle. H. Boyle."

[h] Vide her Conduct, p. 257, 258, 259.

The removal of the Earl of Sunderland had an immediate effect on the funds and the public credit at home; whereby it gave an alarm to all the Courts in the grand alliance. But being charged with no error or blemiſh on his character, that his remove might not appear too ungracious, her Majeſty, as a teſtimony of her ſatisfaction with his ſervices, was pleaſed to ſend notice to his Lordſhip [l], *That ſhe deſigned to grant him* 3,000 l. *per annum, to be ſettled upon him for life.* On which his Lordſhip, with a generoſity and integrity hardly paralleled, anſwered, *He was glad her Majeſty was ſatisfied he had done his duty; but if he could not have the honour to ſerve his country, he would not plunder it.* To recount by what means the Miniſtry was totally changed, is no part of what I am treating.

Four days after King George I. made his entry into the city of London, he thought proper to make ſome removes among the great officers, that were in the laſt Miniſtry of Queen Anne; and was pleaſed to appoint the Earl of Sunderland Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, in [k] the room of the Duke of Shrewſbury, on September 24, 1714. On the 27th of the ſame month, his Majeſty diſſolving his Privy-Council, and appointing a new one to meet on October 1, his Lordſhip [l] was then ſworn thereof, and took his place at the board. The year after, his Lordſhip was much indiſpoſed in his health, which not permitting his going over into Ireland [m], he reſigned the government thereof, on Auguſt 23, 1715.

Five days after his reſignation, he [n] was conſtituted Lord Privy-Seal; and on February 10, 1715-16, had [o] a grant of the office of joint Vice-Treaſurer of Ireland, with Henry Earl of Rocheſter. On April 15, 1716, his [p] Lady (daughter of the Duke of Marlborough) deceaſed, which was a ſenſible grief to his Lordſhip.

At the death of John Lord Somers, on April 26, 1716 [q], he was, in May following, elected one of the Governors of the Charter-Houſe, a truſt to which none of late have been choſen, but of the prime Nobility, and chief Officers of State. Alſo, on July 6 the ſame year, he was conſtituted ſole Vice-Treaſurer of Ireland; and in September attended the King to Hanover, Commiſſioners being appointed for executing the office of Lord Privy-Seal during his Lordſhip's abſence. He returned with his Majeſty to England, on January 18, 1716-17.

Having reſigned the office of Lord Privy-Seal to the Duke of Kingſton, his Majeſty was pleaſed, on April 12, 1717, to appoint his Lordſhip one of his principal Secretaries of State; and on the 16th he was ſworn in Council, and took his place at

[l] Annals, ut antea, p. 230. [k] Pointer's Chron. Hiſt. part iii. p. 777.
[l] Ibid. p. 779. [m] Ibid. p. 850. [n] Ibid. p. 851. [o] Ibid. p. 895.
[p] Ibid. p. 910. [q] Ibid. p. 911.

the board accordingly. On October 6 following, his Lordſhip accompanied his Majeſty in his viſit to the Univerſity of Cambridge.

On March 16, 1717-18, the King was pleaſed to declare his Lordſhip Lord Preſident of the Privy-Council, and thereupon he took his place at the board accordingly. On March 21 following, his Majeſty appointed him firſt Commiſſioner of the Treaſury, in the room of James Viſcount Stanhope, who ſucceeded him as Secretary of State. His Lordſhip was then known to be the firſt in the King's favour and confidence, and ſo continued to the time of his deceaſe.

On reſigning his place of Lord Preſident of the Privy-Council to the Duke of Kingſton, who was ſworn into that truſt at St. James's, on February 6, 1718-19, his Lordſhip the ſame day was appointed, by his Majeſty, Groom of the Stole, and firſt Gentleman of his Bedchamber. Moreover the King, on May 9, 1719, declaring, in Council, his intentions of leaving the kingdom for a ſhort time, he was nominated, by his Majeſty, one of the Lords Juſtices, in whoſe hands he thought fit to entruſt the Government during his abſence.

There was then a war with Spain, and the late Duke of Ormond was ſpirited up to make an attempt to land in England or Ireland; and was in the fleet fitted out by the Spaniards for that purpoſe, which ſailed from Cadiz on February 23, O. S. but were ſo entirely diſperſed by a ſtorm, on March 18, about fifty leagues to the weſt of Cape Finiſterre, as put an end to their deſigns of an invaſion. However, ſome of the Lords of Scotland, who had been attainted, and were to act in concert with the Duke, landed in the Highlands with a few Spaniards, and gave ſome trouble; though they, with their party, were defeated at Glenſhiel, on June 10; but the Marquis of Tullibardine, the Earl Mariſhal, with his brother James (the renowned Marſhal Keith) the Earl of Seaforth, Lord George Murray, &c. who had come over from Spain, got ſafe to the continent, after ſkulking ſome time in Scotland. When that affair was over, his Lordſhip, about the end of October, ſet out for Hanover, to wait on his Majeſty, by whom he was moſt graciouſly received at his arrival there, on September 3.

His Lordſhip returned to the Hague, on November 7, O. S. having attended on the King till his return to England, who came to St. James's on November 14, 1719. At a chapter of the Garter, held at St. James's on Nov. 30 following, he was elected into that moſt noble Order; and inſtalled on May 24, 1720.

On June 11, 1720, he was again declared one of the Lords Juſtices, for the adminiſtration of government during the King's abſence that year; but in the beginning of September, his Lordſhip

ſhip ſet out from his houſe in Piccadilly for Hanover, where he was received by his Majeſty with great marks of diſtinction.

On November 5, the King arrived at Helvoetſluys, and Lord Sunderland embarked with his Majeſty, who put to ſea, but was obliged by contrary winds to return thither on the 7th. On the 9th they embarked again, and landing at Margate on the 10th in the evening, came to St. James's the next day.

In the ſucceeding year, 1721, his Majeſty made his abode in England; and his Lordſhip continued at the head of affairs, and in favour with his Sovereign, till the day of his death, on April 19, 1722.

His Lordſhip was diſtinguiſhed by his encouragement of learning, and learned men; and very much enlarged the library of his family, by purchaſing all valuable books that were publiſhed. It may be juſtly ſaid, his integrity in the public ſervice cannot more evidently appear, than by his not making any addition to his eſtate, though he was Prime Miniſter for ſeveral years.

His Lordſhip by his ſecond Lady, Anne, daughter and coheir of John Duke of Marlborough, as before-mentioned, had iſſue four ſons, and two daughters.

1. Robert Lord Spencer, born on December 2, 1700, and died on September 12, the year following.

2. Robert Lord Spencer, afterwards Earl of Sunderland, who, after a polite education, ſet out on his travels, and landing with King George I. at Helvoetſluys, on May 12, 1719, continued beyond the ſeas, till May 18, after the death of his father. His Lordſhip, afterwards going again beyond the ſeas, was ſeized at Paris with a fever, which after eleven days illneſs put a period to his life, in the twenty-eighth year of his age, on November 27, 1729: and dying unmarried, his honours and eſtate devolved on his next brother, Charles, late Earl of Sunderland, Duke of Marlborough, &c. But before I treat of his Grace, I ſhall proceed to give an account of his younger brother, and ſiſters; and of his father's third marriage.

The Honourable John Spencer, the fourth ſon of the Earl of Sunderland, born on May 13, 1708, ſhall be treated of fully under the title of Viſcount Spencer.

Lady Anne Spencer, eldeſt daughter of the Earl of Sunderland, by his ſecond marriage, was married to William Viſcount Bateman, of the kingdom of Ireland, and of Shobdon-Court in Herefordſhire.

Lady Diana Spencer, ſecond and youngeſt daughter, was married to his Grace, John Duke of Bedford, but died on September 27, 1735, leaving no iſſue.

The third wife of the Earl of Sunderland, which he married on December 5, 1717 [r], was Judith, daughter and coheir of Benjamin Tichborne, Eſq; brother to Henry Viſcount Tichborne, grandſon of Sir Henry Tichborne, Knt. one of the Lords Juſtices of Ireland, temp. Carol. I. fourth ſon of Sir Benjamin Tichborne, of Tichborne in com. Southampton, Knight and Baronet. By that Lady (who ſecondly married Sir Robert Sutton, of Broughton in com. Lincoln, Knight of the Bath) he left iſſue one ſon, born on October 5, 1718, named William, who died of the inoculation of the ſmall-pox, on April 21, 1722, and was buried at the ſame time with his father at Brington. He had alſo by her a daughter, Lady Margaret; and a poſthumous ſon, baptized on October 19, 1722, named George; but they both died in their infancies; and their mother died in May, 1749.

Charles Duke of Marlborough, Marquis of Blandford, Earl of Sunderland, &c. the third ſon, before-mentioned, at the death of William Marquis of Blandford, only ſon and heir of Francis Earl of Godolphin, and his wife Henrietta, Dutcheſs of Marlborough, on Auguſt 24, 1731, ſucceeded to the title of Marquis of Blandford; alſo to an annual rent charge of 8,000 l. *per annum*, purſuant to the will of his Grace, John Churchill, Duke of Marlborough: and at the deceaſe of Henrietta, Dutcheſs of Marlborough, on October 24, 1733, ſucceeded to the title of Duke of Marlborough, &c. as heir to the Lady Anne Churchill, his mother, ſecond daughter and coheir to the ſaid John Duke of Marlborough.

His Grace inclining to a martial life, his Majeſty was pleaſed, on March 30, 1738, to conſtitute him Colonel of the thirty-eighth regiment of foot; and on September 10, 1739 [s], Colonel of the firſt regiment of dragoons.

On January 26, 1738-9, his Grace was appointed Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of the Counties of Oxford and Buckingham; alſo ſoon after made one of the Lords of his Majeſty's Bedchamber; and on May 6, 1740, conſtituted Captain and Colonel of the ſecond troop of his Majeſty's Horſe-guards.

At a chapter of the moſt noble Order of the Garter, held at the palace of St. James, on March 20, 1741 2, his Grace, having been firſt knighted by his Majeſty, was elected one of the Knights Companions of that moſt noble Order; and, on April 21 following, was with great magnificence inſtalled at Windſor, with the Dukes of St. Alban's, Kingſton, and Portland, being placed in the twelfth ſtall on the Prince's ſide.

[r] Ex Collect. Rob. Dale, Richmond Fecial. [s] Millan's Succeſſion of Colonels.

On

On February 20, 1741-2, his Majeſty conferred on his Grace the ſecond regiment of foot-guards, in the room of the Duke of Cumberland, promoted to the command of the firſt regiment: and, on February 26 the year after, his Grace was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-general of his Majeſty's forces.

In 1743, when the late King put himſelf at the head of the army, his Grace went over with his Majeſty, and had the command of the brigade of foot-guards, which remarkably diſtinguiſhed themſelves at the battle of Dettingen, on June $\frac{16}{27}$, 1743.

On October 5, 1744, his Grace reſigned his regiment of foot-guards, having that year, on the deceaſe of Sarah Dutcheſs of Marlborough, ſucceeded to the Duke of Marlborough's eſtate.

On the breaking out of the rebellion, in 1745, his Grace was conſtituted Major-general of his Majeſty's Forces; and on September 15, 1747, Lieutenant-general of the Forces.

In 1749, he was declared Lord Steward of the King's Houſhold; and thereupon, by his Majeſty's command, being ſworn of the Privy-Council, took his place at that board as Lord Steward of the Houſhold, on June 12, that year. On April 17, 1750, his Majeſty in Council declaring his intention of leaving the kingdom for a ſhort time, was pleaſed to appoint his Grace one of the Lords Juſtices, for the adminiſtration of the government during his abſence. And on July 12 following, his Grace, with the Duke of Richmond, and the Duke of Portland, by commiſſion from his Majeſty, inſtalled his Royal Highneſs George Prince of Wales, a Knight of the moſt noble Order of the Garter. At the deceaſe of the Duke of Richmond ſoon after, his Grace was choſen to ſucceed him, as one of the Governors of the Charter-Houſe, on September 27, the ſame year.

On March 30, 1752, when his Majeſty declared his reſolution of viſiting his dominions in Germany, he was again nominated one of the Lords Juſtices during his Majeſty's abſence.

His Grace, with the Duke of Cumberland, and the great Officers of State, were Commiſſioners for opening the ſeſſion of Parliament at Weſtminſter, on May 31, 1754; alſo in another commiſſion for putting an end to the ſeſſion, on June 5 following, when they prorogued it to Thurſday, Auguſt 8.

On the deceaſe of John Earl Gower, Lord Privy-Seal, his Majeſty was pleaſed, on January 7, 1755, to grant to his Grace the office of Keeper of his Majeſty's Privy-Seal. On December 23 following, his Grace reſigned that office, and was conſtituted Maſter-general of the Ordnance.

On April 26, 1755, his Grace was again appointed one of the Lords Juſtices for the adminiſtration of the government, during his Majeſty's abſence.

The late King having, in 1758, reſolved on an expedition againſt the French in their own territories, his Grace was conſtituted Commander in Chief of the land-forces deſtined for that ſervice; and ſailing from St. Helen's, on June 1, with the fleet under Commodore Lord Viſcount Howe, arrived on the 5th in the bay of Cancalle in Britany, where the debarkation of the troops was compleated on the 7th; when the Duke publiſhed a manifeſto, acquainting the inhabitants of Britany, that the deſcent on their coaſt was not made with an intention to make war on them, unleſs found in arms; and aſſuring them, that all, who remained peaceable at home, ſhould be unmoleſted, and might follow their uſual occupations; and that, excepting the cuſtoms and taxes which they paid to the King, nothing would be required of them, either in money or merchandizes, but what was abſolutely neceſſary for the ſubſiſtence of the army; and that for all the proviſions they ſhould bring in, they ſhould be paid ready money. His Grace, at the ſame time, notified, that if, on the contrary, the inhabitants ſhould remove their effects, and abandon their dwellings, they ſhould be treated as enemies, and their towns, houſes, &c. deſtroyed by fire and ſword. The Duke, at landing the troops, gave ſtrict orders againſt plundering: but notwithſtanding, the firſt night did not paſs without ſome ſcenes of horror and inhumanity. However, a ſtop was ſoon put to ſuch acts, by the offenders being brought to immediate juſtice: and it redounds very much to his Grace's honour, that no deſcent was ever attended with leſs licentiouſneſs in the invaders, or with leſs injury to the poor inhabitants of the country invaded, than in that where he commanded. His Grace, having, on the 7th, conducted the main body of the army to Paramé, little more than a mile from St. Malo, ordered them to pitch their tents there, and in the evening detached a party to reconnoitre that city, in the harbour of which they burnt moſt of the naval ſtores, one man of war of fifty guns, one of thirty-ſix, all the privateers, ſome of which were of thirty, and ſeveral of twenty and eighteen guns, and in the whole upwards of one hundred ſhips, notwithſtanding they were under the cannon of the town. The Duke, finding it impracticable to attack St. Malo, with any proſpect of ſucceſs, and being credibly informed that an army, greatly ſuperior in number to that under his command, was marching againſt him, decamped with his forces on the 10th, and reimbarked on the 12th, having deſtroyed the naval magazines and ſhips at St. Malo, the chief objects of the enterprize. After he put to ſea, he attempted to land at Havre de Grace and Cherbourg, but being prevented by unfavourable winds, he returned to St. Helen's, on July 1; and waiting on his Majeſty at Kenſington, on the 4th, was moſt graciouſly received.

On

On July 25, that ſame year, his Grace was appointed Commander in Chief of all the Britiſh forces intended to ſerve in Germany under Prince Ferdinand of Brunſwick; and, on Auguſt 29 following, conſtituted General over all and ſingular the foot-forces employed, or to be employed, in his Majeſty's ſervice: but his Grace did not long enjoy thoſe places; for he died of a fever, on October 20, 1758, at Munſter in Weſtphalia, from whence his corpſe was brought to England, and buried at Woodſtock.

His Grace, on May 23, 1732, was married to Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Lord Trevor, and by her Grace had iſſue,

1. George, the preſent Duke of Marlborough.

2. Lord Charles Spencer, born on March 31, 1740, who was, at the general election in 1761, returned one of the Knights for the county of Oxford; and, on October 2, 1762, wedded Mary, daughter of Vere Beauclerk, Lord Vere of Hanworth. On January 29, 1763, his Lordſhip was declared Superintendant of the King's gardens in England, and Out-ranger of Windſor-Foreſt; and reſigning thoſe offices, was appointed Comptroller of his Majeſty's Houſhold, and ſworn of the Privy-Council, on April 20. In September that year, he was elected Verdurer of Whichwood-Foreſt in Oxfordſhire: but in Aug. 1765, he laid down the poſt of Comptroller of the Houſhold; which was beſtowed upon Thomas Pelham, of Stanmere in Suſſex, Eſq. By his ſaid Lady (who is ſtanding Wardrobe-keeper at Kenſington, and Keeper of the Palace there) his Lordſhip has two ſons, George, and Charles.

3. Lord Robert Spencer, born on May 8, 1747.

4. Lady Diana, born on March 24, 1734, and married, on September 9, 1757, to Frederick Viſcount Bolingbroke and St. John.

5. Lady Elizabeth, born on Dec. 29, 1737, and wedded, on March 13, 1756, to Henry Earl of Pembroke.

George, the ſixth Earl of Sunderland, and third Duke of Marlborough, of his family, and the twenty-fifth in paternal deſcent from his anceſtor, Robert Deſpencer, who came to England with William the Conqueror, was born on Jan. 26, 1738-9; and, upon returning from his travels, was made a Captain in the twentieth regiment of foot, but afterwards reſigned. In April, 1760, his Grace (who is Preſident of the Small-pox Hoſpital, in Cold-Bath-Fields) was appointed Lord Lieutenant and Cuſtos Rotulorum of Oxfordſhire, and continued in thoſe offices by his preſent Majeſty, at whoſe coronation, on September 22, 1761, he carried the Scepter with the Croſs. On November 22, 1762, being then Lord Chamberlain of the Houſhold, in the room of the Duke of Devonſhire, his Grace was ſworn of the Privy-Council; and upon his reſigning the Chamberlain's key,

was, on April 22, 1763, appointed Lord Privy-Seal, upon the Duke of Bedford's reſignation for promotion: but in Auguſt, 1765, quitted that place, which was granted to the Duke of Newcaſtle. His Grace, on Auguſt 23, 1762, wedded Lady Caroline Ruſſel, daughter of John, the ſaid Duke of Bedford; and by her has two daughters, Lady Caroline, born on October 27, 1763, and Lady Elizabeth, born on December 20, 1764.

TITLES.] George Spencer, Duke of Marlborough, Marquis of Blandford, Earl of Sunderland, and of Marlborough, Baron Spencer of Wormleighton, and Baron Churchill of Sandridge.

CREATIONS.] Baron Churchill of Sandridge, in com. Hertford, May 14 (1685) 1 Jac. II. Baron Spencer of Wormleighton, in com. Warwick, July 21 (1603) 1 Jac. I. Earl of Marlborough, in com. Wilts, April 9, 1689, 1 William and Mary; Earl of Sunderland, June 8 (1643) 19 Car. I. and Marquis of Blandford, in com. Dorſet, and Duke of Marlborough aforeſaid, December 14 (1702) 1 Anne.

ARMS.] Quarterly, firſt and fourth quarterly, Argent and Gules, in the ſecond and third a Fret, Or; over all, on a Bend, Sable, three Eſcalops of the firſt; for Spencer. Second and third, Sable, a Lion rampant, Argent; on a Canton, of the laſt, a Croſs, Gules; for Churchill.

CREST.] In a ducal Coronet, Or, a Gryphon's Head between two wings erect, Argent, gorged with two plain Collars, Gules. The Creſt for Churchill is, on a Wreath, a Lion couchant guardant, Argent, ſuſtaining, with his dexter Paw, a Pennon, Gules, charged with a ſiniſter Hand couped at the Wriſt, and erect, Argent.

SUPPORTERS.] The dexter, a Gryphon party per feſs, Argent and Or; ſiniſter, a Wyvern, Argent, Wings expanded, each collared and chained, Sable; and each Collar charged with three Eſcallops, Argent. The Supporters of John Churchill, Duke of Marlborough, were two Wyverns, Gules, each gorged with a plain Collar, Or, having an oval Shield pendant therefrom upon the Breaſt, garniſhed Or, the dexter charged with St. George's badge, Argent, a Croſs, Gules, and the ſiniſter, Sable, with a Saltire, Argent.

MOTTO.] DIEU DEFEND LE DROIT. The motto for Churchill is, FIEL PERO DESDECADO.

CHIEF SEAT.] At Blenheim, near Woodſtock, Oxfordſhire, fifty-nine miles from London.

The End of Volume I.

THE

Spencer Duke of Marlborough.

THE INDEX.

Car-

E.

Hill,

Pembroke,

Salisbury,

Y.

Z.